

THE NEW REVELATION OF THE LORD JESUS CHRIST

Peter D. F.

1988

www.angels-heaven.org
www.cosmic-people.com

A Note of Introduction by The Lord Jesus Christ to Any Prospective Reader of This Book

“Before seriously undertaking the reading of The New Revelation of The Lord Jesus Christ, as recorded in this book, any prospective reader should be aware of the following important facts:”

(1)

“The Lord Jesus Christ made a free choice to use the third person form of expression and not the first person, as the reader, perhaps, would expect. The main reason for this choice is in preservation of freedom of choice of every reader to accept or to reject what is written in this book. The use of the first person’s form of expression, such as, for example, ‘I say,’ ‘I state,’ ‘I do,’ etc., has a commanding, forceful, indisputable, imposing and ordering connotation. The true Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ does not contain any inclination whatsoever to command, to force, to impose, to order or to intimidate anything on anyone. This Nature is comprised of Absolute Freedom and Independence. If one operates from the state of this Absolute Freedom and Independence, one can never express oneself in any other mode but in the mode of freedom and independence. To command, to order, to impose, etc., would violate this Nature. Thus, the use of the third person’s form of expression takes away this undesirable connotation and side effect.”

“Another important reason for this choice is the illustration and exemplification of the attitude of true humility, modesty and humbleness. If the true spiritual principles of life require people and humans to be humble and modest, it is only natural that the Absolute Source of all true spiritual principles — The Lord Jesus Christ — set His/Her own example of this modesty, humbleness and humility. One of the fundamental traits of the Absolute Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ is Absolute Innocence, Humility, Modesty and Humbleness. Because of this fundamental trait, The Lord Jesus Christ can relate to anyone only from the position of this trait. You do not relate from the position of something which you do not have. You relate only from the position of something which you have. This is a common principle of any relationship. The use of the third person’s form of expression helps to emphasize this important attitude.”

(2)

“An important spiritual reason exists, known only to The Lord Jesus Christ, why He/She chose Dr. Peter Daniel Francuch as the transmitter of The New Revelation for this time. Peter is someone whose native tongue is not English and who has never formally studied the English language. The grammatical structure of any language, and particularly of the English language, puts too many limits on expressions of spiritual ideas. These limitations are being utilized by the negative state to distort, pervert and falsify the original and genuine meaning of those ideas. In order to avoid this danger, at times, it is necessary to violate the grammatical structures and rules of the used language.”

“The Lord Jesus Christ chose to use Peter’s unique and specific mode of expression, his language and the way he formulates his ideas for conveying the principles of The New Revelation. It suits The Lord Jesus Christ very well to use exactly the mode of thinking, feeling, expression of ideas, sentence structure and the words that Peter uses. The way Peter is and the way he thinks, feels and expresses himself is an integral part of his assignment and mission — to be exactly that way. It is not by coincidence that all Peter’s effort in the past to undertake a systematic formal study of the English language and grammar had always been thwarted. This was for the purpose of avoidance of being contaminated by the rigid rules of grammar for expression of any ideas.”

“Let the reader be aware that, if The Lord Jesus Christ needed to express Himself/Herself differently and, in the opinion of some readers, in a more acceptable and grammatical manner, He/She would have most certainly chosen some scholar of the English language or someone who would be able to adhere more closely to those rules. But such a choice would miss the whole point.”

“Humans will always have a tendency to find any excuse why not to agree, or not to read or not to implement what they have read in this, or any other book of the New Revelation. Some of them are easily turned off by some unsuitable, in their opinion, expressions or words or ideas or the way they are formulated and conveyed. Such humans have an inordinate need to express things in their own words, in their own ideas and by their own conceptualization of how things should be formulated. From that position they compulsively want to rewrite such books, to edit them, to substitute the used words by some others in order to soften or to remove the genuine intent for which the original words were chosen. Again, if The Lord Jesus Christ wished to use those kinds of words in order to convey His/Her New Revelation, He/She would have most certainly chosen someone who would be able to express it in a different mode than the one used in this book.”

“There are important spiritual reasons, beyond human comprehension, why The Lord Jesus Christ chose this mode of conveyance of The New Revelation’s ideas, as reflected in Peter’s manner of speech, language, expression and mode of thinking. Because of these important spiritual reasons, after the final version of the manuscript is submitted for typesetting and published, or after it is presented for reading, anyone who, at any time, in the present or in the future, attempts to revise or to edit or to substitute any words or to change anything in this book, besides obvious typographical, spelling or mechanical errors, will be distorting or even falsifying the true meaning of this book.”

“Any changes or additions in this respect, if at all, have to come directly from The Lord Jesus Christ. After all, this is His/Her book. And, of course, such changes or additions would come through Peter again. Once or if Peter is no longer available for doing this important work, then and only then someone else will be chosen by The Lord Jesus Christ for transmission of a new book or books which would be logical sequels, but not revisions (within its content), of this book.”

(3)

“The reading of this book, in order to be properly understood, requires some familiarity with the previous work transmitted through Peter. In actuality, the nine previous books of this nature can be considered a preparation and introduction to this one. For this reason, if the reader intends to read this book without any prior familiarity with some of the previous books written by Peter, he/she should prepare himself/herself for the greatest shock of his/her life. It will not be easy to accept anything revealed in this book.”

“But, as always, if the reader keeps his/her mind open, and is willing to relinquish any preconceived ideas of his/her own expectations and of his/her own adopted views, opinions, religion, philosophy or whatever he/she has, and will approach this reading with a positive and good intent, for the sake of learning and changing, he/she will be blessed with wisdom of understanding, acceptance and application of everything revealed in this book.”

“Some readers will, perhaps, complain that there is too much redundancy in this book. The readers of this nature should be advised that, very often, a certain spiritual idea underlies many diverse factors. When exploring each factor in particular, that principle needs to be restated and repeated. In a philosophical sense, this is not redundancy but looking at the

principle in question from an entirely different perspective. Please, remember this fact when reading this book.”

“And, finally, it is very crucial that this book is read in sequel from the first chapter to the last one without skipping or beginning to read a chapter without reading the preceding chapters first. One chapter follows the other and each subsequent chapter is built on what was revealed in the preceding chapter. Thus, to skip the reading of the previous chapters may put the content of the read chapter out of the context of The New Revelation. Moreover, The Lord Jesus Christ returns to some topics, discussed in the previous chapters, and elaborates on them or reveals some other aspects of them later on. To read about these topics without any connectedness to their initial revelation would make them difficult to properly understand.”

“Thank you for reading and considering what was revealed here.”

This message came to me, by the word of The Lord Jesus Christ, after the transmission of the last Chapter of this book was completed on May 18, 1988. I was advised to place it at the beginning of this book in order to forward it.

Santa Barbara, California, U.S.A. May 18, 1988 at 6:46 p.m. (18:46)

Peter D. Francuch, Ph.D. The transmitter — a servant
and follower of The Lord Jesus Christ.

A small note from processor of the text of the New Revelation on the Internet www.angels-heaven.org (this is not part of the original book)

*Be this important information useful for all people interested in their **spiritual development**, and allowing them to **get prepared for an advancement into the New age, on the New Earth. The Lord Jesus Christ always shows us in our hearts the right direction, it is only about **sensing** it and **listening to one's own within**.***

*We (4 people in contact with the **Prime Creator of all and everything** – according to the present terminology – and with **Cosmic friends of Forces of Light**) have verified and confirmed that the **New Revelation books are TRUE**, more specifically **around 90% true**, so again, it is up to **every reader to **sense wrongly processed parts**** of the text much like of any other text here on the planet Earth. Mistakes occur during **transmission**, during **translation** into other languages (not applicable here since this is the original), and furthermore during **preparation** for printing. Forces of darkness do never sleep !*

*Texts are scans of the books which have **not** been spread in bookstores and **no** advertisement has been given to them, so they were **little-known** until now. Therefore, I have decided to **change** this state and now a great majority of persons interested in this information are in a position to obtain the information. No alterations have been made to the texts; I have only added **numbers in parentheses** in large numbered portions of texts inside the chapters in order to increase readability of the texts.*

*I am **thankful to the Lord Jesus Christ** for having an **opportunity to acquaint myself with this teaching** and also for being **in a position to spread and disseminate these energies on the planet Earth in the 3rd dimension**.*

**THOSE, WHO PURPOSELY KEEP THE TRUTH SECRET OR DISTORT IT UNDER THE
PRETENCE**

THAT PEOPLE ARE NOT PREPARE TO HEAR IT

SERVE THE DARKNESS.

**THROUGHOUT ALL THE HISTORY, THE HOLY TEXTS WERE KEPT HIDDEN OR
DESTROYED.**

**THEREFORE, SPREAD AND DISSEMINATE THESE TEXT IN ALL
DIRECTIONS, DON'T KEEP THEM JUST FOR YOU !!!**

PROVIDE THE TEXTS ALSO TO LIBRARIES !

With love Ivo A. Benda, the processor and propagator of the NEW REVELATION books.

OVERVIEW OF BOOKS OF THE NEW REVELATION

(BY IVO A. BENDA)

- 1) THE NEW REVELATION OF THE LORD JESUS CHRIST**, Peter D. F., 1992, 777 original pages, complex commentary from Lord Jesus Christ on PRESENT SITUATION OF EARTHLY MANKIND including its history and ways of solution in 30 chapters. Received in 1988. **KEY MATERIAL !!!**
- 2) FUNDAMENTALS OF HUMAN SPIRITUALITY**, Peter D. F., 1982, 262 pages, commentary on human spirituality and its relation to the Creation. Covered in 1982.
- 3) MESSAGES FROM WITHIN**, Peter D. F., 1982, 278 pages, other additional information augmenting the New revelation.
- 4) FOUR CONCEPTS OF THE SPIRITUAL STRUCTURE OF CREATION**, Peter D. F., 1983, 119 pages, other additional information augmenting the New revelation.
- 5) REALITY, MYTH & ILLUSION**, Peter D. F., 1984, 506 pages, other additional information augmenting the New revelation.
- 6) WHO ARE YOU AND WHY ARE YOU HERE ?**, Peter D. F., 1984, 256 pages, position of earthman in the Creation. Processed in 1984.
- 7) MAJOR IDEAS OF THE NEW REVELATION**, Peter D. F., 1985, 266 pages, other additional information augmenting the New revelation.
- 8) UNDERSTANDING AND FULFILLMENT OF OUR EARTHLY LIFE**, Peter D. F., 1985, 198 pages, what of our life is bound to this world.

9) COROLLARIES TO THE NEW REVELATION OF THE LORD JESUS CHRIST, Peter D. F., 1997, 352 pages. Received in 1992-4. The last supplementary information extending the New revelation. It is recommended to read this book after triple reading of the previous books.

All the Bible's wordings are presented according to "*The New King James Version of The Holy Bible*", Thomas Nelson Publishers, New York

"The New Revelation" books **vitaly concern everyone on planet Earth**, for everyone has a suite - the material body – fabricated by pseudo-creators !!! **Understanding** of this **fact** gives a **possibility of finding a solution to problems** of every man on Earth.

Don't be afraid of anything and spread this information with love in your heart in all directions - primarily to **schools – teachers, medics, officials and scientists** and to everyone who may be **interested in**, don't miss out **journalists** and **politicians**. It will be of help to many people and a big bumper for pseudo-creators.

CONTENTS

1) THE NEW REVELATION OF THE LORD JESUS CHRIST – 30 chapters, 32 units.

(0)

A Note of Introduction By The Lord Jesus Christ To Any Prospective Reader of This Book. LIST AND CONTENT OF THE NEW REVELATION BOOKS.

Chapter 1.

The Differences Between The Revelation of Jesus Christ and the New Revelation of The Lord Jesus Christ.

Chapter 2.

The Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ.

Chapter 3.

Betrayal of Christianity.

Chapter 4.

The Second Coming of The Lord Jesus Christ.

Chapter 5.

Principles and Applications of the New Spiritual Hypnotherapy and of The Process of Going Inward.

Chapter 6.

The Mystery of Pseudo-Creators.

Chapter 7.

The Concept of Antichrist.

Chapter 8.

The Last Judgment.

Chapter 9.

The Meaning of the Last Supper.

- Chapter 10.
Update, Modification and Redefinition of the Spiritual Laws.
- Chapter 11.
The Concept of Sin and Human Problems.
- Chapter 12.
The Concept of Life in General and Human Life in Particular.
- Chapter 13.
How to Survive Human Life.
- Chapter 14.
The Impact of the New Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ on Creation, The Zone of Displacement and Human Life.
- Chapter 15.
The Mystery of the New Revelation.
- Chapter 16.
Practice of the New Revelation.
- Chapter 17.
The Placement of Planet Zero, Humans and Humankind In Relationship to All Else.
- Chapter 18.
The New Life of the Positive State.
- Chapter 19.
Life After Human Life.
- Chapter 20.
The Mystery of Sexuality in General and Human Sexuality in Particular.
- Chapter 21.
The Mystery of Creation and the Zone of Displacement.
- Chapter 22.
The Mystery of Birth, Death, Resurrection, Rebirth, Transfiguration and Transformation.
- Chapter 23.
How The Lord Jesus Christ Governs His/Her Creation, The Zone of Displacement and Planet Zero.
- Chapter 24.
The Ten Commandments Revisited.
- Chapter 25.
The Mystery of the Ten Spiritual Principles.
- Chapter 26.
The Lord's Prayer Revisited.
- Chapter 27.
The Mystery of the New Prayer Formulated by The Lord Jesus Christ.
- Chapter 28.
The Mystery of the Road of Life.
- Chapter 29.
Some Brief Clarifications on the Structure and Nature of the Zone of Displacement.
- Chapter 30.
The New Revelation In Perspective.

2) FUNDAMENTALS OF HUMAN SPIRITUALITY - 3 parts, 21 chapters, 22 units.

(0)
A Very Important Introduction
LIST AND CONTENT OF THE NEW REVELATION BOOKS.

PART I: SPIRITUAL DETERIORATION

Chapter 1.
Definition and Principles of Spirituality in General and Human Spirituality in Particular. Concept of the Most High.

Chapter 2.
Origin of Matter, Universe and Sentient Entities. Original Purpose, Goal and Structure of Human Life and Its Natural, Mental and Spiritual States.

Chapter 3.
Beginning of and Reasons for Human Spiritual Deterioration.

Chapter 4.
Consequences and Impact of Human Spiritual Deterioration on Development of Mankind as a Whole.

Chapter 5.
Consequences and Impact of Human Spiritual Deterioration on Specific Areas of Human Life, Human Activities, Human Systems and Human Relations.

Chapter 6.
Profound Crisis of All Human Systems, Values, Traditions, Conventions and Cultures. End of the Human Era.

Chapter 7.
Present State of Affairs in Mankind's Condition and Human Spirituality. Preparation for the New Age.

PART II: SPIRITUAL REAWAKENING

Chapter 1.
Understanding of True Human Nature.

Chapter 2.
The Structure of the Human Mind.

Chapter 3.
The Dynamics of the Human Mind. Building of a New Spiritual Psychology and Spiritual Social Sciences.

Chapter 4.
Purification and Synthesis of Grains of Truths Existent in Traditions and Conventions of the Human Systems.

Chapter 5.
Opening of All Levels of Being and Existence and Building a Permanent Bridge Among Them.

Chapter 6.

Dangers and Precautions in the Process of Opening and Building. Perils of Transition.

Chapter 7.

The Proper and Right Tools and Building Blocks for the New Age. Development of the new Methodologies of the Human Systems.

PART III: SPIRITUAL PROGRESSION

Chapter 1.

Definition and Principles of Spiritual Progression.

Chapter 2.

The New Structure of the Human Systems: Analysis of the Structure.

Chapter 3.

The New Dynamics of the Human Systems: Analysis of Dynamics.

Chapter 4.

The Nature and the Structure of the New Mankind.

Chapter 5.

Place, Purpose and Goals of the New Mankind and its Systems in the Universality of It All.

Chapter 6.

Style of Life and Human Relations in the New Era. Analysis of the New Spirituality.

Chapter 7.

Perspectives and Future Possibilities of Human Development and Spiritual Progression.

3) MESSAGES FROM WITHIN - 40 messages, 41 units.

(0)

Introduction

LIST AND CONTENT OF THE NEW REVELATION BOOKS.

Message 1.

On Misinterpretation of "Jupiter Effect".

Message 2.

On the Nature of the Most High.

Message 3.

On Marriage and Sexuality.

Message 4.

On Changeability of One's State and Condition. On Establishment by the Most High of a Special School of Spiritual Re-Awakening, Re-Learning and Re-Structuring in the Spiritual World.

Message 5.

On a New Heavenly Society and Its Purpose and Function.

Message 6.

On the Swedenborg's Understanding of the Last Judgment. On the Bible and Its Various Meanings.

Message 7.

On life and Its Meanings. More on Sexuality and Sexual Intercourse.

Message 8.

On the Principles of Spiritual Homogeneity.

Message 9.

More on the Function of the New Heavenly Society.

Message 10.

On the Spiritual Requirements of Everyday Life and a Set of Rules for Such a Life.

Message 11.

On the New Hellish Pseudo-Society and Its Purpose and Function. Warning About Its Works.

Message 12.

On Various Eras in Mankind's History of Spiritual Development.

Message 13.

On Methods of Acquiring Knowledges Throughout Mankind's History.

Message 14.

On the Major Structural Changes of the Spiritual World.

Message 15.

On Sexuality in the Spiritual World.

Message 16.

Continuation on Sexuality in the Spiritual World.

Message 17.

On How Longevity of People's Natural Life on Earth is Determined.

Message 18.

More on the Philosophy of the New School in the Spiritual World.

Message 19.

More on the Structure and Function of the New Heavenly Society.

Message 20.

On Tactics and Methods of Operation of the New Hellish Pseudo-Society.

Message 21.

On the Philosophical Concept of Time.

Message 22.

On Spiritual Principles and Life in General.

Message 23.

On Practical Application in Everyday Life of Spiritual Principles.

Message 24.

On Spiritual Requirements of Everyday Life and Living.

Message 25.

On the Practical Principles of Everyday Living.

Message 26.

On the Proper Understanding of the Negative State's Nature. On Inappropriateness of People's Understanding of Some Life Events.

Message 27.

On People's Modes of Perception, Unconscious Processes and Altered States of Consciousness.

Message 28.

On Spiritual Wars and the Methods, Tactics and Weapons Used in These Wars and How They Correspond to the Human's Earthly Wars.

Message 29.

On the Source of People's Problems, Miseries and Sufferings and How to Overcome Them.

Message 30.

On People's Spiritual, Mental and Physical Equipment and on Methods of Treatment Of Their Problems. On Proper Understanding of Concepts of Karma and Reincarnation.

Message 31.

Some Practical Clarifications on the Concept of Spirituality and Spiritual Principles.

Message 32.

On the Process of Incarnation of Human Beings on Earth and How Their Choices are made.

Message 33.

On How to Determine Whether One is in the Positive or Negative State.

Message 34.

On the Issues of Everyday Living and On Proper Building Blocks of Everyone's Life.

Message 35.

On the Structure and Content of Reality.

Message 36.

On the Nature and Structure of Creation and On Spiritual, Mental and Physical Illnesses and Their Treatment.

(37)

Why Do People Choose To Go To Hell ?

(38)

An Additional Message Regarding the New Heavenly Society.

(39)

A Brief Comment on the Concept of Reincarnation.

(40)

An Important Announcement From the Most High.

4) FOUR CONCEPTS OF THE SPIRITUAL STRUCTURE OF CREATION – 4 chapters, 5 units.

(0)

A Brief Introduction

LIST AND CONTENT OF THE NEW REVELATION BOOKS.

Chapter 1.

Spiritual Theory of the Universal Multidimensional Zone of Displacement.

Chapter 2.

Spiritual Principles of the Middle State.

Chapter 3.

Principles of Spiritual Metaphysics.

Chapter 4.
Human Will and Intentions And Their Multiple Reincarnation.

5) REALITY, MYTH & ILLUSION - 18 chapters, 17 units.

(0)

Introduction

LIST AND CONTENT OF THE NEW REVELATION BOOKS.

Chapter 1.
The Most Common Myths And Illusions That People Cling To.

Chapter 2.
Discussion On The Structure Of The New Heavenly Society.

Chapter 3.
Three Dialogues.

- I. **Dialogue On Spiritual Aspects Of Sexuality.**
- II. **Memorandum And Dialogue On Dealing With The Negative Entities.**
- III. **More On The Structure Of The New Heavenly Society.**

Chapter 4.
More On The Structure Of The New Heavenly, Celestial-Cosmical Society Or Galaxy (Conclusion).

Chapter 5.
Some Thoughts On The Nature Of The Negative State.

Chapter 6.
On Some General Trends Of The Negative State.

Chapter 7.
A Warning About The Negative Entities.

Chapter 8.
On Femininity, Masculinity And Human Sexuality.

Chapter 9.
On The Origin Of Modern Man.

Chapter 10.
On The True Purpose Of Human Life.

Chapter 11.
Nine Circles Of Creation.

Chapter 12.
Analysis Of A Deceptive Mode Of The Negative And Evil Entities Who Contaminated H.'s Spiritual Transformation Process.

Chapter 13.
More On The Structure Of The Zone Of Displacement.

Chapter 14.
The Completion Of H.'s Process Of Intensive Spiritual Hypnotherapy (An Empirical Illustration Of The Proper Procedures In The Process Of Intensive Spiritual Hypnotherapy).

Chapter 15.

On The New Methods And Tactics For Combating Evil And Negative Forces.

Chapter 16.

Further Elaboration On The Procedures By Which Humans Incarnate On Planet Earth.

Chapter 17.

On The Structure Of Human Mind Which Is Trapped In The Zone Of Displacement.

Chapter 18.

On The Structure, Content and Meaning Of The Holy Bible.

6) WHO ARE YOU AND WHY ARE YOU HERE ? – 5 chapters, 7 units.

(0)

Introduction:

Why You Need To Read This Book ?

LIST AND CONTENT OF THE NEW REVELATION BOOKS.

Chapter 1.

Is The History Of Mankind And Thus The History Of Your Origin, As Described In Various Scientific And Religious Books A Correct One ? Are You Really Who They Say You Are ? What Is The True Reality About All Of This ?

Chapter 2.

Of What Do You Really Consist ? How Many Levels And Aspects Are Within You ? What Is Your Place And Position In This Universe And In Relationship To Others ? Do You Really Live In A Genuine And True World ? What Is The Purpose Of Your Life ? Did You Really Start Your Life On Planet Earth ?

Chapter 3.

What Is The Real Origination Of All Your Problems, Troubles, Bad Habits, Sufferings, Miseries, Illnesses, Diseases, Accidents, Incidents, And All Other Misfortunes, Liabilities, Shortcomings, Et Cetera ? What Kind Of Purpose Do They Serve In Your Life? Do You Really Need Them ? How Did The Negative State Really Originate? Did Eve In The Garden Of Eden Really Eat An Apple And Give It To Adam To Eat, Which Act Supposedly Started All Human Miseries And The Negative State? What Does All This Really Mean And Signify ? How Can It Be Applied To Your Own Private Life Or To Everyday Living ?

Chapter 4.

What Are The Proper, Right, Correct, Efficient, Successful And Effective Means And Ways To Find Your Way Back To The True Life, To Your True Inner Self, To Your True Inner Mind And To True Happiness ? How Do You Get Rid Of Problems And Troubles Be They Spiritual, Mental, Emotional, Intellectual, Sexual, Personal Or Physical Or Any Others Without Any Exception Or Exclusion ?

Chapter 5.

How Do You Continuously, Properly Maintain Your Spiritual, Mental, Emotional, Intellectual And Over All Well-Being and Happiness Without Back-Sliding Or Reverting To Your Previous Unproductive And Self-Defeating Lifestyle, Or Without Stagnating In One Place ? How Do You Fulfill To Your, And Your Creator's Satisfaction, The Purpose Of Your Life On Planet Earth ? Does Your Personal, Unique, Self-Aware Individual Life End With Your Physical Death ? What Happens To You After You Leave Your Body And This Earth ?

(6)

Conclusion

Do You Now Really Know Who You Are And Why You Are Here And What It Is To Be A Truly Spiritual And Happy Human Being, An Integrated Human Being?

7) MAJOR IDEAS OF THE NEW REVELATION - 16 chapters, 17 units.

(0)

Introduction

LIST AND CONTENT OF THE NEW REVELATION BOOKS.

(1)

On Various Types Of Revelations And How To Properly Verify Their Source And Validity.

(2)

On The Spiritual Meaning Of Chapter 7 In Prophet Daniel In The Holy Bible.

(3)

The Requirements For The Speaker And Transmitter Of The Most High's Revelations And Messages.

(4)

Revisions Of And Update On Proper Procedures For Verification And Security Checks Of The True Spiritual Advisors During Spiritual Hypnotherapy And Spiritual Self-Hypnosis.

(5)

Why Did Jesus Christ Speak About And Relate To His Father-God As Though He And The Father Were Two Different Persons Or Entities And Not One And The Same God-Indivisible ?

(6)

Update On The Issue Of Why People Choose To Go To Hell.

(7)

What Are The True Reasons For Existence Of So Many Different And Often Contradictory Religions And Their Numerous Sects On Planet Earth ?

(8)

On The Reasons For The Most High's Incarnation On Planet Earth In The Form And Manifestation Of Jesus Christ.

(9)

Why Did The Most High Allow The Negative State To Remain In An Activated And Dominant Mode On Earth And Elsewhere Even After He/She, In The Form Of Jesus Christ, Conquered, Subjugated And Put All The Hells Under His/Her Dominance.

(10)

Spiritual Interpretation Of One Limited Aspect Of The Content Of Chapter Eight In The Prophet Daniel.

(11)

On The Proper Understanding Of The Concept Of The New Revelation.

(12)

Summary Of The Major Concepts And Ideas Of The Current New Revelation.

(13)

Self-Correcting And Progressive Mode Of The Revealed Truths.

(14)

To Love The Lord Above All And Above Everything.

(15)

Changes Of States And Conditions.

(16)

The End Of The Human Era On Planet Earth And In All Regions Of The Zone Of Displacement.

8) UNDERSTANDING AND FULFILLMENT OF OUR EARTHLY LIFE - 9 chapters, 10 units.

(0)

Introduction

LIST AND CONTENT OF THE NEW REVELATION BOOKS.

Chapter 1.

Spiritual Life.

Chapter 2.

Mental Life.

Chapter 3.

Physical Or Bodily Life.

Chapter 4.

Sexual Life.

Chapter 5.

Professional Or Work Life.

Chapter 6.

Family Life.

Chapter 7.

Social Life.

Chapter 8.

Leisure And Sleep Life.

Chapter 9.

Balanced Or Integrated Life.

9) COROLLARIES TO THE NEW REVELATION OF THE LORD JESUS CHRIST – 32 units.

(0)

Introduction

LIST AND CONTENT OF THE NEW REVELATION BOOKS.

Update 1.

For The Agents Of The Positive State Of The Lord Jesus Christ And Practitioners Of His/Her New Revelation.

Update 2.

To All Readers And Practitioners Of The New Revelation Of The Lord Jesus Christ And His/Her Servants And Followers.

Update 3.

The Requirements For The Speaker And Transmitter Of The Most High's Revelations And Messages.

(4)

Update 3A.

(5)

Update 4.

(6)

Update 5.

(7)

Update 6.

(8)

Update 7.

(9)

Update 8.

(10)

Update 9.

(11)

Update 10.

(12)

Update 11.

(13)

Update 12.

(14)

Update 13.

(15)

Update 14.

(16)

Update 15.

(17)

Update 16.

(18)

Update 17.

(19)

Update 18.

(20)

Update 19.

(21)

A Private Conversation Between The Lord Jesus Christ And Peter.

(22)
Update **20**.

(23)
Announcement.

(24)
An Advice.

(25)
A Reminder.

(26)
The Source Of False Memories In Past Lives Experiences And Therapies.

(27)
Revelation On The Revelator Of "A Course In Miracles".

(28)
On Infancy.

(29)
Clarification Of Some Important Spiritual Concepts.

(30)
A Letter To All.

(31)
A Second Private Conversation.

**** End of text added by Ivo A. Benda. The original texts of the book follow.

CHAPTER ONE

THE DIFFERENCES BETWEEN THE REVELATION OF JESUS CHRIST AND THE NEW REVELATION OF THE LORD JESUS CHRIST

On January 22, 1988, at 6:00 a.m., the word of The Lord Jesus Christ came to me, saying,

“Now is the time to begin the transmission of the next vital and the most important portion of The New Revelation. The spiritual atmosphere and condition in all worlds and universes, as well as in the Zone of Displacement, is such that it requires further clarifying explanations and elaborations regarding important spiritual issues. This portion of The New Revelation will begin with pointing out the fundamental differences existing between The Revelation of Jesus Christ as recorded by Apostle John and contained in The Holy Bible and the current New Revelation of The Lord Jesus Christ.”

“The very first revealed truth relates to the following fact: The content and the interpretation of all sayings of the Biblical Revelation of Jesus Christ have been completely and totally misunderstood from the very first day of their conception. All interpretations of that Revelation are hereby proclaimed false and misleading. The exception to this statement can be found in the interpretation given through Emanuel Swedenborg. Through him, one important aspect of that Revelation was interpreted properly with the inappropriate perception by Swedenborg that his interpretation contained the entire meaning of that Revelation. Let it be known now that what was revealed through Swedenborg about the content of that Revelation was only a limited aspect of the whole picture. Swedenborg was permitted to consider his interpretation as complete due to the fact that, at that time, no one was ready to know more about other aspects of that revelation. However, the aspect of that Revelation, as revealed through Swedenborg, was the very beginning of The New Revelation which is being continued in its transmission at this time. All other available interpretations of that Revelation have never been inspired by The Lord Jesus Christ directly or indirectly. Therefore, they are to be disregarded.”

“First of all, most interpreters of that Revelation assumed that all events described in it relate to the physical planet Earth and the destiny of humankind as it will unfold in the process of its history. Nothing is further from the truth than this false assumption.”

“Secondly, most so-called Christians assumed that The Revelation of Jesus Christ given through John was the final one and nothing new can be revealed any longer. And if it is revealed, it must be from a negative and misleading source. This false assumption stems from a totally misunderstood statement recorded by Apostle John in the last Chapter of The Revelation of Jesus Christ, Chapter 22, verses 18-19. It says there,”

“For I testify to everyone who hears the words of the prophecy of this book: If anyone adds to these things, God will add to him the plagues that are written in this book; and if anyone takes away from the words of the book of this prophecy, God shall take away his part from the Book of Life, from the holy city, and from the things which are written in this book.”

“This statement was taken literally and not spiritually. The meaning of these words relates solely to the content of the book of The Revelation of Jesus Christ. Basically, it denotes two things:”

“1. The spiritual condition of the multiverse (all infinite varieties of universes, beings and existences in Creation) at the time of that Revelation was ready to perceive, to know, to understand and to apply only that which was contained in that Revelation. If anything were to be taken out of that Revelation, it would mean spiritual deterioration and concealment of vitally important truths which were necessary to be revealed in their fullness within the spiritual limitations of that time. Anything less would mean the end of the possibility for the spiritual progression. Such an end denoted spiritual death. On the other hand, if anything were to be added to that Revelation, it would mean a premature exposure of the spiritual concepts and ideas for which no one was spiritually ready. Adding anything more than one can take or comprehend may and will result in misunderstanding, distortion, misinterpretation, perversion and ultimate spiritual profanation. This also results in the spiritual death.”

“2. The above-quoted statement does not indicate that no ***new revelation*** will be granted in the future. It limits itself only to the content of its own statements. This is obvious from the words ‘adds to *these things* and *takes away from the words of the book of this prophecy*.’ It does not speak about any other things, or any other prophecies.”

“This implies a very important spiritual rule: Each period of time is limited by its own spiritual quality, content and style of life which requires its own specific truth as revealed in The Revelation tailored to the needs of that time. This is a ***Principle of Accommodation***. It states:”

“Any true Revelation, given by The Lord Jesus Christ, is accommodated to the spiritual quality and level of spiritual maturity of each particular and specific time.”

“The principle of spiritual progression requires that the flow of that progression be discretely cyclical. Thus, it proceeds in discrete steps. Therefore, whatever is revealed is revealed in and within each particular step. Nothing can be revealed from the succeeding step. But neither can anything be withheld that belongs to that step.”

“Otherwise that step could not manifest itself and become a necessary stepping stone for the succeeding step. In both situations it would mean spiritual regression with an ultimate spiritual death of all participants in the previous and current steps; and no further step could come to its fruition, as well. Now, this is exactly what Apostle John meant by the above-quoted words. No other meaning should be assigned to them whatsoever.”

“In this respect, one could say the same things about the current New Revelation of The Lord Jesus Christ: Nothing can be taken away from it and nothing is permitted to be added to it for the same reasons as explained above. But it does not mean that no other New Revelation will be given in the future after the current step in spiritual progression of the multiverse exhausts its usefulness and fulfills its purpose.”

“Thirdly, the majority of the so-called Christians, with the exception of the followers of Swedenborg’s teachings, interpret the entire content of The Revelation of Jesus Christ in The

Holy Bible literally and not spiritually. They incorrectly assume that what is described there will happen literally. Again, nothing is further from the truth than such an assumption. Although some events on your planet resemble and will resemble the descriptions of that Revelation, it has no relevance to anything that literally happens on your planet. Your planet's events are only concretizations of the consequences of events that happen elsewhere, in a different mode of being and existence."

"The entire Revelation of Jesus Christ in The Holy Bible is written in pure symbols and correspondences. The human words are used to conceal the true meaning of the spiritual state of affairs that have no relevance to any other level of reality or pseudo-reality except as an impact and consequence of the spiritual affairs. A good example of this situation are the words used in that Revelation. Let us take the 13th verse of the 5th Chapter of The Revelation of Jesus Christ:"

"And every creature which is in heaven and on the earth
and under the earth and such as are in the sea, and all that
are in them "

"The words 'heaven,' 'earth,' 'under the earth,' 'the sea,' etc., are used frequently within the context and content of that Revelation."

"Most people on your planet take these words literally, thinking of the literal heaven, literal earth, literal under the earth and literal sea. Whenever the word 'earth' is mentioned, everyone thinks about planet Earth. Yet, these words mean something entirely different."

"The word 'heaven,' for example, denotes the entire positive state of Creation and its inhabitants in general and the most within Spiritual Mind in particular. The word 'earth' signifies the entire intermediate world of spirits and its inhabitants in general and the interior mind or mentality in particular. Let it be revealed now that in the spiritual world your planet is not called 'Earth.' Instead, it is known under the name 'Planet Zero.' The reason for this name is rooted in the fact that your planet occupies a peculiar position within the structure of the Totality-Of-It-All. It is a stage on which universal combat of good and evil unfolds and takes place fueled by the negative state. The word 'Zero' has two meanings in this connotation:"

"1. There is no worse state within the natural realm of the Totality-Of-It-All than on your planet Zero."

"2. Only in the spiritual condition that corresponds to the mathematical Zero can full consequences of the spiritual battle of good and evil be fully manifested, exemplified and actualized."

"Thus, mathematically speaking, planet plus One (+1), or above Zero (0), would be totally positive. Nothing of the negative state could be appropriated to it or be manifested there. Therefore, no combats of such a nature could ensue. On the other hand, planet below Zero (0), or planet minus One (-1), would be of purely negative and evil nature. Nothing of the positive state of good and truth could take hold there and be appropriated to anyone. Neither could the combat of good and evil unfold or take place on this planet."

"The peculiarity of planet Zero (0), your planet, is even more obvious if you take into consideration the twelve general spiritual levels of being and existence within each particular cycle of time. Above Zero (0) you have plus One (+1) to plus Twelve (+12) and below Zero (0) you have minus One (-1) to minus Twelve (-12). Plus Twelve (+12) denotes the highest spiritual level one can achieve **within** each cycle of time and step of spiritual progression,

while minus Twelve (-12) reflects the worst possible evil and profanation of truth that can occur within its own negative cycle of time and step of spiritual regression.”

“It is important to understand that each cycle of time and step of the spiritual progression or regression, respectively, has its own twelve spiritual levels. Once the twelfth level is reached in either direction (and they do occur synchronously and simultaneously), the cycle of time and step comes to its end. At this point a new cycle of time and a new step of spiritual progression takes place starting at its lowest spiritual point in the positive state or at the lowest point of evilness and profanation of truth in the negative state. However, it has to be understood that each such cycle of time and step transcends in all respects any previous cycles of time and steps.”

“Thus, the goodness and truth of the positive state will be of greater proportions of its plus One (+1) level than the plus Twelfth (+12) level of the previous cycle of time and step. The same is true about the negative state: Minus One (-1) will be much worse than minus Twelve (-12) of the previous step. Regarding the negative state, only steps apply within its continuum. The negative state is permitted to be active only within one cycle of time — the current one.”

“The distinction between cycle of time and step denotes both universal occurrences of cycles of the multiverse and each particular step of individual, local, planetary, galactic or dimensional occurrences.”

“Now, from the above-described situation, it is obvious how peculiar a position any state or place that occupies the Zero position — as your planet does — can be within this negative cycle of time and step. Anything can happen on planet Zero both in the positive and the negative sense. This is a planet of ultimate choices. This is a neutral zone where everyone and everything can mix and manifest concretely and experientially anything one wants. This is also a planet that continuously teaches everyone in the positive state **what not to choose**. (More on planet Zero later.)”

“From the above statement, it is obvious that in The Revelation of Jesus Christ the word ‘earth’ has no direct relevance to this planet.”

“The words ‘under the earth’ represent the entire natural world and its inhabitants in general and the external mind in particular. The words ‘in the sea’ describe the entire Zone of Displacement and its inhabitants in general and the ignorant, negative unconscious processes of the pseudo-mind of all creatures trapped in the negative state in particular.”

“So, whatever is stated in The Revelation of Jesus Christ in The Holy Bible relates solely to the spiritual affairs of the above-mentioned worlds and the sentient minds. In a general sense, that Revelation deals with the gradual spiritual deterioration taking place after the departure of Jesus Christ from your planet; devastation and betrayal of the so-called Christian religions and churches; final victory of the negative state on planet Zero and subsequent total deactivation and elimination of the negative state from the face of Creation; depopulation of the Zone of Displacement; and the ending of this cycle of time and step.”

“The description of these events is given in pure symbolism and spiritual correspondences. Not one word or dot reflects any literal meaning. This is one of the reasons why so many contradictory interpretations of that Revelation are possible and are continuously springing up and why none of them can ever be true — they derive from its literal meaning where no meaning whatsoever exists. Because it was, after all, The Revelation of Jesus Christ, only The Lord Jesus Christ can properly interpret that Revelation. Any human’s or spirit’s or

angel's or whoever's interpretation is a totally futile venture. You are advised to disregard all such interpretations. They only contribute to the obscurity and confusion of the complexity of its issues."

"The major differences between that Revelation and The New Revelation of The Lord Jesus Christ can be defined in the following points (for the clarity of this discourse it is proposed to call The Revelation of Jesus Christ in The Holy Bible 'The Old Revelation' and what is being revealed here and in the previous books by this transmitter 'The New Revelation'):"

(1)

"The Old Revelation, by the necessity of the spiritual state existing at that time, was written in pure correspondences and obscure symbolism. Taking into consideration what was going to happen after The First Coming of Jesus Christ, it was necessary to conceal the true meaning of the revealed truths in the obscurity of human language in order to prevent the negative state and its minions from the proper understanding of what was being said. That way, they could not interfere with the process of the works of The Divine Providence of The Lord Jesus Christ."

"Simply stated, the major concerns here were related to the security of the positive state. If the workings of The Divine Providence of The Lord Jesus Christ were known in advance, in their fullness, the forces of the negative state, through their magical and pseudo-spiritual means, could alter those workings and their own destiny. That would lead them to the eternal damnation and literal eternal death. They could also negatively influence the inhabitants of the positive state — hence, the security reasons. But, nowadays, the spiritual situation is entirely different. Recently, a tremendous spiritual shift and change occurred throughout the multiverse. The nature of that shift and change cannot be described in terms of human language, the language of planet Zero, because it lacks, in its vocabulary, any words that would even remotely approximate what this really is all about. Suffice it to say that that shift and those changes will have, and are having right now, tremendous, far reaching implications for the entire Creation and the Zone of Displacement."

"This new spiritual situation requires an entirely different approach toward the issues that are being revealed. First of all, the obscurity and concealment of the old style in the language of correspondences is no longer required. To use human expression, the present state of the spiritual affairs on all sides requires that all cards lay open, face up, on the table where everyone can see them clearly. Whatever needs to be revealed is to be revealed in simple words with their original, literal meaning. The current time and step requires that The New Revelation be formulated in common words without any hidden and obscure meanings of symbols and correspondences. Clarity and simplicity are the key words for the next step."

"In the process of transmission of this portion of The New Revelation, this rule will be kept in the utmost manner. However, one has to remember in what kind of world and its state this transmission is taking place. After all, present planet Zero is under the rule and dominance of the negative state. For that reason, no matter how simply and with what clarity it is conveyed to the one who functions as a transmitter, as it gradually enters the area of the negative state, it loses somewhat the original clarity and simplicity of its content."

"You have to remember that in the negative state everything is immensely convoluted, perverted, distorted and turned into a confusing and limiting multi-complexity in order to keep people in thick darkness and ignorance. And although the transmitter of The New Revelation is protected from distortions or misinterpretations of the content and ideas of The New Revelation, nevertheless The Absolute clarity and simplicity of its ideas cannot be attained in his world. With this in mind, we can continue with the transmission."

(2)

“The Old Revelation, in its symbolisms and correspondences, was foretelling the future development of the step initiated by The Lord Jesus Christ after His/Her Resurrection. This prediction was a necessary element for the purpose of consolation of all members of the positive state. Knowing what atrocities and abominations would take place in the realm of the Zone of Displacement and in the intermediate world of spirits, The Lord Jesus Christ prepared the entire positive state for these events, explaining the reasons why they would have to happen.”

“If such a revelation were not to be given, the entire Creation, lacking the knowledge of these reasons, would go into shock, from which it would not be able to come out. It would succumb to the negative state. In that case, the negative state would become an ultimate eternal winner. Even with such a warning and preparation (the members of the true positive state know the meaning of symbolism and correspondences and can properly interpret The Old Revelation. That knowledge is secure with them and it cannot be read out by the members of the negative state who occupy the minus position. Whatever occurs in the plus position can never enter or be understood in the minus position. However, occurrences of the minus position are clearly discernible and understood in the plus position, although they can never enter the plus position), the entire positive state came very close to the state of that shock, as it can be seen from what is said in Chapter 8, verse 1 of The Revelation of Jesus Christ in The Holy Bible:”

““When He opened the seventh seal, there was silence in heaven for about half an hour.””

“Opening of the seventh seal denotes revelation about the true nature of the negative state and why it was permitted to come to its adverse fruition in the first place. Silence in heaven reflects total shock of all who are in the positive state. That it lasted only for about half an hour signifies that the shock is not a fatal one but lasts until the full impact of the necessity for activation of the negative state and full manifestation of its putrid, ugly and evil nature is recognized, understood and accepted. Now, if such revelation were not available to them, they could never come out of that shock.”

“On the other hand, The New Revelation deals with the future only in a sense of the consequences and outcomes of the activation of the negative state. They are foreseen only as possibilities that may or may not materialize themselves.”

“Thus, The New Revelation does not predict the future in the same manner as the Old One did. If it did, it would be written in symbolisms and correspondences by the necessity of security, as mentioned above. Mostly however, The New Revelation deals with the current state of affairs, explaining the spiritual quality of the step within which all these events take place concurrently. It formulates the new spiritual ideas, ready to be immediately implemented in the lives of those who chose from the beginning of time and space to become such implementers. The New Revelation also clarifies the events that already have taken place, giving them proper interpretation and revealing their proper meaning and origin.”

(3)

“The transmitters of The Old Revelation (this includes not only the Apostle John but also all prophets of The Old Testament), due to the nature of that Revelation, usually were not permitted to understand any of the inner, hidden sense of what was being revealed through them. They applied it either locally, externally, to one nation or nations of the planet Zero, or they simply accepted the fact that they did not understand what was being conveyed through

them. This was an agreed upon arrangement for the above-mentioned security reasons.”

“On the other hand, the nature of The New Revelation requires that its transmitter fully understands what is being said in order to make it available to all interested people. This is done for the purpose of immediate implementation of all newly revealed truths in their everyday lives.”

“The ideas of The Old Revelation, with some exceptions, could not be applied immediately because of their futuristic nature. They were to take place sometime in the future, if at all (in case different choices were being made by those who were being forewarned).”

“The ideas of The New Revelation are for exemplification and actualization as they come and at the time they come. Thus, the transmitter and the followers of The New Revelation are in the process of constant change, reflecting the continuous updates and newness of its ideas. The key words for the times of The New Revelation are mobility, flexibility, adaptability, adjustability, changeability, fluidity, diversity and versatility. The reflection of the revealed New Truths in everyday life under all conditions, with their full understanding and acceptance, and not on blind faith, as was the case with The Old Revelation — this is what makes The New Revelation so fundamentally different.”

(4)

“During the times of The Old Revelation, because of the nature of that time, no proper methodological tools were developed for verification and security checks of the ideas and their source. Everything was taken on the face value of its external manifestation. The only way anything could be verified was by the external events: If a prediction given by a prophet came through, it was judged as coming from God, or the Lord. If not, the transmitter was considered to be a false prophet. No internal verification through intuition or any other inner spiritual means was available at that time.”

“The reason for this can be found in the fact that spirituality of that time was totally externalized and ritualized. Therefore, whatever was said had to be believed blindly without asking any reasonable questions. The externalization and ritualization of spiritual principles, that also occurred after the First Coming, was foreseen by The Lord Jesus Christ. Therefore, the closure of the inner sense of the Word of God, as reflected in the inspired books of The Holy Bible, had to take place. This closure is in the form of correspondences, symbolisms and representations in order to avoid the possible profanation of the Word of God and subsequent spiritual death of humankind. But, at one point, a shift was initiated by The Lord Jesus Christ from the external conceptualization of spiritual ideas and principles to a more and more internal one. The New Revelation represents this shift. Because of this nature of The New Revelation, one of its major functions is to establish ways and means of getting inward for the purpose of discovery of the true internal meaning of spiritual principles from which everything is derived.”

“This step required a development of proper methodological tools and security checks that came from within and reliance on one’s subtle inner intuition in judging whether the revealed truths are coming from the true Lord Jesus Christ or they are of the negative, deceiving source. Thus, the era of blind faith is irrevocably dead. From now on, every individual, in his/her intuition, is responsible for finding out about the verity of The New Revelation from within and not from without. This is one of the most crucial principles of The New Revelation.”

(5)

“The Old Revelation was written from the position of separation of fundamental spiritual principles. As mentioned above, the spirituality of that time was externalized and ritualized.

No unifying principle can exist in the state of externalization and ritualization. The nature of externals and rituals is separation, disunion, dissension, factiousness and fractionalization. This is the negative state. For that reason, a language of correspondences and symbolisms is used in The Old Revelation in order to keep intact the unification principle in the within, while, at the same time, allow that separation in the without."

"A good example of this separation in the literal or external sense of The Old Revelation is the way the nature of The Lord Jesus Christ is perceived. Let us take the very first verse of the First Chapter of The Revelation of Jesus Christ in The Holy Bible. It states,"

"The Revelation of Jesus Christ, which God gave Him to show His servants..."

"or Chapter 2, verse 18, the second part of the verse,"

"These things says the Son of God..."

"or Chapter 2, verse 27, the last part of the verse,"

"as I also have received from My Father,"

"and so in many other places in The Holy Bible. The literal meaning of these statements is very plain and obvious: Two separate persons or entities are involved. One is Jesus Christ, or Son of God, the other is God or the Father. In the Epistles of the Apostles and in some places of The Gospels in The New Testament, the third entity is added — The Holy Spirit. Thus, we have here the proverbial Christian Trinity which separated unity, oneness, harmony and integration of One Indivisible God into three distinctly separate entities — One God — but nevertheless in the three persons. Can you visualize one body with three heads on it?"

"The ridiculousness, abomination, atrocity and danger of this separation in the literal sense was already revealed through Emanuel Swedenborg. Yet it continues to plague the so-called Christian religions with a ferocity of strains of flu viruses, resistant to any known means of cure. And if a new medication is found for its cure, the strains of the virus mutate into a new form to incorporate the nature of the new medication, thus, making it useless and ineffective in its therapeutic property. No matter what, the flu and common cold reappear again and again with even greater and more vicious symptoms and deadly complications."

"The reason why it was necessary to speak from the position of this separation was that, at that time, no true spiritual knowledge existed about the fact that all relatedness to God or The Lord Jesus Christ had to be established from within, in one's 'Spiritual Mind;' and not from without. At that time, it was assumed that the true worship or relatedness (to worship means to properly relate) to one's God could be accomplished only by following certain externally prescribed rituals, as can be seen so nicely from the Laws of Moses in the Old Testament and Paul's dictates in the New Testament. For important spiritual reasons, the so-called Christians conveniently disregarded what Jesus Christ said about this in The Gospel According to John, Chapter 4, verse 24,"

"God is Spirit, and those who worship Him must worship in spirit and truth."

"That 'God is Spirit' signifies that God is The Most Within (formerly called 'The Most High'. The Most High is a spiritual correspondence of The Most Within). Spirit is **The Most Within**. To worship Him in spirit and truth means to worship or relate to Him from and in within. Such a worship or relatedness is possible only from and in within each individual, in his/her

Spiritual Mind. The Spiritual Mind of each individual is his/her Most Within where the presence of God is and from which presence everyone lives. This is the truth of the matter. This is the worship in truth because all knowledge of the true spiritual principles can come only from within — from the presence of God in that within. In the within, no separation is possible.”

“No true worship of God is possible from any other position but from the true spiritual principles. These principles are ingrained in everyone’s most within — the Spiritual Mind. Thus, if one does not go into that within, one can never discover and know what the true spirituality and relatedness to and worship of God is all about. One can see only separate elements of the spiritual principles. Again, no unifying principle is available from the position of the without. In such a situation, it is very easy to take one spiritual element and proclaim it to be the only one, the most important one or the only one that counts. Such separation gave rise to the abomination of many religious sects, cults, pseudo-spiritual trends, psychics, false prophets, channelings, mediums, etc.”

“Due to this separation, the judgment of the betrayal of Christianity can take place only from the position of this profane separation. Thus, it is the Son of God who is seen in the literal sense of The Revelation of Jesus Christ in The Holy Bible who judges all elements of that separation.”

“The spiritual principle of this judgment is very clear: Anyone who separates, perverts, distorts, falsifies and mutilates the true unified spiritual principles brings upon oneself the judgment of that separation. Inherent in these adverse states and processes is their self-judgment and self-destruction. The Judgment of the Son of God during that period of time (as revealed in The Old Revelation) is accomplished by His sole presence. “Son of God” denotes Divine Truth of The Lord Jesus Christ. The sole presence of that Divine Truth destroys all pseudo-spiritual principles of the negative state and its efforts in separation.”

“So, whenever any element of that separation fulfills its measure, or measure of its evilness and falsification, it is subject to the judgment. The judgment occurs by a simple illumination of that element with the light of The Divine Truth of The Lord Jesus Christ. In the moment of such illumination, that element disintegrates. No other forceful actions on the part of The Lord Jesus Christ are taken in that process, as the literal sense of The Old Revelation would make one to erroneously believe. Simply stated, by turning His/Her momentary attention on that element, The Lord Jesus Christ disperses with it permanently.”

“On the other hand, The New Revelation is founded on the internal principles of the spiritual life. If one derives everything from and goes for everything into the ‘Most Within’ — the spirit — one does not need to disguise anything in correspondences and symbolism. Everything is open there. The very nature of the Most Within — The Spiritual Mind — is unification, oneness, harmony and integration. No separation is conceivable there. The literal sense of the negative state has no place in that state. Therefore, it perceives The Lord Jesus Christ as the only One God Indivisible, the true ‘Most High’ and the ‘Most Within’ who is all in all (more on the true nature of The Lord Jesus Christ will be revealed in the next Chapter).”

“Thus, in The New Revelation, one is spoken to from the position of that integral oneness. For that reason, no use of words, such as Father, Son, Holy Spirit, Son of God, Son of Man, Jesus, The Most High, Christ, Allah, Buddha, Krishna or whatever name, is permitted any longer. The use of these names or terms exhausted its usefulness and no longer has any true spiritual meaning. To continue rigidly clinging to the usage of these terms, being attracted to them after learning all these facts revealed in The New Revelation, from now on, will keep one in bondage to the negative state. It will be a sign that one is still in the negative

state.”

“This statement can also be used as one of the means for security checks of those who speak under these names or whatever names. One can be assured that they are not coming from The Lord Jesus Christ.”

(6)

“In its inner sense, The Old Revelation contains a multiple meaning of the spiritual reality. It usually comprises the description of various states and processes that occur, are occurring and will occur during the entire cycle of time. This is one of the reasons why proper and timely interpretation of its content is so difficult, if not impossible. Different spiritual states and processes within this cycle of time trigger an entirely different meaning of its content and what its practical utility should be.”

“Thus, as mentioned previously in Major Ideas of The New Revelation, what was the proper and right interpretation yesterday, might not be so today; and what is proper and right today, might not be so tomorrow. This is another important reason why The Old Revelation was written in the language of correspondences and symbolism. Only this type of language can convey such infinitely multiple meanings.”

“As long as this cycle of time is in its being and existence, The Old Revelation will continue to have meaning if seen from the perspective of its inner, spiritual sense and applied from the position of its multiple meanings.”

“However, to derive any spiritual doctrine from its literal sense, as the case was up to this point, is no longer tenable. That sense has been replaced with the precepts of the current ‘New Revelation.’ Anyone who continues to do so endangers one’s spiritual life and condemns oneself to the Hells. From now on, any true spiritual trend is to derive from the principles of The New Revelation and from the inner, spiritual sense of The Old Revelation, as recorded in the inspired books of The Holy Bible. ***The nature of the currently established new spiritual epoch, within this cycle of time, requires that this rule be universally and multiversally applied.***”

“This statement points out the nature of The New Revelation as compared to the Old One. The principles of The New Revelation are fully applicable at all levels of spiritual awareness including their literal sense. Its content is always timely, synchronous and simultaneous with everything that is happening in the entire multiverse here and now. It does not contain multiple meanings specific to each particular spiritual step within this cycle of time.”

“This new portion of The New Revelation is the same for all steps. No multiple interpretations can be given to it because it is in the state and from the state of the ‘Most Within.’ In that state there is only one way and one interpretation. The multiple ways and multiple interpretations occur only when division of and separation from the ‘Most Within’ takes place. But, one of the major purposes of The New Revelation is to bring this fact to the attention of those who are willing to listen and take heed. The shattering fact for many people on your planet will be the realization of the reality that there is no other way. It will be very difficult, if not impossible, for many to accept this fact.”

“If you are used to considering many possible ways leading to the same goal, as people are being taught from the cradle to the grave on your planet, it will not be easy at all to change this rigid view. And, yet, as of now, there is only one way, as outlined in the precepts of The New Revelation and the inner, spiritual sense of The Old Revelation. In this connotation, because of its very nature, The New Revelation, as of now, supersedes all other revelations

that have been given to this point. No other source is acceptable any longer. Whoever has ears to hear this, let him/her hear.”

(7)

“The Old Revelation, due to the nature of the spiritual condition at the time of its transmission, in its literal sense, dealt primarily with the warning, judgment and condemnation of all those who refused to accept on face value the spiritual reality of the positive state. Thus, it is a lake of fire and brimstone, a bottomless pit of misery and suffering, violence and destruction, plagues and disasters and devastations. As you see, its literal sense has a very negative connotation. It is composed of fear, anguish and anxiety.”

“Notice, please, how it mostly talks about fear of God rather than Love of God. The literal meaning of the word ‘fear’ has only a negative connotation. And, although one of the major Commandments of the Two Commandments commands to love your God, that commandment is not repeated too often. Instead, it is replaced with the words ‘fear God and give glory to God,’ etc. The literal connotation of these words is obvious — tremble and shake from the wrath and jealousy of God, etc. What happened here to the positive connotation of love and goodness?”

“The problem is that The Old Revelation spoke primarily to the negative people. The nature of the negative people is such that they despise everything positive. Therefore, if you are to speak to them in the positive connotation, they will either turn their back on you, or laugh at you or pervert its meaning purposefully or will misunderstand it entirely. The only language the negative people can understand and appreciate from their current spiritual condition is the negative one. For that reason, for the sake of salvation, it was necessary to formulate the literal sense of The Old Revelation in the negative terms and concepts so that humans could hear it, understand it and be judged by it if they request to convert to the positive state.”

“On the other hand, The New Revelation describes fully the nature of the negative state, its origin, outcome and reason for its being and existence, without any aspects of its judgment. It speaks primarily to the positive people, to the positive state, giving them insight and understanding of what the negative state is all about. Many people in the positive state, up to this point, had little knowledge about the true nature of the negative state, what its origin was, why it was permitted and what its outcome would be. For that reason, this New Revelation is granted by The Lord Jesus Christ in order to rectify this situation.”

“Notice, also, that The Old Revelation has a widespread reading and acceptance on your planet (albeit only its literal sense), the reason being it speaks mainly to the negative people in their own negative, literal language. On the other hand, you can almost count on your fingers and toes how many people on your planet read, understand and accept The New Revelation — so far. You can be assured that this situation will continue for some time and only selected few individuals will be eager to study and apply it, the reason being that The New Revelation speaks to the positive people of the entire Creation about the negative state and the new spiritual principles that are being implemented in each particular step of their spiritual progression.”

“Therefore, The New Revelation has a tremendously eager acceptance in the rest of Creation. In the negative state and on planet Zero it will either be totally ignored as nonexistent or viciously attacked and condemned as misleading, coming from the negative spirits, and its transmitter considered a mentally ill, delusional person who is being misled by the devil and Satan himself who feeds him all these insane ideas.”

(8)

“The literal ideas of The Old Revelation are presented as a compelling necessity. Meaning, unless you believe and accept what is said by them and do what you are told, you will be rejected and eternally condemned. The favorite emphasis of all zealous preachers on your planet is on the words ‘ eternally condemn ’ Little choice is given in this matter. Here again the negative literal sense of the externals is used. That sense reflects the true nature of the negative state: No choice is given but to be negative. The same way the negative state perceives the positive state. It believes that people in the positive state have no choice but to be positive.”

“As mentioned in the previous portion of The New Revelation (Major Ideas of The New Revelation), to be positive by necessity and not by a free choice means to be in the negative state. There is no difference here. At the time of The Old Revelation, the spiritual condition was such, and also was foreseen to be such until The New Revelation, that freedom of choice was limited to blind faith, taking everything on its face value, by external means, through compelling miracles and commandments of God. That situation is fully reflected in the literal language of The Old Revelation. Thus, as mentioned above, conversion to the positive state from the negative state is determined more by fear of eternal condemnation than by true love of the truth and the nature of the positive state and for the sake of principles themselves.”

“The New Revelation is granted in a timely manner when everyone who wants to may really know that nothing is by necessity but only by freedom of choice. The language of The New Revelation reflects this principle through all its statements, always acknowledging people’s right to accept or to reject anything they want. It only points out that each choice bears its necessary consequences by which it is validated.”

“The only way one can truly be a part of the positive state is through the acquirement of an unconditional profound love of the truth and the nature of the positive state.”

“The New Revelation gives the description of this nature in comparison to the nature of the negative state so that everyone can know clearly and simply what one chooses. The obscurity, uncertainty and contradictions of the negative literal sense of The Old Revelation lack this clarity and simplicity. After all, it speaks from the position of the negative state where there is no clarity and simplicity.”

(9)

“As mentioned at the beginning of this Chapter, The Old Revelation deals, through the language of symbolism and correspondences, mainly with the gradual spiritual deterioration and perversions of The Divine Truth, revealed by The Lord Jesus Christ during His/Her incarnation on your planet, and betrayal and devastation of the Christian religions and churches both on your planet and particularly in the intermediate world of spirits. Also, it deals with all consequences of such devastation for the spiritual state of all concerned and involved. Because it deals primarily with the negative issues, it sounds negative and finalistic, giving an impression that, once you make a choice in either direction — positive or negative — you will be locked forever to eternity in that choice. You will never have an opportunity to change or come out of that condition.”

“Again, this conceptualization of the negative literal sense of The Old Revelation in The Holy Bible is a favorite topic of many sermons from churches’ pulpits.”

“As you see, the negative state likes to put people in the finalistic situation from which they can never come out. Preachers think that only by threat of eternal unchangeable condition can people be kept from choosing the negative state. By this attitude preachers violate the

fundamental spiritual law that states that nothing can be appropriated to anyone by threat, duress and imposition. Even if they change as a result of that threat, that change is only of an external nature. Nothing is changed internally.”

“This situation explains why The Old Revelation was so much accompanied by all kinds of signs and miracles. At that time the spirituality of life was reduced to observation of external rituals. Everything was of this external nature. No internal validation existed. However, spiritual law requires that some form of validation exists.”

“Under spiritual conditions of externalization and ritualization, the only validation of any spiritual principles was possible by the externally performed great signs and miracles. The New Revelation denounces this approach. It is based on the inner or internal validation of perception, recognition and acceptance of truth for the sake of its true content and not because of any miracles.”

“Moreover, The New Revelation emphasizes the eternal freedom of choice and ability to choose. The only thing that cannot be changed eternally is the freedom of choice, to change from any condition and situation. One can never be locked in one condition or state forever by any other means but by one’s own freedom of choice. This is one of the most fundamental principles of The New Revelation that makes it so different from any other, including The Old Revelation.”

“He/she who has ears, let him/her hear what The Lord Jesus Christ reveals in this Chapter.”

CHAPTER TWO

THE NATURE OF THE LORD JESUS CHRIST

On January 24, 1988, at 9:10 Sunday morning, the word of The Lord Jesus Christ came to me, saying,

“The most important spiritual issue in being and existence is the proper understanding and acceptance of the true Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ. On proper understanding and acceptance of this concept, the life of the entire Creation and all its inhabitants depends.”

“There is an enormous amount of confusion about this issue. It can be subsumed under the following questions:”

“1. Is The Lord Jesus Christ the true and the only God, One Indivisible, The Most High who incorporates all other known names by which people all over the entire Creation call Him/Her?”

“2. Is The Lord Jesus Christ only an external form which is utilized by The Lord God Most High for His/Her manifestation to His/Her Creation? Are The Lord Jesus Christ and The Lord Most High distinctly different Entities?”

“3. Is The Lord Jesus Christ the only begotten Son of God who was created directly by God Most High for the specific purpose of becoming a Savior of Creation from the negative state of evils and falsities, and who was attributed the Godhood or Divinity by virtue of the fact that He was the only Son of God?”

“4. Is The Lord Jesus Christ only one of many sons of God who was a special messenger or Avatar of God Most High for bringing to people’s minds the true reality of spiritual principles?”

“5. Is The Lord Jesus Christ only a historical figure who, at one time, appeared on planet Zero and became enlightened by the true spiritual principles, becoming the Christ’s consciousness, compelled to share them with the rest of His community?”

“6. Is The Lord Jesus Christ a powerful spirit who was able to materialize Himself on your planet in the body of Jesus without actually going through the physical birth?”

“7. Is The Lord Jesus Christ a fictitious figure who in actuality never existed but, instead, was fabricated by some desperate Jews who needed some myth and legend to get their point across to the rest of their nation?”

“The first three questions have enormous spiritual significance and relate directly to the issue of The New Revelation. The last four questions were fabricated in the Hells in order to place in people’s minds all possible doubts about the true Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ and, thus, to keep them in bondage of the negative state. The Hells know only too well that everyone’s position and placement in Creation depend upon the proper understanding and acceptance of the true Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ. The more people doubt or outrightly reject the notion of the true Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ, the more choose to go to Hell

and the more powerful the negative state becomes.”

“In order to keep people in even greater obscurity, confusion on and falsification of this issue, in recent years, on your planet, you are witnessing numerous transmissions from the spiritual world through the so-called channels that claim to be ‘Christ,’ or ‘Jesus,’ or ‘Lord,’ or ‘God,’ or ‘Seth,’ or ‘Archangel Michael,’ or ‘Archangel Gabriel’ or many other ancient and less ancient names both from Western and Eastern Cultures. They all elaborate on the nature of The Lord Jesus Christ. The elaboration they offer is in the spirit of the last four questions and, partially, in some instances, in the spirit of the third question. They all profess and confess that they speak the truth and that they come from God or they are God.”

“It is hereby being revealed and proclaimed by the true Lord Jesus Christ that all these messages come from the negative state. They speak lies and distortions in the name of The Lord Jesus Christ or whatever name they are using. They were not sent by The Lord Jesus Christ and they are all self-proclaimed false prophets. They use many elements of the real spiritual truths, stolen from The New Revelation, embellished by numerous falsities, for the purpose of keeping people in spiritual darkness, blindness and slavery to the negative state, and especially away from the proper understanding and acceptance of the true Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ.”

“You have to understand here that the tactics and methods of the negative state have fundamentally changed. It is no longer popular for the agents of the negative state to come to people with an ugly, threatening, mean and cruel face. No one would accept such a face. And, although there are many demons who incarnate on your planet with such a face, the main thrust at the present time is in the direction of appearing to people as very nice, clean-cut, attractive, even with beautiful faces, expressing outmost kindness, with words and with acts of love and wisdom. In this manner, they are very convincing, making it easier to accept them as coming from the positive state.”

“The present cunning and deceitful tactics of the negative state are permitted by The Lord Jesus Christ for two purposes:”

“1. To fully manifest the true nature of the negative state as an example and learning for the entire Creation of what not to choose;”

“2. To test and differentiate the agents and followers of the positive state from the agents and slaves of the negative state.”

“Thus, you are hereby being warned not to listen to or follow any of them and not to attend any of their activities, worships, meetings, workshops or whatever they have, because they are extremely poisonous, able to endanger your spiritual well-being and cloud and obscure the voice of your spiritual intuition.”

“In order to acquire the correct understanding of the true Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ, one has to consider the first three questions:”

“1. Is The Lord Jesus Christ a true God and is there no other God?”

“2. Is The Lord Jesus Christ an Entity used by The Most High God for His/Her manifestation to people?”

“3. Is The Lord Jesus Christ the only begotten Son of God having His/Her own Divinity but, nevertheless, separate from the true Most High?”

“The rest of the four questions have no meaning and validity. They are totally false. To answer these questions properly we need to go back to the time of the physical birth of Jesus Christ on your planet.”

“In the Fundamentals of Human Spirituality, the first portion of The New Revelation after Swedenborg, on pages 170-171 it is implied that, in the process of the physical birth of Jesus Christ, two elements were utilized for the preparation of the physical body of Jesus Christ — one from Mary and the other from Joseph.”

“Based on this statement, some unwise people who read that book incorrectly concluded that its transmitter denied the immaculate conception of the birth of The Lord Jesus Christ, meaning that there was physical sexual intercourse between Joseph and Mary and that The God Most High used that body and placed His/Her Mentality into it, making it, by that process, divine.”

“No such foolish claims were made in that book. However, the spiritual condition at the time that book was written was such that it did not allow the full disclosure of the mysterious process of the physical birth of The Lord Jesus Christ. But now the time is favorable for this ‘New Revelation.’ And although the process in itself is very difficult, if not impossible, to describe in human terms, nevertheless, some light can be shed on this most important event in the history of Creation.”

“The process of the physical birth of The Lord Jesus Christ was accomplished by the principle of **hybridization**. This principle states that **two or more totally different elements, if fused together, will give birth to an entirely different element that so far has not been in being and existence**. In the case of The Lord Jesus Christ’s physical birth, three elements were utilized. One from God Most High, one from Mary and one from Joseph.”

“Before proceeding further, it is necessary to understand that Creation of any life form requires three initial building blocks: one feminine, one masculine and one unifying catalyst. Lack of any one ends in a spontaneous abortion or death birth. On your planet, planet Zero, the unifying catalyst is always of a spiritual nature (whether genuine, in the case of the birth of a positive entity, or stolen and distorted, in the case of the birth of a negative entity). The feminine and masculine principle, respectively, are always of the environmental nature, specific to the environment of your planet.”

“From the spiritual element, the spiritual or the most within mind of any entity is built; from the feminine element, the interior mind or mentality or soul of the entity is built; and from the masculine element, the external or conscious mind is built. The physical body is built from the combination of all three and the elements of the physical environment; or, in other words, the spiritual element constitutes the spirit of any entity; the feminine element is its soul; and the masculine element is its form of expression, impression and behavior.”

“The spiritual element usually is the result of the spiritual birth of an idea coming from either the positive state or the negative state. Subsequently, this idea is synchronously imparted on the two spouses or lovers on your planet which results in the physical birth of the new human being. However, in the case of The Lord Jesus Christ, the situation was uniquely different. First of all, there was no sexual intercourse between Joseph and Mary. The literal sense of The Holy Bible is correct in assuming that Mary was a virgin at the time of this conception. Secondly, while Joseph was asleep, The Most High took out of Joseph the most suitable element and fused it with the most appropriate element taken out of Mary.”

“However, in this particular case, the spiritual catalyst-idea was not used for vivifying the outcome of this fusion, as the case is with the development of a human fetus. As you are aware, the spiritual catalyst-idea is needed to bring the unique life into that fetus, the reason being that any life at all is from the spiritual state. No life is possible without the spiritual idea functioning as a catalyst to bring about the vivification of the newly born human being. No other source of life ever existed, exists, or will exist.”

“In the case of The Lord Jesus Christ, a totally new element was brought into the picture and used for fusion with the previously fused elements that came from Mary and Joseph. The Most High God took out a very specific and most suitable element from Himself/Herself, from His/Her Absolute Exterior Mind and fused it with Mary’s and Joseph’s elements. This is a process of hybridization. As a result of this process, an entirely new life form came into its being and existence that had never been produced up to that point and will never be produced again to eternity.”

“Because of the use of The Absolute Divine Element that was imparted onto and fused with the elements coming from Mary and Joseph, the hybrid, which was produced by such a fusion and combination, was called the Son of God. This is the reason why Archangel Gabriel said to Mary,”

“‘The Holy Spirit will come upon you, and the power of the Highest will overshadow you; Therefore, also, that Holy One who is to be born will be called the Son of God’ (The Gospel According to Luke, 1:35).”

“The great unexplainable mystery here is in the process of separating one Absolute Divine Element of God Most High from the totality of His/Her Absolute Being and Absolute Existence, and hybridizing it with the mortal relative elements of the two human beings, the bodies, the pattern of which was originally fabricated by the so-called pseudocreators (the concept of “pseudo-creators” was explained in the previous books of The New Revelation by this transmitter and will be elaborated upon later on in the process of the transmission of this portion of The New Revelation).”

“As mentioned above, this has never been done before and never will be done again. For that reason, the birth of The Lord Jesus Christ was a unique, one time occurrence, and no Avatar, human being or any sentient entity, or any prophet or messenger of God, or whatever or whoever, has or will ever be born by such a process. Thus, the claims of Godhood in the case of such figures as Buddha, Krishna and all other old Avatars is totally false. The presence of God Most High was with them but they were not gods and no **direct** Divinity was imparted upon or into them.”

“This situation explains the possibility of question number three, as formulated at the beginning of this chapter: Is The Lord Jesus Christ the only begotten Son of God? Whatever is separated or taken out from God directly and hybridized with that which came from the two humans is called the Son of God because it carries in itself The Absolute Divinity in a direct fusion (and not only as a principle of the spiritual presence of the idea-catalyst in which The Most High, as Life, is always present). You have to remember an important spiritual principle: God Most High is present in His/Her totality, in His/Her fullness, in every His/Her Absolute Element which comprises His/Her Absolute Being and Existence. Thus, He/She was present, through that Element, in Jesus Christ from the very moment of conception.”

“The second mystery of this process of hybridization is distribution of the content of those three elements from which this Divine in Human Form was comprised. In the case of regular

birth of humans, the following distribution occurs: From the masculine element of father the external form and the conscious external mind and unconscious processes of the external mind with all their attributes are built. From the feminine element of mother the interior mind and its mentality and all its attributes is built. The spiritual idea-catalyst uses all these attributes and forms a specific soul to which it imparts a unique spirit in the form of the 'Most Within — the Spiritual Mind.'"

"In the case of The Lord Jesus Christ's birth, the first step was the fusion of the two elements provided by Mary and Joseph. The Most High took these two elements to the special intermediate world of spirits. In that world, Mary's and Joseph's elements were fused in a very unusual manner, not comprehensible by any mode of human understanding. After the process of this fusion was completed, the third element, taken out or separated from The Most High, was added to and fused with the already established fusion of the two previous elements. Once this unusual fusion was completed, its result was placed by The Most High into Mary's womb for development into a special type of fetus and subsequent physical birth."

"You have to understand that this fusion has absolutely nothing in common with what happens between the male sperm and female egg during pregnancy. In the process of this fusion, the specific human mentality and human spirit were removed from those two elements with everything else pertaining to them. The result of this fusion was the external form and human body that contained in its genes all accumulated experiences of evils and falsities from the moment of activation of the negative state by the pseudo-creators and their own elements, which they imparted into their fabrications, as long as this type of human body will exist (until the negative state will exist)."

"All evils were accumulated in the genes coming from the feminine element of Mary and all accumulated falsities came from the genes of Joseph's masculine element. On the other hand, from The Absolute Element of The Absolute Exterior Mind of The Most High, in the state of separation from Him/Her, the special condition was built into which, later on, two other elements from The Most High were added and fused into the totality of what comprised Jesus Christ. One element from The Absolute Interior Mind of The Most High and one element from The Absolute Spiritual Mind of The Most High were separated and combined with the above-described Hybrid. From The Absolute Exterior Mind, the spirit, the soul and the entire mentality of Jesus Christ were built and placed into that body. The two other elements were added and fused into this mentality and spirit of Jesus Christ later on. (More about the latter fusion and its mystery will be revealed throughout this book)."

"Thus, in the nature of Jesus Christ, in the content of His Spirit, Soul and His Mentality, absolutely nothing came from anything human, but was directly taken out of The Lord God Most High. This is a crucial distinction between the birth of everyone else on your planet without exception or exclusion, and the birth of The Lord Jesus Christ. It is repeated here again and again, such a situation has never occurred before and will never occur again to eternity."

"Although the process of separation of The Absolute Elements, first from The Absolute Exterior Mind of The Most High, then, later on, from His/Her Absolute Interior and Absolute Spiritual Mind, respectively, cannot be described in human terms and comprehended by the limited and ignorant human mind at all, the need for that separation can be understood. Without separation of that originally one Absolute Element, the fusion would be with all Absolute Elements of The Most High. In the process of such fusion, not only the relative elements, taken from Mary and Joseph, would be annihilated by the totality of The Absolute State and Absolute Process, but the entire Zone of Displacement, your entire planet and all the Hells would cease to exist instantaneously. No one could withstand such an Absolute

Presence, especially those who live in evils and falsities. In that case, the purpose of incarnation of The Lord Jesus Christ would miss its point and no eternal elimination of the negative state could ever come to its fruition. However, in the state of separation, that Presence is tempered sufficiently enough to be able to shield the relative elements and everything else from their annihilation.“

“Seen from the standpoint of this separation, The Lord Jesus Christ, during His/Her life on your planet, can be really conceived as the only begotten Son of God. In the state of that separation, it is not surprising that He spoke about God, prayed to God and communicated with God as someone who was separate from Him — a totally different person or entity. During His earthly life, He was exactly in that role.”

“However, the problem with this conceptualization of the true Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ lies in the fact that this state was considered to be a permanent one. People who formulated the third question, noted at the beginning of this chapter, incorrectly assumed that this is a true eternal state and role of The Lord Jesus Christ. They do not conceive the idea that the state of separation is a transient and temporary one. Anything detached from its home base desires to be reunited with its home.”

“Thus, these people missed one of the most fundamental reasons for this separation — to bring the entire negative state under the control of The Divine Providence of The Lord Jesus Christ (which was not the case up to that point), and, after completion of this mission, ***not only to reunite Itself to Its Original Source, but bring with Himself/Herself that unique Hybrid in its totality and impart it into The Lord God Most High.***”

“However, in order to be able to accomplish this most crucial and vital mission, the human body of Jesus Christ, which was built from the two elements coming from Mary and Joseph, had to be made divine first, similarly as The Divine of that Absolute Element was made human. This process was accomplished by gradual step-by-little-step, so as not to annihilate that body, removing all evils and falsities contained in it, and replacing them, by the process of another fusion, with the elements coming from The Absolute Interior Mind — Divine Good and Truth and Absolute Spiritual Mind — Divine Love and Wisdom of The Most High.”

“The process of this replacement was the process of combats with, temptation and attacks by all forces of the Hells. During such combats, temptations and attacks, the separation of The Divine of The Lord Jesus Christ was most obvious and pronounced. It was in the moment of such combats and temptations that He/She spoke about His/Her God, Father as a separate Entity. When not in such a state, He/She proclaimed that He/She and His/Her Father are One and the same Person. Once all evils and falsities of that body were repudiated and replaced with all attributes of the two additional elements that came from The Absolute Interior Mind and Absolute Spiritual Mind of The Most High, after the last temptation on the cross and in the process of resurrection, that human body of Jesus Christ was made Divine and eternally immortal, subject only to the spiritual laws and to no decay to eternity.”

“The third crucial mystery in this process is the mystery of reunification of those Original Absolute Elements of The Lord God Most High to their original source ***with the inclusion of the physical body, now made Divine, into the Godhood of The Most High.***”

“No problems exist with the unification of the Original Elements to their Original Source because they belong there naturally. The problem is with the physical body. Although it was made Divine by the abovementioned process, it still was built from the elements of time and space and the Zone of Displacement. Due to this fact, the unification and inclusion of that body into the totality of Godhood must take time and place, yielding to the laws that govern

the time-space continuum.”

“As this extremely important process takes place and time, The Most High uses the body of Jesus Christ to appear to the members of His/ Her Creation — to His/Her people — establishing with them a very private, personal, intimate, loving and parental relationship. Now, in that body, The Most High, as Jesus Christ, can be touched, physically felt, hugged and held. No such direct possibility existed up to that time. Before that, The Most High used His/Her angels when He/She communicated with people.”

“From this situation you can see how the second question, formulated at the beginning of this chapter, arose: Does The Most High use the form of Jesus Christ to communicate with His/Her people? Again, as was the case with the third question, people incorrectly assumed that this is a permanent state lasting to eternity. Nothing is further from the truth. In the interim period, this has been a true situation until recently, as the situation, posed in question number three, had been true during The Lord Jesus Christ’s life on your planet.”

“However, the fact is that the process of unification with and inclusion of the physical body of Jesus Christ into The Most High had continued. While this process had continued, there were still some conditions of separation present. Because of that, The Revelation of Jesus Christ in The Holy Bible was dictated and written from the position of that separation. Therefore, even there, The Lord Jesus Christ speaks of Himself as Son of God, Lamb of God or as someone different from the true God. As long as some degree of separation exists, such language is tenable because it contains some grains of truth. After all, separation is separation, seen apart from that from which it is separated, although now in a much closer proximity to it than before (as was the case during His/Her life on your planet).”

“But the effort is made to totally eliminate this separation. ***In the process of this elimination and reunification, the nature of that part which is called Jesus Christ and that part which is called The Lord God Most High fundamentally change.*** At one point all elements of time and space are entirely repudiated from that body and replaced with different elements of non-time and non-space.”

“In this new condition, that body becomes the integral part of the totality of the original Most High who changes now into The Lord Jesus Christ — the only One God Indivisible — totally unified and integrated in all His/Her elements.”

“Thus, we have here a new **Absolute Spiritual Hybrid** that is named not God, not The Most High, not the Lord, not the Holy Spirit, not Jesus, not Christ, not Jesus Christ, but **THE LORD JESUS CHRIST**. No one else on that level exists or ever will exist. This is a crucial and vital spiritual distinction.”

“Let it be known now to all in the entire Creation and to all in the Zone of Displacement that this most fundamental step of all steps in being and existence was completed (to what corresponds on your planet, planet Zero) shortly before Christmas of 1987. Those who have ears to hear, let them hear what is being revealed here.”

“The consequences of this act for the entire Creation and for the Zone of Displacement are incalculable and will rock the foundation of the entire being and existence for eons to come.”

“Thus, an entirely new spiritual state came into its being and existence. From this new state, the answer to the question about the true Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ can be finally clearly formulated. Question number one, posed at the beginning of this Chapter, is the

correct one.”

“The Lord Jesus Christ is the only Lord, God, The Most High One Indivisible Creator who made His/Her Divine Human and His/Her Human Divine. All other questions became either obsolete (number two and number three), exhausting their usefulness, or they were entirely false (questions four through seven). As of now, the only acceptable proper spiritual approach is the approach to The Lord Jesus Christ. All other names and means have become irreversibly obsolete and irrelevant.”

Moreover, on January 25, 1988, at 5:50 a.m., the word of The Lord Jesus Christ came to me, saying:

“Please, continue in the transmission of this portion of The New Revelation regarding the true Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ.”

“For better understanding of this issue, the new correspondential meaning and relatedness of the words ‘The Lord Jesus Christ’ now will be revealed: ‘The Lord’ signifies and reflects The Absolute Spiritual Mind of The Lord Jesus Christ, His/Her Absolute Spirit, the Only One Who Always Is from eternity to eternity.”

“In the old connotation, ‘the Lord’ incorporated what was known under the names ‘God,’ ‘Most High,’ ‘Creator,’ ‘Jehovah,’ etc. It also signifies the eternal Absolute Marriage of all Absolute Principles of Divine Love and Divine Wisdom.”

“The word ‘Jesus’ relates to all aspects and principles which comprise The Absolute Interior Mind or Absolute Mentality and the eternal process of Absolute Mentation of The Lord Jesus Christ. This is The Absolute Feminine Principle of The Lord Jesus Christ. In it are contained all infinite varieties of the principles of Absolute Divine Goodness, Affection, Warmth, Loving-kindness, Compassion, Empathy, Innocence and Humility.”

“The Word ‘Christ’ denotes all aspects and principles of The Absolute Masculinity of The Lord Jesus Christ. It relates to His Absolute Exterior Mind. Here are contained all infinite varieties of The Absolute Divine Spiritual and Natural Truth, Intelligence, Rationality, Logic, Reasoning, Thought Processes, Perception, Awareness, Modesty and Humbleness. In The Lord Jesus Christ all these aspects are in The Absolute Unity, Oneness and Harmony without any separation or division.”

“Into all these aspects was added the human body, acquired on your planet, after it was made divine by the process described above and in the Major Ideas of The New Revelation. The function of that body is manifold:”

“1. It allowed direct physical contact with The Lord Jesus Christ;”

“2. It made it possible for everyone to have a sensory experiential perception of The Lord Jesus Christ;”

“3. It gave Him/Her a possibility of entrance into any region of the Zone of Displacement without annihilating anyone by His/Her presence.”

“4. It made The Lord Jesus Christ the only Absolute Being who comprises all elements in being and existence including something which was initially fabricated by the pseudocreators (up to that point nothing of the physical or of the Zone of Displacement was contained within The Most High);”

“5. It allowed The Lord Jesus Christ to directly and personally experience the impact of the negative state exactly the way humans and other participants in the negative state experience it (it is impossible to experience the negative state in the State of Absolute Goodness and Truth);”

“6. It gave to The Absolute Lord Jesus Christ a direct experience of how it felt to be relative as all other entities and humans. The human body of Jesus Christ was comprised of some relative elements of time and space continuum and the Zone of Displacement (fall out elements). Nothing of that nature existed before within The Most High.”

“7. It made it possible for The Lord Jesus Christ to feel intimately and personally what and how the relative beings and entities feel and to relate to them from their position in a very private, intimate, unique and personal manner. Before that such a relationship was never direct but through mediation only (through angels).”

“From these briefly stated reasons (they are not the only ones but are the ones that are ready to be known to all), it is obvious how important, vital and crucial it was for the human body of The Lord Jesus Christ to be taken with Him/Her after resurrection.”

“Another, more mysterious and mystical reason is that, without that step, and without incorporation and inclusion of that body into the totality of The Lord Jesus Christ’s Absolute Being and Absolute Existence, the final elimination of the negative state would be impossible. It is impossible to eliminate anything without first experiencing the fullness of its nature.”

“Remember, initially, in The Most High, there was nothing of the negative state in a direct, experiential mode. As you remember from Major Ideas of The New Revelation, the promise was made by The Most High to all Creation and to all participants in the Zone of Displacement, that at the opportune time The Most High Himself/ Herself would enter the negative state, for the purpose of fully experiencing and knowing it first hand, conquering it, subjugating it and preparing the way for its total elimination after it served its purpose as a learning experience for the entire Creation of what life is like without the positive state, true God and true spiritual principles.”

“Without having such direct experience, the elimination of the negative state could not be accomplished. Nothing can be accomplished from the without of anything. It is a multiversal law of Creation that the only way anything is accomplished is from the within of that which is the subject of accomplishment. Being that The Lord Jesus Christ is The Absolute Law and Order in Himself/Herself (from the position of what the word ‘Christ’ corresponds to), He/She must do it that way. Otherwise it would be a denial of Himself/Herself. Such a denial would end in the abolishment of The Absolute Being and Existence of The Lord Jesus Christ with subsequent abolishment of the entire Creation.”

“For this reason, it is obvious that the elimination of the negative state is possible only from the within of the negative state and not from the without. The human body of Jesus Christ, which was made Divine, makes it possible for Him/Her to enter the negative state at any time, at any place and to commence the elimination of the negative state, when the time is right, from its very within.”

“In this act lies the true mystery of the function of The Lord Jesus Christ as a Savior, not only of humankind, but of the entire Creation. Without this act, the negative state would not only stay forever, but eventually would win the case, overrun, and destroy the entire Creation.

Through the human body, The Lord Jesus Christ fully controls the negative state and permits only as much as necessary for the full exposure of its ugly face and nature.”

“From this New Revelation it is obvious how important it is for everyone to accept the fact that The Lord Jesus Christ is the only One God Indivisible who made His/Her Divine human and Her/His Human Divine. Without this acceptance, no one can be saved. By rejecting this act, one rejects for oneself the possibility of being saved from the negative state. Any act of liberation from the negative state of evils and falsities must begin with the acceptance of this fact. But, let us go back to the Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ.”

“In view of the above-revealed important facts, it is obvious why no other names of God are any longer acceptable when worshiping The Lord Jesus Christ. It is not sufficient to say ‘The Lord’ alone, or ‘Jesus’ alone, or ‘Christ’ alone, or any other name alone. To do so means separation of the spiritual principles. One cannot be heard from the position of separation but only from the position of unification. By saying ‘The Lord Jesus Christ,’ one establishes a foundation from which one can be heard and related to because in this manner one addresses the unified totality of Oneness of The Lord Jesus Christ.”

“If you pray to and worship ‘The Lord,’ or ‘Jesus,’ or ‘Christ’ in separation, you inadvertently evoke the negative state. Remember, the nature of the negative state is a complete separation. The negative state of the Hells loves when people pray and worship from the position of this separation. It opens the door for the negative entities to enter into them, giving them a false notion that they are ‘The Lord,’ or ‘Jesus,’ or ‘Christ’ or ‘Jesus Christ,’ or ‘The Lord Jesus’ or ‘The Lord Christ,’ or whatever combination of names they use. This is happening on your planet in an alarming frequency.”

“The operation, government and regulation of Creation from the position of The Lord Jesus Christ can be called The Divine Providence of The Lord Jesus Christ. Continuous, unceasing activities and actions of The Lord Jesus Christ from His/Her Absolute Within to Her/His Absolute Without produce Spiritual Energies.”

“These Energies constantly emanate, proceed and penetrate the entire Creation, all its inhabitants and agents of the positive state within the Zone of Displacement. They illuminate and inspire them, give them insight, and proper intuition and discernment of that which is proper, correct and right. This process of The Lord Jesus Christ used to be called by the name of ‘Holy Spirit.’ This term can be retained, as long as The Holy Spirit of The Lord Jesus Christ is perceived as His/ Her Divine activities and not as a separate Entity of the proverbial Christian Trinity, in the sense of the pseudo-Christian conceptualization of the Trinity.”

“The concept of ‘Trinity,’ in the present understanding of its concept, can be conceptualized as the unification of all that which comprises the words ‘Lord,’ ‘Jesus’ and ‘Christ’ as explained above. So are the words ‘Father,’ ‘Son’ and ‘Holy Spirit.’ The latter words — ‘Father,’ ‘Son’ and ‘Holy Spirit’ — in the connotation of The New Revelation, became totally obsolete. Subsequently, in the process of the above-described fusion, hybridization and unification, there is no longer Father, Son and Holy Spirit, or Son of God or Son of Man. They are all now incorporated into one term — The Lord Jesus Christ.”

“For this reason, it is very important to realize that, as of now, whoever reads these words — this position of The New Revelation, granted by The Lord Jesus Christ — and yet fails to accept this truth into his/ her heart, and continues to worship other ‘gods,’ such as Buddha, Krishna, Allah, Jehovah, The Lord, God, Jesus, Christ, Manitou, or whatever name one uses for that purpose, such a person commits spiritual adultery. By that act, he/she condemns himself/herself to Hell.”

“However, as you know, on your planet the majority of people will not have an opportunity to read these words. After all, the negative state, being in full dominance and control on planet Zero, by the permission of The Lord Jesus Christ, will make it impossible for The New Revelation to be in widespread use for the time being. The New Revelation is more for the benefit of the entire Creation and only for a very few people on your planet.”

“People who have no information about this important spiritual fact and, therefore, will continue worshipping other so-called ‘gods,’ under whatever name and form, after they depart their planet and enter the intermediate world of spirits, will be given all kinds of opportunities to study The New Revelation. The acceptance of its ideas will make it possible for them to be enrolled in the New School and undergo the process of spiritual transformation. Others, who will stubbornly cling to their original ‘earthly’ religion or whatever belief system they had, will condemn themselves to one of the Hells, suitable to their nature, until the time they become ready to accept the truth of The New Revelation.”

On January 26, 1988, at 6:10 a.m., again the word of The Lord Jesus Christ came to me, saying:

“May I ask you humbly and in all humility to finish transmission of this Chapter? Thank you very much.”

“In view of the profound multiversal changes, resulting from the change of the Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ and how this Nature is being conceptualized, it is necessary to change the initial wording of what is known to the so-called Christians as The Lord’s prayer. In the old way, the prayer begins with the words, ‘Our Father in heaven...’ By the authority and order of The Lord Jesus Christ, this wording is replaced with the words, ‘Our Lord Jesus Christ in heaven ’ This replacement reflects the present state of spiritual condition in the entire Creation and its multiverse. The Lord Jesus Christ is the heavenly Father/Mother God, The Most High, One Indivisible Creator who was, is and is to be from eternity to eternity. (More on The Lord’s Prayer, see Chapter 26 of this book.)”

“One more issue needs to be revealed in this Chapter. It relates to the separation of The Absolute element from The Absolute Exterior Mind of The Most High and fusing it with Mary’s and Joseph’s elements in order to create a unique spiritual-mental-physical Hybrid. Although the process by which this act was accomplished is impossible to fully understand by anyone in Creation and its multiverse, some limited reasons why The Absolute Exterior Mind was utilized for this purpose can be revealed.”

(1)

“As you remember from the Chapter on ‘Spiritual Metaphysics’ in Four Concepts of the Spiritual Structure of Creation, it was revealed that the spiritual universe or Heavens were created from the elements and energies of The Absolute Spiritual Mind of The Most High (at that time this mind was called The Absolute Inner Mind. This term changed for the reasons which will be revealed later). The intermediate universe was created from the elements and energies of The Absolute Interior Mind of The Most High. And the natural or physical universe was created from the elements and energies of The Absolute Exterior Mind of The Most High.”

“Each universe, by virtue of its structure and purpose for which it was created, reflects the nature of that area of The Creator from which it was conceived. Because each Absolute Mind has a fundamentally different nature and function in its unity, oneness and harmony, each universe, in turn, is fundamentally different from the others. And yet, in their unity, oneness

and harmony, they represent a beautiful cohesive wholeness.”

“Whatever operations are taking place in each universe, they stem from The Absolute operations of that level of The Absolute Mind of The Creator from which they were created. Thus, all operations and activities of the spiritual universe or Heavens directly relate to, and are a direct consequence of the operations and activities of The Absolute Spiritual Mind of The Most High or, in the new terminology, of that area of The Lord Jesus Christ which corresponds to the word ‘Lord.’”

“On the other hand, all activities and operations of the intermediate universe relate to and are a direct consequence of the operations and activities of The Absolute Interior Mind of The Most High or, in the new terminology, of that area of The Lord Jesus Christ which corresponds to the word ‘Jesus.’ And, finally, all activities and operations of the natural or physical universe directly relate to and are a direct consequence of the operations and activities of The Absolute Exterior Mind of The Most High or, in the new terminology, of that area of The Lord Jesus Christ which corresponds to the word ‘Christ.’”

“Because of the correspondential meaning and a discrete, and not continuous or linear, arrangement of the structure and dynamics of both The Creator and His/Her Creation, no substitutions from one area to another are possible or conceivable. This simply would not work. As you remember, the negative state originated at the level of the most outward area of the natural or physical universe or what used to be called planet Earth (now it is called planet Zero). Planet Earth, at that time, was created from the most external, outward elements and energies of The Absolute Exterior Mind of The Most High.”

“At this level, at the level of the most external outwardness or externalization, the initiation of the negative state occurred. Let it be known now again that no other level of Creation and its multiverse is capable of the initiation of the negative state. It is contradictory to its very nature and is not conceivable in any area of its perceptual mode.”

“On the other hand, the most extreme level of outwardness is capable of such initiation because of its relatively remote position from the spiritual Center. Thus, the question of what life would be like without any spiritual principles, or distorted spiritual principles or without God, or what life would be like if it were to be derived from the non-spiritual principles, could easily occur on this level. Why this question was asked was explained in the book Fundamentals Of Human Spirituality. As you remember, when that question was tested, all participants in that experiment with their planet Earth fell out into the Zone of Displacement (see the First Chapter in the book The Four Concepts of the Spiritual Structure of Creation). At that time planet Earth became planet Zero.”

“In order for The Most High to deal with the negative state at that time, it was necessary to seek out the most appropriate element to that Zone for the purpose of incarnating into it and taking a firm hold there. The most external element of The Absolute External Mind of The Most High was used for that purpose. After all, from that Mind the entire physical or natural universe was created. And it was from this universe that initiation of the negative state commenced.”

“Thus, it is only logical that that element would be used for the purpose of fusion and creating a hybrid from which the creation of the entire physical universe derived. No other elements from any other source or region of The Absolute Mind could have been used. They simply could not take hold there. It would be like a foreign body in the human body. The human body is inherently intolerant of any foreign bodies within its system. It has a tendency to reject them. However, it accepts something which is of its own or of the same original nature.”

“The process of hybridization could not take place between fused elements, taken out from Mary and Joseph, or any other elements which would come from any other area other than the most outward element of The Absolute Exterior Mind of The Most High. As you remember, the word ‘Christ’ corresponds to that external mind. This is the reason why the Christ was born on your planet. Only The Christ, the natural truth of The Most High’s Absolute Divine could take hold in the Zone of Displacement, which is a fallout of the physical universe.”

“Thus, in the formation of the physical body for Jesus Christ originally three elements were used. One element was from Mary and one element from Joseph.”

“After their fusion, the third element was added which was separated from or taken out of The Most High (Absolute Exterior Mind). Thus, natural truth, ‘Christ,’ was incorporated in that body for the purpose of experiencing the entire ugly nature of evils and falsities of the negative state, contained in the elements taken from Mary (all evils), and from Joseph (all falsities). By fusing with them, Christ, or the natural truth from its spiritual nature, could experience all of the negative state directly without any danger of annihilation of either component or anyone in the negative state.”

(2)

“Once such a hybridized body was created and properly fused and grounded, the next step was to endow it with a special mentality consistent with the mission of Jesus Christ on your planet and in the negative state of all the Hells. The Christ position of that hybridized body, the way it was mysteriously fused, now could sufficiently moderate and shield The Divine Mentality from being overwhelmed or corrupted by the negative state. The Divine Mentality of Jesus Christ, at that time, was established by the process of endowment of a portion that came from The Absolute Interior Mind of The Most High which corresponds to the word ‘Jesus.’ A very special element was taken out from this Mind and fused with the rest of the new hybrid. Hence, the incarnation of Jesus Christ.”

“The necessity for this act stems from the fact that truth is alive from its good, as good is perceptive and discerning of its truth. As ‘Christ’ corresponds to truth, so ‘Jesus’ corresponds to good.”

“By suppression and removal of all earthly mentality of the elements taken out of Joseph and Mary, in the process of their fusion, the mentality of The Most High, from which The Interior Mind of Jesus Christ was created, was endowed into that body .”

(3)

“The mentality — ‘Jesus’ — together with the natural truth from its spiritual essence — ‘Christ’ — which ruled the physical body — hybrid — was able to establish a state and favorable shielding for the true Spirit of The Most High to enter Jesus Christ without endangering the Zone of Displacement or Jesus Christ’s elements that came from His/Her earthly parents.”

“At the same time, it kept intact the ability of experiencing the ugly nature of the negative state for the purpose of its subjugation, putting it in order and conquering it within Himself/Herself and in general. From the special element of The Absolute Spirit, or Absolute Spiritual Mind of The Most High, The Most Within Spiritual Mind of Jesus Christ was formed. Again the process of a very special fusion of this new Spiritual Element with the rest of the physical and mental Hybrid was applied.”

(4)

“Thus, you can see clearly that The Most Within Spiritual Mind of Jesus Christ was of a pure, unconditional Divinity, stemming directly from The Most High’s Absolute Spiritual Mind. His/Her Interior Mind or Mentality or Soul was formed directly from The Absolute Mentality or The Absolute Interior Mind of The Most High. His/Her Exterior or External Mind was formed from The Absolute Exterior Mind of The Most High. In the formation of His/Her physical body, the special process of hybridization was used, in which fusion of the three elements, as described above, took place.”

“Subsequent to the completion of The Lord Jesus Christ’s mission, the elements of the physical body that came from Mary and Joseph were purified and cleansed from all evils and falsities, filled instead with Divine Attributes of goodness and truth, and made eternally divine.”

“From this exposition, it is obvious that The Lord Jesus Christ, in all His/Her aspects, including His/Her physical body, was a true God, in whom The Most High was from the very beginning of His/Her incarnation on planet Zero.”

“When Jesus Christ prayed to His/Her God or Father, He/She prayed from the position of those elements that were taken out of Mary and Joseph. At that time, before completion of His/Her mission, they were the only things in Him/Her that were not of The Divine origin. Nothing of divine was in them until their process of divinization was completed. In The Gospels of The Holy Bible this process is called glorification.”

“It is obvious that from the position of non-divine, The Divine, The Most High, or Father, appears to be separated from that non-divine. From misunderstanding of this situation, all abominable distortions regarding the Trinity and the way it is understood by all Christians (with the exception of the followers of Swedenborg’s teachings) stem.”

“Let this Chapter be concluded here with the repeated statement that, based on all these revealed facts, it is obvious that The Lord Jesus Christ is the only One God Indivisible, The true Most High, The Creator, Father, Son and Holy Spirit and that no other god existed, exists or will ever exist from eternity to eternity.”

“He/she who has ears to hear and to listen, let him/her hear and listen to what The Lord Jesus Christ reveals in this Chapter.”

CHAPTER THREE

BETRAYAL OF CHRISTIANITY

On January 27, 1988, at 6:00 a.m., the word of The Lord Jesus Christ came to me, saying,

“Now is the time to deal with the betrayal of Christianity. It has not been known until this revelation that this betrayal was foretold by The Lord Jesus Christ through His/Her interaction with the Apostle Peter. Peter of that time corresponds to and exemplifies the entire Christian movement in the process of its history.”

“In The Gospel According to Matthew, Chapter 16, verse 18, it is written,”

“‘And I also say to you that you are Peter, and on this rock I will build My church, and the gates of Hades shall not prevail against it.’”

“As most of you know, the word ‘Peter’ means rock. The word ‘rock’ corresponds to the spiritual truth. If the Church is built on the true spiritual truth, nothing of evils and falsities can prevail against it (‘the gates of Hades shall not prevail against it’).”

“Any proper spiritual movements, signified here by the word ‘Church,’ must be built on spiritual truth, revealed by The Lord Jesus Christ.”

“However, few people know that each correspondence has also its negative counterpart. In this case, falsified spiritual truth may and will establish a spiritual movement, or a church, which will block and oppose the genuine spiritual truth. Thus, the word ‘rock’ can have both connotations, depending on the choices the followers of the so-called ‘church’ will make. If the choice is for the genuine spiritual truth from good of the matter, ‘the gates of Hades shall not prevail against it.’ However, if the choice is for falsified spiritual truth, the church is a production of the Hells and therefore the gates of Hades do not attempt to prevail over it but, instead, they support it as its own production. In either case, ‘the gates of Hades shall not prevail against it.’”

“Most interpreters of the above-quoted verse from Matthew erroneously concluded that, if The Lord Jesus Christ stated that on Peter — ‘rock’ — He/She will build His/Her Church, nothing adverse or negative can happen to it. This is especially true in view of the statement subsequently made that ‘the gates of Hades shall not prevail against it.’ However, as mentioned above, this statement can mean either alternative. That this is so is apparent from Peter’s behavior during the time that followed immediately after that proclamation.”

“You have to understand that, by that proclamation, Peter was assigned a role of representing the entire destiny of Christianity on your planet. Once such a role is assigned to anyone, that person’s life will reflect, in the minutest details, exactly what is going to happen to the entire movement represented by that person.”

“It is not by coincidence that in the same Chapter in Matthew, just prior to the above-quoted statement of Jesus Christ, Peter confesses, saying to The Lord Jesus Christ, ‘You are the Christ, the Son of the living God’ (verse 16). Notice, please, that Peter confesses the Christ but not Jesus Christ. Here is the very first grain of the future betrayal of Christianity. The

willingness to accept the divinity of The Lord Jesus Christ is limited to the most external element which was taken out of The Absolute Exterior Mind of The Most High — ‘Christ.’”

“This limitation conveys the acceptance of the natural truth but not that much of the spiritual truth and even less of the celestial truth. Moreover, it totally disregards the life of that truth — the natural, spiritual and celestial good. What do you have, if you disregard the life of any element? A dead element!”

“‘Jesus’ in this connotation, corresponds to the natural, spiritual and celestial good — the life-giver to any truth. That this is the case is clearly confirmed in a subsequent encounter that happened between Peter and Jesus Christ, described in the same Chapter, in verses 2223:”

“‘But He turned and said to Peter, “Get behind me, Satan! You are an offense to me, for you are not mindful of the things of God, but things of men.””

“This statement is also recorded in The Gospel According to Mark, Chapter 8, verse 33.”

“The above-quoted encounter reflects that the Christian Church, initially established by The Lord Jesus Christ, will become totally corrupt, taken over by all falsities (‘Satan.’ ‘Satan’ represents all falsifications in being and existence.) of the Hells, externalizing and suffocating the genuine spiritual truth (‘being mindful of things of men.’ ‘The things of men’ denote all external, outward rituals and preoccupation with the earthly, worldly, transient, temporary, corporeal and unimportant issues that have no true spiritual meaning and life in themselves. ‘The things of God’ signify all spiritual elements of the genuine spiritual truth, the internal, inward states that are vivified by good and love of the Divine Life). The outcome of this state of affairs is that the Christian Church, from its very beginning, with the exception of a very brief period of time (until the so-called ‘conversion’ of Paul), was taken over by the negative state and became the domain of the Hells.”

“Furthermore, it is not by a coincidence that Peter denied The Lord Jesus Christ three times during His/Her ordeal and interrogation. To emphasize the extreme importance of this betrayal, it was provided by The Divine Providence of The Lord Jesus Christ that all four Gospels in The Holy Bible meticulously record this event.”

“That Peter denied The Lord Jesus Christ three times denotes a total, complete and irrevocable rejection by the Christian Church of The Lord Jesus Christ as the only One God Indivisible. The acceptance of The Lord Jesus Christ as the only One God Indivisible, the true Most High, constitutes the genuine natural, spiritual and celestial truth (‘Christ’ — natural, ‘Jesus’ — spiritual and ‘The Lord’ — celestial truth.)”

“Moreover, it signifies that the Christian churches in varieties of their diverse doctrines will split the Person of God into three Persons in One God (Father, Son and Holy Spirit) — threefold denial. As you remember, shortly before denial, The Lord Jesus Christ said to Peter, ‘Simon, Simon! Indeed, Satan has asked for you, that he may sift you as wheat’ (Luke 22:31). This is an obvious indication that the entire Christianity will be under the influence of the negative state for a long time to come.”

“The realization of this devastating denial makes the true, genuine spiritual truth, also represented by Peter, very sad and regretful. This is signified by Peter’s subsequent bitter cry and weeping.”

“But the story does not end here. It continues after resurrection of The Lord Jesus Christ. The

entire last Chapter, Chapter 21 of The Gospel According to John, is devoted to this issue.”

“As you remember, Peter, with other Apostles, went fishing. The significance of this event is enormous. The recession of the entire Christian Church from the genuine spirituality, originally imparted to it by The Lord Jesus Christ, is portrayed here. As everyone knows, before Peter was called by The Lord Jesus Christ to become His/Her disciple, he was a commercial fisherman. In a spiritual correspondence, ‘a commercial fisherman’ is the one who catches and gathers seeming, external or outward natural truths and disseminates them among others. ‘Fish’ in this connotation, before Peter’s calling, signifies a seeming truth, that is to say, a truth that appears to be true but, in fact, is not. To return to this previous condition, after all direct enlightenment by The Lord Jesus Christ in the issues of the genuine spiritual truth from good, signifies regression from and betrayal of The Lord Jesus Christ. It also signifies that Christian churches will never properly understand the true meaning of The Lord Jesus Christ’s incarnation on planet Zero and the full significance of the act of resurrection itself. This is the reason why Peter decided to go back to fishing after having the knowledge and experience of The Lord Jesus Christ’s resurrection.”

“Because Peter of that time represented the entire Christianity, his return to fishing means rejection by Christianity of all spiritual truths from goods of The Lord Jesus Christ and, instead, adoption of seeming or falsified truths of the most external nature. It also means externalization and ritualization of all spiritual principles, thus, making them void and lifeless. ‘Fishing’ spiritually corresponds to this meaning (in the discussed connotation).”

“In order to emphasize even more this situation with the entire Christian movement, The Lord Jesus Christ asks Peter three times, ‘Simon, son of Jonah, do you love Me more than these?’ (verses 15-17). Notice here, please, an important fact. The Lord Jesus Christ does not address Peter as Peter — ‘the Rock,’ but as Simon, son of Jonah. ‘Peter’ or ‘rock’ corresponds to the spiritual truth of good of The Lord Jesus Christ on which any truly spiritual church is founded.”

“However, ‘Simon, son of Jonah’ corresponds to the external non-spiritual church which is void of any love and good. Lack of love and good denotes lack of any true life. It is all artificial. ‘Son of Jonah’ signifies this lack because nothing truly alive and living can stem from anything worldly, earthly, external and human.”

“‘Jonah’ was a physical father of Simon. No life can be initiated in the physical environment. However, there is an artificial life, a semblance of life into the physical condition coming from the Hells. In this respect, ‘Jonah’ also corresponds to all pseudo-spiritual principles, cunningly fabricated in the Hells and infused into ‘Simon’ — pseudo-Christian churches.”

“This clearly indicates that Christianity was built not on the ‘Peter’ principles — divine spiritual truth from good of The Lord Jesus Christ — but on the ‘Simon’ principles — falsified truths concocted in the Hells for the purpose of destruction of anything truly spiritual.”

“Thus, it is obvious that from the time of Paul’s conversion (of which we shall speak in a moment) to the present time, the so-called Christian Church (this term denotes all major Christian religions and their respective numerous sects) was founded on totally false spiritual principles.”

“That The Lord Jesus Christ asked Peter (actually Simon, son of Jonah) three times whether he loves Him/Her signifies total and complete lack of any true love to The Lord Jesus Christ in the so-called Christianity. As you know, Christianity talks about love to God, to Jesus, to Christ, to the Savior, to the Lord, to Jesus Christ, to the only begotten Son of God, etc., but

there is no true acceptance of and love to the true Lord Jesus Christ. That Peter was grieved because he was asked three times the same question signifies full recognition of the true spiritual principles (that know the true spiritual church can be built only on pure love to The Lord Jesus Christ) and that Christian churches will reject The Lord Jesus Christ as the one and the only God Indivisible, The Most High.”

“Peter’s affirmative answer to The Lord Jesus Christ signifies the acknowledgment of the need to love The Lord Jesus Christ above all and above everything if the true spiritual principles are to survive and become the foundation of the spiritual Christian Church. However, that this will not be the case is indicated in verse 18 of the Chapter 21 in The Gospel According to John. It is stated there,”

“Most assuredly, I say to you, when you were younger, you girded yourself and walked where you wished; but when you are old, you will stretch out your hands, and another will gird you and carry you where you do not wish.”

“The majority of people understand these words literally, thinking that The Lord Jesus Christ spoke about Peter’s physical death, as the next verse indicates. But, do not forget the important spiritual fact, that Peter represents the entire Christianity. Therefore, all events of his personal life reflected the destiny of the Christian Church.”

“In this connotation, the above-quoted statement signifies the following truth: Christianity in its beginning (‘when you were young’) is founded on the principles of freedom from any negative influences of the Hells (‘you girded yourself and walked where you wished.’) However, later on, it becomes a slave of the negative state of evils and falsities without any spiritual freedom whatsoever (‘but when you are old, you will stretch out your hands, and another will gird you and carry you where you do not wish.’)”

“No genuine truth and its good or good and its truth can be properly discerned, understood and applied in the condition of slavery to the negative state. Thus, there is no true understanding and life of the spiritual principles and The Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ in any so-called Christian churches on your planet. And even though some people among you have such an understanding (particularly followers of Swedenborg’s teachings), they lack true love to The Lord Jesus Christ.”

“That this is the case can be seen from the scene, described in John 21, verses 19-22, that immediately follows after The Lord Jesus Christ stopped questioning Peter. The Lord Jesus Christ asks Peter to follow Him/Her. This request emphasizes the fact that only in following The Lord Jesus Christ can true life be found. However, when Peter saw that Apostle John also responded to that request and followed them, Peter got indignant, saying, ‘But Lord, what about this man?’ ‘John,’ in this connotation, corresponds to pure unconditional love to The Lord Jesus Christ, signified here by the words ‘the disciple whom Jesus loved... .., who also had leaned on His breast... ..’”

“This scene points out the fact that Christianity, represented here by Peter, will turn away from and will reject the true unconditional love to The Lord Jesus Christ, professing this love only with the lips as Simon, son of Jonah, did, becoming upset when he saw that only this kind of love remains forever and has any significance, as reflected in the verse 22-23 of Chapter 21,”

“Jesus said to him, “If I will that he remain till I come, what is that to you? You follow Me.”

“Then this saying went out among the brethren that this disciple would not die.”

“As you remember from the beginning of this Chapter, the Christian Church was supposed to be built on ‘Peter’ principle — the rock — that is, the spiritual truth. If this were the case, your planet would be in much better shape than it has been since that time. So, whatever happened to the church that claims her founder was Peter and considers Peter to be the very first Pope of that church? Is it the truth?”

“In its initial stage there is a grain of truth in this statement. However, that stage did not last too long. Shortly after it was founded, Paul came on the scene. In the spiritual connotation, relevant to this situation only, ‘Paul’ signifies perversion of the spiritual truth and its good and hate to everything truly spiritual and internal or the most within.”

“As you remember from The Acts of the Apostles , Chapter 8-9, Paul (who was called Saul at that time — ‘Saul’ corresponds to everything hellish) was persecuting or “breathing threats and murder against the disciples of The Lord...” (verse 1). He was an outright murderer. He truly hated with great passion everything that was coming from The Lord Jesus Christ. In this condition, Paul-Saul has a vision on the road to Damascus. A voice tells him, ‘Saul, Saul, why are you persecuting me?’ And he said, ‘Who are you, Lord?’ And the Lord said, ‘I am Jesus, who you are persecuting ’ (Chapter 9, verses 4-5).”

“Before continuing, please, note that it is not by coincidence that Paul’s name ‘Saul’ was the same as of the first king of Israel — Saul. There is a deep spiritual meaning and connection here. That Israel at the time of Judges demanded to have a king over them signifies that they rejected the divine spiritual truth from good of The Most High — Jehovah. ‘King’ corresponds to this truth. If one rejects such a king, one has no choice but to establish as the ruler of one’s life just the opposite of that — all spiritual abominations of the hellish falsities.”

“Thus, Saul was chosen as a king over Israel instead of the One King — The Lord Most High. King Saul was rejected by The Most High because no falsity can be accepted by the true positive state. Otherwise, it would cease to be positive. Instead, David was anointed as a king. But Saul, all his life, viciously sought David’s life, wanting to kill him. ‘David’ corresponds to the spiritual-natural truth of the Divine Absolute Exterior Mind of The Most High — ‘Christ.’ Thus, the word ‘David’ in The Holy Bible does not ever signify the literal King David, but the ‘Christ.’ Of course, ‘Saul’ — the hellish falsities — hates with passion any truth, especially the divine truth, as an eternal threat to its very being and existence. Therefore, it wants to murder ‘David’ — ‘Christ’ — in an effort to eliminate any access to the real truth.”

“In this connotation, Israel portrays the future Christian Church that will reject the true King — The Lord Jesus Christ — and the true spiritual divine truth as a foundation of its doctrine. Instead, it chooses Saul-Paul, making Paul’s teachings a foundation of its ‘spiritual’ doctrine and dogmas.”

“However, it was prophesied that Israel would be brought back to its land and that David would become king over them to eternity (for example, in Prophet Ezekiel, Chapter 37, the entire Chapter, and many other places in The Holy Bible), as The Lord Jesus Christ prophesied the return of Peter into His/Her fold (Luke 22:32).”

“That Israel would be brought back to its land signifies that all those who succumbed to the negative state and were thrown out into the Zone of Displacement would eventually return to the positive state (when the time is right!). That David would become king over them forever denotes that the foundation of their life will be the spiritual divine truth from its divine good in

all its aspects from The Lord Jesus Christ. That 'Simon' (Peter) was to be sifted as wheat by Satan ('Satan' denotes fabrication by the Hells of all falsities in being and existence) signifies that falsities will invade the Christian Church or Christianity in general until the end of the negative state. The words 'when you have returned to Me' signify the conversion of all that are of 'Simon' principles (falsified truths) into 'Peter' principle — The Divine Spiritual Truth. It is Simon who betrays the Spiritual Truth. It is Peter who grieves over this betrayal and longs for his return to The Lord Jesus Christ."

"It is not by coincidence that the earthly name of the transmitter of The New Revelation, in its present phase, is 'Peter.' It signifies the return to the genuine Spiritual Divine Truth of The Divine Good of The Lord Jesus Christ and restoration of the true spiritual doctrine of the Church founded originally by The Lord Jesus Christ."

"But to go back to Saul-Paul; as you noticed, the voice which spoke to Saul on the road to Damascus identified itself as 'Jesus:' Not the Lord, not Christ, not Jesus Christ, not The Lord Jesus Christ, but simply 'Jesus.' The significance of this fact is enormous. The word 'Jesus' has many meanings: First of all, it represents The Absolute Interior Mind or Absolute Mentality or Absolute Soul of The Lord Jesus Christ. Secondly, it denotes The Absolute Divine Good of The Lord Jesus Christ. Thirdly, it signifies The Absolute Feminine Principle of The Lord Jesus Christ and His/Her Absolute Feelings and Affections. Fourthly, it means The Absolute Essence of The Absolute Being of The Lord Jesus Christ."

"The reason why the voice identified itself as 'Jesus' and not by any other name is to emphasize the evilness of the fact that murderous Saul had within himself in his zeal to destroy anything truly good and spiritual. For whatever is truly good is always spiritual. And whatever is truly spiritual is always good. This is the truth of the matter. Against this fundamental principle of The Lord Jesus Christ the frontal continuous attack of the Hells has been and will be raging, the reason being that good and love is the life of all and especially of truth."

"Notice, please, that the word 'Christ' was not used by the voice. The negative state of the Hells is well aware that by attacking 'Christ,' even if it were to succeed, the life would continue because the life of truth — 'Christ' — is its good."

"However, if you destroy good and love, you succeed in elimination of life of the positive state because, to repeat again and again, the life of truth is love and good. There is no other source of life to anything."

"Thus, Saul was trying to persecute and murder 'Jesus,' but not that much 'Christ.' The truth — 'Christ' — can always be perverted, falsified and distorted without too much difficulty by the means of persuasions and negative suggestions. However, 'good' or 'Jesus' cannot be perverted because good is always good no matter what you try to do to it. You can come up with some evil acts but evil is always evil no matter what you do to it. Thus, the only thing that can be done to good is to destroy or murder it, replacing it with evil. By such a destruction, evil reign of the Hells is accomplished. As you see, evil is the destruction of good. But to destroy good is to destroy life. In succeeding in such a murderous act, the negative state's victory is assured. Hence, the persecution of Jesus by Saul."

"Saul is not afraid of Divine Spiritual Truth — 'Christ.' He has a tremendous means and inborn ability of perverting and falsifying that truth. After all, at that time and until recently, Saul has been the master of persuasions. It is the principle of 'Jesus' he is afraid of. He devotes all his energy and life, first directly, then indirectly to subvert, if not to destroy, this principle."

“After his so-called conversion, this effort was indirect by his continuous attack on the feminine principle which is also ‘Jesus.’ He totally distorts and falsifies the proper understanding of femininity and woman’s place in the hierarchy of the spiritual organization. He makes woman a slave, or, at least, subservient to the male, commanding her to serve the male and keep her mouth shut. He places ‘Christ’ — the masculine principle — as the head of the Christian Church.”

“This is a perverted order of the true spiritual church. The ‘Christ’ principle, the spiritual-natural divine truth of The Lord Jesus Christ, is the foundation or the feet on which the true spiritual church stands. The ‘Jesus’ principle, or good of love, is the head and life of such a church. Paul’s concept was fully accepted by all Christians because Paul cunningly was saying that The Holy Spirit was in him.”

“In order to pretend that this is the true organization and that the ‘Saul’ principle is no longer in force, suddenly, he begins to be called Paul (Acts 13:9). In this connotation, renaming Saul means suppression of the evilness of the Hells that breathe destruction and murder against the ‘Jesus’ principle and, instead, replacing it with ‘Paul’ or external, pretentious acceptance of divine spiritual and natural truth of The Lord Jesus Christ. External and pretentious acceptance of truth is always artificial and superficial, never finding its place in one’s heart, in one’s internals.”

“Thus, although externally Paul accepted Jesus Christ as the Lord, until recently, he was not able or willing to accept Him/Her internally. Internally, he was still full of murderous intentions against anything coming from The Lord Jesus Christ. Being in externals, Paul succeeded in subverting the entire Christianity through the process of its externalization and ritualization and putting everything in an upside-down position.”

“In this respect, you have to remember the following important fact: Paul had never accepted The Lord Jesus Christ, until recently, by his own free will and choice. He was forced into this acceptance by the inevitability of the miraculous experience that happened to him on the road to Damascus. Such acts have no true spiritual meaning. Nothing can be appropriated to anyone by force or duress but only by free will and choice.”

“Thus, Paul’s acceptance of The Lord Jesus Christ was only in an outward sense, but inwardly, no change occurred. Inwardly, he continued to be Saul. Inward acceptance can be accomplished only by the freedom of choice from one’s own free will through inward discernment that it is so or not. This is a fundamental multiversal principle.”

“For that reason, once this imposition was removed from Paul, after his physical external body died, and he arrived into the spiritual world, he reverted to his inward, Saul-type condition. As you know, nothing of the external, imposed nature can be taken to or sustained in the spiritual world. The spiritual world is the state of the true inwardness or the internals.”

“Finding himself once more in his inner freedom, not bound by any external impositions and fears, Paul became again Saul and continued at the point when he was interrupted on the road to Damascus. He resumed his fiercely hateful and murderous battle against anything truly spiritual, internal and of goodness and love. The battle became an obsession with him because he resented the forceful conversion imposed on him and had a personal vendetta against The Lord Jesus Christ.”

“To a certain limited extent, this situation with Paul was already revealed through Swedenborg. But everyone who read Swedenborg and will read this book will be horrified to

accept the fact that Paul-Saul used to be of such an adverse nature. But in actuality, Saul (Paul) was a very sophisticated demon of a high rank in the Hells who incarnated on your planet for the sole purpose of bringing about the fact of the betrayal of Christianity.”

“For very important spiritual reasons, he was permitted by The Lord Jesus Christ to succeed in his mission. Notice, please, that somehow Peter and other Apostles faded away and Paul took over, dominating everyone’s attention. The Acts of Apostles were supposed to be their acts but their acts turned, inadvertently, into the acts of Paul. And his Epistles became the foundation of all doctrines of various so-called Christian religions.”

“Somehow, Peter, who was supposed to be the head of the church, was removed and disappeared entirely from the scene. Yet, The Lord Jesus Christ built His/Her truly spiritual divine church on Peter’s principle and not on Paul’s. Christians, thanks to Paul, betrayed this principle. Instead, they chose the non-spiritual, external, ritualistic, ceremonial, perverting and falsifying Paul’s principle.”

“And although the Christian Church puts Peter and Paul together, in actuality, Peter never walked with Paul. Instead, Peter and John were always together. The togetherness of John and Peter represents the true foundation on which the true spiritual church is built — Love and Wisdom, Good and Truth and Positive Works and Faith. Forceful conjunction of Peter and Paul is a destructive force for any spiritual state because it signifies a pseudo-marriage of truth and falsities and absorption of that truth by the dire perversions of the Hells. Thus, by this act, the Christian Church endorses the falsified truth and its perversions as the real and genuine spiritual truth.”

“As far as a personal fate of Paul/Saul is concerned, let it be known now that he, finally, converted to the positive state by his own free will and choice at the time corresponding on your planet to March 10, 1982.”

“Paul’s conversion was a great victory for the positive state and an enormous defeat to the forces of the Hells. Presently, Paul is an ardent follower and herald, with all other Apostles of The Lord Jesus Christ, of The New Revelation throughout the entire Creation. He is an emissary of The Lord Jesus Christ to the Hells where he is able to bring out many spirits who, by their own free will and choice, want to convert to the positive state. Paul is very happy and grateful for the fact that the truth about his role in all of this is coming to full light. He is constantly present with the transmitter during the transmission from The Lord Jesus Christ of this portion of The New Revelation. He volunteered to be in charge of its immediate spread throughout the spiritual world, intermediate world and the natural world of the true Creation and in some non-physical regions of the Zone of Displacement. The conversion of Paul in his internals foretells the eventual conversion of the so-called Christianity to Peter’s principles — to The Lord Jesus Christ.”

On January 30, 1988, at 5:00 a.m., again the word of The Lord Jesus Christ came to me, saying:

“Two more issues, related to the topic of this Chapter, need to be revealed. First, on the use of terms ‘Christian,’ ‘Christianity’ and ‘Christian Church.’ Secondly, some reasons why this situation was permitted by The Lord Jesus Christ.”

“The fundamental error conceived by all Christians and readers of The Gospels is in the way the statement in Matthew 16:18 is being understood. For some reason everyone interprets this statement as though The Lord Jesus Christ meant to establish His/Her Church immediately after His/Her departure from your planet. The second error, related to this

statement, is that everyone assumed that The Lord Jesus Christ meant to build His/Her Church on your physical planet as an external spiritual organization.”

“Let it be revealed now that no such meaning can be assigned to that statement. First of all, this statement in no way implies that the Church is going to be built immediately following The Lord Jesus Christ’s departure from your planet. Secondly, it does not say that such a Church will be built on the planet Zero.”

“The third error, related to the interpretation of that statement, is in an assumption by all that it was the physical Peter-person, Apostle Peter, on whom The Lord Jesus Christ intended to build His/Her Church. Nothing is further from the truth.”

“The fourth error in the interpretation of that statement is in the fact that many people assumed that by the word ‘church’ The Lord Jesus Christ meant the future external spiritual organization which was supposed to appear under the name of ‘Christianity.’ Again, nothing is further from the truth.”

“As mentioned previously, by ‘Peter’ was meant the principle of spiritual truth and its faith on which any spiritual doctrine is built. Remember, in most instances, The Lord Jesus Christ called Peter ‘Simon’ and not Peter. This was so, in order to emphasize the symbolic and correspondential representation of the word ‘Peter.’ The word ‘Church’ has never implied any external spiritual organization. Instead, it signifies the most within of every individual where the ‘Peter’ principle — spiritual truth and its faith — is implanted for the purpose of establishment of an intimate, private and personal relationship with The Lord Jesus Christ.”

“Such a relationship can never be built from the position of any external state or organization, the reason being that the function of the externals is not in initiation and origination of anything at all but, instead, in exemplification, manifestation and concretization of the original and initial ideas, states and processes, taking place in the most within Spiritual Mind, after they undergo the process of mental transformation in the interior mind.”

“Thus, nothing can take hold in the externals by themselves and in themselves. Whatever is happening in the externals is the result, consequence and outcome of the activities of the internals and interiors. For that reason, in no way can any genuine church be built on your planet which is positioned in the most external-natural degree of the Zone of Displacement. As you know, planet Zero is not even within the natural degree of the true Creation.”

“In this connotation, The Lord Jesus Christ’s statement, recorded by Matthew, Chapter 16, verse 18, must be interpreted as follows:”

“An entirely new spiritual state will be established by The Lord Jesus Christ which has never existed before, and which will stem from the unification and integration of all aspects of the Nature Of The Most High, after It incorporates within Itself the physical body of The Lord Jesus Christ. The process of this incorporation was described in Chapter Two of this book. Since such a spiritual conceptualization of God has never existed before, no true unification of the Spiritual Mind, interior mind and external mind could exist either. It was only potential but not actual unification.”

“As you remember, The Most High made a promise to His/Her Creation that this would be accomplished after His/Her Divine was made human, by the process of previously described hybridization, and His/Her human made Divine. This process, in its totality, had not been completed until recently.”

“Therefore, no such Church could have been built until recently. But because any building needs to be initiated and accomplished in the most within state first, that Church must be established in the spiritual world of Heavens first; then in the intermediate world of spirits second; and then in the physical world of the true Creation third. Once such a Church is established in all these worlds, then and only then something can be done about the situation in and of the Zone of Displacement.”

“Now, the building of that Church does not mean in any way and manner an establishment of some kind of external organization, as you have it on your planet. What it means is the restructuring, rebuilding, transforming into and endowing first everyone’s Spiritual Mind, second, the interior mind and, finally, the exterior mind with the new likeness and image of The Lord Jesus Christ.”

“The new Absolute State of The Lord Jesus Christ, formerly of The Most High, requires an establishment of the new, hitherto unknown and impossible, relationship with The Lord Jesus Christ. In order to make such a relationship possible (and to have such a relationship is the matter of one’s spiritual life and death), everyone subjects himself/ herself to this new process of spiritual transformation throughout the entire Creation and its multiverse. This process is going on right now, everywhere in The Lord Jesus Christ’s Creation. In the ultimate sense, ‘Peter’ principle corresponds to the content of this most fundamental and vital event that has ever been initiated since the Creation came into its being and existence.”

“Thus, in this connotation, ‘Peter’ means the new spiritual state in Creation which is a consequence of The Lord Jesus Christ becoming in actuality and factuality the true One Indivisible God Most High by the process described in Chapter Two of this book.”

“‘My church’ means endowment of the new spirituality into everyone’s Spiritual Mind for the purpose of unification with The Lord Jesus Christ so that everyone’s most within, and from it, everyone’s interior and exterior, becomes a sanctuary of The Lord Jesus Christ for establishment of the most private, personal and intimate relationship with Him/Her. Such a relationship will have a tremendous transformative effect. As a consequence, every sentient entity will acquire a totally new self-concept, self-image and self-identity which has not been conceived until this time. And this is what is meant by establishing or building ‘My church.’”

“Thus, as you can see, the establishment of this new spiritual condition was indicated by The Lord Jesus Christ at the time of His/Her stay on your planet. It related to the present time and not to the time after His/Her departure from planet Zero. ‘Peter’ does not mean Apostle Peter literally. ‘Church’ does not mean a physical external organization of any kind, and establishment of this church does not mean it will be established on your planet.”

“What was established on this planet, instead, is called ‘Christianity,’ or ‘Christian Church’ — an external ‘spiritual’ and political organization which dominates its followers.”

“As you remember, the name ‘Christians’ came about in Antioch (see The Acts of Apostles, Chapter 11, verse 26 in The Holy Bible). This name was assigned to the followers of Saul’s (Paul’s) teaching, after he taught in Antioch for a whole year. This term was initiated from the externals. Subsequently, it was adopted by the entire humankind. Since that time it signifies everyone who confesses to be the follower of a Christ’s (actually Paul’s) teachings.”

“The term ‘Christian,’ ‘Christianity’ or ‘Christian Church’ reflects the state of separation of the element of The Absolute External Mind of The Most High which was utilized in the process of conception of Jesus Christ in Mary’s womb. It does not contain anything from The Absolute Interior Mind — ‘Jesus’ — and even less from The Absolute Spiritual Mind — ‘The Lord.’”

“This name was permitted to be used not by a coincidence. It was adopted in order to reflect the falsified, isolated and separated truth and betrayal of the true Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ by the entire Christian World. The total inadequacy of the content and meaning of this word is obvious at the first glance. The truth — ‘Christ’ — is confessed, but the good — ‘Jesus’ — which constitutes life of that truth, and the spiritual marriage of Love and Wisdom, Good and Truth, Positive Works and Faith, etc., and — ‘The Lord’ — which constitutes the foundation of the true spirituality or church, are rejected and betrayed to the negative state.”

“The unification of that truth — ‘Christ’ — to the good — ‘Jesus’ — and to The Absolute Essence and Substance of God Most High — ‘The Lord’ — is completely disregarded. Instead, forceful and violent separation is maintained until this time. This is ‘Saul/Paul’ principle but not ‘Peter’ principle.”

“The Lord Jesus Christ has never built any church, any state, anything for that matter, on such a perverted principle — the principle of separation. The separation was an interim state, during The Lord Jesus Christ’s life on planet Zero, until the process of divinization, called in The Gospels glorification, was completed. At that time, the reunification occurred and the new spiritual state had begun to be developed. This process has been completed just recently after the physical body of The Lord Jesus Christ was fused into the totality of The Most High, becoming The Lord Jesus Christ.”

“For this reason, the words ‘Christian,’ ‘Christianity,’ ‘Christian Church,’ etc., as of now, mean falsification of truth regarding the true Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ. Therefore, to call yourselves ‘Christians’ is no longer appropriate and desirable. As of now, you are advised to call yourselves, if you choose so by your own free will and choice, the followers of The Lord Jesus Christ. Say, ‘I am a follower of The Lord Jesus Christ,’ instead of, ‘I am a Christian.’”

“Proclaiming to be a Christian means admitting to be in falsities. The Lord Jesus Christ of the present state is not the same as professed by Christians. Their Jesus Christ is a conglomeration of inventions of Saul/Paul and all the so-called Fathers of the Christian Church who further perverted and distorted the proper conceptualization and understanding of the true Nature Of The Lord Jesus Christ.”

“And although to say the words ‘I am a follower of The Lord Jesus Christ’ is much more cumbersome from the standpoint of your language requirements than to say ‘I am a Christian,’ nevertheless, it is the truth. Please, in dealing with spiritual issues, disregard any concerns for grammatical and structural rules of human language. They are of the negative origin.”

“As far as the other religions on your planet are concerned, their total falsification and perversion was completed either at the time of The Lord Jesus Christ’s First Coming or in the process of their development and establishment. Whatever spiritual and natural truths they contained within themselves, they were extracted from them by The Lord Jesus Christ either at that time or later on, in the process of transmission of this New Revelation. They all are now incorporated in the principles of The New Revelation.”

“At the present time, all these religions have no meaning and significance other than being of the negative origin, keeping people in slavery and bondage to the negative state. Nowadays, no exception to this rule exists. Their existence outlived its usefulness and, for all practical purposes, religions are dead and void of any true spiritual life.”

“Subsequent to the completion of the process of fusion of Jesus Christ’s physical body into

the totality of The Most High's Absolute Nature, and The Most High becoming The Lord Jesus Christ, a totally new spiritual state came into its being and existence."

"This new spiritual state made all existing religions, existing up to that time, totally and completely obsolete and unnecessary, unless they choose to switch to The New Revelation. Otherwise, their nature becomes reactionary, opposing everything new and different from their own belief system, and especially opposing The New Revelation. They became the major tool in the hands of the negative state in their spiritual war against the positive state and, particularly, against the new spirituality and the proper conceptualization of the true Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ."

"Beware, please, that, as of now, the major thrust of this spiritual war will be directed against the proper understanding and acceptance of the true Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ, as revealed in this book. The old religions on your planet will serve this purpose very effectively. As you know, most of them do not recognize The Lord Jesus Christ at all, and those who do have a falsified and totally inappropriate understanding of His/Her Nature. The most ardent enemies of The Lord Jesus Christ, as conceptualized here, will be, of course, the so-called Christians and, particularly, the so-called newborn Christians. You are hereby warned that such will be the case."

"In conclusion of this Chapter, some important reasons will be revealed why all these things, described in this Chapter, were permitted to take place. Some of these reasons were already revealed in general terms in Chapter IX of Major Ideas of The New Revelation, pages 124145. The reader is advised to refresh his/her memory by rereading that Chapter, or reading it first, if such reading has not taken place so far, before continuing with what follows."

(1)

"As was revealed in that Chapter, the purpose of The Lord Jesus Christ's First Coming was not the elimination of the negative state. Thus, most people missed the true meaning of that Coming."

"In actuality, let it be known now that one of the many major reasons for the First Coming was to set up a stage for the full exposure of the true nature of the negative state. That nature cannot be exposed by a simple denial of God's existence, as the atheistic philosophers of the Hells and their scientific minions have been trying to prove. It is only one of the many less important ways by which the negative state operates."

"Everybody knows that the negative state hates God, in this case, The Lord Jesus Christ, and, therefore, desires nothing more than to convince people that God does not exist and that the story of The Lord Jesus Christ's life on your planet is a myth or that He/She was only a regular human being, maybe enlightened, but, nevertheless, not too much different from any other humans and that there was no divinity in Him/Her. This is too easy."

"However, very few people are willing to accept the fact that the Hells fabricate many various religions and spiritualistic movements through and by which they misdirect people into a falsified spirituality, making them loyal members of the Hells under the favorite disguise of serving God or in the name of God. Now, this is much more difficult to accept, but, the true cunning nature of the negative state can come to the surface in a much more pronounced manner."

"What is even more difficult to accept is the fact that the Hells devised a way to infiltrate The Lord Jesus Christ's earthly disciples, first in Judas, then, later on, in Paul, and established the

most powerful spiritual, cultural, social, religious and political movement under the name of 'Christianity' or in the name of Christ, professing that they worship the Lord Jesus, or the Lord Christ, or even The Lord Jesus Christ (as a Son of God and not in the sense of the present conceptualization of His/Her true Nature)."

"Of course, their original weapon was in the form of Judas Iscariot. But he committed suicide and by that act failed miserably in his mission. No other Apostle was willing to betray his Heavenly Teacher. Peter's personal betrayal, apart from the correspondential significance of that betrayal, as explained at the beginning of this Chapter, did not last long. The same day he betrayed The Lord Jesus Christ, he felt very sorry, then repented. Therefore, he was of no use to the negative state afterwards. The negative state had high hopes in Peter's personal betrayal but was bitterly disappointed over his repentance and return to The Lord Jesus Christ."

"But the negative state, although a fool, is not stupid. It had some reserves. One of these reserves was Saul/Paul. As mentioned above, Saul/Paul was a physical incarnation of a very shrewd demon whose initial mission was to block the activities of the Apostles. However, as all other human resources of the negative state failed in this respect, his mission was changed and he was to infiltrate the ranks of the Apostles and establish a church in the name of Christ which would totally and completely corrupt its followers and which would successfully block for millennia people's understanding of the true Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ."

"If one does not have a proper understanding of this nature, one cannot build and derive proper spiritual principles, doctrines and a style of life consistent with such a nature. And because one's destiny and position depends on this most important factor, by identifying oneself with these inappropriate and falsified spiritual concepts, one, inadvertently, condemns oneself to the Hells or, at least, one becomes blocked from finding the way into the positive state."

"Now, with this kind of situation, the true nature of the negative state can best be exposed; and the learning for the entire Creation can be the most memorable and vivid. Do not forget, please, that the negative state was allowed to be activated only for one important purpose: As a learning to all of what not to choose."

"As mentioned many times before, in the first portion of The New Revelation by this transmitter, the choice of not choosing something is as vital and as important to have as all other choices. It is impossible to make a choice of not choosing something if there is no concrete, living example of that something. And because we are dealing here with one of the most fundamental and important spiritual principles — the proper understanding of the true Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ and, subsequently, establishing a proper relationship with Him/ Her (it is impossible to establish a proper relationship with anything if there is no proper knowledge and understanding of the nature of that something) — it was only natural and necessary to permit all falsifications of the understanding of that Nature to the most extreme case ('Christianity'), so that there would be an example of **how not to conceptualize The Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ and how not to relate to Him/Her**."

"The Christian Church or Christianity serves this purpose exactly. By the example of Christians, everyone in the entire Creation knows what not to choose in this respect and how not to worship The Lord Jesus Christ. Without this example, the entire Creation would be deprived of this important knowledge. Why is it so important to have this particular knowledge?"

“As mentioned previously many times, the quality of life in general and all particulars of any individual depend upon his/her relationship to his/her Creator — The Lord Jesus Christ. Since originally life was created by The Most High God, who is The Lord Jesus Christ, and since the source of true life is its Creator, the content, quality and style of anyone’s life will solely depend on what kind of attitude, stance toward and relationship with the Source of this life one takes.”

“It is only logical that this is the case. It is obvious that no one but The Absolute Lord Jesus Christ, who is life in and by Himself/Herself, can be a source of one’s life. Thus, validation of one’s life comes from establishing one’s relationship with this source. But the choice to relate in any manner and way to this Absolute Source is given to the one who is required to establish such a relationship. As you are aware, a true and meaningful relationship, or any relationship for that matter, can be established only on the basis of freedom of choice. No such relationship is possible by force or by necessity.”

“The freedom of choice is possible only when all infinite varieties and ways of choosing are available. Lack of any choice, including the negative one or rejective one, makes other choices by force or necessity. In that case, it is not a choice, but slavery. Thus, as you see, a choice of not choosing something is as important and as needed as any other choice.”

“Now, it was foreseen by The Lord God Most High, before time and space or before Creation was created, that at one point in time and space, He/She would incarnate into the Zone of Displacement and on planet Zero. From that position, later on, an entirely new conceptualization of this Lord God Most High would come to its fruition. He/She would become the fullness in the form, content, essence and substance of The Lord Jesus Christ. In the foresight of this most fundamental, vital and crucial event, the state was set up on your planet to illustrate by concrete and living examples of humans how not to relate to The Lord Jesus Christ. Christianity in its entirety became such an example.”

“For this reason, it was necessary to allow Christianity to betray The Lord Jesus Christ. Therefore, instead of building a church on Peter’s principle, it was built on Saul/Paul’s principle.”

“Now all Creation knows how to properly and correctly relate to and conceptualize The Lord Jesus Christ by not falling into a trap of inappropriate choice. Once this lesson was learned, the fusion and integration of the physical body of The Lord Jesus Christ, made divine, could be completed and a totally new spiritual state could come into being and existence.”

“Any such new state, particularly if it concerns the eternal change of the very Nature of Creator Itself, requires that it is preceded by various illustrations of all possible choices which cannot be applied to that new state. The point here is to realize that any new state and condition requires a transformative change of all that will relate to this new state. It is impossible to relate to it in the old, previously appropriate manner. No proper and lasting relationship can be established by old ways and manners with anything new and different. Its nature is fundamentally different. Therefore, it requires a fundamentally different approach, hitherto unavailable and incomprehensible.”

“So, once The Lord Jesus Christ accomplished this Inner, Interior and Exterior change of His/Her Nature, and once all examples of how not to relate to this fundamentally changed Nature were learned, the process could be initiated by which all members of Creation can be led into a state of restructuring, rebuilding, renewal and transformation of their entire minds and personalities. This is needed in order to accommodate them and make it possible for them to build this new relationship to The Absolute Source of their lives — The Lord Jesus

Christ.”

“As mentioned previously, this fundamental and most important process started in the spiritual world first, then in the intermediate world, and then in the natural world of the true Creation. Once it is fully completed there, the full impact of this new state will begin to be felt in the entire Zone of Displacement and, later on, on planet Zero. At this time, only very few individuals on your planet are permitted to participate in this change in order to set an example for the future impact of these events on the entire Zone of Displacement.”

“For this reason, it was stated previously that the consequences and impact of this new spiritual state — the fundamental change in conceptualization of the true Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ — will rock the foundation of the entire Creation, the Zone of Displacement and all their inhabitants for eons to come.”

(2)

“The negative state cannot be eliminated until its full nature is allowed to be manifested and come to the full awareness of all Creation and its experiences are placed in the Universality-Of-It-All or in that part of it which is called in The Holy Bible, the lake of fire and brimstone.”

“If this elimination were to come prematurely, some more hidden, and therefore more dangerous, aspects of its nature could not be exposed. Thus, only very superficial knowledge of its full nature would be available, not sufficient enough to properly answer the question of what life would be like if it is not derived from the true positive state, from The Lord Jesus Christ and from the true spiritual principles, or if it is derived from false gods and their false spiritual principles.”

“In this case, the entire Creation would be deprived of the proper knowledge of all available choices. It could not make reasonable and appropriate choices about these most fundamental spiritual issues. It would not have enough proper grounds for such a choice.”

“The full appreciation of the true nature of the positive state, which derives from the Nature of its Creator — The Lord Jesus Christ — could not be experienced if there were no comparison possible to that which is not of the positive state or from The Lord Jesus Christ.”

“Thus, it is necessary to allow the negative state to flourish to the fullest of its potentials, so that the members of the positive state can have full and complete appreciation of the fundamental differences of these two states. Now, on this kind of comparison, one can make a choice based on certainty and direct experience of what is most desirable and needed and not on what is based on force or necessity. If you have only one choice — the positive one — you have no choice at all. You are a slave of only one choice. No true relationship, based on love and reciprocity, can be built from such an imposed choice.”

“The Lord Jesus Christ is the life of the positive state. It is only natural therefore, that all comparison has to be against the life which either denies The Lord Jesus Christ entirely (such as atheists and non-Christian religions) or does not have an appropriate conceptualization of His/Her true Nature or is falsifying and distorting the proper understanding and acceptance of this Nature. Christianity and all Christian religions serve this purpose well. This is one of the reasons why they were permitted to appear.”

(3)

“In Fundamentals of Human Spirituality — the very first book of the previous portion of The New Revelation, it was revealed that your planet was assigned the role of a concrete and experiential illustration of the true nature of the negative state with some ideas of the nature

of the positive state. Because of this particular position of planet Zero, it was here that the negative state was permitted to be activated and come into dominance. As you remember, the people responsible for this activation were called pseudo-creators. They became the full rulers of the Zone of Displacement, planet Zero and the entire negative state.”

“Due to the fact that the negative state was initiated in the most outward, external degree of the natural world (in the externals of the externals), and your planet occupies this position, it is on your planet that all dire consequences of that activation of the negative state have to be manifested in the only possible mode available in such an extreme external state — concrete, tangible and outward style of life of all its participants.”

“Thus, the illustration of the negative state from your level is reflected in the external organizational structure of its nature. Whatever spiritual or pseudo-spiritual ideas are transmitted to your planet, by the nature of its position, those ideas are illustrated not so much spiritually and inwardly, but, instead, in the form of some kind of external organizational endeavor.”

“Humans tend to organize around such ideas in the form of religions, societies, brotherhoods, sisterhoods, political parties, tribes, states, countries, etc. They build around those ideas all kinds of conventions, traditions, customs and rituals, the maintenance, perpetuation and upholding of which become the prevailing lifestyle of all who are part of such an organization.”

“What happens here is that the content of the ideas loses its original meaning and purpose and, instead, is replaced with those conventions, traditions and customs that must be followed, worshiped and upheld at all costs, not for the sake of the content of those ideas, but for the sake of their forms reflected in the external organizations.”

“In such a stance the spiritual requirements are supposedly being fulfilled. No internal or inward considerations are given, or, if they are, they are not prioritized but subjected to the external requirements. Such is the nature of the negative state.”

“For this reason, anything written in The Holy Bible, for example, is taken literally, despite the fact that everyone was clearly warned by The Lord Jesus Christ, at the time of His/Her earthly life, that whatever is spoken is spoken in parables and correspondences.”

“What humans continuously refuse to realize and to accept is that every word spoken by The Lord Jesus Christ, while on your planet, has no literal meaning whatsoever. Even if those sayings seem to be expressed in plain, literal language, no true literal meaning exists in them. They are never meant literally. The sole reason for this situation is in the obvious fact that no direct, truly spiritual, ideas could have been expressed and understood at that time on your planet because of its most ultimate external position.”

“Bear in mind, please, that any spiritual idea is always of the internal, inner nature. Therefore, it can be captured, taken hold of, comprehended and become the source of one’s life, only in one’s internals, in the most within Spiritual Mind.”

“But the majority of humans disregarded this important fact. As a matter of fact, one of the main thrusts of the negative state, in this respect, was to suppress or take away from people’s minds the realization of the fact that the literal sense of the sayings in The Holy Bible has no spiritual meaning and that this sense was only used to disguise the true spiritual ideas it contains. The major emphasis is always on the literal sense.”

“Some of the fundamentalist Christian religions and Mormons take pride in their abominable emphasis on taking everything literally and externally regarding what is said or written in The Holy Bible, and particularly, in The Epistles of the Apostles, and particularly of Paul. It was Paul’s role in this respect to keep people in the externals and disregard any inner spiritual meaning. Thus, Paul’s words superseded the Word of The Lord Jesus Christ who warned against such a literal conceptualization of the spiritual ideas.”

“This situation was permitted to occur in order to illustrate to the entire Creation what happens if the literal sense of The Holy Bible is taken literally and not spiritually; if an entire spiritual movement is built in the form of the Christian Church on such external premises; what kind of lifestyle comes into being and existence, based on such a falsified conceptualization; and what the outcome of human life on planet Zero is if it is derived from such an external, literal meaning. The learning here is in a permanent understanding that nothing truly spiritual and positive can be initiated in the most externals or the external mind. The external mind’s and word’s function have never been meant for such initiation. Its purpose and function is in illustration, manifestation and actualization of consequences, outcome and results of any spiritual idea initiated in the most within.”

“To remind you again, the principle here is always from within to without, never from without to within, except as a feedback of all consequences, outcomes and results of the within’s initiations. Thus, the learning here is in what happens when such a perverted, upside-down direction is taken up and becomes a dominant lifestyle of an entire planet. And because the major spiritual idea is the idea of the proper understanding of The Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ, it is this idea that becomes the major target of distortion by the negative state on your planet and everywhere else in the Zone of Displacement.”

“This again gives the entire Creation a notion that one should never choose to derive any meaning and purpose from something that has no meaning and purpose — the negative state and its emphasis on the literal sense. This is another reason why the betrayal of Christianity was permitted to take place on your planet.”

(4)

“As you remember from the previous chapter, the process of fusion and integration of the physical body of Jesus Christ into the totality of Divine Essence and Divine Substance of The Most High God had not been completed until recently, bringing to fruition a totally new, hitherto unknown, spiritual state and process — The Lord Jesus Christ. In actuality, this process consisted of, among many other mysterious things, internalization of all elements of that body from their state of externals.”

“The state of externals, in its ultimate sense, was the product of the negative state. Yet, nothing of the negative state can be incorporated in the state of absolutely positive. In the case of such an incorporation, the positive state would no longer be absolutely positive.”

“Therefore, it was necessary in small gradual steps to genetically, spiritually, mentally, and by all other means available only to The Lord Jesus Christ, restructure, alter, rewire and transform all these elements, and to do it in such a manner as to free them from any negative connotation, determined by their external nature, but, at the same time, preserving their ability of survival in the negative state as if they were of their own environment and origin.”

“The retention of the ability of survival is a very necessary prerequisite because it gives to The Lord Jesus Christ an opportunity to enter the negative state at any time and at any place without suffering the loss of His/Her Absolute Positive Nature and, at the same time, without annihilating the members of the negative state by His/Her sheer presence.”

"Now, the physical body of The Lord Jesus Christ has some degree of affinity to the Zone of Displacement and particularly to your planet. If the true future Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ were to have been revealed at the time shortly after His/Her resurrection and departure to the spiritual world, and well before this fusion and unification occurred, it would have been concluded that the true inner state is in actuality the external state. Therefore, no inner sense, no internal state and no true spirituality would exist. All meaning and purpose of life would be put eternally into the Zone of Displacement and its external degree."

"Total identification with this concept would occur and no change of this concept could ever take place. Under these conditions, everyone would be doomed to eternally remain in total blindness as far as any truth is concerned. As a matter of fact, in this case, the falsities would be considered to be truth and no recession from this state would be possible. Everyone would stay locked in one condition forever."

"If The Lord Jesus Christ were to be considered an Absolute State of Externals only, no true meaning and purpose of anything could be acquired. What it would mean is that Divinity and the totality of the previous nature of The Most High would be reduced and relinquished to the natural-external or, in an ultimate sense, to the negative state."

"Thus, The Most High would become negative. In that case, the devastating upside-down position would eternally occur. The negative state would be considered truly the positive state and the positive state would be considered the negative state because, after all, Jesus Christ came from the positive state, giving preference to the negative state, to the point that He/She took with Himself/Herself the physical body of the negative state. Therefore, He/She loves the negative state, incorporating it into Himself/Herself and sanctifying it and using it to appear to His/Her people. To come to this conclusion means to commit an unpardonable sin. Once anyone identifies himself/herself with this abominable notion, from the position of integration of the negative state into the totality of The Lord Jesus Christ's Nature, one is eternally condemning oneself to the negative state. In order to avoid such a possibility from ever coming to its fruition, it was provided by The Lord Jesus Christ that the true Nature of His/Her Essence and Substance, and the fate of His/Her physical body, be concealed until such time when total transformation of that body was completed and its fusion with and final integration into His/Her Absolute State had taken place."

"Because this process happens from within to without, no incorporation of anything negative into The Absolute State can occur, as would be the case with the process from without to within. You have to realize that what is being revealed here is extremely difficult to express in your tremendously limited language and terms. You have no words in your vocabulary that can come even remotely close to an understandable description of what took place in this process."

"Thus, it was necessary to permit the Christian movement, to use your words, to come into play, and conceive The Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ as disjointed, non-unified and split into the three persons in one God — Father, Son and The Holy Spirit — and establish falsified procedures for worship of God. From the position of separation, no profanation can occur. Once you make that separation, you no longer worship a true God but something that in true reality does not exist. To worship something that does not exist means to worship nothing. Again, no profanation and unpardonable sin can be established by such a worship."

"From this position, once the process of divinization of that body was completed and total unity was established, the process of elimination of the negative state from the within of its very being and existence could commence. All participants in the negative state can retain

the opportunity to be saved by accepting this fact about The Lord Jesus Christ and submitting themselves to Him/Her for restructuring, rebuilding, renewal, healing, transformation, resurrection and endowment with the new lifestyle, congruent with The New Spiritual State. Hence the logic for permission of this situation on your planet.”

(5)

“In The Revelation of Jesus Christ through John in Chapter 10, verse 7, it is stated,”

“but in the days of the sounding of the seventh angel, when he is about to sound, the mystery of God would be finished, as He declared to His servants the prophets.”

“And in Chapter 11, verse 15 of the same book, it is written,”

“Then the seventh angel sounded: And there were loud voices in heaven, saying, “The kingdoms of this world have become the kingdoms of our Lord and of His Christ, and He shall reign forever and ever.”

“In the days of the sounding of the seventh angel’ signifies when the fullness of the previous spiritual state has been completed and has exhausted its usefulness. ‘When he is about to sound’ signifies just before the next step is to be initiated. ‘The mystery of God would be finished’ means the completion of the process of fusion, integration, unification and hybridization of all elements of Jesus Christ into the totality of The Absolute Nature of The Most High and The Most High becoming the true Lord Jesus Christ with a totally new, so far, unavailable, Nature.”

“As He declared to His servants the prophets’ signifies as it was promised by Him/Her to the entire Creation before time and space and before activation of the negative state was permitted.”

“Notice, please, that the next step, at and after the sounding of the seventh angel, could not take place until ‘the mystery of God would be finished.’ The Lord Jesus Christ is The Absolute Example of all necessary changes that accompany continuous spiritual progression. He/She is an Absolute Prototype. He/She sets the mode, the content, the form, the means, the intensity and the extensity of these necessary changes. Thus, nothing could be accomplished of any fundamental significance which would have a profound impact on the entire Creation and the Zone of Displacement until the process described in Chapter Two of this book and foretold in The Holy Bible (the above-quoted verses) had been completed within The Most High, when The Most High became the fullness of The Lord Jesus Christ.”

“This situation reflects the spiritual principle that any change must be initiated in the most within region of being and existence and subsequently spread throughout the entire Creation to its most outward circumference.”

“When a new, totally different spiritual state is to come to its fruition, it must be initiated in The Most Within of The Most Within — The God Most High. No changes can take place anywhere, especially of this kind of magnitude, until a proper set of conditions is established within the very Nature of The Most High. This is very difficult for you to envision or understand. The Change that occurred within the Nature of The Most High was the inclusion, fusion and incorporation into His/Her totality of something that was only potentially there, by the fact of that promise before time and space were created, but not in a concrete actuality. Through the physical body of Jesus Christ, The Most High assumed a totally different degree,

becoming now The Lord Jesus Christ.”

“As you remember, the first step in this process was separation of the element from The Absolute External Mind — ‘Christ’ — and fusing it, by the process of hybridization, with the already fused two elements, taken out of Mary and Joseph. With subsequent fusion of the mentality from the element of The Absolute Interior Mind of The Most High — ‘Jesus’ — a New Hybrid came into being and existence — Jesus Christ.”

“The next step was to acquire a third element, taken out of The Absolute Most Within Spiritual Mind (formerly called the Inner Mind) of The Most High — ‘The Lord’ — and fuse it with the rest of that Hybrid. This process was preceded by purification, cleansing and liberation of the elements taken out of Mary and Joseph from all evils and falsities contained in them. This was done by a mysterious process of their internalization, through combat with and temptation by the negative state, into the totality of The Most High Jesus Christ.”

“This step reflects another form of hybridization. The result of it is a totally new Absolute Spiritual State — The Lord Jesus Christ. In this state, all corresponding factors to everything are established and a direct connectedness to all levels of Creation, sentient mind and the Zone of Displacement is accomplished.”

“Now The Lord Jesus Christ is directly connected not only to everyone’s most within Spiritual Mind, which was always the case anyway, but also to their interior minds, to their exterior minds and, through incorporated within Him/Her elements that came from Mary and Joseph, also to the Zone of Displacement and to pseudo-minds fabricated by the pseudo-creators.”

“This new situation puts the entire Creation into readiness to assume the next step, one of the most important, heralded by the sounding of the seventh angel.”

“‘Loud voices in heaven’ signifies everyone’s most within Spiritual Mind and the entire spiritual world of the positive state (‘heaven’), acknowledging, recognizing, understanding and accepting the fact of the New Spiritual State. ‘The kingdoms of this world’ do not mean the political countries of planet Zero, as literal sense would imply and as most Christians interpret these words. Instead, it signifies the entire intermediate world, the entire natural world and respective interior and exterior minds of everyone. That ‘they became the kingdoms of our Lord and His Christ’ signifies that they were unified within the most within Spiritual Mind, where The Lord Jesus Christ is, and with The Absolute Exterior Mind of The Lord Jesus Christ — ‘His Christ’ — that directly relates to the Zone of Displacement, all the Hells and planet Zero (your planet). Now, the entire Creation and the entire Zone of Displacement with all their elements are under the direct rule of The Lord Jesus Christ.”

“Premature revelation of the meaning and content of this mystery, hidden in the literal sense of The Holy Bible, which in itself has no sense, would give to the negative state a tremendous opportunity to prepare itself for this event and complicate, if not entirely undermine, this process.”

“The only thing the negative state, as well as everyone else in the positive state and on your planet, knew was that there was some kind of tremendous mystery of God and about God. But what that mystery was about, what it was exactly related to, where, when and how it would take place — no one has known until now, since the process has been successfully completed.”

“For this reason, as this process of fusion was going on, it was permitted by The Lord Jesus Christ that tremendous distortions in the form of Christianity, and all other religions, regarding

God and Jesus Christ, would come to their fruition so that no possibility of knowing what kind of mystery of God was going on could come to anyone's mind and no fatal interference with this process could take place."

"Thus, everyone was led to the external, literal interpretation of these statements in The Holy Bible without ever coming even remotely close to their true internal spiritual meaning."

"This is one of the most important reasons why The Lord Jesus Christ permitted the betrayal of Christianity and of all other religions. It was a matter of utmost security, for the sake of ultimate salvation of everyone from the slavery and bondage to the negative state and for the sake of total eventual elimination of the negative state itself."

"If the negative state were to know this secret and mystery, it would devise such atrocious and abominable means to circumvent this process that it would result in total and eternal annihilation of the entire Zone of Displacement, planet Zero and all their inhabitants."

(6)

"As you know, one of the most fundamental privileges enjoyed by all in The Lord Jesus Christ's Creation and in the Zone of Displacement, as well as on planet Zero, is freedom of choice. This principle gives everyone a deep sense of independence and responsibility. It is a major building block on which all relationships are constructed and structured. A truly meaningful, satisfying and fulfilling relationship can be built only from freedom of choice. This is particularly true in relationship to The Lord Jesus Christ. Being in the state of Absolute Freedom of Choice, The Lord Jesus Christ chose to create His/Her Creation; to enter the Zone of Displacement and planet Zero; to undergo all the above-mentioned processes; and to endow all sentient entities with the same crucial attribute — freedom of choice."

"The requirement of this attribute is that every sentient entity has to relate to everyone and particularly to its Creator — The Lord Jesus Christ — on the basis of this freedom of choice. Thus, one is free to choose what relationship with, attitude, stance or behavior toward, feelings or thinking about The Lord Jesus Christ and all others one wants to establish and to have."

"As mentioned above and in the previous books by this transmitter, one's spiritual profile and the quality of one's life depend upon the free choices one makes regarding The Lord Jesus Christ. This determines one's position and place within the hierarchy of the spiritual organization of Creation. It also determines whether one is a member of the positive state or a slave of the negative state. No other factor is as important in this respect as this one. But such a placement must be by free choice and not by any other means."

"From the above statement, it is obvious that the most important free choice of all choices one has to make is the choice to accept or to reject the true new Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ. The validation of this choice, as well as any other choice, is possible only through the consequences, outcomes and results of such a choice."

"It is impossible to have any sense of freedom of choice unless one experiences clearly the consequences, results and outcomes of this freedom. This is the responsibility part of free choice. Once the choice is made, it naturally bears its fruit."

"As you know, all choices must be available to all for choosing. So are all consequences, results and outcomes. But how can one know what to choose if no experiential examples of the outcomes of such choices are available? The answer is by allowing certain volunteers to choose even the most negative and adverse type of choices and illustrate by their living

examples all consequences, results and outcomes of these choices.”

“Planet Zero was established exactly for this purpose. On this planet The Lord Jesus Christ incarnated. Therefore, it must be on this planet that it is permitted for humans to choose to mutilate, pervert, distort and falsify anything at all, but, most importantly, the proper understanding of and relatedness to the true Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ.”

“Once this crucial choice was made by Christianity and by all other religions on your planet, the consequences, outcomes and results of such a devastating choice could be illustrated, exemplified, actualized, realized and manifested for the important spiritual learning of everyone in the entire Creation.”

“Now everyone in Creation can see very vividly and concretely what happens if one chooses distortions, falsities and perversions regarding The Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ. Again, as mentioned at the beginning of this Chapter, it gives them a clear choice of what not to choose. All political, economic, social, racial, religious and any other upheavals, turmoils and disasters; all illnesses, sicknesses, diseases; all crimes, miseries, sufferings and whatever you have there in such an abundance, ***are the sole results, consequences and outcomes of this devastating choice.***”

“For many people this statement will be difficult to swallow, to use your language. But if they were to stop for only one moment and think carefully, they would clearly realize the truth of this matter. If the most important and vital choice of all choices is the choice of how to relate to The Lord Jesus Christ — one’s Creator; if the source of the true life is The Lord Jesus Christ, then, such a choice must determine all aspects of one’s life to its minutest details. This is so without any exception or exclusion.”

“People on your planet in general have a very bad habit of considering political, economic, social and similar events as having no spiritual relevance whatsoever. They think that the only relevance to this spiritual issue can be found in religion and everything directly related to worshiping God. They are unwilling to accept the most important fact that all events of life, whether of an individual or the entire humankind, or planet, or solar system, or galaxy, or universe, or multiverse, or the entire Creation, always have spiritual connotations. The spiritual ideas are the foundation of all occurring events.”

“Therefore, their content, manifestation and outcome are always determined by the spiritual attitude of those who are pursuing such ideas. Rejection or distortion of proper spiritual concepts, which are behind everything, leads to devastating consequences, as seen throughout the history of humankind on your planet.”

“But this is exactly the reason why all these things are permitted on your planet. From them, everyone in Creation can learn about the consequences of such rejections or perversions and distortions of the fundamental spiritual principles.”

(7)

“Christianity and all Christian religions, as well as all other religions on planet Zero, serve two major purposes:”

“a. As a major weapon in the hands of the negative state to sabotage and destroy all creative efforts of The Lord Jesus Christ and all members of the positive state. As you know, the best way to fight God is in the name of God, so-to-speak. Thus, the name of God or Jesus Christ is taken and put on the top of the most, if not all, hellish ideas and, in a very convincing manner, presented to the rest of Creation and the Zone of Displacement. The purpose here

is to confuse people or, at least, to implant a grain of doubt in them.”

“After all, if God tells us to do something, we’d better do it or else. Notice, please, that the major appeal here is in the form of fear of punishment by eternal hellish fire. Unless one believes and obeys blindly what is demanded in the name of God or Jesus Christ, one will be irrevocably punished and condemned to burn in the fire of Hell in the most painful and vicious manner.”

“This is particularly true about the Christian religions. The preaching of fire and brimstone of the Hells is one of the most favorite pastimes of many preachers. As you see, very little love exists here but, of course, they give you a lot of fear. The entire philosophy of the Hells is founded on fear and punishment. Of course, they are implanted in the human mind from the cradle to the grave: Fear God or you will burn in the fires of the Hells to eternity. A ‘nice’ sadistic ‘god’ is worshiped by all Christians and others!”

“b. As a major means for the learning of everyone in The Lord Jesus Christ’s Creation of what happens if an attempt is made to relate to The Lord Jesus Christ not from the position of true love but from the position of fear and punishment, and if such demands are made in the name of God or Jesus Christ. And not only that, but what happens if one earnestly believes that this is the only way to relate to God? After all, the literal sense of The Holy Bible is continuously demanding that we fear God and give glory to God. This is another vivid illustration and learning for all: What happens if the statements of such books as The Holy Bible are taken literally and not correspondentially and spiritually in their inner sense? The tragedy of such a stance is enormous, as the history of bloody religious and other wars on your planet testifies. For such an important learning, all these things were permitted to come to their fruition.”

(8)

“The betrayal of Christianity was permitted by The Lord Jesus Christ for the sake of salvation of all those who have been willing perpetrators of and participants in the negative state from the very first moment of its activation to the very last moment of its existence and of those who live in all the Hells fabricated by the pseudo-creators, including the pseudo-creators themselves. This is a mystery that has not been revealed until now.”

“How does the betrayal of Christianity contribute to this process? The falsifications, distortions, mutilations and perversions of the spiritual ideas about The Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ and the spiritual life in general serves as an accelerating catalyst for bringing the true nature of the negative state to the surface in its fullest and totally exhausting content.”

“One of the major reasons why it will be possible to shorten the duration of this cycle of time, in which the negative state is permitted to be activated and experienced, is because, thanks to the betrayal of Christianity, it makes possible the bringing about the end of this activation much sooner than the case would have been otherwise.”

“As you remember from before, the decisive and ultimate factor in all free choice-making efforts is the choice one makes about The Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ. If this is so, and it is confirmed here, by the direct Divine Revelation of The Lord Jesus Christ, that it is so, then the fullness of the ugly, putrid and despicable nature of the negative state comes to its fruition in the manner the negative state conceptualizes The Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ and in all consequences, results and outcomes of such a freely chosen conceptualization. After all, all other choices and their consequences, not related directly to The Lord Jesus Christ, do not give one a full understanding of what the negative state is all about. All these issues are telling you again and again how fundamentally vital it is to have a proper understanding of

and relatedness to The Lord Jesus Christ and His/Her New Nature. This is the reason why the major thrust of the negative state is in making it impossible to do so by inventing all kinds of perverted ideas related to these issues.”

“Here is the paradoxical foolishness of the negative state: The more successful it is in perverting, distorting, falsifying and mutilating the spiritual ideas about the true Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ and all spiritual principles, the more vividly it exposes its true nature. By exposing its true nature, the closer it comes to its ultimate end. The betrayal of Christianity serves this purpose exactly. It has been within the Christian religions that these falsifications, perversions and distortions occurred most prominently. **This is its betrayal.**”

“But once the full nature of the negative state is exposed (and its ultimate exposure is possible by the way the negative state conceptualizes The Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ and by the outcomes of this conceptualization), The Lord Jesus Christ, from His/ Her New Absolute Totality that incorporated, fused and included within Itself the physical body of Jesus Christ, from the very within of the negative state, may and can continue in the process of the final act of His/Her salvation of all in the negative state. This process is known under the name of the Second Coming of The Lord Jesus Christ, the topic of the next Chapter of this book. Thus, it can be seen clearly why all these things were permitted on your planet — planet Zero.”

“He/she who has ears to hear and to listen, let him/her hear and listen to what The Lord Jesus Christ revealed in this Chapter.”

CHAPTER FOUR

THE SECOND COMING OF THE LORD JESUS CHRIST

On February 1, 1988, while on my way from Santa Barbara to Santa Maria, California, the word of The Lord Jesus Christ came to me, saying,

“The previous Chapter of this book, at its very end, referred to The Second Coming of The Lord Jesus Christ. It is only logical to deal next with this gravely misunderstood event and concept.”

“In order to acquire some degree of understanding of what is meant by The Second Coming of The Lord Jesus Christ, it is necessary to first clarify some misconceptions regarding His/Her First Coming. Certain points of this issue were discussed in Chapter VIII and Chapter IX of the book Major Ideas of The New Revelation by this transmitter. The reader is advised to read or reread these Chapters first before continuing with what follows.”

“By and large, three major reasons existed for The First Coming of Jesus Christ:”

“1. To save the positive state of Creation from being overrun by forces of the negative state which, at that time, vastly prevailed over the forces of the positive state.”

“This situation prompted the birth of The Lord Jesus Christ on your planet.”

“2. To acquire a physical body, the matrix of which, in its original setup, was genetically fabricated by the so-called pseudo-creators. It was necessary to acquire certain elements of such a body for the purpose of being able to enter the Zone of Displacement and all its Hells without hurting or harming anyone. As you remember, these elements were taken out of Joseph and Mary.”

“3. Having acquired the body, The Lord Jesus Christ could enter all the Hells and, particularly, the Hells of the pseudocreators and bring everything there under His/Her absolute control. At the same time, through that body, He/She was able to approach the pseudo-creators, gather them from all over Creation, where they successfully spread out, and lock them up in a certain, secret region of the Zone of Displacement. Until recently, no one has known, except for The Lord Jesus Christ, where that region was located. The Lord Jesus Christ totally isolated and separated them from the rest of Creation and obliterated from their awareness the knowledge and ability of time travel and some other skills related to life-making efforts.”

“By this act, The Lord Jesus Christ became the ultimate Savior of the entire Creation and not only humans on your planet, as many Christians fallaciously believe.”

“The purpose of The First Coming of The Lord Jesus Christ was not completed by these three acts. Most people assumed that, after He/ She departed from your planet, following His/Her resurrection, The First Coming of The Lord Jesus Christ ended and that preparation for His/Her Second Coming had begun. Nothing is further from the truth than this assumption.”

"It is correct to assume that The Second Coming of The Lord Jesus Christ cannot take place or be initiated until the full purpose and usefulness of His/Her First Coming is completed and fulfilled."

"The most important part of The First Coming of The Lord Jesus Christ began, in actuality, after He/She left your planet, taking with Him/Her the physical body He/She acquired there."

"The gradual process of hybridization of that body with and its fusion into The Absolute Totality of The Most High's Nature was undertaken, as described in Chapters Two and Three of this book. Once that process was successfully completed, the preparation for The Second Coming of The Lord Jesus Christ could commence."

"As you remember, the completion of this process, the process of hybridization, preceded the sounding of the seventh angel (Revelation 10:7). But, between this step and the actual sounding of the seventh angel, many other events had taken place, both in the spiritual world and in most of the Hells. The nature of these events is symbolically described in verses 8-11 of Chapter 10, and verses 1-14 of Chapter 11 in Revelation of Jesus Christ in The Holy Bible."

"These events could not be triggered until the purpose of The First Coming of Jesus Christ was successfully fulfilled. One of the most important reasons why it was necessary to fuse and hybridize the physical body of Jesus Christ into The Absolute Totality of The Absolute Nature of The Most High can be found in the obvious fact that salvation of the negative state from the negative state in its own totality cannot be accomplished in any other way but from the position of the totality of all elements of being and existence. As you know, The Most High lacked in His/Her Nature any elements of the Zone of Displacement and your planet. From the position of that lack, the only thing that could be accomplished was the eternal total, instantaneous annihilation of the negative state with all its inhabitants."

"Such an act would be disastrous to the entire Creation. It would deprive all its members from acquiring a very crucial and vital knowledge about the true full nature of the negative state, giving them no choice in the matter of good and evil. At the same time, it would defy the true Nature of The Most High which is Absolute Love and Absolute Wisdom. The true nature of this kind of Love and Wisdom does not destroy, but saves, transforms and preserves."

"So, in order to do just that, The Most High volunteered to undergo the process of hybridization and fusion with that body, changing fundamentally His/Her Nature and becoming the fullness of The Lord Jesus Christ."

"In this new condition, the process of gradual elimination of the negative state and salvation of all its members began. This process is the process of The Second Coming of The Lord Jesus Christ."

"Again, most humans erroneously assumed that The Second Coming of The Lord Jesus Christ is a matter of instantaneous occurrence. And although in its final phase this might be the case, the total process of its realization can take centuries or millennia in the terms of physical time on your planet as it took centuries (almost two thousand years) to complete The First Coming."

"As you know, The First Coming of The Lord Jesus Christ was completed at the time of total fusion into and hybridization of The Most High with Jesus Christ, when He/She became The Lord Jesus Christ. This happened sometime shortly before Christmas of 1987 in your planet's

conceptualization of time.“

“Let it be revealed now that, whereas The First Coming of Jesus Christ began on your planet and in the Zone of Displacement and was completed in the positive state of Creation or its spiritual world, The Second Coming of The Lord Jesus Christ must logically start from the opposite direction. It must begin from the most within of Creation — Heavens — and gradually spread out to the rest of creation; and afterwards to the entire Zone of Displacement and end at your planet. From the standpoint of your conceptualization of time, the last phase of this event on your planet might be an instantaneous occurrence.”

“The reason why The Second Coming of The Lord Jesus Christ must start from the most within of the positive state relates to the changes in The Absolute Nature of The Original Most High, as He/She became the fullness of The Lord Jesus Christ. The change in that Nature requires the change in the manner of how people relate to the changed Most High.”

“The new condition requires the new approach. If The Absolute Nature of The Most High changed into the fullness of The Lord Jesus Christ, all relative natures of all sentient entities in being and existence, as well as being and existence itself, must change in order to accommodate themselves to this fundamental change in the nature of their Creator. Nothing can proceed further until this change takes place. After all, as mentioned many times before, on the proper understanding of and relationship to their Creator, the very life of all sentient entities depends. They cannot relate from the old position, because nothing of the old is left in The Most High. In this sense, The Most High is no more. Instead, there is The Lord Jesus Christ Who is the only Most High.”

“The statement in Revelation 21:5, ‘Behold, I make all things new,’ relates exactly to this situation. To make everything new means no exception or exclusion. It incorporates everything within The Most High who is now The Lord Jesus Christ.”

“Once this process within The Most High is completed, The Lord Jesus Christ can begin the process of change with everyone in Creation. The multiversal law and order requires, and is built, on the principle that any change must begin in the within and proceed to the without. Thus, the process of restructuring, rebuilding, renewal and transformation began with the members of the most within of the positive state.”

“Once this process is completed in its fullness, it will shift to all members of the intermediate universe. And although there is a certain synchronicity and simultaneity of this process in all dimensions and worlds of Creation, it is not of time and space. It is always discrete. The nature of this process in itself cannot be explained in comprehensible words of your language. Your language lacks any corresponding meaning. Therefore, it is sufficient to say that this process is taking place right now. The completion of this process in the intermediate universe will make it possible to initiate it in the physical or natural universe of Creation.”

“After this process is completed in the entire Creation, in all its dimensions, degrees and levels, then and only then can it be applied to the Zone of Displacement. Again, there is a certain degree of synchronicity of this process even with the Zone of Displacement although of non-time and non-space nature. You can conceptualize it as follows:”

“The occurrences of these changes in the most within portion of the positive state is accompanied by the intensified turmoil and increase of the attacks of evils and falsities in the most low portion of the Hells. This intensification and increase puts the most low of the Hells into a position of its future elimination and, when the time comes, salvation of all its participants. The same goes for the changes at all other levels of Creation and corresponding

states in the Hells and other regions of the Zone of Displacement. Whatever changes are happening in the positive state, they trigger the corresponding events of the negative nature in the Zone of Displacement.”

“This process is what is signified by the statement after the seventh angel sounded (Revelation 11:15). And yet, as you know, following this statement, many other, tremendously significant, events are happening, described in the remaining Chapters of The Revelation of Jesus Christ in The Holy Bible. This statement means the beginning of The Second Coming of The Lord Jesus Christ. It is heralded by the sounding of the seventh angel. The process of The Second Coming and what it triggers in the Zone of Displacement is symbolically described in Chapters 12 through 22 of The Revelation of Jesus Christ.”

“The process of The Second Coming of The Lord Jesus Christ will be and can be completed only after total elimination of the negative state from being and existence and salvation of all voluntary participants in its life.”

“It is necessary to warn everyone who reads this book again and again not to expect The Second Coming of The Lord Jesus Christ to happen overnight, so-to-speak. Its final phase may very well appear that way. In order to acquire some limited understanding of the nature of The Second Coming, let us summarize its true meaning in the following points:”

(1)

“The precursor of the very first phase of The Second Coming is the revelation of the fact that certain books in The Holy Bible have inner spiritual meaning, hidden in their literal sense. Not all books of The Holy Bible have such a meaning. The revelation about this matter was given first through Swedenborg’s writings. However, being a precursor of something does not necessarily mean that the something has already started! An event of this kind of magnitude must be preceded by the preparatory phase which puts all things in Creation in a required mode of readiness.”

“The very first warning, that everyone needs to be aware of, is that nothing in The Word of God — The Holy Bible — can be taken literally. Most of its statements have no relevance to the historical or future events of planet Zero (your planet). In most instances, they either relate to the internal spiritual affairs of everyone’s mind or to the events that took, take and will take place in different dimensions of the Zone of Displacement and the intermediate world (what Swedenborg called the world of spirits).”

“The reason why this crucial revelation must come first is that the literal sense relates only to the external mind of humans. It can never penetrate further than the external level of consciousness. Except for humans on your planet, no other sentient entities anywhere are aware of the literal sense. For them, it really does not make any sense.”

“Correspondingly speaking, there are as many meanings in the internal sense of The Holy Bible as there are levels, degrees, and steps in Creation and layers, spheres and aspects of the sentient mind.”

“In order for The Second Coming of The Lord Jesus Christ to commence, it is necessary first to bring into order the hierarchy of organization of the human mind, which was totally out of alignment with the rest of the sentient minds.”

“As you know, relatively only recently humans started to be aware that such things as unconscious, subconscious and internal processes within their minds even exist. Not too many humans on your planet even now are aware that such things as the most within

Spiritual Mind, interior mind and external mind exist at all. All they know is the conscious part or the most outward layer of their external mind. This situation had to be rectified first.”

“But, it had to follow the order of the multiverse which requires that all reorganization begins from spiritual, through mental, into the natural. Because the only factor on your planet that relates to the issues of spirituality is what humans consider to be The Word of God — The Holy Bible — it was the revelation about the true structure, meaning and content of The Holy Bible that was the beginning of this process. Swedenborg’s writings relate to this issue, as well as the last Chapter in the book Reality, Myths & Illusion by the transmitter of this book.”

“Once the revelation about this fact was granted at the time of Swedenborg, the next step was to connect that revelation to the structure of the human mind. It was again Swedenborg, and not Freud, as many believe, who revealed that the human mind has many aspects and layers, and consists of internal, interior and external aspects. It was Swedenborg who correctly perceived that each aspect of the human mind directly relates to and is connected with its corresponding world. Thus, the most within Spiritual Mind (formerly called the Inner Mind) is always connected to the spiritual world, the interior mind to the intermediate world, and the external mind to the natural or physical world. This connectedness and relatedness is always unconscious, except for the outward layer of the external mind. Again, to repeat, it was Swedenborg, not Freud, who postulated the existence of unconscious processes that influence human behavior and life in all its aspects to the minutest detail. Of course, none of the modern psychologists and mental health professionals give any credit to Swedenborg, whose concept of the human mind far surpassed anything written in this respect by all human scholars.”

“However, at the time of Swedenborg, no one in your world was ready to know that there is such a thing as the Zone of Displacement and that planet Earth is not actually the real planet Earth but planet Zero (more on the planet Zero will be revealed in Chapter Seventeen of this book). At the same time, no one was ready to know the story of the pseudo-creators, what they did to this planet and what kind of genetic alterations and manipulations they performed on human beings in order to establish the present conditions existing on your planet.”

“Thus, no one was aware that the above-mentioned three levels or degrees or aspects of the human mind were altered and that around them artificially built pseudo-minds were established which block the true minds from their proper functions. And that through these three pseudo-minds humans are connected to the various levels of the Zone of Displacement from where they receive all their so-called inspirations and messages related to the issues of their lives and the state of their minds.”

“For that reason, the third step in preparation for The Second Coming of The Lord Jesus Christ was the revelation of the above-mentioned factors, as contained in the books by this transmitter, published before this book was written. Now, having these three steps completed, the proper order of the structure of the human mind and the Zone of Displacement defined and established, the first phase of The Second Coming of The Lord Jesus Christ could be initiated.”

(2)

“The very initial step of the first phase of The Second Coming was the completion of The First Coming of The Lord Jesus Christ. It culminated in an appearance of the totally new, hitherto unknown, hybridized form of The Lord Jesus Christ. Once The Most High became the fullness of The Lord Jesus Christ, by that very act, His/Her Second Coming has begun.”

“Thus, the central issue of this step in The Second Coming is the revelation that there is no

other God in being and existence but The Lord Jesus Christ. And that all other names by which God is named became obsolete and are no longer acceptable. And that worshipping of any other form of God but The Lord Jesus Christ is a spiritual adultery and abomination.”

(3)

“The next phase of The Second Coming of The Lord Jesus Christ is the process of restructuring and transformation of all sentient entities throughout the entire Creation into His/Her New Likeness and Image in order to accommodate their perceptive and receptive abilities to this new spiritual state and era.”

“Once this step is completed, a new type of interaction between The Lord Jesus Christ and all sentient entities will take place. Up to that point, that interaction was unavailable and inconceivable. The Lord Jesus Christ will start to appear to His/Her people in a manner that has never been experienced before.”

“One aspect of this new appearance will be in the totality of one’s mind from the most within to the most without. Until this time, The Lord Jesus Christ could be perceived only in the most within recesses of one’s Spiritual Mind where He/She always had a seat as The Most High (The Most High corresponding to the most within!). However, having incorporated all aspects of the physical body into the totality of His/Her Absolute Nature, The Lord Jesus Christ now will be able to appear directly at all other levels of the Spiritual, interior and exterior mind and also outside of one’s mind as any other sentient entity or human being. Up to this point, this kind of appearance was a seeming one, as a vision or a transparent form, and not as a concrete, factual occurrence.”

“The new way of relating to The Lord Jesus Christ begins from the most within area of Creation — Heavens — and proceeds in succession to the most without of Creation — the natural or physical world. In the Zone of Displacement, the corresponding factor to this situation is a greater degree of distortions and perversions in the conceptualization of the Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ. On your planet Zero, there will be a mixture of these two states with gradual total flooding of the most dire falsities, persuasions and abominations regarding this issue until the negative state on your planet wins completely for a brief period of time.”

(4)

“One of the important aspects of The Second Coming of The Lord Jesus Christ is The New Revelation about the true origin and nature of the negative state and the reason why it was permitted to come into its being and existence in the first place. During The First Coming of Jesus Christ, this knowledge would have been premature to reveal. The stage was not set up yet at that time for relating to the negative state from the position of freedom of choice and not by necessity (see Chapter IX in Major Ideas of The New Revelation).”

“As pointed out in that Chapter, full true nature of the negative state cannot be manifested until it is chosen as a preferred state. Only then can the genuine learning about the negative state begin.”

“Thus, one of the many important aspects of The Second Coming of The Lord Jesus Christ is bringing to the attention of the entire Creation and the Zone of Displacement the true origin of the negative state and the story of the pseudo-creators, as revealed for the first time in the book Fundamentals of Human Spirituality. The integral part of The Second Coming, therefore, is the revelation of all concepts of the current New Revelation as transmitted by this transmitter.”

“The proper knowledge regarding the origin of the negative state is a very crucial one. The negative state cannot be eliminated until its originating source is known. Otherwise, people would continue to believe that its source was The Most High, as some religions on your planet proclaim (Taoists, for example). To assign the source of anything to something or someone that is not its true source means to be in the negative state. In that case, the negative state cannot be eliminated because the source of its origin is considered to be a wrong one. How can one eliminate the very feeding source of everything negative if it is assigned to the wrong source? What you eliminate in this case is not the negative state but the truth about the negative state — which is the negative state! Hence, the need for The New Revelation about the true origin and source of the negative state. This Revelation puts everything in order and proper place, setting a favorable stage for The Second Coming of The Lord Jesus Christ to be fully manifested.”

(5)

“There is a corresponding factor in the human mind to what was said about The Second Coming of The Lord Jesus Christ in point one of this Chapter. All processes in being and existence are initiated from within with subsequent gradual spread to without. The Second Coming of The Lord Jesus Christ in its essence and substance thus takes place first within everyone’s heart or mind. It begins in the most within of everyone’s Spiritual Mind.”

“One of the most important phases of The Second Coming is the acceptance into one’s heart the facts about the true New Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ, as revealed throughout this book. The ability and willingness to accept The New Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ by one’s own free will and choice, for the sake of principle itself, for the sake of the truth of the matter, because it is so, accomplishes The Second Coming of The Lord Jesus Christ within that person.”

“The proper understanding of this aspect of The Second Coming is particularly important to humans on your planet. At the present time, no other manifestation of The Second Coming of The Lord Jesus Christ on your planet takes and will take place. It will take place only at the level of everyone’s most within. This situation will continue with humans for some time to come. Any other form of this manifestation cannot take place until its most inward aspect happens first.”

“Thus, all individuals who read this book, and who will be willing to accept into their hearts and lives the ideas regarding The New Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ, will make it possible for The Second Coming to commence also on your planet. The most within phase of The Second Coming in the human Spiritual Minds and hearts will enable the preparation of the stage for the manifestation of other phases of this event on your planet. What these phases will be and how they will be manifested cannot be revealed yet for security reasons. They are a matter of the future and of The Divine Providence of The Lord Jesus Christ. Premature revelation of such facts makes it possible for the negative state to interfere and divert, postpone or modify these events. This would make it impossible for the negative state to be properly eliminated. By this act, much further irrevocable damage could be done to the human minds.”

“Now, the negative state, with all its Hells, knows how important it is for The Second Coming of The Lord Jesus Christ, in this revealed aspect, to take place in the human’s most within Spiritual Mind. It cannot do anything to the sentient entities in the positive state who have been undergoing this process for some time. But humans on your planet and all creatures in the entire Zone of Displacement are an entirely different matter. Here, the negative state has full freedom to do anything it wants, provided that its acts are accepted by humans and other creatures of its domain.”

“For this reason, one of the major thrusts of the Hells in this respect is and will be a vicious attack on the content and ideas of this New Revelation, particularly on The New Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ. This will be done for the purpose of making it, as much as possible, extremely difficult for humans and other creatures of the Zone of Displacement to accept these revealed ideas.”

“The more humans and other creatures are willing to accept these ideas into their hearts, minds and lives, the better position for the final phases of The Second Coming of The Lord Jesus Christ in the Zone of Displacement and your planet is established.”

“The words ‘more humans and creatures’ spiritually does not necessarily mean quantity or numbers. Only the negative state likes statistics. In spiritual connotation ‘more’ means the quality and state of human and creature minds who will be willing to accept these ideas fully and unconditionally for the sake of principles, because they are true. If, for example, very few humans and creatures are willing to accept these ideas, but they are of high spiritual quality, they will make up for the quantitative numbers. One person of such a spiritual quality equals many millions of humans and creatures in the Hells.”

“Because of this fact, the major target of the negative state will be people of this quality. It will make all possible efforts to make it impossible for these types of people to accept what is being revealed in this book. But this state of affairs is part of the manifestation of The Second Coming of The Lord Jesus Christ. Without it, no such efforts on the negative state’s side would be necessary. This phase of The Second Coming and the negative state’s response to it, in the manner just described, exposes and brings to the surface the true nature of the negative state, thus, preparing it for its final elimination.”

(6)

“Another aspect of The Second Coming of The Lord Jesus Christ is the revelation about the betrayal of Christianity and all other religions on your planet. The knowledge of this fact is a crucial one. Up to this point, most of their followers believed that all these religions and their respective sects originated from God and are sanctioned by God. This is particularly true for members of the Christian religions and sects. The reason why this belief was permitted to flourish was revealed in Chapter Three of this book.”

“The actual process of The Second Coming of The Lord Jesus Christ, and the most important part of its phase, is the gradual uncovering of, and bringing to the open light all falsities and belief systems that have been perpetuated for millennia by all religions, and particularly by Christians, regarding all spiritual issues and the true Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ. People have been ingrained with these false ideas, then brainwashed into believing them to be from God. To use your human terms, this happens to them from the cradle to the grave. They believe these ideas to be holy and the true word of God.”

“As long as this situation prevails and as long as there is no proper knowledge of otherwise, the negative state remains a powerful force in humans’ life, dominating all aspects of their minds and behavior. Full acceptance of these falsities makes it impossible to eliminate them overnight, in one stroke, so-to-speak. If it were to happen like that, no one could survive such a process. Remember, human and creature life is vested in these falsities which feed their life. They make these ideas the source of their life.”

“For that reason, a gradual exposure of various falsities of humans’ spiritual and religious belief systems and all their adopted spiritual ideas is undertaken as a special phase of The Second Coming of The Lord Jesus Christ. For this purpose, The New Revelation is granted

by The Lord Jesus Christ in gradual steps. Each step contains greater degrees of this exposure than the previous one. The first step in this Revelation usually retains most or a substantial portion of the previous distortions. It reveals only comparatively and relatively a small part of falsities and distortions of prevalent spiritual ideas of humans and other creatures of the Zone of Displacement. This very first step was represented by Swedenborg's writings."

"From the time of Swedenborg to the second step of The New Revelation almost two hundred and fifty years elapsed (in your temporal terms) before anything truly new was revealed."

"In the second step of The New Revelation substantially more exposure of the falsified, distorted and perverted spiritual ideas was permitted and made available. Between the second and the third steps, represented by this portion of The New Revelation, as recorded in this book, from the time of transmission of Fundamentals of Human Spirituality, seven years in your time elements elapsed."

"As you see, the time in between steps is getting shorter. This reflects the law of acceleration. The closer the end or the goal, the faster the approach to the end or goal. The third step of The New Revelation reflects an even greater degree of exposure of all spiritual and religious falsities and evils that have been plaguing your planet and other regions of the Zone of Displacement since the activation and dominance of the negative state."

"All these steps are crucial phases of The Second Coming of The Lord Jesus Christ or their precursors (in the case of the first phase, represented by Swedenborg's writings)."

(7)

"Another important aspect of The Second Coming of The Lord Jesus Christ is opening the door and access to other dimensions in both directions. Many humans are able to be in contact with and directly communicate with other beings and entities from elsewhere, as well as beings and entities from elsewhere are permitted to communicate with and influence humans on your planet."

"This important step is a necessary condition for establishing the process of differentiation between the negative and positive forces on your planet and in the Zone of Displacement. This process brings into the open the hidden desires, wishes and preferences of humans and creatures. It commits them to take a position or stance toward crucial spiritual ideas, meanings and purposes for their lives."

"Because this is a process of differentiation, separation, discrimination and siding, most beings and entities from elsewhere are coming from the negative side under the disguise of loving, caring, wise, considerate and helpful guides of the person with whom they communicate."

"The distinction between them and the entities from the positive side can be found in the content and quality of the messages they are giving to humans. If these messages are of a purely personal nature, related explicitly to the well-being and improvement of one's personal spiritual, mental and physical condition and health; advising but not guiding; presenting one with various choices for choosing; emphasizing free will; the probability is much higher that they are from the positive side."

"However, if these entities from elsewhere call themselves guides (spirit-guides); or claim to be messengers of God; and speak in general terms for all others; giving messages to the

public at large; staging all kinds of public workshops and sessions, attended by hundreds or even thousands of people; wanting to lead others through channelers; predicting the future; regardless of how much love, wisdom, caring, understanding, consideration or whatever they show, they are always from the negative state.”

“All of you are advised to pay attention to your intuition. The subtle voice and sense of your intuition is ***the only weapon presently available on your planet for the purpose of determining who is who.*** Even slightly uneasy, anxious or uncomfortable feelings or states during such communications with whoever talks to you directly in your own communication or through some other so-called channels, is a warning sign to you that you are in contact with the wrong entities.”

“Notice, please, how many so-called channelers (a favorite word of the negative state) currently appear on your planet. Not only do they not have any spiritual values, but they are totally misleading. They are permitted to do so in order to trigger within humans the need to define and to show where their true loyalties are and to whom they choose to belong. In actuality, this is the initial phase of their Last Judgment. The Last Judgment, in turn, is the final phase of The Second Coming of The Lord Jesus Christ. More on the Last Judgment will be revealed in Chapter Eight of this book.”

(8)

“The actual physical Second Coming of The Lord Jesus Christ will be first manifested (and it already is) within the positive state and not on your planet or in the Zone of Displacement. The Lord Jesus Christ is appearing and coming to all in the positive state in His/Her newly acquired form which was infused and incorporated into the totality of The Most High.”

“The corresponding factor of this appearance on your planet can be found in the process of going inward.”

“In that process, some humans are able to meet The Lord Jesus Christ as their Highest Spiritual Advisor, together with all other advisors assigned to them by Him/Her, and establish within themselves, if they choose so by their free will, a close relationship with Him/Her. By this process, they are able to have their own personal, private and intimate experience of The Second Coming of The Lord Jesus Christ.”

“In having such an experience, and accepting its validity, after thorough security checks by their intuition, these people are preparing your planet for a final phase of The Second Coming of The Lord Jesus Christ.”

“Again, not many humans on your planet are able or are ready to have such an experience, especially in its modified form (as will be revealed in the next Chapter of this book). However, as pointed out above, the positive state does not work in quantities but in qualities.”

“Thus, the occurrence of The Second Coming of The Lord Jesus Christ on your planet, for the time being, will be limited to this internal, personalized and unique experience of the selected individuals without any apparent external manifestation.”

“There is an extremely important spiritual reason why this is so. The physical manifestation of The Second Coming of The Lord Jesus Christ on your planet, as the literal sense of The New Testament of The Holy Bible implies, means manifestation in the externals.”

“As you know, the very nature of the negative state is to place everything without and distract, by all available means, humans’ abilities to go into their within. Humans are kept

without, in the external world. Their preoccupation with the external matters of life is of such extent and proportion that it robs them of their time, not giving them any spare time for learning to go inward and practicing regularly the process of being within.”

“Thus, if the external manifestation of The Second Coming of The Lord Jesus Christ were to occur without its manifestation in the inner world of the most within of the Spiritual Mind of individuals it would be validation of the negative state’s rights for its eternal being and existence. Everyone would consider the negative state’s nature of emphasis on the externals, outward, and without to be a mode of life which is a correct and a godly one.”

“From this position, no elimination of the negative state could take place and subsequently no salvation of its members could ever be possible.”

“Once the fullness of The Second Coming of The Lord Jesus Christ manifests itself in the inner, personal, unique and individual manner, within each individual’s heart, and bears its fruit, then, and only then, other aspects of its manifestation can be considered (if necessary, needed and feasible).”

“Remember, please, activation of the negative state was initiated in the most without of the without of Creation. The process of its coming to fruition was accomplished by turning all attention to without and placing all values of life entirely into the external events and processes. Thus, matter, nature, conscious processes of the human external mind, material possessions and similar matters became the purpose of life instead of its means.”

“On the other hand, the spiritual values of the most within worlds became either entirely neglected and discarded, or they were put in a subservient position of the means to the external goals. Under this condition, the external, physical, literal manifestation of The Second Coming of The Lord Jesus Christ would reinforce this abominable, deadly style of life. All truly spiritual meaning of life would be lost forever.”

“From this statement it is obvious why The Second Coming of The Lord Jesus Christ on your planet can never happen the way the literal sense of The Holy Bible describes. This fact was already revealed through Swedenborg and in the article published by this transmitter in one of the TMH Foundation’s newsletters.”

“Let us look again at some internal meanings of those Biblical literal statements about The Second Coming of The Lord Jesus Christ. Besides what was revealed previously through Swedenborg and the transmitter of this book, the following ideas are being added to them. In The Gospel According to Matthew, Chapter 24, verse 29-31, we read:”

“Immediately after the tribulation of those days the sun will be darkened, and the moon will not give its light; the stars will fall from heaven, and the powers of the heavens will be shaken.”

“Then the sign of the Son of Man will appear in heaven, and then all the tribes of the earth will mourn, and they will see the Son of Man coming on the clouds of heaven with power and great glory.”

“And He will send His angels with the great sound of a trumpet, and they will gather together His elect from the four winds, from one end of heaven to the other.”

“Immediately after the tribulation of those days’ signifies the time and state when the negative state will be allowed to expose its nature to the fullest of its potentials and to completely win over the positive state on the planet Zero. As mentioned previously, the negative state cannot be eliminated until its total nature is exposed, full learning of it occurs and the usefulness of its being and existence is completely exhausted.”

“But, as you remember from some statements in the previous Chapter of this book, the full exposure and learning can be done only by a concrete and living example. Planet Zero was assigned this role, as well as some regions of the intermediate worlds of the Zone of Displacement. The members of the positive state cannot enter the worlds that, mathematically speaking, are below Zero.”

“The proper learning can occur only in the state of neutrality where everything and everyone is permitted to exhibit whatever they want.”

“Thus, in order to learn a full lesson regarding the situation in which the negative state is a total winner and the positive state is a total loser (and only in such a situation can the full nature of the negative state be exposed and the answer to that existential question about the life without spiritual principles and God or falsified spiritual principles be answered!), the negative state will be permitted to win completely on planet Zero for a brief period of time. This is what is meant by the words (among many other things) ‘after the tribulations of those days.’”

“‘The sun will be darkened’ signifies that all proper knowledge about the true Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ will be lost. Not one single correct idea about this Nature will be available. Only distortions will remain. ‘Sun’ corresponds to the Most Within of The Lord Jesus Christ.”

“‘And the moon will not give its light’ denotes that there will be no discernment of the operation of Divine Providence of The Lord Jesus Christ and no proper base or foundation on which any truly meaningful relationship with The Lord Jesus Christ can be established. In this respect, ‘moon’ corresponds to The Absolute Mentality or The Absolute Interior Mind of The Lord Jesus Christ.”

“‘The stars will fall from heaven’ signifies that The Divine Human of The Lord Jesus Christ will be separated from His/Her Human Divine, making it impossible to acquire any proper knowledge about any spiritual ideas whatsoever. In this connotation ‘stars’ corresponds to The Absolute Exterior Mind of The Lord Jesus Christ and His/Her physical body which was made divine.”

“‘And the powers of the heavens will be shaken’ means that the life-giving source, stemming from the most within, will be endangered by cutting off the spiritual life support system that supplies life to the entire Creation, to your planet and the entire Zone of Displacement.”

“Once proper knowledge of the true Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ is lost, the door is closed to the flow of proper spiritual ideas that give life to everything and everyone alive. This situation is a sign that the full nature of the negative state has been exposed; and that further tolerance of its being and existence is endangering the very life itself. It is at this point that the sign of the Son of Man will appear in heaven.”

“‘The sign of the Son of Man’ signifies recognition by all participants in the negative state that the external perception of their understanding of the true nature of The Lord Jesus Christ is completely false.”

“‘Appears in heaven’ denotes the opening of the door to the most within Spiritual Mind of each participant. From that mind comes the knowledge about their true miserable spiritual state. This miserable state is denoted by the following words, ‘and then all tribes of the earth will mourn.’”

“‘All tribes of the earth’ means all misconceptions, falsities, perversions, distortions and mutilations and their clusters (‘tribes’) which exist in the external conceptualization of all spiritual principles (‘of the earth’) without any inner connectedness. ‘Will mourn’ signifies that all sources of suffering, evilness, ugliness and putridity stem from this dire situation.”

“‘And they will see the Son of Man coming on the clouds of heaven with power and great glory’ means the very first proper perception of The Divine Human (‘Son of Man’) embodied into the totality of The Absolute Nature of the original Most High (‘the clouds of Heaven’) and unified to Its Absolute Mentality (‘with power’) and Its Absolute Divine Spirit (‘great glory’).”

“‘And He will send His angels with a great sound of a trumpet’ denotes the direct spiritual invasion of all forces of the positive state into the negative state with the open, external perception of the invasion.”

“‘And they will gather together His elect from the four winds, from one end of heaven to the other’ signifies extraction of all remains of the positive ideas preserved in the recesses of everyone’s most within Spiritual Mind regarding the true spiritual principles (‘four winds’), bringing them to the open and placing them in a proper order and hierarchy of the spiritual organization (‘from one end of heaven to the other’); placing everyone into a position of readiness for the last phase of The Second Coming of The Lord Jesus Christ.”

(9)

“The last phase of The Second Coming of The Lord Jesus Christ is the most crucial one. It entails a total permanent, eternal elimination of the negative state and all its Hells from the being and existence. It also entails salvation of all from the slavery, bondage and clutches of the negative state and their Hells.”

“By this last step, the meaning and process of The Second Coming of The Lord Jesus Christ will be completed and this cycle of time will be closed.”

“As you remember, it is within this particular cycle of time that the negative state was permitted to become active and the Zone of Displacement populated. In no other previous cycle of time of Creation and in no succeeding cycle of time to eternity will the negative state ever be permitted to be activated again. With this final phase of The Second Coming of The Lord Jesus Christ, all experiences of the negative state, from the moment of its activation to the last moment of its elimination, will be placed and preserved for eternal learning in the Universality-Of-It-All, in the part of it called in The Holy Bible, the Lake of Fire and Brimstone. The Last Judgment of this phase denotes the gathering and placement of all these experiences in the lake of fire and the end of this cycle of time.”

“A new heaven and a new earth (Revelation 21:1) signifies a new cycle of time of Creation in which no negative state has any place. It also means a total completion of all restructuring, rebuilding, rejuvenating and transforming of all sentient entities and humans into the contents and forms that correspond to the New Likeness and Image of The New Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ. At that point, the physical, concrete and literal appearance of The Lord Jesus Christ on your planet (planet Zero) may occur. This last step is the actual completion of The Second Coming of The Lord Jesus Christ. The meaning and content of The Second Coming

of The Lord Jesus Christ is not limited by the above-revealed nine points, or by Swedenborg's writings or by an article published in the TMH Foundation newsletter. There are many more aspects to it than were revealed here. But they cannot be revealed at this time for security reasons. Certain important aspects of The Second Coming of The Lord Jesus Christ cannot be revealed at all until they are fully actualized and take place."

"Thus, some spiritual issues, for very important spiritual and security reasons, can become apparent only in the process of their very occurrence. However, more about The Second Coming of The Lord Jesus Christ will be revealed in Chapters Seven and Eight of this book."

"He/she who has ears to hear and listen, let him/her hear and listen to what The Lord Jesus Christ reveals in this Chapter."

CHAPTER FIVE

PRINCIPLES AND APPLICATIONS OF THE NEW SPIRITUAL HYPNOTHERAPY AND OF THE PROCESS OF GOING INWARD

On February 5, 1988, at 6:00 a.m., the word of The Lord Jesus Christ came to me, saying,

“In order for The Second Coming of The Lord Jesus Christ to take place also in the hearts and minds of some humans on your planet, some fundamental modifications in the methods and processes of treatment by means of spiritual hypnotherapy and of going inward have to take place.”

“The changes described above, that have been taking place in the Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ and throughout the entire Creation, require that adjustments be made also with some humans on planet Zero.”

“As you know, a few years ago, with the publishing of the book Principles of Spiritual Hypnosis, the very first set of principles and rules was established for going inward, contacting one’s Inner Mind (this is what it was called at that time), converting one’s shadow and bringing out one’s spiritual advisors. Those rules and principles reflected the spiritual state of affairs existing at that time. What was revealed and practiced at that time was correct and appropriate and nothing more or different would have worked. The spiritual situation in the spiritual world was congruent to those practices.”

“But, as changes were starting to take place, in a positive sense in the positive state and in a negative sense in the negative state, further steps needed to be taken. These steps were needed in order to continuously update and modify the principles and procedures by which the process of treatment and going inward had to take place.”

“As you know, the negative state never sleeps. It learns fast. Shortly after the principles were formulated, it adjusted itself to all requirements and conditions of these principles, rules and procedures. Accordingly, it changed its face, methods and tactics. With these changes, a new set of rules and procedures for meticulous security checks was developed, as described in the books Reality, Myths & Illusions, Who Are You And Why Are You Here? and Chapter Four of Major Ideas of The New Revelation.”

“However, very soon even these new security checks became ineffective and obsolete. The members of the negative state learned all the tricks in the book, to use your language, to express this situation. At this time, there is nothing that they cannot pretend to be. There is no one they cannot simulate or pretend to be or to appear like, including The Lord Jesus Christ Himself/Herself.”

“As the changes in the positive state were taking place, so were greater degrees of infestation with more flexible and adjustable negative entities who started to appear in the life of humans during their contact with their most within Spiritual Mind and their spiritual advisors. The main reason for this infestation and penetration was to block humans from being aware of the changes taking place and, thus, to prevent them from responding to these changes by adjusting their lives and process of going inward to reflect these changes. The block was and is for the purpose of pretending that everything is fine; that no changes need

to take place and that the status quo needs to be preserved.”

“By making these individuals secure in their daily practices of going inward and communicating with their spiritual advisors, the negative entities were able to block these individuals from awareness that any changes in their approach needed to take place. And not only that, but, as they were informed by you, Peter, about the need for these changes, they accused you of being taken over by the negative entities yourself. Subsequently, many of your former students and followers broke any contact with you and stopped listening to and taking heed of all warnings coming from the true Lord Jesus Christ about this situation. They are still rigidly practicing in the old, outdated and obsolete way.”

“By not changing, the gradual, almost imperceptible shift occurred toward their recession and setback from the positive state and turning in the direction of the negative state. This shift is reflected in reoccurrence of their previous non-desirable spiritual, mental and physical conditions or in joining the clan and host of pseudo-spiritual trends of the so-called ‘new age’ humans.”

“Thus, at one point, you became clearly aware that you can no longer trust anything that is coming from within and that, no matter how many different and more sophisticated security checks you perform, they do not seem to be working anymore. You lost all confidence in practicing of your spiritual hypnotherapy and in the process of going inward.”

“This is an understandable outcome when you deal with profound universal spiritual changes that have been continuously taking place since the publishing of your first book Principles of Spiritual Hypnosis.”

“Planet Zero, your planet, being in the peculiar position that it is, is always behind in time and space in responding to such changes. One of the reasons is that it is accessible equally by both the forces of the positive state and the forces of the negative state. However, this position changed recently. As the nature of the negative state needs to come to the surface more and more, to the point of its complete exposure, it is permitted to invade your work and your minds more and more. Remember, humans on your planet are the stage on which this nature is fully exposed. For the reasons mentioned in the previous Chapters, this full exposure can be initiated only on your planet.”

“Thus, the balance of equality of the accessibility of the positive and negative forces on your planet has been tilted in favor of the negative state. This situation leads to the broader and easier influence and approach of the negative entities into the human minds in comparison with the positive entities.”

“Unless in the process of going inward and during spiritual hypnotherapy, one learns to make important adjustments, one is doomed to be gradually taken over by the negative entities, pretending and appearing to be one’s true spiritual advisors, including The Lord Jesus Christ. Up to this point, it was not time yet to know what these adjustments and modifications were.”

“As you remember from the previous Chapters, all these substantial changes had to take place in the spiritual world first, or in the most within of Creation. In actuality, these changes had to be completed first within The Absolute Nature of The Most High, who became eternally the fullness of The Lord Jesus Christ. The change within Him/Her set a direction and mode for the necessary changes in all other dimensions of The Lord Jesus Christ’s Creation. Once these changes were successfully accomplished, the revelation about these states of affairs could be granted to you so that necessary changes and modifications in the procedures of going inward and spiritual hypnotherapy could be formulated.”

“The process of going inward and spiritual hypnotherapy, in their former stages, had to follow certain well-defined procedures. The major thrust was in making contact with one’s true Inner Mind or what is now called the most within Spiritual Mind; and, from that position, to initiate the work of gradual elimination of human problems and miseries acquired from the moment of the physical birth on planet Zero to the time of entrance into the treatment.”

“An important note about the change of the name from the Inner Mind to the most within Spiritual Mind. The term ‘Inner Mind’ was defined in the book Principles of Spiritual Hypnosis. The content of that definition implied an existence of spiritual reality contained in deep recesses of the human mind. In the process of any type of treatment, prior to the introduction of spiritual hypnosis, this spiritual area of the human mind was totally neglected or completely discarded. The new treatment methodology, described and formulated in that book, rectified that neglect and included, in any type of treatment, the spiritual approach. Gradually, the term ‘Inner Mind’ was taken over by other professionals in the field of hypnotherapy without any reference to the above book or to the spiritual definition of that term. Presently, everyone accepts this term but without its spiritual content.”

“Thus, the negative state successfully contaminated the principles themselves, as formulated in that book. For this reason, any evocation of the inner mind during the process of treatment, under the presently existing contaminated spiritual situation, has no longer any relevance to the true spiritual essence of the human mind. Instead, it evokes the pseudo-mind that blocks the true Spiritual Mind from coming through. In order to avoid this block, you are advised from now on to use a new term — ***The Most Within Spiritual Mind***. This new term replaces the term ‘Inner Mind.’”

“But to go back to our topic: In the book Principles of Spiritual Hypnosis, the process of working on one’s problems was preceded by an attempt, after the contact with The Spiritual Mind, to convert one’s shadow and to bring out one’s spiritual advisors. Once the shadow was converted and the contact with the spiritual advisors was established, then and only then all necessary work on the problems of the client was done with their full engagement and help.”

“As mentioned above, at that time this was a proper approach and position. The very first step that needed to be established in those days was to bring to humans’ awareness their fundamental spiritual needs, the neglect of which was the source of most, if not all, of their problems; then, to teach them to go inward and to do everything in their lives from the position of their Spiritual Mind.”

“As you know, up to that point, such an awareness was either nonexistent or very obscure, shrouded in all kinds of mumbo-jumbo of the external rituals and ceremonies of various religions and pseudo-spiritualistic trends; and of literalization of the spiritual principles, placing the spiritual value and holiness in the tools and means for going inward themselves, rather than in the state of being inward itself.”

“The nonsense of rituals, ceremonies and literalization of means and tools in themselves is particularly reflected in the Christian Church, Yoga practices, Eastern, Oriental religious practices and in Islamic religions. In themselves, they have no spiritual meaning and value whatsoever.”

“For that reason, a methodology was revealed and established, as described in the books Principles of Spiritual Hypnosis and Intensive Spiritual Hypnotherapy (the first forty pages of this book only), that allowed humans to go inward directly without any ritualistic mediation

and life-long external exercises and practices.”

“Once the first awareness of the need to do everything from the position of within, from one’s Spiritual Mind and true spiritual principles, as conveyed by one’s true spiritual advisors, was clearly established and a new lifestyle, stemming from this need, was developed, the next step was ready to be taken.”

“In this step, the full responsibility for going inward and learning the spiritual truth from one’s within was completely shifted to every individual. In order to fulfill this step, at the request of The Lord Jesus Christ, a new book was written, giving those who wished to pursue this process step by step procedures on how to go inward, contact one’s Spiritual Mind, perform various security checks and communicate with one’s spiritual advisors. This book was *Who Are You And Why Are You Here?*“

“Notice, please, that in these two previous steps the emphasis is on working with one’s Spiritual Mind, from the position of one’s Spiritual Mind or one’s true within, with the help of one’s converted shadow and one’s spiritual advisors. In the first step, there is no mention or even awareness to do anything about one’s interior mind and even less with one’s exterior or external mind. It is taken for granted that working with The Spiritual Mind (called at that time the Inner Mind) would automatically take care of all problems of the interior and exterior minds.”

“The incompleteness of this process was permitted and needed at that time so that humans, being in the habit of always being outside themselves, would not get stuck or bogged down forever in the interior or external level of their mind. It is repeated here that the very first step in this work is the return to the true spiritual procedures — from within to without. If full attention were to be given on working first with the external mind and then with the interior mind, it would be a procedure from without to within. This is the negative state’s procedure. Nothing truly useful can be accomplished by taking this direction.”

“Using the procedure from without to within, one would end up in a much worsened condition, a full blown share of the negative state with a sense of false security and happiness as is the case with all followers of various gurus, teachers, swamis, shamans, medicine men, ‘holy’ men and all their foolish rituals, exercises, concept of chakras, kundalini powers and whatever you have there in such an abundance.”

“However, once the need for the proper procedures from within to without were firmly established, and the individuals practicing these methods were firmly rooted in the most within level of their mind, from that position, proper and effective attention could be given to the state and condition of their interior and exterior minds and to all other factors of their minds.”

“In the first step, the mess of the negative state surrounding The Spiritual Mind needed to be cleaned up first. Only from that position, after the clean up of that mess, could one look and see clearly what could be done about the rest of the mess that surrounds the interior and external minds, respectively.”

“One of the inner spiritual meanings of the statement recorded in The Gospel According to Matthew, Chapter 7, verses 3-5, symbolically relates to this issue. It is said there:”

““And why do you look at the speck in your brother’s eye, but do not consider the plank in your own eye? Or how can you say to your brother, ‘Let me remove the speck out of your

eye”; and look, a plank is in your own eye? Hypocrite! First remove the plank from your own eye, and then you will see clearly to remove the speck out of your brother’s eye.”

“‘To look at the speck in your brother’s eye’ is to look outside from the position of outside (from without to without). ‘But do not consider the plank in your own eye’ signifies disregard for the mess that surrounds one’s own most within Spiritual Mind. There is no clear vision of anything at all if the proper cleansing of the mess in one’s very within does not take place.”

“‘Your own eye’ signifies the very center of one’s most within Spiritual Mind. Only this Mind can see properly. But a plank was placed there by the negative state to block this vision or proper perception of spiritual reality. In order to see clearly what to do with the rest of one’s mind and life (here denoted by one’s brother), one must first remove that plank/block from the most within area of one’s total mind.”

“Hence the need for the initial step first. In the second step, reflected in the book *Who Are You And Why Are You Here?*, there is an attempt to go further in this respect, but still without direct reference for the need to work on one’s interior and external minds, respectively.”

“In this second step, one is advised to contact one’s Spiritual Mind first, and from that position, **before** converting the shadow and making contact with one’s spiritual advisors, to resolve one’s everyday, earthly type of problems first, usually of purely psychological nature (the interior mind) and physical nature (the external mind).”

“In actuality, in this process, once the contact with The Spiritual Mind was established, one was taught to ask one’s Spiritual Mind for the proper steps that needed to be taken. Does one need to convert one’s shadow first? Or bring out one’s spiritual advisors at the level of The Spiritual Mind? Or, is it more appropriate to work out one’s psychological and physical problems from the position of one’s Spiritual Mind before proceeding further?”

“In either case, all work had to be done from within to without. Different individuals had different needs and different degrees of readiness to do one or the other approach.”

“In the second step of this methodology, an elaborate system of security checks was developed that one was advised to follow strictly in order to make sure that one was in contact with one’s true Spiritual Mind and one’s true spiritual advisors. Initially, and for a brief period of time, these security checks were valid and did what they were supposed to do, eliminating any possible imposters. But, as the tremendous changes were occurring in the spiritual world and more cunning and sophisticated negative entities were allowed to enter human minds on your planet, these security checks became less and less reliable. At one point, they became useless and a laughing stock to the negative state.”

“The main reason for this situation is in the fact that, up to this point, no proper direct work was permitted to be done on the mess of the negative state that is around the interior and external minds. These levels of one’s mind now became the most reliable stronghold of the negative state, blocking any proper perception of the state of affairs at the level of the most within Spiritual Mind.”

“Before this time, the major thrust of the negative state’s attacks and blocks was directed against the most within Spiritual Mind. Hence the concentration on the work with The Spiritual Mind. As the access to The Spiritual Mind became more and more purified and cleansed from all the mess surrounding it, the negative state regrouped and shifted all its attention to the interior and external minds.”

“From this position, the negative state can accomplish two things: Whatever is conveyed to you by The Lord Jesus Christ or your true spiritual advisors from the state of your most within Spiritual Mind, or by your Spiritual Mind, is not heard and understood exactly the way it is being conveyed. You hear and understand it in accordance with your own wishful thinking or ulterior motivation or false expectations that are imposed on you from the level of your interior and/or external mind.”

“Secondly, all ideas and messages from the true within are captured on the level of your mentality — the interior mind. There they are shrouded into obscurity; they are difficult to understand; they are misinterpreted, distorted and falsified; and in that state and condition they are transmitted to the external mind. At the level of your external mind, these ideas and messages are additionally perverted to fit your external expectations and, in this totally mutilated form, they enter your conscious awareness.”

“No wonder that your messages, the way you understand them, never or very rarely agree with the reality of events of your life. You are being told something to do, and the advice sounds as if it is coming from The Lord Jesus Christ or your spiritual advisors or your most within Spiritual Mind, and yet, after you do it or follow the advice, it becomes obvious that it was the wrong thing to do. After such an experience, you become rightly disappointed, disgusted, and you lose all confidence in the process of going inward. You find yourself at a dead end.”

“In the previous steps, as described above, no proper unification of all levels of the human mind could ever occur. Such full unification was not possible to accomplish anywhere until the process of fusion and hybridization of all aspects of The Most High with the physical body of Jesus Christ was completed and The Most High became permanently and eternally The Lord Jesus Christ.”

“The attempt for unification from the old position, before this process of unification was completed within The Absolute State of The Most High, could not succeed. It would be even more dangerous because, without proper fusion of the elements of the Zone of Displacement and planet Zero, taken from Mary and Joseph, it would be a permanent unification with the negative state.”

“You have to remember very clearly that only The Lord Jesus Christ, formerly The Most High, can initiate any process in anything or anyone. First, it has to happen within The Lord Jesus Christ. After that, the rest of Creation can follow suit. Nothing can be initiated in anything by itself and in itself.”

“Thus, the inclusion of the transformed and divinized elements, taken from the Zone of Displacement and planet Zero, into the nature of The Most High — The Lord Jesus Christ — sets a precedent for the unification of the totality of being and existence. Before this unification, nothing of the Zone of Displacement and planet Zero existed within The Most High. This indicated that there was something out there totally separated from The Most High, having its own relatively independent life. Such is an implication of this situation.”

“As long as there is something out there separated from the rest of The Nature of The Most High, no true total and complete unification is possible. Any attempts to unify it prematurely, before proper preparations and steps are taken, would result in a total annihilation, not only of the Zone of Displacement and planet Zero and all their inhabitants, but also of the entire Creation.”

“However, once this process of unification within The Most High was completed, and The Most High became The Lord Jesus Christ, the steps toward unification of and with all others could be taken.”

“Therefore, the first two steps, as described above, were in preparation for the present step in the process of going inward and treating by the means of spiritual hypnotherapy.”

“Before proceeding with the discussion of the procedures for the next step, some clarifications need to be formulated.”

“There are basically two distinctly different processes here: One is the spiritual hypnotherapy proper; and the other, the process of going inward.”

“The spiritual hypnotherapy entails in its purpose the treatment of human problems by spiritual means as defined in the first 40 pages of the book *Intensive Spiritual Hypnotherapy*, and the books *Principles of Spiritual Hypnosis* and *Who Are You And Why Are You Here?* On the other hand, the process of going inward is the mode of maintenance of a continuous, ongoing contact with one’s spiritual reality, represented by one’s most within Spiritual Mind, one’s spiritual advisors and, most importantly, by The Lord Jesus Christ within; and doing everything from the position of within to without, thus maintaining on your disorderly planet the orderly organization of true life. It is assumed that, before one can establish this process of going inward on a regular basis, one must undergo spiritual hypnotherapy first. One is a prerequisite to the other. The process of going inward, as a consequence, becomes one’s lifestyle. This is a desirable outcome of the spiritual hypnotherapy.”

“However, it is remotely possible that some rare individuals need not take the full scale process of spiritual hypnotherapy before learning properly to go inward. But even in their case, a formal introduction to their spiritual advisors and conversion of a shadow, or acquiring positive entities in charge of their security, must be accomplished first.”

“Thus, to a certain extent, no one is excluded from some elements of the first process.”

“At this point it is necessary to warn everyone who reads these words that not too many individuals on your planet were ready to undergo the process of spiritual hypnotherapy and establish a proper contact with their inner spiritual world. Some of them who did so, for some important personal spiritual reasons, gradually reverted to their previous, non-spiritual mode of lifestyle. Others, not heeding the warning, practice it in the old style. They pollute the process with their own ideas and ideas of other false religious, spiritualistic and cultist trends of how spiritual process and spiritual life should be structured and maintained.”

“By such practice and attitude, they sold out, by their own free choice, to the negative state. They still claim practicing spiritual hypnotherapy and going inward themselves on a regular, daily basis, but this practice, without acceptance of continuous corrections of The New Revelation of The Lord Jesus Christ, became a negative one and inappropriate one. Unfortunately, they continue to use the name of the original transmitter of that methodology to attract prospective clientele.”

“Of the several original individuals who completed the process as known at that time, only very few of them remained loyal to this process, devoting their lives to following proper procedures with the willingness to submit themselves to any necessary changes in the process itself, as it is being revealed in time and space. By adopting a proper spiritual attitude, these few individuals acquired a gift of mobility, flexibility, adaptability and adjustability.”

“Now, it is possible that even out of this limited number, some might not be willing or spiritually able to accept what follows and what is being revealed in this portion of The New Revelation and to apply it in their lives.”

“But, this is a process of differentiation, separation from and establishment of true loyalties to the positive or the negative state, respectively, and commitment to follow the path of a continuous spiritual progression. After all, it is everyone’s free choice to accept and practice or to reject and not to practice everything revealed in this portion of The New Revelation, as recorded in this book.”

“Of course, based on the quality requirement of the positive state, the majority of humans on your planet were not ready to undergo this process. If, during the time while that process was in force, only few people were ready to experience it and derive some use from it, even fewer individuals there will be, for the time being, who will be willing to undergo its substantially modified version.”

“In this respect, let us establish a good policy regarding the treatment process in general.”

“The majority of humans will be able to undergo only a simple, initial phase of this process, during which their mental and/or physical problems, acquired during their earthly life, will be resolved, alleviated or considerably weakened. They will have no need to go as far as, at least, making contact with their most within Spiritual Mind. Some other individuals will be able to go to the point of contact with their most within Spiritual Mind, but nothing more. Still others will be able to go one step further and convert their shadow or shadows at the level of their Spiritual Mind. The minority of others will be ready to proceed as far as getting in contact with some of their spiritual advisors but not with all. An even lesser minority will be ready to be in contact with all their spiritual advisors but not with The Lord Jesus Christ. And yet, an even lesser minority of these individuals will be willing and ready to experience all that, including The Second Coming of The Lord Jesus Christ into their personal inner life.”

“The rest of these very few individuals, for the time being, will be able to proceed further and clean up the negative state’s mess that surrounds and encircles their interior and exterior minds, respectively, and do the subsequent unification of the levels of their most within Spiritual Mind, interior mind and exterior mind into one unified spiritual-mental-physical mind.”

“Each of the above-described steps has its place and value. Each of them serves some important spiritual purpose, regardless of whether one is or is not aware that such a purpose is being served. To the extent and degree of humans’ readiness to experience one or more steps, each step prepares them for making an important spiritual choice at the time of their Last Judgment and, most importantly, at the time of the final phase of The Second Coming of The Lord Jesus Christ. It puts them in a position, at their own level, to make a right choice which will determine their place in the overall spiritual organization of Creation.”

“In pursuing the actualization of the last available step of this process, please, bear in mind that the process will somewhat differ for those of you who already underwent the first two steps (spiritual hypnotherapy and regular going inward) and for those who have never had any experience with this methodology.”

“In the case of the experienced veterans of this process, to use your expression, it is necessary to undertake a continuation and completion of the process. Some of you have already done just that. In this case, the experience preceded the theoretical formulation of the process itself. This was necessary for security reasons. It gave no opportunity to the

members of the negative state to contaminate the process because they did not know what to expect. Once the experience of some of you was established, the theoretical formulation of this process followed.”

“In the case of the newcomers to this process, a considerably modified approach needs to be taken.”

“As of now, you are advised to take the following steps (these steps are applicable for both the spiritual hypnotherapist who helps others to undergo this process and for those who will do it on their own):”

(1)

“After establishment of the state of inwardness (by the methods described in the above-mentioned three books), the very first step is the determination whether the client or you (if you do it on your own) are ready and truly willing to work on yourself by the means of this particular methodology. If the answer is affirmative, proceed with the discovery of the nature of the problems that you need to work on (if any).”

“In the new procedure, before any consistent contact with the most within Spiritual Mind, one needs to clean up the mess of impositions one acquired during one’s lifetime on planet Zero from the moment of conception to the present time. Remember, these problems now are being utilized by the negative state to block your clear and unhindered access to your most within Spiritual Mind.”

“After all, these particular problems, be they psychological or physical, were acquired from without and they took hold of the unconscious parts of your external mind. Therefore, they need to be removed from the standpoint of the unconscious processes of that particular mind. A separation needs to be made from everything that was imposed on you during your earthly life, and subsequently internalized within the sphere of the unconscious parts of the external mind, and from other aspects of your mind. These other aspects were not formed from the impositions of the external demands and social, economic, racial, cultural and religious environment. A clear distinction has to be made here because, in most instances, all such imposed and artificially induced and subsequently internalized states are of the negative origin. They are the source of the external problems.”

“In this respect, one has to follow the rule: Whatever is Caesar’s give it to Caesar, and whatever is God’s give it to God.”

“The reason why in the first two steps of this process these problems were resolved from the position of The Spiritual Mind was that, at that time, all spiritual battles were focused on and concentrated around The Spiritual Mind’s area. This battle raged on without anyone’s conscious awareness. The process of this battle was manifested in various spiritual, mental and physical symptoms of humans and no one knew how these symptoms were being acquired and why they were being maintained.”

“Thus, it was necessary to do everything from that position because fueling of human problems originated from that battle. But now, the shift was made to the interior and particularly to the external level of the human mind. All efforts of the negative state are being concentrated on these areas in order to make it very difficult to understand what it is that your Spiritual Mind and everyone in the positive state is trying to convey to you. At the same time, from this level of awareness, there is very often a successful misdirection of attention from the true Spiritual Mind to that which, in actuality, is an outgrowth of the false interior mind. In this case, people think and feel as though they are in contact with their true Spiritual Mind,

while, in fact, they are in contact with something or someone else.”

“The pretentiousness of the pseudo-inner mind is of such a convincing degree and impact that it is truly very difficult to detect this deception. Again, the external psychological and physical problems are used to do this damaging work and block. For this reason, in this first step, all problems of this nature must be resolved first, before one proceeds to the next step.”

“The resolution of these problems is accomplished by certain procedures, practiced by the regular therapists and hypnotherapists. While in deep hypnotic state, one gets in contact with the client’s or one’s own unconscious mind within the external mind, and brings all forgotten, repressed and suppressed reasons behind one’s problems to one’s conscious awareness. Then, an offer is made for their resolution through the process of restructuring and building of an affective bridge between them and one’s behavior and attitude. Strong suggestions are given for changing the self-defeating behavior and lifestyle. At the same time, the client is taught self-hypnosis for the purpose of reinforcement of the new, more productive behavior patterns.”

“Here, the responsibility for feelings of well-being and its continuous maintenance is shifted onto the client from the very onset of hypnotherapy. The client becomes responsible by practicing or failing to practice the prescribed to him/her self-hypnosis. If he/she does practice it regularly, the bad habit of the old lifestyle, full of problems and miseries, will be broken and the client will feel happier and become more functional.”

“As mentioned above, the majority of people will stop at this point. However, if anyone wishes to continue with this process, the next step is to be taken.”

(2)

“Once all external factors of the acquired problems have been cleaned up, the proper contact with one’s most within Spiritual Mind must be made. From this point on, all work needs to be done from this most within to the most without position — from the position of one’s true Spiritual Mind to the position of the rest of one’s total mind.”

“After the contact with the most within Spiritual Mind is established, and you are certain, by virtue of your intuition, that you are in contact with your most within Spiritual Mind, you ask this Mind to bring to your attention all other problems (as well as corresponding spiritual factors to the psychological and/or physical problems, resolved before) which have purely spiritual connotation and origin. Now, these problems, as anything spiritual at all, cannot be dealt from any other position but from the true most within Spiritual Mind.”

“At this point, all misconceptions one has regarding God, spirituality, life, relationships, religions, Creation, etc., must be corrected, removed and replaced with the correct and appropriate ones in accordance with the ideas of The New Revelation.”

“If one is willing to accept these ideas freely, by one’s own free choice, one may proceed to the next step. If one has difficulties in accepting the ideas of The New Revelation and is unwilling to make necessary changes in one’s views, philosophies, religion, belief systems, one cannot proceed further. Should one press onward, without this acceptance, one will end up contacting the negative spirits, claiming to be The Lord Jesus Christ and one’s true spiritual advisors.”

“These imposters, in order to entrap you into their mode of pseudo-spirituality, or reinforce your own false one, can go as far as setting up for you some future events, predicting them in advance, making sure that they all will happen exactly in the predicted manner. What better

way to entrap anyone is there than this? Of course, they can read out all your past life and lives in the previous dimensions and give you their rundown with good and efficient resolution of all problems related to them, offering you healing with very good and positive results.”

“Now, this kind of accomplishment is very difficult to dispute or to assign as originating from the negative state or evil spirits. However, most people very conveniently will forget that, nowadays, at the present spiritual conceptualization of the nature of The Lord Jesus Christ and His/Her New Revelation, the battle is not for anything else but to make it impossible to accept these revealed facts.”

“In order for the negative state to succeed in its efforts, it came up with a totally new approach, while at the same time continuing in its old ways of nastiness and ugliness. This new approach is an adoption of methods and tactics of the positive state: Healing, going inward, words of love and wisdom, praising and preaching God (in and by various different names) and even performing all kinds of miracles to mislead, if possible, even people who already had the experience and acceptance of the ideas of The New Revelation. This is a difficult situation for all who live on your planet. But this is all a part of an agreement and necessity for the full exposure of the true nature of the negative state.”

“How one can distinguish between true or false spiritual messages or between true and false spiritual advisors?”

“As mentioned previously on several occasions, there is no other method available at the present time but listening to the very subtle warning voice of your intuition and by carefully exploring your true intentions with which you approach these important spiritual issues and the process of going inward or spiritual hypnotherapy. Also, by earnestly asking The Lord Jesus Christ for a greater degree of love and discerning wisdom and for being endowed with very sharp intuition for recognizing these facts on time, before you fall into all traps set up by the negative state.”

“By following these procedures, you will be able to know. In addition, constantly ask for having such knowledge and, at the same time, continuously self-search, self-explore and self-examine for any possible ulterior motives and wrong intents in this and any other respect. By doing this on a regular basis, your effort will bear good fruits and you will be very sure of who is who and what is what.”

“Once the acceptance of the true Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ and all ideas of The New Revelation is assured, you may proceed with the next step.”

(3)

“In this step one is introduced to one’s spiritual mountaintop and the conversion of one’s shadows is undertaken. The basic concepts of the spiritual mountaintop and the shadow were explained in the books *Principles of Spiritual Hypnosis* and *Who Are You And Why Are You Here?* In the very initial phase of development of spiritual hypnosis, it was assumed that the shadow remains in the form it originally appears in on one’s spiritual mountaintop. Thus, it could have appeared and stayed as an animal, monster, demon, inanimate thing or as a humanoid. Very soon, after this initial conceptualization, it became clear to the author of spiritual hypnosis that the true conversion of the shadow cannot be completed unless the shadow is transfigured into the form of a man or a woman and becomes a guardian of the gates to the Hells on the level of the most within Spiritual Mind. At the same time, he or she has to be put in charge of one’s security, guarding one from the attacks and insinuations of the negative entities and imposters.”

“In this conceptualization, the shadow was transformed into a male or a female figure and became one of the spiritual advisors. Occasionally, more than one shadow would appear of either gender. But this was more an exception than the rule.”

“Please, remember, all this work is done on the level of the most within Spiritual Mind. The process of converting one’s shadows corresponds to cleaning up the mess that surrounds the most within Spiritual Mind.”

“However, at that time, no one was spiritually ready to realize that there is a male and a female shadow on each level of one’s mind who need to be dealt with and converted to the positive state.”

“It is not by coincidence that, before the negative state could be activated, it was necessary to split the original androgynous form into separate male and female forms, respectively, that later on appeared as a man and a woman in a separate stature. The unification of these crucial principles could not give an impetus for the negative state to come into being and existence. You can read more on this issue, in part one, Chapter Three of the book Fundamentals of Human Spirituality.”

“In order to maintain this separation, and thus the life of the negative state, indefinitely, male and female shadows are assigned already on the level of the most within Spiritual Mind for the purpose of causing and maintaining dissension, inequality, animosity, isolation, separation, misunderstanding, externalization and many other negative features of all principles of masculinity and femininity, respectively, within each living and breathing individual on your planet and the entire Zone of Displacement. This knowledge could not be fully available to anyone until the unification of these principles from the standpoint of the Zone of Displacement and planet Zero was completed within The Most High, now The Lord Jesus Christ.”

“Notice, please, it is not by coincidence that, in the process of hybridization and preparation for the birth of Jesus Christ on your planet, one element was used from Joseph — masculine principle — and one element from Mary — feminine principle. These two elements were fused first and then an element from The Absolute External Mind of The Most High was added to them and hybridized and fused. In this condition, they were placed in Mary’s womb, without any physical sexual intercourse, in order to raise the hybrid body for Jesus Christ. Subsequently, in gradual steps, an element from The Absolute Mentality — The Absolute Interior Mind — was placed into that hybridized body. And lastly, an element from The Absolute Spiritual Mind — the Spirit — entered that body and that mentality after considerable preparation and adjustment.”

“It would be a gross error to assume, as most Christians do, that Joseph’s sperm in no way was utilized in the birth of Jesus Christ. It was absolutely necessary to utilize it, the only difference being that Joseph had no conscious awareness that this was the case, and that Joseph did not have any physical sexual intercourse with Mary prior to the birth of Jesus Christ.”

“Without utilization of the masculine element of the Zone of Displacement and planet Zero, Jesus Christ could never accomplish His/Her mission in any respect. No unification could be done without this act. The separation of these principles of femininity and masculinity would remain to eternity and the Zone of Displacement would have to be occupied forever, giving life to the negative state indefinitely. No elimination of the negative state could ever take place. After all, the negative state is a state of separation of all principles.”

“In order to accomplish the unification of the feminine and masculine principles with regard to the Zone of Displacement and planet Zero, it was necessary to utilize both of these principles and build on them the future salvation of all who are trapped in the negative state.”

“Until the inclusion and fusion of the physical body of Jesus Christ into the totality of The Most High was completed, no awareness of the necessity to have at least two shadows with the opposite gender was feasible or possible. The shadow usually stayed non-unified with its opposite principle even after conversion.”

“This situation is a liability because it does not allow the experience of unification of the most within Spiritual Mind with the rest of one’s mind — interior and external minds, respectively. The spiritual marriage of female and male spiritual advisors represents totally different aspects of the spiritual reality than that of the former shadows. In the shadows’ case, it signifies the liberation of both masculine and feminine principles from the Hells, that is, from the negative state, and from the state of separation. This state of separation did not allow the perception of the true reality, reducing these principles to the physical, sensual and lustful level of awareness and communication.”

“The meaning of the spiritual marriage of the principles, represented by the feminine and masculine spiritual advisors within one’s most within Spiritual Mind, will be discussed in the next point.”

“Thus, in this step, both a male and a female shadow must be brought out and converted to the positive state and unified accordingly. This is not a unification of love and wisdom, good and truth, charity and faith and masculinity and femininity, as the case is with the principles represented by male and female spiritual advisors. Instead, this is a liberation of principles of masculinity and femininity from all fabrications, distortions, perversions and mutilations by the Hells and unification of energies, strength, vitalities and sexuality produced by those principles. With the unified energies these entities now are able, by the power invested in them by The Lord Jesus Christ, to guard the most within Spiritual Mind from being surrounded by all the messes of the negative state and from the pseudo-inner mind, placed in proximity to the true Spiritual Mind by the pseudo-creators and connected to the deepest, lowest Hells of the Zone of Displacement. At the same time, these converted entities become guardians of the equality and unity of all masculine and feminine principles at all levels of the human mind.”

“From now on, this will be the function of the newly unified entities, guardians of the most within Spiritual Mind. Once this process is completed, the next step can be taken.”

(4)

“Many humans will not be ready to take this step. It is a step of much higher spiritual awareness and integration. In this step, an attempt is made to bring out and make introductions to one’s primary male and female spiritual advisors and to any other spiritual advisors, if such are assigned by The Lord Jesus Christ.”

“The readiness to take this step must be established first with one’s most within Spiritual Mind. If it is determined that any prospective individual is not ready to take this step, a suggestion is given for such a readiness to develop sometime in the future — either during one’s earthly life or afterwards. And, of course, if this readiness will be established in the near future, one will know beyond a shadow of a doubt that then is the time to meet one’s true spiritual advisors. At that point one can proceed with this step.”

“If the indication is that one is ready to take this step right now, one follows the procedures for

bringing out spiritual advisors as described in the book *Who Are You and Why Are You Here?* The difference between the procedures, described in that book, and the present requirements in this respect is in the methods of security checks. As mentioned previously, none of the so far described security checks are any longer reliable. The more appropriate security checks are described in Chapter IV of the book *Major Ideas of The New Revelation*, particularly pages 49-56. The reader is advised to familiarize himself/ herself with this Chapter in order to get an idea of what this is all about.”

“The subtlety of one’s intuition is the crucial point in the process of security checks. Again, it is repeated here: If there is even the slightest discomfort, uneasiness, anxiety, fear or pain, or whatever, be it spiritual, mental or physical, one is not in touch with one’s spiritual advisors. No matter what they say, how they say it, how they behave, how nice they look, if such adverse feelings are present even in the slightest, almost imperceptible degree, one is dealing with imposters.”

“In a case like this, you read them their rights and privileges, as described in the books *Reality, Myths & Illusions* and *Who Are You And Why Are You Here?* or you refer them to the special region, established for that purpose by The Lord Jesus Christ, between the Hells and the intermediate world of spirits, for processing and choice making. However, once you have established that you are dealing with the true spiritual advisors, you are to proceed, from now on, to work with them on all issues of your life.”

“The male and female spiritual advisors represent the equality, unity, oneness, harmony, integrity and spiritual conjunction or marriage of spiritual principles of femininity and masculinity, or love and wisdom, good and truth, positive works and faith, objectivity and righteousness, justice and judgment, modesty and humbleness, innocence and humility, will and reason, affections and intelligence, feelings and logic, intuition and rationality, intention and action and all other attributes, relevant to their representation.”

“They are present with you to give you a sense of these principles, helping you to be aware of them and to begin the process of unification of these principles in your life. However, the process of unification in itself is the function of the next step.”

“As far as other spiritual advisors, they may represent some more specific attributes of these or other spiritual principles, needing a greater degree of specialization and emphasis. They are brought out and introduced as needed, when needed and if needed.”

“The need for their inclusion in the process of one’s going inward or in the process of spiritual hypnotherapy can be established with the most within Spiritual Mind and with already present spiritual advisors and security officers (former shadows).”

“In the totality of this approach, ***on the level of the most within Spiritual Mind***, one needs to establish a minimum requirement for this contact and interaction.”

“The minimum requirement, beyond which no spiritual development and integration is possible, is two converted shadows — one male and one female, one primary female spiritual advisor, one primary male spiritual advisor and one highest spiritual advisor.”

“Above these minimum requirements no limitations exist. One can have as many spiritual advisors as needed. But having less than the above-mentioned indicates spiritual non-readiness for true spiritual transformation and a new lifestyle.”

“Once this step is completed, the next step may be attempted.”

“Again, many humans will not be ready to take this step. Or they will be very reluctant to conceptualize the proper spiritual ideas related to this step. And yet, without proper completion of this step, no spiritual transformation can occur. Without this completion, one cannot proceed further. Should one proceed further, despite the fact that the upcoming step was not properly conceived and completed, one puts oneself in tremendous spiritual danger.”

(5)

“In this step an introduction to one’s Highest Spiritual Advisor — The Lord Jesus Christ — is made. This is the most crucial step in all respects. This is also the most sensitive step, security-wise. Here will be the greatest effort of all the Hells to block you from proper acceptance of the true New Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ. The greatest number of imposters may manifest themselves during this step. You have to be prepared to check your intuition during each step of the process of introduction to The Lord Jesus Christ. If you hear the words, such as, ‘I am Christ,’ ‘I am Jesus,’ ‘I am God,’ ‘I am The Most High,’ ‘I am The Lord,’ ‘I am Jesus Christ,’ ‘I am Jehovah,’ and similar expressions, you may be assured that you are not in contact with the true Lord Jesus Christ.”

“However, if you hear the words ‘I am The Lord Jesus Christ,’ it still does not necessarily mean that you are dealing with the true Lord Jesus Christ.”

“Here comes the discussion of The Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ. If you hear ‘I am the Son of God,’ ‘Son of Man’ and similar answers and proclamations, you are not in contact with the true Lord Jesus Christ. The two key words in this respect must be ‘Human Divine’ (My Divine was made human); and ‘Divine Human’ (and My human was made Divine). ‘Human Divine and Divine Human’ were unified and fused into the totality of The Most High which resulted into a totally new spiritual condition with the only acceptable name — The Lord Jesus Christ.”

“If such discussion is not forthcoming, or if there is any hesitation in this respect, you can be assured you are not in contact with the true Lord Jesus Christ. Again, check your intuition and feelings with extreme care.”

“Some humans will be satisfied to hear that they are in contact with ‘Christ,’ or ‘Jesus,’ or ‘The Most High,’ or ‘God,’ etc. They will rest their case, assuming they accomplished what they wanted and will stop right there.”

“This is spiritually a very dangerous situation. In view of the facts described in the previous Chapters of this book, no relationship was established with The New Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ. One will be in contact with the imposters. Should this happen, the false Christ will be ruling your life, bringing you gradually to greater and greater spiritual doom.”

“As this is occurring, the false highest spiritual advisor, under whatever name he/she will be using, will efficiently replace all your true spiritual advisors and former shadows and enslave you to the negative state with words and acts of ‘love’ and ‘wisdom’ (at least initially to get you in). Unfortunately, the imposters, replacing your true spiritual advisors and your former shadows, will look, behave, act, appear and speak exactly in the manner of your genuine ones. No perception of difference will be discernible.”

“However, gradually, although not immediately, you will start to feel worse, with exhibitions of all kinds of funny spiritual, mental and physical symptoms. At this point you should know what is happening to you and make appropriate corrections.”

“Unfortunately, many humans will have considerable difficulties in accepting the idea of The Lord Jesus Christ and His/Her New Nature as conceived in this portion of The New Revelation. And yet, as of now, no other conceptualization of and relatedness to The Lord Jesus Christ is possible, particularly if you read this book or you desire to undergo the process of spiritual transformation by the means of spiritual hypnotherapy and to go inward on a daily basis.”

“You have to realize that a tremendous spiritual revolution occurred in the conceptualization of The Nature of The Most High who became The Lord Jesus Christ following the process described in the previous Chapters. As mentioned before, this revolution will rock the foundation of the entire Creation and the Zone of Displacement and all their respective inhabitants for eons to come.”

“That this will be the case, and that acceptance of this fact about The Lord Jesus Christ will be the matter of one’s life and death, is described in the internal sense of the following statement of Jesus Christ in The Gospel According to John, Chapter 6, verses 53-58:”

“Then Jesus said to them, ‘Most assuredly, I say to you, unless you eat the flesh of the Son of Man and drink His blood, you have no life in you.’”

“Whoever eats My flesh and drinks My blood has eternal life, and I will raise him up at the last day.”

“For My flesh is food indeed, and My blood is drink indeed.”

“He who eats My flesh and drinks My blood abides in Me, and I in him.”

“As the living Father sent Me, and I live because of the Father, so he who feeds on Me will live because of Me.”

“This is the bread which came down from heaven — not as your fathers ate the manna, and are dead. He who eats this bread will live forever.”

“Unless you eat the flesh of the Son of Man and drink His blood, you have no life in you’ signifies incorporating into one’s heart the concept that the human body of Jesus Christ was made Divine and the elements of Joseph and Mary, after their divinization, were fused into the totality of The Most High, giving birth to a new hybridized state in the Nature of The Most High.”

“‘Drinking His blood’ means acceptance of the fact that The Most High took one element from His/Her Absolute Exterior Mind, fusing it with elements of Mary and Joseph, subsequently adding to it one element from His/Her Absolute Interior Mind and making a fusion. And, after the process of divinization was completed, He/She took one element from His/Her Absolute Spiritual Mind — The Absolute Spirit — and fused and hybridized them together. By this act, The Most High prepared favorable conditions for the human body of Jesus Christ to be gradually, step by little step, in time and space, totally fused and integrated into the totality of His/Her Absolute Nature.”

“When this act was completed, The Most High became the fullness of The Lord Jesus Christ to eternity. This is what is meant by eating the flesh of the Son of Man and drinking His blood.

Total identification with this fact gives one true eternal life. This is signified by the words, 'For My flesh is food indeed, and My blood is drink indeed.' Only by full acceptance of this process can one be assured that one is in contact with the true Lord Jesus Christ. This is reflected by the words, 'He who eats My flesh and drinks My blood abides in Me, and I in him.'"

"Of course, many people will be disgusted with this conceptualization of The Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ or The Most High. They will outrightly reject even the possibility that such a process could have taken place within The Most High. They are too much in love with the traditional conceptualization of The Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ or The Most High or God, or whatever they have and believe. They even quote the Biblical statements, indicating that Jesus Christ is always the same ('Jesus Christ is the same yesterday, today, and forever,' Hebrews 13:8)."

"The literal interpretation of this saying seemingly denotes that no changes in the nature of The Most High or God or Jesus Christ can ever occur. But, if the literal interpretation of this statement were correct, The Most High would never have incarnated in the physical form of Jesus Christ in the first place. Such a step denotes a tremendous change."

"The spiritual, inner connotation of the words 'the same' simply means that, no matter how the nature of The Most High, The Lord Jesus Christ changes, it is exactly the same One Indivisible Creator or God and there is none other in being and existence whatsoever. His/Her loving, kind, just and wise attitude toward His/Her Creation remains the same, unchanged, and it will always be in absolute proportions. This is what the sameness means."

"Unfortunately, many individuals, after reading this book, will end up exactly like some of the former disciples of The Lord Jesus Christ on planet Zero did, as verse 60 of the same Chapter in John indicates, 'This is hard saying; who can understand it?' And, of course, verse 66 says, 'From that time many of His disciples went back and walked with Him no more.'"

"By not accepting The New Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ, one condemns oneself to spiritual regression, going backward into the negative state ('went back') and unable any longer to walk with Him/ Her. This is a spiritual death."

"In view of these facts, it is obvious how important it is, at this point, to approach the introduction to The Lord Jesus Christ, as your Highest Spiritual Advisor, from the standpoint of this new conceptualization of His/Her Nature. Anything less or different will result in 'going back' and 'walking with Him/Her no more.'"

"Once the proper introduction is made, and security checks are completed, and you are assured that you are in touch with the true Lord Jesus Christ, you humbly request Him/Her to begin with you the process of transformation, unification and integration of all principles of the positive state. This is requested for the purpose of your experiencing in your heart your own individual Second Coming of The Lord Jesus Christ. This process consists of the steps that follow."

(6)

"As you are on your spiritual mountaintop with all your spiritual advisors, security staff and The Lord Jesus Christ, make an inquiry to The Lord Jesus Christ if you are ready to take this step. This step entails cleaning the mess that engulfs and surrounds your interior mind. If the answer to your inquiry is affirmative, request The Lord Jesus Christ to shift you and everyone on your mountaintop to the level of your interior mind, showing you the exact condition in which your interior mind is at the present time."

“The interior mind represents your total mentality and all processes of mentation (thinking, feeling, willing, reasoning, etc.) and their quality and state. The processes of mentation are derived from their spiritual ideas which are produced and are occurring in the innermost level of everyone’s most within Spiritual Mind. Once they are produced, they flow into the area of the interior mind where they are transformed into the mode of mental processes.”

“It is at this point that most, if not all, of these ideas are captured by certain blocks built around the interior mind by the forces of the negative state, and subsequently obscured, distorted, perverted, falsified and mutilated. Then, in this new perverted condition, they are allowed to enter the interior mind, forming the specific quality of one’s mentality.”

“For this purpose, the negative state placed its own ‘guardians’ around the interior mind, backed by numerous demons, who function as infiltrators, filters and re-interpreters of all captured ideas that come from the most within Spiritual Mind. By this act they give birth to a mentality consistent with the nature of the negative state at worst or, at best, considerably polluted, poisoned and contaminated by the negative state. All human negative thoughts, feelings, impulses, tendencies, intentions, etc., stem from this particular arrangement.”

“The purpose here is obvious: At all costs to interfere with the true and genuine perception, meaning, understanding, acceptance and actualization of everything coming from the most within Spiritual Mind; or to hear, see, sense and taste it differently than it really is, sounds, feels and appears.”

“Thus, you have here a set of different shadows-guardians against the positive state and for the preservation of the negative state in human mentality. As mentioned above, these shadows-guardians are controlled, fueled and backed by several demons who want to make sure that no conversion of these guardians to the positive state takes place and that the negative connotation of human mentality is preserved indefinitely.”

“In working on this level, it is necessary first to get rid of all demons in charge of this effort. They are either removed to the region between the Hells and intermediate world or, if they refuse to cooperate, they are locked up in the Hells directly; or they are given a chance for conversion to the positive state and to enroll in the New School on the spot, so-to-speak. Once the demons are dealt with properly, the liberation and conversion of the shadows at this level must take place. Again, one shadow is a male and the other is a female. More than one couple of the shadows is possible at this level. Remember, the more outward you go from within, the more the quantity against the quality prevails. ‘The power in numbers’ is the motto on those levels.”

“After liberation and conversion of the shadows and their transfiguration and renaming, they are put under the charge of the security team from the most within Spiritual Mind. Their function will become just the opposite of what it was before. Now, by the power of The Lord Jesus Christ, invested in them, they will become the guardians for the positive state against the negative state. They will close the gates to the Hells and to the agents of the negative state, making sure that no distortions, perversions, mutilations, obscurities and falsification of the purity of all spiritual ideas from the most within Spiritual Mind and the true spiritual world are ever allowed to occur. They are to continuously keep all channels to The Spiritual Mind and the spiritual world clear and clean and in the best possible condition, assuring the life of positive human mentality.”

“The reason why these entities are used for this purpose and not some new ones, directly from the positive state, is because the former shadows of this level know firsthand all the

tricks, deceptions, sophistications and the cunningnesses of the negative forces, thus, enabling them to catch easily any of their attempts for return and penetration.”

“Once this step is completed, you are to ask The Lord Jesus Christ to thoroughly purify, cleanse and heal your interior mind from all the mess imposed on it by the negative state and unify the male and female guardians so that they function in unity, oneness and harmony of all mental aspects of feminine and masculine principles.”

“Please notice that it is on the mental level that the most gruesome separation, isolation, mutilation, hatefulness, inequality and whatever you have, between femininity and masculinity is continuously occurring. One of the major functions of these guardians will be to keep the unity, equality and harmony of these principles on the mental level of one’s life.”

“After the purification and cleansing is completed, request The Lord Jesus Christ to integrate and unify your interior mind with your true most within Spiritual Mind so that they are no longer separated but one.”

“The activation of the negative state, as it will become obvious in the next Chapter, was based on separation of these principles, and subsequent separation of various levels of one mind into three autonomous minds. Each mind was then encircled by blocks and pseudo-minds in order to keep this state of separation and isolation indefinitely. Once this unification takes place, you may proceed to the next step.”

(7)

“At this point request The Lord Jesus Christ to shift you, and everyone else with you, to the level of the external mind. Remember, we are talking here about that portion of the external mind which is unconscious. Ninety five percent of the external mind is in the continuous mode of unconsciousness. Only five percent of it is conscious or accessible to your conscious awareness.”

“Once the shift takes place, you are facing the shadowy figures of possibly greater quantity with even more numerous backup systems of demons. The external mind is, in turn, surrounded by all kinds of blocks and walls, carefully guarded by several shadowy figures of both genders. The number of these figures can be anything from one couple to several couples. They are under control of several demons who assure the proper function and loyalty of the guardians.”

“The mentality and intelligence of these shadowy figures is somewhat low, dull and boring. So are the demons on this level. Their purpose is to block any paths to within and keep humans in externals, outside. They are very effective in keeping humans constantly preoccupied with the external matters of life, banal, boring, dull and everyday types of chores, activities and hassles that have no spiritual value or any value at all.”

“Their assignment is to make sure that you consider these unimportant or least important activities as very important or the most important of your life, making them artificially pleasurable and desirable so that you spend all your time in their pursuit. Thus, these entities make sure that you have no time or very little time for going inward, within yourself or for listening to the inner voice of your intuition. They keep you very busy elsewhere, giving you a false sense that this is the way it is supposed to be.”

“Their purpose is also to block any positive ideas for proper activities and behaviors coming from the interior mind and from the most within Spiritual Mind, so that your behavior is, very often, inconsistent with what is good and proper for you. You may have the knowledge of

what is right and true, but there is no desire, or motivation, or need to behave accordingly.”

“A good example of this kind of situation would be someone who is addicted to some chemical substance. A person like that may very well know that his/her addiction is very destructive and unprofitable, endangering his/her life, but, nevertheless, that person continues in behavior contrary to this knowledge.”

“Very often you are surprised to find yourself behaving the way you know is not proper or appropriate, and even damaging to you. And then you ask yourself, amazed and dismayed, “Why did I do that?” without having an appropriate answer. To make you behave this way is exactly the function of the shadowy figures situated around your external mind. So, the first thing to do here is to get rid of the demons in the same way as mentioned in point five. Once the demons are gone, then, liberation and conversion of the shadowy figures needs to take place.”

“Again, we have here a male and a female counterpart. Their purpose is to block any possible unified behavior of the masculine and feminine principles and keep them distinctly different, separate, inappropriate, and externally well-defined for the purpose of discrimination, inequality and on a level of superficiality. Also, the purpose is to make feminine and masculine principles limited, one-sided and overemphasized in their one-sided external approach and behavior, placing one principle above another.”

“Once liberated, converted and enlightened by The Lord Jesus Christ, these entities become guardians for the positive state, keeping all channels and paths of the external mind clean, clear and open for reception, in an undistorted manner, of everything coming from the most within Spiritual Mind and interior mind. They are to assure clarity and simplicity of all levels of perception and understanding. As you know, the nature of the negative state wallows in obscurity and intricate complexity.”

“After the assignment is defined and clarified for them and they are placed in the proper position, the request is made to The Lord Jesus Christ for thorough purification and cleansing of the external mind from all pollutions, poisons and blocks of the negative state.”

“Subsequent to this, you ask The Lord Jesus Christ to unify and integrate your external mind with your most within Spiritual Mind and interior mind, so that there will be one, integrated, unified and whole mind, devoted, loyal and faithful only to The Lord Jesus Christ and the positive state.”

“From this point on, The Second Coming of The Lord Jesus Christ can be experienced in your heart as your private, individualized occurrence. Once you have the profound experience of this important event, a new relationship with The Lord Jesus Christ will be experienced. This experience will also be reflected in how you will relate to yourself and others. From now on, you will no longer be talking in such terms as ‘my inner mind,’ ‘my interior mind’ or my ‘external mind’ but, instead, ‘my unified mind’ or simply ‘my mind.’”

“If you arrived at this point, you are ready to take the next important step.”

(8)

“The experience of the individualized Second Coming of The Lord Jesus Christ within one’s mind makes one eligible to make a request to The Lord Jesus Christ to reintroduce one to one’s home base.”

“Remember, please, that your life did not start on planet Zero. No initial life can ever

commence on that planet because of the nature of its peculiar and unusual position. The only starting point of any sentient life can occur either in the positive state (plus one and above) or in the negative state (minus one and below). Zero does not give any impetus to anything at all. In order to be something, something must be added to Zero from above or below zero. Such is the nature of mathematical Zero."

"Thus, anyone who incarnates on planet Zero, must come from somewhere."

"In the case of the positive individuals, or individuals who incarnated here from the place which corresponds to above Zero (0), they are reintroduced to that place, meeting the members of that society from which they came. There, they are assigned a chamber or an office, to which they will go everyday and where they will meet with the members of their spiritual family and do all their work, while being inward, only from that position. This is the place which transcends their spiritual mountaintop."

"The procedure here is that, first, they go to their spiritual mountaintop for security checks and daily purification and cleansing, as described in Chapter Five of the book *Who Are You And Why Are You Here?* After that, together with all spiritual advisors, under the leadership, guidance and charge of The Lord Jesus Christ, they arrive at their home base. From that point on, they do all their work, or whatever needs to be done, from the place assigned to them at their home base. However, be forewarned that not many individuals will be able to reach this point in their spiritual work. The vast majority of them will remain on their spiritual mountaintop for the rest of their lives on planet Zero."

"In the case of negative individuals, who came from the place or state corresponding to below Zero (0), that is, from the negative state, they are not sent to their original home base. It would be sending them back to the Hells. You do not want to go back to the state of misery and darkness unless there is a need for some important learning or for helping others there to get out of that state. Instead, they request The Lord Jesus Christ to assign to them the most suitable to their new spiritual makeup, condition and state, some society of heavens (the positive state) which is in need of their type of people. This state and place becomes their new home. From that point on, after security checks and purification and cleansing on their spiritual mountaintop, they will go to their new home base and do all their work from that position only. The process and nature of this work for both cases (the ones who came from the positive state and the ones who came from the negative state) is described in Chapter Five of the book *Who Are You And Why Are You Here?*"

"The reason why you need to go to your home base is because it represents the original state of unification and integration from which you separated in order to incarnate on planet Zero. In order to become whole again, you need to return to the state of unification and integration of all spiritual principles. The home base has this spiritual correspondence."

(9)

"Once you are firmly set at your home base, and comfortably established in your residence there, you may be ready to experience or recall the events that happened in the process of incarnation on planet Zero or in the process of transition from the place or state of your origin to that planet. This step is taken for the purpose of discovery of what kind of initial choices were made; why they were made; what deviation, if any, occurred during the first contact with your chosen physical genes that came from the earthly 'parents;' to discover what kind of agreements and commitments were made and whether the process of their fulfillment was or was not accomplished."

"From such acquired knowledge, you will be able to establish what still needs to be done in

order to fully fulfill these commitments the way you agreed upon them.”

“The re-experience of this process can be a very unpleasant one. After all, coming to this world is one of the most harsh, the most cruel and most uncomfortable experiences in all respects. Nothing is right and proper during this process of incarnation on planet Zero. One experiences complete isolation, separation, rejection and abandonment by and from everything familial and harmonious.”

“Yet, this is also a necessary experience in order to properly understand and fulfill one’s life on planet Zero. Coming to planet Zero has always some important spiritual, mental and physical learning. You cannot acquire that learning unless you re-experience that process. This process in itself is a part of that important learning. From this learning one acquires a proper, meaningful and entirely different perspective of one’s life on planet Zero. This, in turn, helps one to redefine all interpretations of the events of one’s life during the passage through this peculiar planet from the standpoint of the newly acquired perspective.”

(10)

“The above-described experience may be followed by the revelation of one’s true mission on planet Zero. Not all aspects of that mission can be revealed for security reasons. To acquire full knowledge of your mission would give your enemy the full plan of your stronghold and your weakest points. The enemy, the negative state, would use such information for disrupting and undermining your mission.”

“Therefore, the plan of your life, reflected in that mission, is revealed in gradual, small and safe steps. Once one step is completed, some aspects of the next step are revealed to you, immediately preceding its onset, but not well advanced into the future. In the case of converted agents of the negative state, the situation is somewhat different. In cases like that, no security reasons have to be taken into consideration because that individual’s life plan was designed by the negative state. Thus, the full scale of that mission can be revealed in as few as one or two sessions.”

“However, a conversion of a negative entity or agent to the positive state signifies for him/her a new assignment or a new mission from The Lord Jesus Christ. The total plan of this mission cannot be revealed for security reasons. Here the total commitment to serve The Lord Jesus Christ in any capacity, situation, state or place comes into effect. You fully trust that The Lord Jesus Christ will choose for you the best possible life plan, most suitable to and congruent with the unique qualities of your newly integrated mind and its personality. After all, only The Lord Jesus Christ, being in The Absolute State, can know in an absolute sense what is good and proper for you. This determination is not possible from any other state. You are all relative to this absolute state.”

“Therefore, the knowledge of yourself, as well as everything else, is only relative. Your choices, made on your own, cannot take into consideration the totality of your nature from the standpoint of its eternal continuation. Only The Lord Jesus Christ can do this.”

“For this reason, He/She reveals the aspects of your life-plan in small steps, as you are ready to assume each step. Premature revelation of the content of each step may endanger your life and your important mission. Being in the negative state, the security has to be very tight (to use your expression).”

“The process of spiritual transformation by the means of the New Spiritual Hypnotherapy and going inward is different for those who incarnated on planet Zero from the Hells. In fact, the configuration of their spiritual advisors and shadows is in an opposite position to all others. It

is only natural that their 'true' spiritual advisors are the negative spirits, demons, devils and Satans who rule their lives. Their spiritual mountaintop is the lowest point in the Hells which they perceive, of course, as the highest point."

"They have exactly the same hierarchy of organization as described above. Except that all their 'shadows,' or what they consider to be shadows, are the positive entities, assigned to them from the positive state. It is only natural that, being the children of darkness, they consider darkness light and light darkness. Thus, to them their spiritual advisors initially appear as beings of light and beings of light as shadows."

"In the process of their spiritual transformation, these facts have to be brought to their attention. The agents of the negative state, who desire to convert to the positive state, must become aware that their spiritual advisors are, in fact, their shadows, while, what they considered to be their shadows are their true spiritual advisors."

"The position must be reversed in such a manner as to put everyone in the proper position in the clients' awareness. They need to get in contact with their highest 'shadow,' who is The Lord Jesus Christ, and with His/Her help to gradually, step by little step, be led out of darkness by gradual conversion of their so-called spiritual advisors."

"Once this is done, The Lord Jesus Christ will create for them a true spiritual mountaintop on which their true spiritual advisors, formerly considered shadows, will appear in their proper light and position. On the other hand, their former spiritual advisors, or whom they considered to be their spiritual advisors, after their liberation and conversion to the positive state, will become their security officers at the levels of the most within Spiritual Mind, interior mind and external mind. All other steps in their process coincide with what was described above."

"The completion of the discussed spiritual transformation has a different connotation and outcome for those who still remain in the Zone of Displacement and planet Zero than for those who reside in the fullness of the positive state."

"As mentioned in the previous Chapter, after the physical body of Jesus Christ was completely fused into the totality of The Most High's Nature, becoming His/Her integral part, and The Most High became The Lord Jesus Christ in full actuality, not only potentially, the next step was the restructuring, rebuilding and transforming the minds of all other sentient entities in Creation. This process is taking place in the positive state for the purpose of alignment of all sentient minds to The New Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ so that they can relate to Him/Her in the new way, spiritually congruent to that Nature."

"The members of the positive state in Creation and its multiverse, who are not part of the Zone of Displacement, reside in a territory ruled by the principles of Divine Love and Divine Wisdom of The Lord Jesus Christ. They are not bound by any rules of the Zone of Displacement or the negative state of evils and falsities."

"Therefore, the process of their transformation bears immediate results. The degree and extent of their changes is profound and directly experiential on the basis of the here and now principle. There is nothing to hinder them or to block them from this immediate, here and now experience."

"However, the situation is entirely different for the people who still reside in the Zone of Displacement and on planet Zero. Your situation is not comparable to the situation of people who reside spiritually, mentally and physically in the positive state. The positive people on your planet and other regions of the Zone of Displacement reside in the positive state

internally, spiritually but not physically and, very often, not mentally either.”

“Here is the crucial distinction. As you remember from Chapter XVI in the book Major Ideas of The New Revelation, your physical bodies were built from the elements of your environment. The elements of your environment are comprised of evils and falsities. Your spirit and soul are deliberately trapped in your body and in the external environment, for which evils and falsities, that is, the negative state, is the natural state of affairs.”

“For that reason, no matter how successful your spiritual transformation may be, you still must retain your physical bodies and live in their own environment. In the next Chapter more will be revealed about this issue.”

“Because of this situation, there will always be separation between the feeble life of your body and its functions, and the life of your spirit and soul.”

“You have to remember clearly that, in the process of genetic engineering and experimentation by the pseudo-creators for the purpose of fabrication of the body and environment conducive to the production and maintenance of evils and falsities, that is, of the negative state, a form of envelope or circular genetic wall was built around the true sentient mind of humans and in between various levels of one’s mind. This was done for the purpose of closure of any access to the true spiritual principles of the positive state.”

“Now, even though you may succeed in removing the blocks in between various levels of your true mind, you still have the general envelope or circular wall which separates your body and its life from the rest of your true mind. Only a very tiny little connection remains between them for the purpose of allowing enough life support elements to come through to the body to keep it alive and functioning.”

“The most unfortunate situation for people in the negative state is that, no matter what, they are bound by certain laws that rule the life of the negative state. These laws cannot be broken or altered as long as the negative state exists in its activated and dominant condition. To follow these laws is a matter of simple survival. One of these laws places you in total dependence on your environment and the externals in general. You have to constantly provide for food and shelter. Otherwise, your body cannot survive. There is a great degree of dependence on others and their approval and similar numerous matters.”

“This situation gives rise to all kinds of traditions, customs, religions, institutions, conventions, cultures, etc., that become an integral part of your everyday living. They form a cluster of demands, expectations and conformity that need to be followed if you are to make it in any respect. From this situation, artificially built ego states and their mentality originated. These ego states were superimposed on your true mind or your true nature.”

“Thus, your mind, your true ‘I am,’ becomes trapped in this false mind, called ego states. In the vast majority of cases, this false mind becomes the only reality of one’s being and existence.”

“Because it is impossible to remove, by any means, this superimposed artifact during your life on planet Zero, regardless of whether you are or are not aware of this situation, a continuous tension exists between these two states. This tension becomes a source of many, if not all, spiritual, mental and physical problems constantly impinging on you.”

“For this reason, even after the completion of your spiritual transformation process and unification of your true mind, you still have this external shell that allows you to survive in the

Zone of Displacement. In this shell, crucial for survival, very little or no impact is felt from the work done and accomplished internally.”

“Because of this situation, you have to be realistic and recognize the fact that, in your externals, you will still be subject to all kinds of problems, worries, anxieties, fears, illnesses, etc. These are inherent in the nature of the negative state.”

“Do not forget, please, that, after all, that shell consists of elements of evils and falsities (or, to be precise, of corresponding factors of evils and falsities) which produce your problems and various adverse states.”

“The only difference you will feel externally, after the completion of the transformation process, will be a greater degree of successful coping with and overcoming these adverse states; feeling more in control of your life; experiencing a greater degree of inner peace; and accepting this state as inevitable as long as you physically reside in the negative state.”

“Again, do not forget, you live in the enemy’s territory. You breathe his air, you eat his food, you drink his drinks, you use his commodities, etc. These are all essentials for your physical survival.”

“However, being spiritually transformed internally, beyond the point of this shell, puts you in a direct opposition to all rules and regulations of your enemy. But you are in his territory. Therefore, it is only natural that, after spiritual transformation, you might experience different types of difficulties than before the process. You will be more aware of the cruel reality of the negative state. You will be more sensitive to the atrocities and abominations taking place all around you. You will be more affected by injustice, suffering and misery constantly present everywhere. You will be under greater pressure to give up and conform to the demands of everybody living by the rules of the negative state. You will be subjected to more intense attacks by the forces of the negative state, particularly internally through such states as severe doubts, uncertainties and hesitations.”

“Sometimes, it will seem to you that you are in a much worse condition than you were before spiritual transformation. After all, your lifestyle flows in a direct opposition of the lifestyle of the negative state. You are swimming against the current. The force of the current is enormous. It is not easy and it will not become easier.”

“But, at the same time, you will have a greater degree of protection and support from The Lord Jesus Christ, your spiritual family and your true mind within you. The only way to survive under this new condition is to go inward daily, be with your true family within, and derive from there all support, healing, energy, determination, etc., in order to continue in your effort and mission until you are ready to be recalled from the negative state.”

“This is the very reason, the most important one, why you are urged to go inward, or to stay inward, on a continuous basis.”

“A note of warning is in order here. ***The spiritual transformation process, by its quality, content and degree of intensity, extensity and depth will be uniquely different for different individuals congruent to their individualized need. Also, the process, style, mode of and means for going inward will differ from one individual to another. No generalizations are possible in this respect. It is the responsibility of each individual to determine from the position of his/her unified mind, his/her spiritual family and particularly from The Lord Jesus Christ what style, mode and means for going inward should be and what the best and the most effective way and frequency should be for***

him/ her.”

“However, the general outline of these described procedures and steps will be valid for all undergoing this process for some time to come. The most important thing to remember in this respect is that your spiritual process, if you go inward on a daily basis, or stay continuously inward, has an eternal value. It is done more for the sake of your eternal future rather than for the sake of this planet’s here and now. You have no idea what you are avoiding after the physical death of your body by undergoing the spiritual transformation process and by going inward on a continuous basis. At present, you also cannot have any idea how immensely valuable your spiritual transformation and subsequent going inward is for the entire Creation and its multiverse. Please, remember this and do not lose heart.”

“In The Gospel According to Luke, Chapter 18, verse 1, it is written: ‘Men always ought to pray and not lose heart.’ ‘To pray’ in this connotation signifies to go inward. ‘Always’ means on a continuous basis. ‘Not lose heart’ means that it is easy to get discouraged, bitter, resentful and hopeless, unless one persists in going inward to combat these adverse miserable states.”

“So, please, for the sake of all in the positive state, as well as in the negative state, as well as for your own sake, do not lose heart and continue going or staying inward as long as you remain in your body — to the very end of your life on planet Zero.”

“He/she who has ears to hear and to listen, let him/her hear and listen to what The Lord Jesus Christ reveals in this Chapter.”

CHAPTER SIX

THE MYSTERY OF THE PSEUDO-CREATORS

On February 10, 1988, at 4:15 in the morning, the word of The Lord Jesus Christ came to me, saying,

“Many things were revealed regarding the nature of the pseudo-creators and the methods by which they activated the negative state in the books Fundamentals of Human Spirituality and Who Are You And Why Are You Here? At that time, for the first time in the history of humankind on your planet, the true origin and nature of the negative state was revealed. Before that revelation was granted, no one knew exactly how the negative state came into its being and existence.”

“The most common story, accepted by most humans, is derived from the literal sense of several places in The Holy Bible. For example, in The Epistle of Jude, verse 6 (this Epistle has only one Chapter), it is written:”

“And the angels who did not keep their proper domain, but left their own habitation, He has reserved in everlasting chains under darkness for the judgment of the great day.”

“This statement implies that the origin of the negative state can be found in the angels of God who, for some reason or other, decided to rebel against God and remove themselves from the positive state of heaven, establishing their own domain. However, this statement does not say why angels would ever want to do such a foolish thing. It seems as though these angels were not too bright to come up with stupidity of this nature.”

“Of course, the statement quoted above does not contain any inner spiritual sense. None of the Epistles do, as was already revealed through Swedenborg.”

“It is a different situation with other stories in The Holy Bible that do contain such an inner, spiritual meaning. The first one can be found in The Prophet Isaiah, Chapter 14, verses 12-15:

“How you are fallen from heaven, O Lucifer, son of the morning! How you are cut down to the ground, you who weakened the nations! For you have said in your heart: “I will ascend into heaven, I will exalt my throne above the stars of God; I will also sit on the mount of the congregation on the farthest sides of the north; I will ascend above the heights of the clouds, I will be like The Most High.” Yet you shall be brought down to Sheol, to the lowest depths of the Pit.”

“The literal sense of these verses implies that there was a person by the name of Lucifer (the morning star), who was a son of God, and who decided to overthrow The Most High and become God himself. As a result of his foolish pride, God threw out Lucifer from the positive state.”

“After this act, Lucifer established himself in the Zone of Displacement (outside the positive

state), founded all the Hells and began his eternal war against God and all members of the positive state.”

“However, even in this literal sense, this statement is taken out of the Chapter’s context. It relates to the fate of the king of Babylon who is described in terms of Lucifer. In the inner, spiritual sense this statement does not relate to any particular person or earthly king at all. In no way does it relate to any angel, archangel or other dignitary of the positive state. Instead, it relates to the entire negative state, represented by Babylon and its rulers. Here, the process of activation of the negative state and its ultimate end is described. No other meaning can be derived from the quoted text.”

“An even more significant meaning in this respect has a description recorded by The Prophet Ezekiel in Chapter 28, verses 12-19:

“Thus says the Lord God: “You were the seal of perfection, full of wisdom and perfect in beauty. You were in Eden, the garden of God; every precious stone was your covering: The sardius, topaz, and diamond, beryl, onyx, and jasper, sapphire, turquoise, and emerald with gold. The workmanship of your timbrels and pipes was prepared for you on the day you were created.”

“You were the anointed cherub who covers; I established you; You were on the holy mountain of God; You walked back and forth in the midst of fiery stones. You were perfect in your ways from the day you were created, till iniquity was found in you.”

“By the abundance of your trading you became filled with violence within, and you sinned; Therefore I cast you as a profane thing out of the mountain of God; and I destroyed you, O covering cherub, from the midst of the fiery stones.”

“Your heart was lifted up because of your beauty; you corrupted your wisdom for the sake of your splendor; I cast you to the ground, I laid you before kings, that they might gaze at you. You defiled your sanctuaries by the multitude of your iniquities, by the iniquity of your trading; therefore I brought fire from your midst; it devoured you, and I turned you to ashes upon the earth in the sight of all who saw you. All who knew you among the peoples are astonished at you; you have become a horror, and shall be no more forever.”

“In the literal sense this text relates to the destruction of the king of Tyre. In the inner, spiritual sense it contains a story of the pseudocreators or the very first people on planet Zero (Earth at that time) who conceived the idea of the activation of the negative state. It describes their original state of great knowledge, wisdom, science and abilities which were utilized in bringing about the negative state of evils and falsities.”

“To be in Eden, the garden of God’ signifies here to be in the natural degree of The Most High’s Creation. The real natural universe is perceived and conceived as a garden of God or Eden. The precious stones enumerated here signify various profound spiritual, mental and natural knowledges and intelligence that they had possessed as well as the science of

genetic engineering ('abundance of your trading')."

"'You were the anointed cherub who covers' denotes the position within Creation — in the most external degree which is perceived as a covering skin of the entire Creation. Nowhere else could the negative state be conceived but in the most external natural degree of Creation."

"'You were on the holy mountain of God' means that originally people on this planet were an integral part of the positive state. 'Iniquity found in you' signifies the question the scientists of that time asked, ***'What would life be like if it were to derive not from the spiritual principles and The Most High but from the natural degree, from the most external position of Creation instead of from the most inner position of Creation as the case always had been?'*** To ask such a question means the very first step toward full activation of the negative state. Therefore it is considered to be 'iniquity' because of the tremendous spiritual consequences and implications it would have for the entire present cycle of time of Creation."

"'By the abundance of your trading' signifies the extensive experimentation in genetic engineering and fabrication of various life forms not derived directly from any true spiritual principles."

"'You became filled with violence within, and you sinned' denotes that, as a result of successful genetic engineering, the scientists of that time became a major driving force of mankind toward establishing the negative state by imposing their will on the future people on the planet Zero. They did this by their own free will and choice ('within'). Such a free choice resulted in the appearance of sin. 'Sin' is nothing more than use of one's own free will and choice for wrong non-spiritual purposes or for one's own benefit without any regard for common good or for The Lord Jesus Christ (at that time The Most High). This leads to the profanation of the true spiritual principles, as is obvious from the words, 'Therefore I cast you as a profane thing out of the mountain of God.' 'To be cast out of the mountain of God' denotes to be excluded from the positive state of Creation and to fall out into the Zone of Displacement."

"The verses following this statement describe the future fate of the activators of the negative state and the eventual total elimination of the negative state ('...and you shall be no more forever.') This is still in the future."

"The concept of Lucifer was explained elsewhere (see pages 10-11, Chapter One in the book Understanding and Fulfillment of Our Earthly Life and pages 17-18, Chapter One in the book Four Concepts of the Spiritual Structure of Creation.)"

"Thus, from the description and explanation above, it is obvious again and again that none of the individuals in the spiritual world would or could originate the negative state."

"The story and mystery of the pseudo-creators have been shrouded in great obscurity and mostly were not known to anyone until the book Fundamentals of Human Spirituality was published."

"Yet, there is some indirect implication of their existence on this planet in the form of obscure stories regarding Lemuria, Atlantis, El Dorado and similar stories. No one knows exactly what those countries mean, where they were located on your planet and whether they existed at all. No tangible, convincing physical proof of their existence is available so far. After all, as you remember from Fundamentals of Human Spirituality, the pseudo-creators made very

sure that most of the traces of their existence would be meticulously erased from the face of your planet.”

“Swedenborg revealed about the Golden Age, Silver Age, Bronze Age, etc. No direct recognition of the existence of the pseudo-creators is in his writings, except the awareness that there used to be a state on your planet which was a state of pure spiritual principles of love and wisdom. This state gradually deteriorated to the point of the so-called Fall. However, no proper knowledge and understanding of the origin of the negative state can be derived from Swedenborg’s writings. At his time, no one was ready anywhere to have such a full scale knowledge. The spiritual condition was not conducive for more to be revealed about this issue at that time.”

“However, the internal sense of some stories recorded in The Holy Bible contain such full knowledge. But no one has the key for unlocking this inner sense. The key was hidden purposefully to allow the negative state to fully expose its nature. If the key were available before this exposure, no one would want to continue in the negative state. The negative state would have no chance to prove its point. In that case, no learning of the answer to the question, formulated above, could take place. If this were the case, the entire Creation would be tremendously disturbed by the lack of this crucial and important answer and knowledge. It would be deprived, in its vital choice-making nature, of one of the most important knowledges — what not to choose.”

“At this point, certain additional information regarding the mystery of the pseudo-creators can be revealed.”

“The story of the pseudo-creators begins in The Holy Bible, in the Second Chapter of Genesis, verse 15, and continues to verse 26 of Chapter Eleven of the same book. After that verse, the historical events are utilized to conceal spiritual mysteries of deeper meaning related to the consequences of the activation of the negative state, to The Nature of The Most High and His/Her incarnation on your planet, His/Her combats with the Hells, His/Her visit and stay in the Hells, to the process of salvation and, most importantly, to the process of His/Her fusion into becoming the only Lord Jesus Christ.”

“Thus, the first eleven Chapters of Genesis have no historical meaning whatsoever. A deep mystery of the activation of the negative state by the pseudo-creators and how it happened is described there.”

“The activity of the very first mankind on this planet is described in verses 19-20 of Chapter Two of the book of Genesis in The Holy Bible. (A note about the terms ‘mankind’ and ‘humankind.’ The term ‘mankind’ denotes the very first real people that lived on the real planet Earth. The word ‘man’ denotes both feminine and masculine principle. The term ‘humankind’ refers solely to the humans fabricated by the pseudocreators and situated on planet Zero. Again, it incorporates both female and male gender.) ‘Adam’ represents that mankind. Adam was not one single person, as many people on your planet still believe. By ‘Adam’ the first androgynous people are described. Their purpose was to prepare a certain dimension of that planet for activation of the negative state by putting everything on the planet in a favorable position for that purpose and condition.”

“The fact of this preparation is concealed in the words of verse 20, ‘So Adam gave names to all cattle, to the birds of the air, and to every beast of the field!’ ‘To give names,’ in this connotation, means to discover and identify certain important contents and ideas in various regions of the sentient mind (cattle, birds and beasts) which will become crucially important in genetic engineering as a preparation for activation of the negative state. In this connotation,

‘cattle’ means the genetic code for development of the inner regions of the future human mind. ‘The birds’ mean the genetic code for development of the interior regions of that mind; and ‘every beast of the field’ the entire genetic code for development of all aspects of the external mind. Moreover, these three terms signify also various spiritual states that are imparted to this sentient mind through those genetic codes.”

“In the preceding verse of that Chapter, verse 19, it states, ‘Out of the ground the Lord God formed every beast of the field and every bird of the air, and brought them to Adam to see what he would call them. And whatever Adam called each living creature, that was its name.’ Notice, please, that the word ‘cattle’ is not mentioned in this verse. It suddenly appears at the very beginning of the next verse (20). Also, the sequence of their naming differs here. In verse 19, the beast of the field is named first and the birds of the air follow. In verse 20, the cattle come first, the birds second and the beast of the field third. You have here a somewhat reversed situation. This is not by coincidence.”

“‘Out of the ground’ signifies from the ideas of the sentient mind. In this respect it is from the ideas of the external mind that every beast of the field is formed. They are not created but formed. Creation is always original. Formation is derivation from something already created.”

“‘The beast of the field’ also signifies all human affections in being and existence.”

“‘The bird of the air’ signifies all mental and natural knowledges in being and existence.”

“‘To bring them to Adam’ means that all these knowledges and affections were imparted to the first mankind so that nothing was lacking in its abilities to make appropriate choices. ‘To see what he would call them’ signifies their application and utilization in an effort to be in full control of all laws that govern mankind’s life. This is signified by the words ‘whatever Adam called each living creature, that was its name.’ ‘Calling’ means utilizing and applying. ‘That was its name’ means full control of all laws that govern mankind’s life and its nature.”

“In order to properly activate the negative state one needs to have full knowledge of all laws that are able to produce life. The point here is that the first people, created directly by The Most High, could not fully activate the negative state themselves because they were created fully from the elements of the positive state. Whatever is coming directly from The Most High, cannot produce anything negative.”

“For that reason, you give these people a full knowledge how to produce life. Subsequently, they do produce such life. That life now is not directly derived from The Most High but only indirectly by means of these people. This is what is exactly described in the above-quoted two verses.”

“The added word ‘cattle’ means that those people were able to also discover the laws that govern the spiritual principles on the foundation of which the most within Spiritual Mind is built. That the sequence is reversed here signifies that, from perception of that knowledge, those people recognized the fact that, in order to initiate anything new, they have to follow first the order of Creation — from within to without. The spiritual is first (cattle), mental second (bird of the air) and natural or physical third (beast of the field). That the Lord God put it in a different sequence signifies that people’s affection for knowledge precedes the knowledge itself. Without affections, there is not too much motivation for doing or knowing anything. Thus, affections come first. But in classification of that knowledge one must follow, initially, the multiversal order.”

“‘But for Adam there was not found a helper comparable to him’ denotes that those people

did not have any proper propensity for activation of the negative state. The only thing they were willing to do is to transmit the accumulated knowledge of genetic engineering and production of the new life forms, as well as all other immense knowledge they possessed. So, after all that knowledge was classified, put into a proper order and recorded into all genetic memory banks ('Adam gave names'), the original androgynous people were recalled from planet Earth. From this genetic memory bank, a new type of mankind was formed with the separation of feminine and masculine principles."

"As you remember, the androgynous form contained equally both elements in a full manifestation. From that form, actually from the genetic material left behind, a new breed of people came into being and existence — split into male physical form and female physical form. These events are described in verses 21 to 25 inclusively of Chapter Two of The Book of Genesis in The Holy Bible."

"And the Lord God caused a deep sleep to fall on Adam, and he slept' means recall of the first people from planet Earth. 'And He took one of his ribs' — signifies utilization of the genetic memory bank and material, left behind by the first people, for the purpose of separation of masculine and feminine principles. 'And closed up the flesh in its place' denotes replacement of the direct experience of the unity of all principles of masculinity and femininity, and to all spiritual factors that correspond to them, with an indirect one through the perception of their external manifestation in the form of different physical bodies."

"That even after this act, the next people on Earth are still called Adam, means that they were created from the genetic memory bank and some other material that came from the original people. This is being recognized in the next verse (23): 'This is now my bone of my bones and flesh of my flesh; she shall be called woman, because she was taken out of man.' This verse, as all others here and elsewhere in the internal sense of The Holy Bible, has a multiple meaning. Thus, it relates to many other issues besides the ones being discussed here. Some of these different spiritual issues were revealed in Swedenborg's writings. Others were hinted in the previous books by this transmitter. The presently revealed issues relate only to the mystery of the pseudo-creators."

"To be taken out of man,' in the discussed connotation, means the fullness of the spiritual state of both principles, as represented by the androgynous people. 'Man' does not mean male. 'She shall be called woman' means separation of the feminine form and its spiritual factors from the original source — man — androgyne. In this connotation 'woman' does not mean female. It means disunion of the feminine principle from its originally unified source. A set up is described here that will become a basis for the activation of the negative state, as one of the internal senses, relevant to this issue, of the next verse (24) implies."

"Therefore a man shall leave his father and mother and be joined to his wife, and they shall become one flesh.' In this particular connotation, 'a man' represents both female and male. That 'a man shall leave his father and mother' signifies separation from its spiritual source. Here 'mother and father' means The Most High — one Absolute Parent. 'To be joined to his wife' denotes here to give up his/her spiritual heritage and derive everything from his/her external, one's own, ego state nature. 'Wife,' in this connotation, means one's own nature derived from the external mind. 'And they shall become one flesh' signifies that everything will be derived from the external sensual-sensory input instead of from within, or from the spiritual principles."

"Verse 25: 'And they were both naked, the man and his wife, and were not ashamed.' This verse describes the spiritual state of the second, physically split people who came after the androgynous people left planet Earth. 'To be naked' means to be as yet uncorrupted by the

negative state. This is a state of innocence which precedes the shameful state — the activation of the negative state.”

“Chapter Three of Genesis, in its internal sense, is actually devoted to the description of the process of activation of the negative state itself. To a certain extent, this process was revealed in the book *Fundamentals of Human Spirituality*; in the last Chapter in the book *Reality, Myths & Illusions* and in the book *Who Are You And Why Are You Here?* Some important aspects of this process were revealed already in Swedenborg’s writings. Chapter Four of Genesis, in its internal sense, among other things, reflects the spiritual state and condition of people who were born by a different mode than by the direct endowment of The Most High. This is a birth by the scientific genetic principles and not by the spiritual principles. By this act the spiritual deterioration of humankind was firmly set forth. This fact is reflected in the story of Cain who killed his brother, Abel. ‘Abel’ signifies purity of the spiritual principles which derive from love of God and love to God. ‘Cain’ signifies separation of these principles from that love.”

“The fullness of spiritual deterioration and dominance of the negative state cannot come to its fruition as long as there is any degree of the awareness of love of God and any degree of love to God. Such feelings are deterring the full manifestation of the nature of the negative state.”

“In actuality, one of the many aspects of the deeper meaning of the internal sense of Cain killing Abel is a description of the process of genetic engineering and manipulation by which major spiritual principles, related to the true love (Abel), are being removed from or killed in the genes from which the next generation of people was to be fabricated. Instead, it is replaced with self-love and love to the externals (Cain). Such love obscures perception of truth and leads to the development of its distortions and the birth of outright falsities and evils.”

“Chapter Five of Genesis, in its internal sense, among other things, describes the spiritual state of each succeeding epoch, following the activation of the negative state. The names of the persons in that Chapter reflect the content and the ideas that ruled each succeeding epoch and degree of its evilness and falsification. The age of the mentioned persons reflects or contains the description of the quality, style of life and scientific intelligence and knowledge that people of the succeeding epoch had. These numbers do not reflect the actual physical age or time duration. In actuality, each epoch of that time lasted approximately two million years (more or less, depending on the quality itself needing to be fully manifested in order for the next step of deterioration to come to its fruition).”

“Basically, twelve such epochs existed, each having its distinctly different quality and content of lifestyle and degree of knowledge for genetic engineering. They ended in a total loss of any proper spiritual awareness and replacement of the true spiritual principles with the flood of falsities, corruption and ungodliness. This outcome is described in the internal sense of Chapter Six and Seven of Genesis of The Holy Bible — by the story of the Great Flood.”

“The first twelve epochs were preceded by the epoch of androgynous people who came to this world by a direct endowment of The Most High. The very first of the twelve epochs is an epoch in which the direct endowment was replaced by scientific bi-cloning, as described in the book *Fundamentals of Human Spirituality*. This epoch, in the terms of physical time, lasted the longest — approximately twenty five million years.”

“At the end of the twelfth epoch, described in Chapter Six in The Book of Genesis of The Holy Bible, an extreme genetic experimentation was conducted. This experimentation

resulted in a production of various life forms, mostly of the negative nature. These produced unique animal life forms on your planet are described by your scientists in various paleontological terms (such as dinosaurs, for example)."

"At the same time, various other scientific experimentations were taking place. One of these ended in a carefully planned great catastrophe that triggered the ice ages and other phenomena which split the core of your planet and divided one continent into several. This process resulted in wiping out most of the animal and plant life existing at that time and produced by the pseudo-creators. This happened particularly during the twelfth epoch of their presence on your planet."

"The twelfth epoch ended by the Great Flood and a new, totally different epoch came into its being and existence. The new epoch actually started the history of caveman and of the modern times, as they are appearing on your planet at the present time. The establishment of the pseudocreators in the Hells is described in the internal sense of the first part of Chapter Eleven of The Book Genesis."

"The 'Noah' story relates to the act of The Most High to preserve some degree of spiritual awareness as a seed for the future spiritual reawakening. The Post-Flood Epoch, which is labeled by the word 'Noah' and his sons-derivatives, Shem, Ham and Japhet, reflects the gradual suppression of proper spiritual perception as far as practical utility of spiritual principles is concerned. Meaning, it was necessary to retain some degree of knowledge of truth about spiritual principles, but there was no motivation or desire to live in accordance with these spiritual principles."

"The knowledge in itself must be preserved, regardless of at what level. At that time, this knowledge was still conscious. At the later time and, in most instances, at the present time, it is unconscious, stored in the deeper recesses of everyone's most within Spiritual Mind, in its part called The Universal Consciousness."

"No spiritual reawakening and salvation of all people from the negative state, as well as total elimination of the negative state, is possible without the preservation of the vital and crucial knowledge of truth regarding the true spiritual principles. In The Holy Bible, this preservation is called 'remains' or 'remnants.' Only remains or remnants will be saved. All else will be eliminated. 'All else' is the negative state. Thus, the process of salvation is possible from the position of these remains or remnants."

"At the time when the negative state will be fully exposed and will exhaust its usefulness, the door to these remnants will be open in everyone; all knowledge of truths about the true spiritual principles and all other mysteries of the activation of the negative state will come to everyone's conscious awareness; and the final choice regarding one's position or where one wants to be will be made. By this last step, the era of the negative state will end. The entire cycle of time, in which all these have been taking place, will be closed and a new cycle of time, without the negative state and the Hells, will come into its being and existence."

"The Noah Epoch represents the conscious retention of truth but not that much of good. The next epoch, described by Noah's sons, reflects the genetic manipulation of the pseudo-creators by which this knowledge is totally repressed from conscious awareness and placed into unconscious mode within the minds of humans — genetically fabricated by them. This is the time when the conception of ideas of caveman comes to its fruition. At this time, a travel backward in time, before creation of planet Earth, took place. This travel is described in verse two of Chapter 11, in Genesis. It is stated there,"

“And it came to pass, as they journeyed from the east, that they found a plain in the land of Shinar, and they dwelt there.”

“Journeyed from the east’ has, in this connotation, two meanings. One meaning is traveling backward in time in order to control the development of your planet and exert their influence on the cavemen and to develop a totally different humankind that has never been in existence before anywhere. The other meaning is leaving the positive state and the true Creation completely and establishing themselves in the Zone of Displacement. ‘They found a plain in the land of Shinar.’ ‘Plain’ corresponds to the Hells. ‘Land of Shinar’ corresponds to the Zone of Displacement. ‘Shinar’ is a code name for Babylon. ‘Babylon’ is a code name for the entire negative state with all its evils and falsities in its activated and dominant mode.”

“Once the pseudo-creators established themselves in the Hells, they proceeded to further experiment with the genetic material they possessed from the very first people. That this experimentation was based on totally false premises is obvious from the words of the next verse (3) of Chapter 11 of Genesis, ‘They had bricks for stone.’ ‘Bricks’ correspond to all false concepts that replace the truth — ‘stone.’”

“Let us make bricks and bake them thoroughly’ signifies a production of totally new kinds of false ideas that were firmly established as a style of non-spiritual life which was to dominate humankind on planet Zero. That ‘they had asphalt for mortar’ denotes an evil intent. All this was done with an evil intent in order to prove the point that life on your planet did not originate from the spiritual principles of The Most High but from nature itself or from the pseudo-creators — false gods. The word ‘asphalt’ has this particular correspondence.”

“The building of the Tower of Babel symbolizes the pseudo-creators’ attempt to establish their direct outposts in the Heavens and to overthrow the reign of The Most High. This is a prophetic description of the future attempt of the pseudo-creators, at the time when the incarnation of Jesus Christ on planet Zero was about to happen, to travel further back in time, before time and space, before the Act of Creation took place. The purpose of that attempt was to block the process of Creation and, instead, institute the full government of the pseudo-creators and fabricate their own pseudo-creation fully subservient to their rule without any involvement of The Most High.”

“As you remember from before, this step was not permitted to be taken and the particular knowledge of time travel was taken away from the pseudo-creators permanently. Also, they were separated from all others in the Zone of Displacement and locked up in a special state and place known only, until recently, to The Lord Jesus Christ. By this act of The Lord Jesus Christ, the story of the pseudo-creators ends for the time being. However, the consequences of their activities and the story of their fabrications, presently existing humans and other creatures in the Hells and the rest of the Zone of Displacement, continues. It will continue until the total elimination of the negative state.”

“Remember, please, that every act or activity, every idea and its manifestation, can be validated only by its consequences, results and outcomes. Thus, the negative state must continue until all such consequences, results and outcomes are fully manifested, actualized and realized. This is how true learning takes place. Nothing can be truly learned without this illustration. The consequences, outcomes and results of the pseudo-creators’ activities are fully illustrated in the quality of life of humans on your planet since the appearance of the caveman.”

“As you remember, cavemen were a fabrication of the pseudo-creators in order to steer

future scientists into believing their hoax that humans originated from apes by an evolutionary process and from no other spiritual source. The majority of scientists on your planet still believe this false fable.”

“Now, from what was said so far in this Chapter, it is obvious that your planet has two distinctly different histories. One is the history of the pseudo-creators and their predecessors, before they moved out into the Zone of Displacement and before moving the physical position of one dimension of planet Earth itself. The other begins with the story of the caveman and continues to the present time. It will continue to the moment when the negative state fully takes over and temporarily wins on your planet. The point of winning will be the end of this second period.”

“A third period will begin at that point. The quality and the content of that period cannot be revealed at this time. However, that period will have a very short duration for the sake of the positive state. At the end of the third period, the negative state will be eternally eliminated. The means and the ways of that elimination cannot be revealed for security reasons. It is sufficient to reveal here that the negative state, by whatever necessary means, **will be completely, totally and eternally eliminated**. This is a solemn promise of The Lord Jesus Christ to all Creation and to all who are presently trapped in the negative state. During the first history of this planet, when pseudo-creators resided on it, its physical position was different. You have to remember that everything in Creation and in the physical Universe, as well as in the Zone of Displacement, depends on the activities and ideas of sentient minds. The content and the quality of these activities and ideas of sentient minds determine physical position, style of life, events and destiny of any planet or solar system or galaxy or the entire universe and multiverse and all their respective dimensions, reflections and ‘mirrors’ (more on this issue will be revealed later).”

“Thus, at the time of the first history, your planet and all its reflections were not only in a different physical condition, but in a different solar system and universe. That solar system had two suns. The position and tilt of planet Earth regarding these two suns was such that a cyclical period of each sun’s appearance occurred. When one sun was appearing in one hemisphere, the other was in the opposite hemisphere. And vice versa. They never appeared together at the same time in the same sky. The sunset of one sun meant the sunrise of the other. Thus, no nights existed on your planet during that period of time. The reason for this arrangement was because night and darkness correspond to spiritual ignorance and unconscious processes.”

“Throughout the entire history of the pseudo-creators and their predecessors, at no time were they either ignorant or unaware of the principles and laws that ruled the multiverse and sentient mind. Their mind was fully conscious at all its levels and no unconscious processes were in existence. Thus, no possibility of darkness and night was feasible. Because of such condition, the physical situation of planet Earth was maintained in the solar system with the two suns. At the same time, the temperature and the weather were regulated in order to maintain a continuously pleasant, balmy, stormless, temperate climate, free of extreme conditions. The ability to control and to regulate the physical laws by mind principles makes this situation possible. The pseudo-creators, as you know, were high masters of this control.”

“However, after they moved from this planet, and established themselves in the Hells (or, to be precise, after they established a condition of the Hells), traveling back in time put them into proximity to the time of creation of planet Earth and its various dimensions. In the process of time travel, they changed the destiny of one dimension of Earth and their own destiny. All life forms existing on the original dimension of Earth were purposefully destroyed. The pseudo-creators removed and took with themselves all genetic material for all then-

existing animal and plant forms, as well as for all else, so that they would be able to re-create them for their own purposes.”

“Once the dimension of planet Earth in question was re-created, it was physically moved through dimensional warps, through the eighth dimension, and positioned at the borders between the Zone of Displacement and the true Creation in a very unusual position. It was situated into a displaced solar system that had only one sun. Because of this unusual situation and position, the dimension of planet Earth in question came to be known as planet Zero. As mentioned above, this is the only planet where both the positive state and the negative state are able to coexist for the reasons revealed in the previous Chapters of this book (more about this matter and position of planet Zero will be revealed later).”

“In the process of the physical move of your planet, the one continent on it was split into several, the extreme conditions in weather and temperature from pole to pole occurred, the seasons were instituted and the night periods began. This condition needed to be established first to give rise to the second history of your planet with the introduction of ignorance and unconscious processes. These processes correspond to the adverse physical and climatic conditions on your planet.”

“At first, planet Zero was void of any life forms. In order to populate it with the relevant life forms, which would be able to fully illustrate all consequences, outcomes and results of the activation and dominance of the negative state, it was necessary first to genetically experiment with the most suitable conditions and forms conducive to this illustration. Remember please, it is one thing to activate the negative state and put it into dominance, and it is entirely another thing to successfully illustrate the outcomes, results and consequences of such a dire act.”

“The first history of your planet and its inhabitants at that time was the history of **activation** of the negative state. The second history is the **illustration** of the consequences, outcomes and results of the negative state. The third history is the **full dominance** of the negative state. And the fourth history is the **full elimination** of the negative state and **return to the original position in the positive state.**”

“In physical time measurements, each history, subsequent to the first history, has a shorter and shorter duration. The first history — activation — has the longest duration (many millions of years); the second history is considerably shorter (it is still in effect — you live in it); the third history will be very brief and the fourth one will be even shorter.”

“A note about the word ‘dimension’: It was said above that one dimension or reflection of Earth was moved through the eighth dimension. This word is used here in a different connotation than in other books of The New Revelation. There it signified the spiritual dimension, the intermediate dimension, the physical or natural dimension and corresponding-to-them dimensions of the Zone of Displacement. Here the word ‘dimension’ is used in the sense of spatial-temporal and perceptual mode of the physical-natural universe and corresponding-to-it factors in the spiritual and intermediate worlds, as well as the Zone of Displacement.”

“Each universe of the multiverse, and corresponding-to-it Zone of Displacement, consists of twelve such specific dimensions or states. On your planet Zero you experientially know of three dimensions — height, breadth and depth. Some of you are aware of the fourth dimension, usually equated with time. Some still postulate the fifth dimension without actual experiential perception of its existence. No one knows anything about the remaining seven dimensions either theoretically or experientially.”

“However, the pseudo-creators possessed the full knowledge of all twelve dimensions both theoretically and experientially, moving through them at will. Thus, they were able to travel and move the entire celestial bodies both within any universe itself and throughout different dimensions, and to totally different universes, galaxies and solar systems.”

“By these means, they were able to transport to and implement on your planet any ideas and results of their genetic experimentation and engineering.”

“Once they established this favorable position for themselves, they began with the second set of genetic experimentations. As you remember, in the first set of experimentation, the issue was to bring people into this world not by a direct endowment of The Most High but by special genetic bi-cloning with many variations.”

“In the second set, the experimentations were directed toward developing living, thinking and feeling entities that would be susceptible to illustrations of the full nature of the negative state and to proving the point that either spiritual principles are not necessary for life production or they do not derive from The Most High. But this idea could be actualized only under one condition: It had to have taken place within proximity to the positive state.”

“One of the major reasons why the pseudo-creators situated your planet into the peculiar position it is was to make it possible to be in contact with the members of the positive state under the condition of mixture and not separation. Dictating the conditions under which humans are born on this planet, the pseudo-creators were able to trap some members of the positive state and, in many instances, sway them temporarily to their side. They needed new genetic material from the positive state. The stronger the new material, the more vicious and durable the new negative form of manifestation.”

“Another reason for this peculiar positioning of planet Zero was to show to the positive state that the negative state is capable of its own independent life and how numerous its followers are. This was a matter of competition for them. The negative state is in a condition of constant competition with the positive state. You cannot compete with anyone if that one is not able to see your accomplishments, whatever they are. Of course, the competition here is for the souls of humans. This was and is permitted by The Lord Jesus Christ for the reasons explained previously.”

“In the process of the second set of experimentation, various plant and animal life forms were developed and projected on planet Zero for their appearance. They purposefully simulated an evolutionary process. From this, you can see how totally erroneous the Darwinian-developed evolutionary theory is. The evolutionary theory is based on a scientific misconception. Darwin and his followers assumed that species develop by the process of natural selection in order to accommodate themselves to the conditions existing in various environments on the planet, for the purpose of survival of the strongest and the fittest.”

“The idea of evolution is correct in a sense that various life forms were developed, tried out and discarded one after another by the pseudocreators. They genetically experimented until they came up with the most desirable and favorable condition on this planet, suitable for implementation of their plan. There was no such thing as a natural selection. It was all carefully planned out. The concept of the natural selection is the most foolish idea so far that has occurred in the minds of your scientists.”

“As you remember, originally, before the activation of the negative state, your planet was populated only by the positive life manifestation. Animals and plants were of the positive,

beneficial nature. No predatory, poisonous, vicious, killing type of animals and plants existed at that time. But they were all destroyed in the process of the dimensional move of your planet. However, the pseudocreators preserved all their genetic material. In many million of years of their experimentation, the pseudo-creators tried out, through the process of hybridization, many combinations of various life forms — many successful and many unsuccessful. They preserved the successful ones and used them in further hybridizations. They destroyed the unsuccessful ones.”

“The destruction and disappearance of various species and animals on your planet was not the result of natural or cosmic catastrophes, as the scientists would like to believe. It was neither the result of human interaction, as is the case at the present time with extinguished animals by the hands of human greed and stupidity. The so-called natural catastrophes and typical human behavior were brought to fruition by the pseudo-creators and some other processes of the Hells in order to accomplish the destruction of these species, no longer suitable for their purpose.”

“The present continuous extinguishing of some species has a deeper spiritual correspondence. The species that disappeared a long time ago, as well as a not so long time ago, along with those that continue to disappear, must be removed before the total victory of the negative state on your planet is accomplished. Those species are correspondences of wrong attachments and affections which exhausted their usefulness. Therefore, their continuation would hinder and interfere with this important process — the full victory of the negative state on planet Zero.”

“You have to realize that, whenever a certain state or affection or feeling or emotion or elements of thought are no longer tenable, they have to be removed. Otherwise, nothing new, either in a positive or a negative sense, would come to its fruition. In the moment they are removed, all life forms and elements corresponding to them cease to be and to exist. This is how the pseudo-creators used to destroy all unsuitable species from the face of your planet until they came up with permanent successful results. (It is not by coincidence that, following this successful accomplishment, no further evolutionary development has been occurring on your planet. It stopped right at that time.) And this is how presently-in-charge forces of the negative state accomplish their goals in this respect. Through their own agents on your planet, they trigger the process of elimination of anything or anyone that no longer serves their purpose.”

“So, in the process of their experimentation, the pseudo-creators were able to come up with a peculiar hybrid that produced a behavior pattern opposite to anything observed in the behavior of the positive type of animals. The purpose here was to fabricate animals, birds, insects, fish, plants and fruits, etc., that would reflect in their behavior viciousness, attacks, violence, fear, poison and killing instinct. No such animals, birds, insects, fish, plants, fruits, etc., existed up to that point. This is the type of behavior which your animal and social psychologists like to label as the ‘fight or flight’ instinct.”

“Once the pseudo-creators succeeded in the production of these adverse life forms, they projected them onto your planet for illustration. From a very specific animal of this nature, from its genes, they fabricated endless hybrids, placing them all on planet Zero in order to see how well they were suited for their ultimate purpose — fabrication of cavehuman and its modern posterities.”

“This experimentation culminated into fabrication of an ape-like creature that became a suitable prototype for development of the presently existing human body form.”

“Similar experimentations were done with the plant life in order to populate your planet with all kinds of weeds, poisonous plants and fruits as opposed to anything nutritious and positively useful. It is said ‘positively useful.’ This means something pleasant to human eyes, nutritious and healing to the human body. The plants and fruits that do not serve this use are ‘negatively useful.’ They serve a different kind of use for illustration of the true nature of the negative state.”

“Notice the difference between these two types. The positively useful life forms in general, in a vast majority, require a lot of care and protection. Otherwise, they are suffocated by the other type — negatively useful. On the other hand, the negatively useful life forms in general, in a vast majority, do not require any care and protection. They just grow and produce naturally on their own, able to survive almost any condition. The latter type of life forms the pseudo-creators needed to fabricate in order to prove the point — the negative state is by itself and in itself, and supposedly needs only minimal means for survival and procreation.”

“On the other hand, the positive state is too weak, too dependent on the care and protection of its Creator and is unable to be by itself and in itself. The living examples speak louder than a thousand most convincing words. Again, this is the competitive nature of the negative state.”

“Once the pseudo-creators succeeded in fabricating the prototype for a human body, which would consist entirely of the elements taken from ideas of evils and falsities, they proceeded with the next, most daring experiment — fabrication of humans as they appear on planet Zero. The prototype was the embodiment of all ideas of evil thoughts, feelings, emotions and deeds and all ideas of false concepts, logic, intelligence and reason. It contained all instincts of survival and preservation as reflected in the concept of the ‘fight or flight response.’ However, the prototype in itself was not sentient, having no concept of ‘I am.’”

“The purpose here was to fabricate someone who would fully combine all the so-called natural instincts and the nature of that prototype with the ability to develop a concept of ‘I am’ as an intelligent, choice-making and functional, by reason, sentient entity. This was not an easy task to accomplish.”

“It took the pseudo-creators approximately seven million years, in your time, to come up with such a combination in a form of cavehuman.”

“In the process of this experimentation and hybridization, many various life forms, both intelligent and non-intelligent, were fabricated. Some of them were very peculiar. Not all of them remained on your planet. Most of the intelligent life forms, not conducive to the condition existing on your planet, were put elsewhere.”

“The point here to realize is that, once any sentient life form is created or fabricated, regardless of by what means, whether positive or negative, it cannot be destroyed to eternity. Only the non-sentient life forms can and are destroyed frequently. The intelligent life forms, forms that are able to conceive a concept of ‘I am,’ contain within themselves life energy which was originally stolen from The Most High (in the case of the negative life forms). In that energy is the presence of The Lord Jesus Christ (who was at that time The Most High). By virtue of that presence, such life can never be destroyed. It is the source and potential for salvation and conversion of everyone in the negative state to the positive state.”

“Thus, The Divine Providence of The Lord Jesus Christ provided for these peculiar intelligent life forms a place, state and condition suitable to their nature. As you remember, human fairy tales contain many stories about strange and peculiar creatures, talking animals, plants, etc.,

both of the positive and the negative nature, respectively. The content of these stories derives, in actuality, from once existing reality (in the process of the above-mentioned experimentation)."

"Some of these creatures, fabricated by the pseudo-creators, were too positive, or too self-aware, not ignorant enough, or too perceptive or too one-sidedly evil or negative in order to suit the pseudo-creators' purposes. The prevailing positive creatures were taken out of the negative state and placed on the planets within the realm of the positive natural or physical universe where they have been developing fully in accordance with the principles of spiritual progression."

"The other extreme populates various regions of the Zone of Displacement and the Hells where they are in charge of continuous fabrication of the new type of evils and falsities in all kinds of forms and conditions."

"Now, in the process of this crucial experimentation, the principle of hybridization was used. From the genetic memory bank and other material of the sentient stock, inherited from the first people on planet Earth, before the so-called Fall, two elements were used."

"In the first round of this experimentation, the various combinations were tried out, by fusing this or that gene with the genes taken from the opposite elements."

"The purpose of this experimentation was to come up with a fused combination that would repress all positive spiritual principles, memories, feelings, emotions and experiences; and also that would repress a sense of unity, oneness and harmony of all principles of femininity and masculinity, love and wisdom, good and truth and all other spiritual principles. This repression needed to be done to the extent that the fused hybrid would be fully ignorant of all of them and yet, still preserve the sense of 'I am' and be fully intelligent, able to learn and to be, to some extent, inventive and creative."

"This was finally accomplished. The next step was to fabricate a condition in which the spirit and mentality of the newly developed and fused hybrid could be trapped in a specially designed body which would grossly limit the possibility of full manifestation of the spirit and soul placed in that body, becoming totally dependent on that body for survival in earthly spiritual, mental and physical atmosphere."

"The experimental question here was: ***What would happen if a spirit — the most within Spiritual Mind, containing all positive ideas of life and all positive spiritual principles; and soul — the interior mind, containing all positive aspects of sentient mentality — were put in an animal body and beastly mentality, consisting of raw emotions, non-intelligent instincts and drives, based on primitive needs for survival and propagation without any spiritual awareness or ability to develop a concept of 'I am' ?***"

"As you remember, by that time, the pseudo-creators successfully developed an ape-like creature that served as a prototype for this purpose. In that creature, all negative aspects of behavior and mentality, brute force and aggression, killing and destruction, fight or flight response, ruthless preservation of species and territoriality and, most importantly, direction of all instinctual activities to without, were developed to the fullest. The procreation by external, painful and dangerous means, without involvement of any spiritual principles, was assured in that creature."

"In this phase of experimentation, the various combination of genes were tried out with greater or lesser success. The purpose here was to develop a condition in which the positive,

inward, spiritual aspects of sentient spirit and mentality would be totally repressed and blocked to the fullest possible extent, yet, present sufficiently enough to give one an obscure awareness of 'I am.' This obscure awareness of 'I am' had to give one some degree of sense of being different from other life forms and to motivate one to develop sufficient levels of intelligence and creativity in order to serve the purpose for which this condition was developed by the pseudo-creators. Obviously, the prototype creature itself, without having any mixture of genetic material from the sentient life forms, would be just another dull animal, unable to illustrate the consequences of the activation of the negative state. By that time, the pseudo-creators succeeded in developing that creature from purely evil and false ideas. In the genes of that creature there was nothing any longer from the positive state of goodness and truth. This was the ultimate purpose."

"Now the pseudo-creators had a proper genetic material with which they could experiment by combining it with the previously fused, recombined and restructured genetic elements that came from the female and male sentient genetic bank. Thus, they fused this sentient hybrid with the gene of the ape-like creature, developing a new hybrid life form which had never been in existence before. This new hybrid creature was the proverbial caveman (actually, it should be called cavehuman to reflect the totally different, hitherto unknown sentient life form). The pseudo-creators projected this fabrication to planet Zero (your planet) and carefully followed and influenced its development through the entire history of your planet."

"Now, it would be an error to assume that the pseudo-creators put only one or two such newly developed hybrid — sentient creatures on the face of your planet. Remember, by that time, they already accomplished the split of one planetary continent into several. So, they fabricated many thousands of such creatures and placed them on various continents and islands to give an impetus for development of different variations of cultures and tribes that would be able to perpetuate the negative state in different modes and conditions. At the same time, the pseudo-creators modified the prototype ape-like creature itself into a full ape, as known to you on your planet, and, simultaneously with the new hybrid, projected it to your planet."

"The projection of this ape was twofold. One way of projection was through backward time. The apes appeared, in various carefully designed stages of a seemingly evolutionary development, several hundred thousand and even a few million years before the actual projection of the new hybrid sentient form — humans. The other was a simultaneous projection."

"The purpose of the first projection was to establish a scientific deception-hoax which would give the impression to the later scientists that humans developed naturally, evolutionary from the apes and that no outside divine force was involved. Thus, it would be concluded that the origin of humans is not from God and spiritual principles but occurred by chance from the fortuitous combination of various natural particles, atoms, molecules and elements, giving, eventually, rise to sentience. In this respect, then, the intelligence and self-awareness does not come from some kind of Absolute State of Intelligence and Awareness, but from the dead elements of matter. If this is so, then no within spiritual principles exist. And if they do exist, they are not the originating source of sentient life, or any life for that matter, but just non-causal accompaniments of life. The spiritual principles themselves might have originated from non-spiritual dead element combinations. Such a conclusion is inevitable from the above-described arrangement."

"Now, the present humankind on your planet is nothing else but that special hybrid, fabricated by the pseudo-creators in order to illustrate the consequences, outcomes and results of activation of the negative state and to prove the point that one does not need any God or

spiritual principles for originating sentient life.”

“In the process of experimentation with this new sentient hybrid — humans — one of the major principles was to accomplish full separation from, and unawareness of, any other sentient life in the multiverse or any other dimensions but their own planet and universe.”

“This was a very vital condition that needed to be established so that these creatures — humans — would be completely isolated from any objective information regarding other sentient forms, other dimensions and multiverse in general and, especially, from the true knowledge of their origin and from any conscious awareness of the existence of the positive state — the true Creation.”

“This was accomplished by fabrication of a physical body from the genes of the prototype ape-like creature with minor modifications. Into that body were fused considerably altered genes coming from the genetic pool of the sentient life forms. In the process of that fusion and hybridization, all positive, spiritual aspects of those sentient life forms were encapsulated into specially designed genetic containers that would block most of their content. Only a very small, infinitesimally small, opening was left, limited entirely to the seepage of life energy which continuously vivified that body.”

“The pseudo-creators knew very well that, in order to allow any sentience to be present in that newly developed hybrid, they needed some spiritual principles of that sentience to be left intact. Otherwise, they would miss their point. But, by a very intricate and complex genetic and other correspondential manipulation and combination, they succeeded in blocking from the gene of sentience the awareness of spirituality, sucking out from it only life energy without giving any awareness of the true source of that energy. Furthermore, from the genetic material of that prototype creature, and from the very intricate rearrangement of spiritual correspondences, the pseudocreators built another genetic-spiritual container that encapsulated the true mentality, contained in the elements that came from the sentient life forms. That mentality, in its original condition, was too peaceful, gentle and kind and could not produce murderous violence, aggression, hate and all other negative emotions, feelings, thoughts, attitudes and behaviors so abundantly present on your planet.”

“So, this positive mentality was covered up with that container, with a very small opening left, allowing the transformed transmission of life energy from the spiritual sphere of those sentient genes to come through in order to sustain mental awareness of the newly developed hybrid — humans.”

“And, finally, another genetic container was developed, which was used to encapsulate the content of the exterior mind of the true sentient life forms. From the ideas of these forms, a proper physical body was built to manifest the spiritual ideas of one’s spirit and soul into the external behavior, relatedness and attitudes. The awareness of this external form was blocked out completely, so that the present humans would have no knowledge of what it is like to be and to feel and to look as a true sentient being in a true physical form built from the pure positive spiritual elements of love and wisdom.”

“Again, only an infinitesimally small opening was left for flow of that life energy from the most within, through the interior area, to the most without of the body to keep it alive and functional.”

“Once this was accomplished, a special genetic and correspondential envelope was developed, from the elements of the negative state, into which the true most within Spiritual Mind, the true interior mind and the true exterior mind, derived from the genes of sentient life

forms, were placed, separating them from the body and body's awareness of them. Only an infinitesimally small connection was left between them and the physical body, limited solely to the reception of life energy to sustain some degree of life in that body."

"In the next step, between the body and that envelope, containing the true sentient mind, now separated into the three distinct areas — the most within, interior and exterior — from the genetic and other correspondential material of that prototype creature-animal, three distinct pseudo-minds were built-in at the level of each container. Thus, at the level of the most within Spiritual Mind, encapsulated into that genetic and negatively spiritual container, a pseudo-inner mind was built. It was put in an encircling proximity to it, as to completely surround that container, making sure as to capture anything coming out through the small opening, left there, and screen out everything — before releasing any damaging information to the negative state's being and existence."

"The similar simulations were built and placed around the true interior mind and true exterior mind."

"Thus, you have here layers upon layers of protection against anything truly spiritual and truthful coming through or out of that now separated and isolated true sentient mind."

"As you see, the purpose here was to separate and isolate one sentient mind, consisting of its three aspects, into three distinctly different minds and keep them isolated and separated from each other indefinitely."

"Remember, the true nature of the negative state is built on the principles of separation and isolation."

"In the true Creation, no such separation and isolation exists. The sentient mind of all sentient entities in the positive state of Creation and its multiverse is completely and totally unified. It is one mind which manifests itself in the three aspects — the most within, interior and exterior aspect, respectively. This arrangement reflects the true nature of The Creator — The Lord Jesus Christ."

"However, with this kind of arrangement, no negative state could ever come to any fruition. As long as there is a unity and oneness of mind, the positive state fully reigns. ***This is the true nature of the positive state.***"

"In order to activate the negative state, it was necessary to recede from this arrangement. Remember please, that the very first step toward activation of the negative state was the separation of one androgynous form into two physical forms — one female and one male. The full reason for this separation, as well as why the sentient life forms on the original planet Earth had to start with the androgynous form, was nicely revealed and explained in the book Fundamentals of Human Spirituality. There is no need to repeat the reasons here."

"So, the process of activation of the negative state is actually the process of gradual separation of various spiritual principles from their cohesive wholeness and unity and subsequent separation of their receptacles in the sentient mind. Each spiritual principle, with all its infinite derivatives, has its specific receptacle in the sentient mind. By being able to receive and to contain the specificity of each principle, the sentient mind is kept alive. No other source of life existed, exists or will ever exist. ***And because all true spiritual principles derive from the true Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ, no other source of life but The Lord Jesus Christ exists. It is hereby solemnly pronounced by The Lord Jesus Christ that this statement is The Absolute Truth.***"

“By separating and splitting these spiritual principles from their unifying Source, their distortion, perversion and falsification is possible. Now, they lack their connectedness to this Source. This lack allows the confusion and misinterpretation of their content to become reality.”

“By this act, the separation and isolation of the specific receptacles in the sentient mind is accomplished. This, actually, culminated in a total separation and isolation of one sentient mind into three different, isolated minds.”

“However, this separation and isolation in itself, although greatly welcomed by the pseudo-creators and necessary for their ultimate goal, was not sufficient for this goal. Unfortunately for them, there is always that inborn, ingrained and inherent tendency of the various aspects and receptacles of the sentient mind to seek out and revert to their former state — a state of unity, oneness, cohesiveness and wholeness.”

“In order to assure that the separation and isolation of this mind remains indefinitely (an absolutely necessary condition if the negative state is to survive), the pseudo-creators built the above-described genetic and correspondential containers and blocks which enveloped each mind separately. Moreover, they built one entire genetic and correspondential envelope, which separates the entire mind, in its three levels, from the rest of the body. And not only that, but they fabricated from the genes of that beast which they so conveniently hybridized, three totally different pseudo-minds by which they surrounded the true sentient mind in its three aspects. But even this arrangement was not sufficient to maintain the life of the negative state.”

“In the next step of their experimentation, the pseudo-creators designed and gave life to a new form of being called guardians. These guardians were placed in the proximity of each level — the most within Spiritual Mind, the interior mind and the external mind — to guard against any possible changes in the state of affairs of the human mind. The function of these guardians was described in Chapter Five of this book.”

“A legion of demons was put in the charge of these guardians, in order to assure that the guardians properly guard the status quo. These guardians are called shadows and shadowy figures.”

“Now you see the rationale for the spiritual transformation process, as described in the previous Chapter. You can also see from this why the sequence of revelation of these Chapters comes the way it comes. Each Chapter derives from the ideas of the previous Chapter. There is a spiritual logic here.”

“The process of separation and isolation, on which the negative state is built, was not limited to the above-described arrangement.”

“There was one more step, a very crucial one to that, which needed to be accomplished. A global separation and isolation of humans from the rest of Creation and the Zone of Displacement was necessary to design. This type of separation and isolation is a must if humans on your planet are to be kept in ignorance about the true nature of Creation and the Zone of Displacement.”

“By the above-described arrangement, the state of perpetual ignorance and unconscious processes was established. Ignorance and unconscious processes are vital fuel for perpetuation of the negative state. They are a permanent assurance that all learning comes

not from within but from without.”

“If you are in ignorance of your true inner, spiritual nature, you turn yourself outside and you are taught from without, believing that whatever is being said to you by others, more experienced external authorities, is true. However, this situation has to be limited to the planet Zero.”

“For that reason, planet Zero was put in total isolation and separation from the rest of its galaxy and universe. The human body was built by a special genetic engineering, from the genes of the beast. On the other hand, the body of that beast was built from the elements of the Zone of Displacement. These elements were the solidified and concretized rejected spiritual ideas of the sentient entities of the positive state who refused to accept and to act on the content of such ideas.”

“As you remember, the content of these ideas was the choice to proclaim and to believe that life is not from The Lord Jesus Christ (formerly The Most High) and His/Her spiritual principles but from something or someone else. These rejected, fallen out ideas, with all consequences of their possible activation, constitute the life of the Zone of Displacement. From them the prototype-beast was fabricated. Thus, in actuality, the human body, which is the beastly body, was fabricated by the pseudo-creators, in a modified form, from the negative anti-elements of the Zone of Displacement.”

“To these limiting elements, the elements of planet Zero were added and a totally new, extremely limited type of body was hybridized. Nothing like that has ever existed before. Into that hybridized body, the two fused elements from the sentient life forms were placed in the manner as described above.”

“By this arrangement, the spirit of life and its soul were conveniently trapped in that extremely limited and limiting body and they cannot get out unless the body is killed, by whatever means, or wears out and dies on its own. Thus, any movement of the spirit and its soul depends entirely on the function of that body.”

“But what kind of body is that? Notice, please, how limited you are. If your spirit wants to go somewhere, it must take with itself its cumbersome and uncomfortable body. In order to survive in it, all activities of spirit and its soul are geared for taking care of your body.”

“Your body requires a very special environment, a very specific atmosphere and a continuous, around the clock, care and protection. If you have too little or too much oxygen, or of this or that chemical element, your body gets poisoned, damaged and dies. If you eat too much or drink too much or too little, your body suffers and dies. If you run too fast and for too long, your body gets exhausted and may collapse and die. If you sleep and rest too little or too much, it may collapse and die. If you are exposed to extreme cold or extreme heat, your body may die. If you want to travel, you have to devise some kind of external means of transportation in order to move that body faster. But if you exceed the velocity of the movement which is comfortable and safe to that body, the body cannot survive for too long.”

“Your body needs a special type of gravity to be able to carry itself comfortably. Too much gravity will crush it. Too little gravity becomes uncomfortable, feebling your muscle tone. Now, you can go forever in enumerating all gross limitations of the human body. And, yet, your scientists foolishly consider the function of the body a miracle. It is a miracle all right, but not the way they think it is. It is a miracle that any spark of life can be sustained in that body.”

“The further complication of this isolation and limitation is elimination of waste. This

requirement rules one's schedule. Failure to eliminate poisons eventually kills the body."

"All these factors keep you completely preoccupied with the body and its own separate and isolated life. There is no time, or very little time, for anything else but everyday survival of your body."

"This is the very trap of the negative state. The very specific, peculiar and unusual needs your body has gives you also a global and multiversal isolation. Just ask yourself, how far can you travel in the universe or space with the type of body you have? You would have to build a very intricate space vessel which would imitate precisely the physical and mental environment in which your body is able to be alive and your mentality to be sane. And at what speed can that body travel? Can it exceed the speed of light a billion times in order to visit some other corner of this galaxy and be able to return to its own planet within its life span?"

"In the beginning of the second history of your planet, this physical isolation and separation took a ridiculous proportion. At that time, humans were so primitive that they traveled on foot. Later on, they begin to use animals for this purpose. Not too long ago, humans in Europe, for example, had no knowledge that America or Americans existed. And American Indians had no knowledge that Europeans existed, etc."

"This situation was purposefully established in order to continue in separation and isolation of your kind as long as possible. Only in the last two decades were you able to fly to the Moon. And, look at what kinds of bulky protective suits and vessels needed to be invented to enable your astronauts to travel to the Moon and back."

"Of course, the policies are changing even within the negative state. The so-called scientific progress is accommodated to the greater and faster spread of the negative state and ultimately to its full exposure."

"However, as long as you live in that kind of body, with those kinds of arrangements, no matter to what extent you are aware of this situation, no matter how much you are spiritually transformed, you still have that type of body. It is physically and genetically isolated from the rest of your mind in the manner described above. This condition will always produce problems, fears, anxieties, worries, illnesses and all kinds of adverse conditions inherent in the life of that kind of body."

"For this reason, as you remember, the preceding Chapter ended with a warning that completion of the spiritual transformation process does not lead to freedom and liberation from this separation and arrangement. You are still trapped in that body. Nothing can be changed in this respect by any means until that body is put aside and you are no longer in it. The only difference in this respect is that, after spiritual transformation, as mentioned previously, you will be able to be in better control of your life, to regulate your lifestyle more consistently with the nature of the positive state. This assures your future choices after you get rid of that 'miraculous' body of yours."

"You have to remember that the majority of humans, being fully and completely ignorant of this state of affairs, consider their situation and the situation of their body as a totally normal occurrence. There is nothing abnormal to them about this situation. Therefore, they fall in love with the bodily life and cling to it desperately. They acquire a certain type of lifestyle, mentality, and even spirituality, supportive of that lifestyle. They fully identify themselves with all habits, modes and principles of this life. For that reason, after their body dies, their loves, habits and attractions to that life remain and are taken with them. After coming to the spiritual world, humans of this nature (the vast majority of them), tend to reject anything else

inconsistent with what they acquired and with what they are familiar.”

“This mode of attachments and identifications keeps them in the clutches of the negative state. Because of that, they choose to go to the Hells where they may continue, for a time, times and half a time, in their beloved, familiar and ‘comfortable’ lifestyle regardless of how miserable and negative it is. If you love misery, unhappiness and negativity, the only life that can have any meaning to you will be the life consistent with them. All else is superfluous. It is difficult to conceptualize that the vast majority of humans can be in love with misery, unhappiness and negativity. The reason this attitude is possible is because humans consider these adverse states to be normal and natural. For them, they are not perceived as misery, unhappiness and negativity, but the only possible reality that gives them an illusion of happiness, joy and satisfaction.”

“One needs to recognize and to acknowledge first the fact that his/ her lifestyle is not what it seems to be. And, secondly, one needs to express an intense desire to change the status quo. This is where the spiritual transformation process comes in. It gives humans the revelation of the true state of affairs. It puts them in control of their life and their choices. It prepares them for the life in the positive state, after the body is put aside, without the necessity to continue indefinitely in the life of the negative state somewhere in the Hells. It gives one hope and joy of the future fulfillment of the promise by The Lord Jesus Christ. It gives one a true sense, meaning and perspective of one’s life on your planet. You control the problems. The problems no longer control you. The problems will always be there, as long as you live in that body, but you will be their master and not their slave. And you will be the master of your life from within to without. This is the true purpose of the spiritual transformation process. Nothing more, at this point, should be put into it. If you want to accomplish this, just follow the procedures outlined in the previous Chapter of this book.”

“Now, having completed this phase of experimentation (fabrication of humans), and having established fully the dominance of the activated negative state in the entire Zone of Displacement and on planet Zero, having become uncontested rulers and dictators of their domain, the pseudo-creators proceeded with the next phase of experimentation. This phase relates to the plan that was conceived by them at the time your planet was successfully populated by the cavehuman and then the development of the human civilization was on its way.”

“Some of you might be questioning why, at this point, The Most High did not eliminate the negative state. After all, the pseudo-creators won and the full exposure of the nature of the negative state was accomplished.”

“Two things are wrong with this conclusion: One, up to that point, the negative state was by imposition and not by free choice. As you remember from Chapter IX in the book Major Ideas of The New Revelation, nothing can be learned by imposition but only by free choice. Actually, the illustration of the consequences of the negative state cannot properly take place until the negative state is freely chosen as a preferred style of life.”

“In the process of the activation of the negative state, two phases were necessary: First, the activation itself. The process of activation is by force and imposition. The creatures, fabricated by the pseudocreators, had no alternative choice but to be negative. It took the incarnation of Jesus Christ to give them that choice or a different alternative. The second phase is the illustration of the consequences, outcomes and results of that activation. This second phase could not start until The Lord Jesus Christ left your planet. It is based on freedom to be negative.”

“In the process of initial activation, no one in Creation wanted to choose to be negative and to illustrate the consequences of the dominating negative state. This is the reason why a different breed of creatures had to be fabricated. On these creatures the negative state was imposed as the only alternative in life.”

“As you know, even at the present time, many creatures in the Zone of Displacement, as well as many humans, have no idea that anything else but what they have, or where they are, exists. Once this situation with the creatures and humans was fully established, The First Coming of Jesus Christ took place. One of the major outcomes of The First Coming was that The Lord Jesus Christ liberated all creatures from the necessity of being negative, giving them an alternative choice. Elimination of the negative state at this stage, until it had a choice to prove itself as a chosen lifestyle, would have been premature, leading to no true new learning.”

“The second wrong thing with the above-formulated question is that, at that time, before incarnation of Jesus Christ on your planet, The Most High did not contain within His/Her nature any elements from the Zone of Displacement and planet Zero. In order to successfully eliminate the negative state without having those elements, The Most High would have had to appear in the Zone of Displacement and on your planet in His/Her full essence and substance. If this were to happen, the entire Zone of Displacement and planet Zero with all their inhabitants would instantaneously, in one blink of an eye, perish.”

“If the Zone of Displacement were to perish, the continuously rejected ideas of the free choice to deny God and His/Her spiritual principles, would have no place to fall out. Therefore, they would strike back at their senders, annihilating them in the process.”

“Thus, the entire Creation would perish. Creation cannot bear the idea that it has no opportunity to get rid of such ideas and no place to dispose of them. In this case, these ideas would have to be accepted as valid. The idea that God exists and is the only source of life and the idea that God does not exist or is not the true and only source of life cannot be true at the same time. But, if one of these ideas is not exposed or rejected properly, having no place to fall out, it strikes back and requires its acceptance as truth. In this case, both ideas must be accepted as being true. Such a contradictory acceptance would lead to the instant insanity and suicide of all in Creation.”

“Surely, The Most High could have created another Creation, another multiverse. But the entire process would have to be repeated again and again because of that existential question, formulated in this book and other books of The New Revelation by this transmitter. The Lord Jesus Christ, who at that time was The Most High, does not operate that way.”

“For that reason, a special Grand Plan of Salvation was devised by The Most High which relates to the content and meaning of both The First Coming and The Second Coming of The Lord Jesus Christ. The pseudocreators’ first major phase of experimentation, with its numerous subphases, was only half of their plan. The second half of that plan was much more daring and much more mysterious in comparison to the first one.”

“The full content of that plan and the means by which it was partially completed, cannot be revealed at this time, if at all. Only the major ideas of that plan can be revealed (but not its process).”

“The second phase of experimentation was directed toward the development of special psychic powers and conquest of their mind and body that would almost equal the power of The Most High. It is said ‘almost.’ The reason for this ‘almost’ is in the fact that none of the

pseudo-creators were absolute. They all were created. Therefore, they lacked the experience of The Absolute state. But this could be circumvented by the sheer numbers. If you fabricate enough creatures of such immense power and condition, the cumulative sum of all of them eventually will equal the power of The Most High. The Tower of Babel (Genesis 11: 1-9) tells this story.”

“So, the pseudo-creators continued in their experimentation until they succeeded in developing a special and unusual life form of the most pure evil that almost equaled the power of pure good of The Most High. In this form they fused all their own genes and all modified genes from the genetic pool of all life forms they had from the first androgynous people on your planet. This unusual combination gave birth to the most powerful, potent and unimaginably intelligent hybrid that has ever been or ever will be conceived, born or developed.”

“Once this was accomplished, all pseudo-creators relinquished their former forms and entered this newly developed hybrid and became truly ‘gods.’ (Various human mythologies, containing the stories of life of ‘gods,’ their pantheon and their powers and immortality and how they influenced human life, such as, for example, Greek and Roman mythologies, reflect the fact of the pseudo-creators becoming ‘gods’).”

“With such a new state and condition, the pseudo-creators then proceeded to conceive a plan to travel further backward in time to the moment before any creation was actualized and realized. The new hybridized pseudo-creators believed that, if they were able to catch God before any sentient entities existed, He/She would have no support of Creation and, therefore, would be more vulnerable to the defeat or, at least, to the negotiation for sharing His/Her powers with them. This situation is reflected in the prophecy of Isaiah, Chapter 63, verse 5,”

“‘I looked, but there was no one to help, and I wondered that
there was no one to uphold: therefore my own arm brought
salvation for Me; and my own fury, it sustained Me;’”

“The word ‘fury,’ in this connotation, does not mean human emotion of fury. It means realization of The Absolute Power of The Lord Jesus Christ which cannot be corrupted by any negotiation or dealings with the negative state; in this case, with the new hybridized pseudocreators.”

“The completion of this phase of the experiment prompted the incarnation of The Lord Jesus Christ. The physical birth of Jesus Christ on your planet postponed the pseudo-creators’ travel to that period. Now they needed to concentrate on the destruction of His/Her mission. That mission was endangering their whole plan. So, the travel was postponed indefinitely.”

“Notice, please, that it is not by coincidence that the birth of Jesus Christ happened at the time the pseudo-creators succeeded in their own negative transformation or, to be precise, transmutation. Also, it is not by coincidence that the process of Jesus Christ’s birth followed or paralleled the same principles of hybridization used by the pseudocreators. This parallel can give a false impression that The Most High borrowed this process from the pseudo-creators. Just the opposite is true. The pseudo-creators used the stolen principles of life-making process from The Most High which they appropriated to themselves as their own.”

“Originally, all sentient entities received this knowledge from their Creator. It was ingrained in their genes. Thus, it was fully available to them from the genetic material they inherited from the first people on your planet. The process of creation of infinite varieties of sentient and

non-sentient life is by the process of hybridization.”

“Initially, there is an idea of creation and sentient entities. That idea occurs in The Absolute Mind of The Most High. After its occurrence, the idea proceeds to its projection outside of that Mind as its own independent sentient life form. Once that life form appears, it builds its own genetic pool. From that pool, various genes are used and combined with the particles emanating from the life force which, in turn, emits unceasingly from the activities of The Absolute Mind of The Most High — The Lord Jesus Christ. The combination of these elements gives rise to entirely different sentient life forms. This goes on and on to eternity.”

“However, none of these sentient entities contain a direct Absolute Element, taken out from The Most High. They are the original ideas of The Most High but they are not The Most High (for more on this issue see the books Fundamentals of Human Spirituality and Four Concepts of The Spiritual Structure of Creation). There was only one exception to this rule from eternity to eternity — the birth of The Lord Jesus Christ. In that birth, as you remember from Chapter Two of this book, an element was used from the most external part of The Absolute Exterior Mind of The Most High which was fused and hybridized with the two elements of the Zone of Displacement and planet Zero taken out from the genes of Joseph and Mary.”

“This was a necessary procedure in order to stop the pseudo-creators. The only way they could be stopped, without the annihilation of anyone in the process, was by using their own weapons, their own fabrication in the form of the feeble human body, making it divine through a special process of divinization, as described in Chapter Two, and with that body, or to what it corresponds, enter their domain and isolate them from the rest of Creation and the Zone of Displacement.”

“No other way would work. These are the rules of the Zone of Displacement. One has to follow all rules first, in order to have a first hand knowledge of them, before one can conquer and overcome them. Everyone, including The Lord Jesus Christ, has to follow this rule. Having previously no direct tangible physical and intimate experience of life of the negative state, Jesus Christ could do nothing, unless, of course, He/She would want to destroy them and the entire Creation (which, by the way, had never entered His/Her Mind). Therefore, for the sake of salvation of the entire Creation and for the sake of eventual complete and eternal elimination of the negative state, The Most High, as Jesus Christ, volunteered to come down into the Zone of Displacement, live in the type of body originally fabricated by the pseudo-creators, experience the negative state, first hand, and enter the Hells of the pseudo-creators and lock them up indefinitely.”

“In the process, The Lord Jesus Christ removed from the pseudo-creators the knowledge of time travel and weakened their powers, acquired through that mysterious negative transmutation, as briefly described above. He/She then separated and isolated them in a special state and region, accessible to no one until recently, and gave them the full taste of isolation and separation they so effectively imposed on their fabricated humans and other creatures of the Zone of Displacement and the Hells. This is their just due. From that time on, the pseudo-creators have had absolutely no access to anyone or anything, and until recently, no one was allowed, for safety reasons, to enter their region. No one had the knowledge but The Lord Jesus Christ of how to locate their whereabouts or contact them.”

“This separation was a necessary step in order to give everyone an opportunity to experience the negative state and all its consequences by free choice and not by a necessity. With the pseudo-creators on the scene, no such experience would be possible. They would be in control of the situation and they would continue to impose the negative state on people. However, with this present state of affairs, the mystery of the pseudo-creators has not ended.

There is one more drastic step that needs to be taken, before all their story, and everything that they caused, can permanently and eternally end. Some aspects of that mysterious step will be revealed in the next Chapter.”

“He/she who has ears to hear and to listen, let him/her hear and listen to what The Lord Jesus Christ reveals in this Chapter.”

CHAPTER SEVEN

THE CONCEPT OF ANTICHRIST

On February 13, 1988 the word of The Lord Jesus Christ came to me, saying,

“As most, if not all, spiritual concepts, ideas and principles on your planet, the concept of an ‘Antichrist’ is distorted, falsified and misunderstood.”

“The majority of Christians believe literally in the fact that, at one point, shortly before the physical appearance of The Lord Jesus Christ on the literal clouds, at the sound of archangels trumpets, that is, shortly before The Second Coming of The Lord Jesus Christ, an Antichrist will appear on your planet. This Antichrist will take over the entire planet, will proclaim himself to be God, the real Jesus Christ, and will perform great miracles and signs. He will show great powers, making all humans believe in his divinity.”

“This conceptualization is based primarily on one sole passage written by Paul in his Second Epistle to The Thessalonians, Chapter Two, verses 1-12.”

“What prompted Paul to write this letter was the fact that some humans at that time believed that The Second Coming already took place, quote:”

“‘The day of Christ had come.’ Then Paul continues:”

“‘Let no one deceive you by any means; for that Day will not come unless the falling away comes first, and the man of sin is revealed, the son of perdition, who opposes and exalts himself above all that is called God or that is worshiped, so that he sits as God in the temple of God, showing himself that he is God... . The coming of the lawless one is according to the working of Satan, with all power, signs, and lying wonders...’ etc.”

“As you see from this quote, Paul does not use the word ‘Antichrist.’ Instead, he calls him ‘lawless one.’”

“Many stories about Antichrist circulate among the so-called Christians.”

“Yet, as you remember, The Lord Jesus Christ, during His/Her life on your planet, had never mentioned the word ‘Antichrist.’ Instead, the words ‘false christs’ and ‘false prophets’ are used. And, as you see, it is used in a plural not singular mode. It is stated in Matthew, Chapter 24, verse 24,”

“‘For false christs and false prophets will arise and show great signs and wonders, so as to deceive, if possible, even the elect.’”

“Exactly the same words are repeated in The Gospel According to Mark, Chapter 13, verse 22. In The Gospel According to Luke, Chapter 21, verse 8 it is said:”

“Take heed that you not be deceived. For many will come in My name, saying, ‘I am He’ and ‘The time has drawn near.’ Therefore do not go after them.”

“In actuality the word ‘Antichrist’ is used only once or twice by Apostle John in his two letters. In The First Epistle of John, Chapter Two, verse 18, he says:”

“Little children, it is the last hour; and as you have heard that the Antichrist is coming, even now many antichrists have come, by which we know that it is the last hour.”

“John also gives a definition of Antichrist. In verses 22-23 in the same Chapter, he says:”

“Who is a liar but he who denies that Jesus is the Christ? He is antichrist who denies the Father and the Son. Whoever denies the Son does not have the Father either.”

“And in The Second Epistle of John, verse 7, he states,”

“For many deceivers have gone out into the world who do not confess Jesus Christ as coming in the flesh. This is a deceiver and an antichrist.”

“Several issues become apparent from these quotations: First of all, it is obvious that there is no inner, internal sense to the sayings of the Apostles. All Epistles of the Apostles are what they really are — the letters of support, explanation, exhortation and, when necessary, of rebuke. But, unfortunately, later on, the Fathers of the Church turned these letters into a firm, unchangeable and undeniable dogma of the Church, into the words of God, having contained in them profound spiritual and celestial meanings. No such meanings are contained in any Epistle of the Apostles.”

“Secondly, it is obvious that all Apostles themselves were expecting that The Second Coming of The Lord Jesus Christ was about to take place. As a matter of fact, most of them believed that it would happen within their earthly life span. This is obvious from the words John used — ‘it is the last hour.’”

“This firm belief indicates that the Apostles were not as inspired in these, and many other matters of spiritual issues, as all Christians believe. The problem with Christians is that they fail to recognize the fact of the reality of the time during which the Apostles lived and functioned. Christians foolishly believe that, if the Apostles, with the exception of Paul, physically walked with The Lord Jesus Christ, it makes them a very special people, more enlightened, more knowledgeable, more inspired and more totally infallible than anyone else who has ever lived on your planet. But this is not the case. It is time to correct this foolish misconception about them.”

“The fact of the matter is that Jesus Christ very carefully selected His/Her Apostles **to suit the spiritual atmosphere that existed at that time**. There was an alignment of their mentality, scope of comprehension, degree of their spiritual awareness and their overall abilities relevant to the spiritual state of those times. Also, the choice was made in this respect in the foresight by Jesus Christ of the betrayal of Christians which was about to come.”

“To some extent, and this will seem to be a profane statement to all Christians, all Apostles

contributed to this betrayal by their limited understanding of the true spiritual issues. At that time, this was the way it was supposed to be. No one more spiritual, more inspired, more understanding and more able would do because of The Grand Plan of The Lord Jesus Christ regarding the future outcome of the negative state. Hence, the spiritual limitations of all the Apostles.“

“However, these limitations are considered limitations only from the standpoint of your time but not their time. For their time, they were, in fact, the most advanced and the most spiritually enlightened humans.”

“The common tragedy of most Christians is that they are unable to see this fact, from this kind of perspective. Instead, they consider the Apostles the most enlightened, the most spiritual and the most inspired by The Holy Spirit humans for all times, to eternity.”

“This is a very limited approach, fueled and supported by the negative state in order to keep Christians in thick darkness regarding the real truth and all spiritual issues.”

“Thirdly, from the statements quoted above, it is obvious that all the Apostles still considered Jesus Christ as a separate person from God. They speak of the Son and His Father. This is regardless of the fact of what they learned from Him/Her during His/Her earthly life when He/She clearly proclaimed, while being in the state of His/Her internals, that ‘I and My Father are one’ (John 10:30). ‘I am the resurrection and the life’ (John 11:25) and ‘The Father is in Me, and I in Him’ (John 10:38).”

“The time was not appropriate for the Apostles to know or to understand the fact that Jesus Christ spoke, intermittently, from two positions: 1. From the position of the elements of Joseph and Mary, that is, from the position of the negative state or externals. In this position, He appeared in a total separation from His Father, The Most High, because nothing of the negative state can be contained in or attached to The Most High. 2. However, whenever He/She spoke from the position of within, from the elements in Him/Her that came directly from The Most High, He/She spoke from the position of unity, being truly the Only One God Indivisible.”

“This mysterious fact was incomprehensible to the Apostles simply because the process of reunification of the separate elements from The Most High, together with the divinization of the elements from Mary and Joseph — the physical body — would not be completed for some time to come. The reunification of the elements from The Most High with The Most High’s totality was accomplished after the resurrection of The Lord Jesus Christ.“

“However, as you remember, the integration, fusion and hybridization of His/Her physical body into the totality of The Nature of The Most High was not completed until quite recently.”

“Therefore, the Apostles could not know of this fact; they continued to perceive The Lord Jesus Christ from the improper spiritual position of separation. Thus, they spoke of the Son and the Father and The Holy Spirit as though these were different personalities and entities.”

“From this stance of the Apostles, Christians assumed that this was an eternal fact which would never change to eternity. And if someone, such as Swedenborg or Dr. Peter Francuch, for example, comes and proclaims anything different from the Apostles, those individuals are proclaimed as Antichrists.”

“The only thing that the Apostles knew in this respect was that, for some reason, it was very important to accept The Lord Jesus Christ as coming in flesh. His/Her human body had some

very important significance. This significance however was taken on blind faith without too much understanding and explanation of its meaning.”

“The importance of the resurrected physical body of Jesus Christ was emphasized by The Lord Jesus Christ Himself/Herself. In The Gospel According to Luke, Chapter 24, verses 36-43, we read:”

“36. ‘Now as they said these things, Jesus Himself stood in the midst of them, and said to them, “Peace to you”.’”

“37. ‘But they were terrified and frightened, and supposed they had seen a spirit.’”

“38. ‘And He said to them, “Why are you troubled? And why do doubts arise in your hearts?”’”

“39. ‘Behold My hands and My feet that it is I Myself. Handle Me and see, for a spirit does not have flesh and bones as you see I have.’””

“40. ‘When He had said this, He showed them His hands and His feet.’”

“41. ‘But while they still did not believe for joy, and marveled, He said to them, “Have you any food here?”’”

“42. ‘So they gave Him a piece of a broiled fish and some honeycomb.’”

“43. ‘And He took it and ate in their presence.’”

“Notice please how a tremendous emphasis is put on the physical body of Jesus Christ. He/She encouraged the Apostles to handle Him/ Her physically so that they could feel His/Her flesh and bones. Also, He/She ate the requested food to even more emphasize this physical aspect. Or take the encounter between Jesus Christ and Thomas, recorded in The Gospel According to John, Chapter 20, verses 24-29. Again, the emphasis is on the physical body resurrected from death. Or take the scene described in John, Chapter 21 when eating of the physical fish is taking place.”

“All these events have a profound spiritual significance, pointing out the mystery of the human body in which The Divine of The Most High dwelled and which The Lord Jesus Christ took with Him/Her. But why this was done remained a mystery to the Apostles and all others until this time.”

“Fourthly, John correctly defined the concept of antichrist as someone who rejects the divinity of human body-flesh of The Lord Jesus Christ and also that The Divine was made flesh. There are two important factors here: The Divine was made human — flesh. Flesh always had a negative connotation of weaknesses, limitations, being easily tempted and succumbing to all kinds of bad things. And yet, despite this fact, The Divine was made that flesh. Actually, The Divine took upon Itself, or clothed Itself, with that negative flesh, consisting of nothing but evils and falsities (in a correspondential sense, of course).”

“The second fact was that flesh was made Divine and taken by Jesus Christ with Him/Her

when He/She physically departed your planet.”

“Now, the most important spiritual doctrine, correctly perceived by all Apostles, including Paul, was the acceptance of these two factors. All else was built on and derived from this crucial fact.”

“For that reason, whoever was or is disputing or rejecting this fact of Human Divine and Divine Human is an antichrist. This is a definition offered by John. This is a correct definition from the standpoint of those two factors. By this definition therefore, there have been many antichrists on your planet since the time of the Apostles to the present time. Anyone who denies the above-described two factors, and there are more of these than those who do not, is, in fact, an antichrist. However, let it be known now, that there is much more to the concept of Antichrist than this.”

“First of all, the word ‘Antichrist’ is not appropriately used. It is not by coincidence that The Lord Jesus Christ never used that word. As mentioned above, the words ‘false christs’ and ‘false prophets’ are used instead. In The Revelation of Jesus Christ in The Holy Bible, transmitted through Apostle John, the words ‘dragon,’ ‘the beast from the sea,’ ‘the beast from the land’ and ‘false prophet’ are used. Also in Prophet Daniel the word ‘beasts’ is used.”

“In this connotation, the word ‘Christ’ means spiritual truth. ‘False christs’ means manifoldly falsified spiritual truth. In a deeper sense, it signifies total falsification of anything truthful about The Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ.”

“The inappropriateness of the word ‘Antichrist’ derives from the fact that it is limited to the falsification of only one aspect of truth represented by the word ‘Christ.’ It contains nothing related to the evilness of the falsification of the concept of The Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ.”

“On the other hand, the word ‘beast’ has this full connotation. ‘The beast from the sea’ has two distinctly different connotations. In one connotation it reflects the entire conglomeration of all evils and falsities of the deeper Hells which are utilized in the pseudo-unified form to assault the entire positive state. It is also an intense craving and affection for the total destruction of the positive state. But, there is another, more mysterious connotation to the content of this word. This connotation has never been revealed before. It is revealed right now. It has something to do with the pseudo-creators who comprise the most deep, the most evil and the most falsified Hells. We shall return to this issue later.”

“‘The beast from the land’ denotes all forces of the negative state in the rest of the Hells, in the Zone of Displacement and on planet Zero — your planet. Altogether they are utilized for killing any possibility of acceptance of the true New Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ throughout the Hells, in the rest of the Zone of Displacement and on your planet.”

“For the negative state, the proper acceptance of this New True Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ is the most dangerous and devastating thing. It means the death of the negative state. Therefore all efforts of the negative state are put into full mobilization of all its resources, powers and abilities of persuasion to undermine, at all costs, this proper understanding and acceptance.”

“As you see from this statement, the present state of affairs with the negative state is such that the entire issue of its life is now defensive rather than offensive. This is a new phase in the life of the negative state. While before the negative state was always offensive, trying actively to destroy the positive state, at the present time, after the human era was abolished

in the intermediate world (revealed in the book Messages From Within), the position is shifted to within the Zone of Displacement. The negative state now has to protect and defend itself from the proper conceptualization of The Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ.”

“This is its defensive position: Whoever accepts this New Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ puts himself/herself into a position for possible conversion with a subsequent spiritual transformation.”

“The situation is different in the positive state. The positive state, after a brief state of uncertainty (this was the most difficult time), accepted this change with great elation and delight and fully, unanimously and unequivocally submitted its nature to the ‘surgical’ change in order to align itself with this New Spiritual State.”

“This process of change is fully described, among other things, in the internal sense of The Revelation of Jesus Christ (Apocalypse), transmitted by John. But it also describes this defensive position and mobilization of the negative state to protect itself from any changes in this respect.”

“Now, the literal sense of that Revelation has no relevance to anything at all except being confusing and mysterious. By that sense it is assumed that ‘wrath and fury of God’ is being poured out on the negative state; that angels of God — the positive entities — by the sounding of their trumpets and pouring out the bowls are causing the suffering and misery to all in the negative state. Here you have a good example of how the literal sense distorts the truth. This is a seeming truth which appears to be true.”

“However, you have to be aware of the fact that The Lord Jesus Christ and all members of the positive state — angels and spirits — are of a totally positive nature. The positive nature cannot produce anything of the negative nature or such states as misery, suffering and punishment. To assume that about them means to assume that The Lord Jesus Christ and His/Her entire positive state are, in fact, negative. This is the only logical conclusion one can derive from such an assumption. Yet, Christian preachers from their pulpits continuously threaten their naive followers with the ‘wrath’ of God. By doing that, they serve to the negative state itself very nicely. In the connotation of the negative state, God is evil and Jesus Christ is an evil minion of the evil God.”

“The reality of this situation is that the negative state is misery and suffering itself. It is a thick darkness. Therefore, it does not consider itself misery and darkness. Bringing spiritual light into this darkness exposes the true nature of the negative state as the most miserable, putrid and suffering state. Suddenly, the members of the negative state feel and experience all the misery and suffering of their state.”

“However, this exposure comes to the degree of proximity of the positive state to the negative state. The more remote the light of the positive state is from the negative state, the less or almost nonexistent is the awareness of the occurrence of that misery and suffering of the negative state. And vice versa: The closer the energy of the positive state gets to the negative state, the more exposure and experience of that misery and suffering.”

“The negative state is not judged by some kind of fancy courtroom procedure, as the literal sense of The Holy Bible depicts. Instead, it is judged by bringing the positive state into the proximity of the negative state.”

“The intense feeling of love and goodness and purity of the state of wisdom and truth, when they come in close contact with the members of the negative state, become totally

unbearable to them. They experience misery and suffering inherent in their nature. ***The presence of the positive state brings out of the negative state only that which is inherent in its true nature.***”

“But, being in externals, expecting everything to come from the outside, the members of the negative state assume that this suffering and misery comes from the outside, in this case, from The Lord Jesus Christ and His/Her angels and spirits. No other perception is available to them. It is the nature of the negative state to be this way.”

“So, you have here a classical case of projection. The positive state is blamed for all the miseries and sufferings of the negative state because it assumes that, if the positive state were not to exist, there would be no misery and suffering. While, in fact, the opposite is true. The positive state brings nothing but goodness and truth, love and wisdom and all positive thoughts, feelings and intentions.”

“However, the perception of these positive states as such cannot be acquired until the opposite nature of the negative state is exposed. The more love, goodness, wisdom and truth is released into the negative state, the more the suffering and misery of the negative state comes into the awareness and is felt. One cannot very well accept and experience these attributes of the positive state as long as one lives a life of misery and suffering. But, at the same time, one cannot give up this life unless one becomes aware and feels this suffering and misery. The process of getting rid of misery and suffering is to go through the intense experience of all emotions and states of misery and suffering. Otherwise, there is no need of getting rid of them. However, this experience can come about only by comparison to the positive state. So, the positive state is brought into the proximity to the negative state and all its misery and suffering becomes experientially obvious and apparent.”

“However, in this phase of exposure, it appears to the members of the negative state that their suffering and misery is caused by God and His/Her positive state.”

“Remember, please, the literal sense of The Holy Bible uses their language, the language of projections. There is no other language available in the negative state but the language of the negative state. For that reason, if they think that all misery and suffering is caused by God, then the words of their thinking are used to describe this process. To repeat again, the members of the negative state are not able to understand any other language but negative.”

“‘The false prophet,’ in this connotation, signifies all religions, spiritual doctrines, views, opinions and philosophies used for rationalization, persuasion, substantiation and proof of everything which comes out of the beast from the sea and from the beast of the land (as described above).”

“‘The Dragon,’ in this connotation, means the unification of all forces of the negative state in their totality — all the Hells, the entire Zone of Displacement and your planet and all available offensive and defensive means for combatting the positive state and particularly for blocking the proper understanding and acceptance of The New Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ.”

“From the above brief exposition, it is obvious that the Antichrist is not one particular person, a son of Satan or devil, as opposed to Jesus Christ as the Son of God.”

“This somewhat distorted implication stems from the above-quoted statement by Paul. From that statement it is assumed that Satan or Devil will enter some virgin on your planet and will impregnate her. From his seed, a male child will be born into whom the devil will vest all his powers and abilities. Of course, in order to deceive people, after the child grows up, he will

proclaim himself to be Jesus Christ. In order to prove that he is Jesus Christ, he will have exactly the same type of powers to perform miracles, including resurrecting people from death, just as Jesus Christ had done and even more.”

“Once everyone on your planet is convinced and accepts that the Antichrist is the true God, The Lord Jesus Christ, then and only then will the Antichrist reveal his true nature. The period, following this revelation of the Antichrist being the Antichrist, will be supposedly the period of great tribulation, foretold by The Lord Jesus Christ in Matthew 24:21, in Mark 13:19 and throughout the Apocalypse.”

“This is the commonly accepted story based on Paul’s assumption. The entire event of this story is supposedly to take place physically and literally on your planet.”

“This is one extreme in conceptualization of the Antichrist. There may be some grains of truth in this conceptualization but not the way it is assumed.”

“The other extreme is in a totally different understanding of the events foretold by The Lord Jesus Christ. The minority of people, particularly the followers of Swedenborg’s teachings in the way they understand and interpret what was revealed through Swedenborg, assumed that none of these events will happen on your planet in a physical sense. There are two aspects to this understanding derived from Swedenborg’s writings. One places the fulfillment of these events into the intermediate world (the world of spirits). It assumes that whatever is described in The Revelation of Jesus Christ happens not in this dimension but in the world of spirits (the intermediate world). Actually, according to interpretation of Swedenborg’s followers, these events already happened and the case is closed.”

“The other aspect of this understanding is that all these events are only a symbolic depiction of spiritual combats, happening solely on the level of the human mind without any outward manifestation in the form of actual events taking place. In other words, the entire issue of the positive and the negative state is the issue of the internal spiritual and mental battle between forces of good and evil. All else is superfluous.”

“These two aspects are totally correct in their claim except that they stop right there without going one step further. It is true that all spiritual issues are resolved on the level of the intermediate world and spiritual and mental level of the human sentient mind. What this second approach is neglecting is the realization of the fact that, in the normal, natural and spiritual condition, all ideas first occur in the most within; after their occurrence they proceed into their mental state (awareness of ideas, thinking, willing, feeling and understanding of those ideas) and then they become a life of the externals in the form of behaviors, attitudes, relationships and various external events. Now, this is the normal, healthy and proper way of all things in the positive state.”

“However, there is nothing normal about the negative state. First of all, to illustrate this point, the negative state could have never occurred in the most within, which is the spiritual state of love and wisdom. It could not have been initiated in the intermediate state either because it is a state of good and truth. Therefore, it could have been initiated only in the most outward degree of the external world — planet Earth — and from there, spread throughout the entire Zone of Displacement and into the intermediate and spiritual world (to a certain extent).”

“Thus, as you see, we have here an opposite order: From without to within. This is the upside-down position characteristic of the negative state. The negative state occurred in the most without, proceeded to the interior level, was registered in the most within level and became a false most within of the human mind. Because of this arrangement, the negative

state cannot be entirely eliminated unless it also is eliminated in the most without. After all, the most without is its stronghold.”

“It is true that the elimination of the negative state begins from the within and proceeds to without. Elimination of the negative state is a positive event. By the very nature of this positiveness, the procedure must be from within to without. Otherwise, it would be negative. You cannot eliminate the negative state by the negative means of the upside-down position. Therefore, The Lord Jesus Christ began His/ Her mission with the elimination of the negative state from the positive state.”

“As you remember from the book Major Ideas of The New Revelation, at the time of The First Coming of Jesus Christ the pseudo-creators had free access to the positive state. They were penetrating the first outpost of the Heavens, which corresponds to the most within Spiritual Mind, to its third degree, of the entire Creation and its multiverse. Thus, in the first step of this elimination, the negative state’s presence in the Heavens and, thus, in the most within Spiritual Mind, was removed permanently, shortly after the crucifixion of The Lord Jesus Christ. The process of this particular elimination was completed at the time of the ending of His/Her First Coming.”

“Now, you have to remember that, as the negative state is being eliminated from one area or state, it is pushed back into the next area or state. The forces of the negative state began to concentrate more and more and became seemingly more and more powerful.”

“So, after all outposts of the negative state were abolished in the Heavens or the spiritual world or The Spiritual Mind of Creation, (they all have significance), they were pushed back and established themselves in an unimaginable force in the intermediate world or the world of spirits or the interior mind of Creation.”

“Here, the negative state established a very intricate and complex system of societies, governments, religions, cults and philosophies of the most negatively diverse nature, and proceeded with their spiritual war against the positive state.”

“Now, this war is always led by weapons, tools and means of each level where that war occurs. Thus, whereas in the spiritual world of Heavens, it was waged by purely spiritual means incomprehensible to you, in the intermediate world, it was led by the mental or soul or mind means. Even these means are difficult for you to comprehend, although some obscure understanding of their nature can enter your conscious perception. In your earthly time, it took almost two thousand years after the resurrection of The Lord Jesus Christ before the elimination of the negative state from the intermediate world could and did begin.”

“As you remember, the process of elimination of the negative state in that world had begun at the time of Swedenborg, approximately 250 years ago. Swedenborg witnessed that process and described it in his writings. Now, his followers, and to a certain extent Swedenborg himself (although briefly), assumed that the case was closed at his time and, therefore, whatever was foretold in the Apocalypse and in Matthew, Chapter 24, was fully and completely fulfilled.”

“This was an erroneous conclusion. As a matter of fact, what Swedenborg witnessed at that time was only the beginning of elimination of the negative state in the intermediate world. The process of this elimination was not completed until recently (at the time of transmission of Messages From Within).”

“Once this was accomplished, and the entire intermediate world was freed, cleansed and

purified from the poison of the negative state, the forces of the negative state were pushed back entirely into their domain and to planet Zero. Thus, the battle was transferred into the external world, or external mind and into the Zone of Displacement. Of course, this battle has to be waged by means of the external world which are obvious and comprehensible to everyone. It will be in the open. Thus, the members of the negative state were permanently expelled from all regions of the positive state and the intermediate world. At this time, the only point of contact the negative state has with the positive state is your planet Zero. Planet Zero becomes now the most crucial and vital place for the negative state's survival. It is on your planet that the final and decisive spiritual battle, by the corresponding external means, will take place."

"Now, this position of planet Zero was overlooked by the followers of Swedenborg in their preoccupation with the spiritual meaning. However, the importance of its position did not elude the literal interpreters of The Holy Bible, as they interpret the concept of Antichrist."

"Again, it is repeated here — this is very important to realize! — the negative state was activated first on your planet. Because of this crucial fact, the negative state can be abolished completely only on your planet. After all, it was this planet on which the pseudo-creators lived, and from which they removed themselves to establish their residence in the Hells, after they fabricated these Hells. It was on this planet that The First Coming of The Lord Jesus Christ took place. It will be, once again, this planet on which the final phase of The Second Coming of The Lord Jesus Christ will be finished or completed, culminating in a total permanent and eternal abolishment of the negative state."

"Because of this situation, planet Zero now became the most important outpost for all atrocities and abominations of the negative state to be manifested in all their forms and expressions. But it is also this planet that The Lord Jesus Christ has in mind the most."

"Once the abolishment of the human era and its negative state in the intermediate world was accomplished, preparations could be and are being made to invade the last outpost of the negative state for the purpose of the entire elimination of the negative state everywhere."

"The most important and crucial step of this preparation was the completion of the fusion of the flesh — physical body of Jesus Christ — into the totality of The Most High, which resulted in an appearance of an entirely New Absolute Hybrid — The Lord Jesus Christ. As mentioned previously, no further steps in this respect could have been taken until this process was completed."

"You are facing here the greatest mystery of all. The final encounter of The Lord Jesus Christ must be with the pseudo-creators themselves. This is an entirely new revelation regarding this matter. It is also a personal, private and intimate matter between The Lord Jesus Christ and the pseudo-creators. However, this encounter could not take place until the physical body of Jesus Christ was fused into and hybridized with the totality of The Most High's Nature and The Most High became the fullness of The Lord Jesus Christ. Now there is a means by which that encounter can be realized."

"In the process of this hybridization and fusion, the pseudo-creators have been kept locked up in total isolation from the rest of Creation and the Zone of Displacement so as to not interfere with this process and to give an opportunity to the negative state to exist by choice and not by an imposed necessity. The pseudo-creators, that is, have the means to impose the negative state on people against their free choice and will. Because this was not permissible any longer (after Jesus Christ's presence on planet Zero), they had to be locked up."

“However, remember please, the pseudo-creators were the activators of the negative state. Because of that position, the negative state cannot be abolished without them personally and directly participating in that process.”

“Thus, at one point in time, when everything is prepared for that time and all measures of the negative state are fulfilled, the pseudocreators will be released once more and for the last time. Their release will be confined to the Zone of Displacement and particularly to the planet Zero — your planet — where they started, and where they have to be finished and finally defeated. The coming back of the pseudo-creators is, in actuality, what is meant by the concept of Antichrist or the beast from the sea.”

“In preparation for their return, some specially endowed by and appointed agents of The Lord Jesus Christ were recently sent on a special mission to the Hells of the pseudo-creators to perform secret work there. In the process of that mission, certain limitations and restrictions were put on the pseudo-creators, in the sense of making them unable to enter any regions of the true Creation any longer and unable to impose upon people anything contrary to their free will and choice, even within their domain. The knowledge of time travel was taken from them by The Lord Jesus Christ long ago. However, otherwise, they will be able to appear in their full ‘power’ and ‘glory’ and to present themselves to their own fabrication — humankind on your planet and to all creatures of the Hells and other regions of the Zone of Displacement whom they produced before their lockup.”

“The purpose of allowing the pseudo-creators’ return is in the fact that it is impossible to fully expose the total nature of the negative state without direct participation of those who activated it and put it in dominance. Their future participation in this act is based on an entirely different condition.”

“As you remember, in the past, when the pseudo-creators were in full charge of the Zone of Displacement, they ruled by force and imposition, giving no choices to their fabrications. After all, the pseudo-creators fabricated their creatures in such a manner as to give them no other desire but to be negative. If I have no interest in anything else, I have no choice but to be the way I was set up to be. The only choice in any initial stage of development and fabrication was the choice to be or not to be. But in the moment the choice is made for being, it automatically presupposes to be only in one certain way — to be negative. No other motivation exists.”

“Another condition of these creatures, at that time, was their deprivation of any knowledge of their true origin, assuming that they either came into their being and existence by some kind of chance through the negatively natural causes or by the will of God, being a creation of God or gods.”

“If you assume this to be true, then there is no need to change your negative way. First of all, you do not know or even consider the fact that your way is an evil, negative way. And secondly, if you are the creation of God, it is obvious that God created you the way you are, and therefore, you are exactly the way you are supposed to be.”

“On the other hand, if you came here by some kind of chance, without any creative effort on someone’s part, then it does not make any difference what kind of a person you are. Who cares!”

“Now, this kind of attitude was genetically encoded in most creatures fabricated by the pseudo-creators.”

“With humans on your planet, they went even further. In accordance with their plan, humans were never to learn who their fabricators were. Instead, they were to assume to be either the creation of God, the nature of whom was carefully defined by the pseudo-creators in distorted and falsified terms, or the evolution from apes, so conveniently fabricated by them for that purpose and put in proximity to cave humans.”

“Thus, no one on your planet knows for sure how sentient life originated there. However, be advised that the full exposure and subsequent elimination of the negative state is impossible without having such knowledge. And not only that, but the full learning about the true nature of the negative state is impossible until all creatures and humans fabricated by the pseudo-creators choose the pseudocreators by their free will and choice. Such a choice cannot be made as long as they are locked up and no one knows, or only very few people know, that the pseudo-creators even exist.”

“The point here is to realize, as already mentioned before, that the negative state cannot be eliminated until it fully wins, on a temporary basis, on your planet. Only then can the full learning about its true nature be acquired and placed forever in the Universality-Of-It-All for eternal learning and illustration of what never to choose.”

“The reason why it has to happen physically on your planet is obvious: The position of your planet is the only contact point of the positive and negative state, respectively. However, your planet represents the fullness of concretization and actualization of the most external natural degree of the Zone of Displacement. Whatever happens in the positive or negative sense can have its consequences and outcomes only in the degree where tangibility, concretization and exemplification by the external events is the very nature of that degree.”

“From the position of the negative state of the Hells and other regions of the Zone of Displacement, no such fullness is feasible because they lack this negatively natural degree. They are in a different state, condition and degree. Such is the arrangement of Creation and the Zone of Displacement.”

“Remember, please, it was emphasized before that the true learning about anything can occur only from the consequences, outcomes and results of any occurring idea but not from the idea itself.”

“Unless an idea proceeds toward its becoming or actualization and realization in the form of its consequences, outcomes and results, it remains only an empty notion without any tangibility. An empty notion does not provide any learning or base for growth. This is the reason why the negative state must fully win on your planet first before it can be permanently abolished.”

“As long as on your planet there is a presence of some agents of the positive state and some grains of truth scattered throughout various teachings, the full exposure of the true ugly nature of the negative state cannot take place. Their presence makes it impossible for this to happen. It is blocked by their presence.”

“For that reason, the pseudo-creators will be released and will take over your planet for a very brief period of time, sufficiently brief to wipe out and totally remove any grains of truth and good still present on your planet and put an end to the presence of the agents of the positive state there.”

“As you remember, this situation was already foretold in Prophet Daniel, Chapter 7, verse 25

and in The Revelation of Jesus Christ, Chapter 13, verse 7.”

“‘He shall speak pompous words against the Most High, shall persecute the saints of the Most High, and shall intend to change times and law. Then the saints shall be given into his hand for a time and times and half time.’ (Daniel 7:25).”

“‘And it was granted to him to make war with the saints and to overcome them. And authority was given him over every tribe, tongue, and nation.’ (Revelation 13:7).”

“The entire process and outcome of the pseudo-creators’ return is described in the internal sense of Chapter 13 of The Revelation of Jesus Christ in The Holy Bible. That the negative state will fully win for a brief period of time is obvious from the words of Jesus Christ recorded in Matthew 24, verse 21 and in Mark 13, verse 19. There you can read,”

“‘For then there will be great tribulation, such as has not been since the beginning of the world until this time, no, nor ever shall be.’ (Matthew 24:21).”

“‘For in those days there will be tribulation, such as has not been from the beginning of creation which God created until this time, nor ever shall be.’ (Mark 13:19).”

“‘For in those days’ indicates return of the pseudo-creators. ‘There will be tribulation’ signifies complete victory of the negative state.”

“The rest of the verse indicates that such a situation has never existed since God created His/Her Creation and never will be again.”

“Once the concrete illustration of life in the fullness of the negative state takes place, and everyone in Creation has a chance to observe, to learn and to record for eternity the facts of life without the presence of anything positive in the most concrete natural degree, in the only place where it can have any sense at all, such a situation will never need to occur again to eternity.”

“As mentioned above, some humans (followers of Swedenborg’s teachings) believe that all these events can take place only in the world of spirits and that your planet will be spared this dire fate. However, they disregarded the fact that the world of spirits is the intermediate world. That world is not the fullness of all degrees as your planet is. Otherwise, it would not be called the intermediate world.”

“It is necessary to repeat again and again that a full exposure of the negative state and the full proper learning about life without anything positive can happen only in the state of the ultimate fullness and outcomes. This state is the most outward degree of the natural world and the Zone of Displacement which is planet Zero. As you remember, exactly for this purpose, planet Zero was put in a special and peculiar zone on the edge of the Zone of Displacement and in a close proximity to the positive state of Creation, in its most outward degree.”

“Now, let us look briefly on the internal sense of Chapter 13 in The Revelation of Jesus Christ in The Holy Bible.”

“As you remember from previous statements, the internal sense, hidden in the literal statements of The Revelation and other places in The Holy Bible, has multiple meanings accommodated to all times, situations and conditions.”

“Thus, Chapter 13 has also the same structure. For that reason, the inner sense of this Chapter will have different interpretations, relevant to each particular time and situation. One such interpretation was transmitted through Swedenborg. His interpretation is proper and valid as applied to the events that happened at his time in the intermediate world. The present interpretation has relevance to this time and to planet Zero.”

“First verse: ‘And I saw a beast rising up out of the sea, having seven heads and ten horns, and on his horns ten crowns, and on his heads a blasphemous name.’”

“This verse internally describes the nature of the pseudo-creators.”

“‘A beast rising up out of the sea’ signifies the return of the pseudocreators. ‘A beast’ here means the pseudo-creators. ‘Out of the sea’ signifies the lowest, deepest Hell where they were locked up by The Lord Jesus Christ. ‘Having seven heads’ means all accumulated knowledge of all times and all types in being and existence. ‘Ten horns’ denotes all accumulated power of utilizing that knowledge to produce life forms and to manipulate correspondences. ‘And on his horns ten crowns’ signifies the summary of all falsified truths. ‘And on his heads a blasphemous name’ denotes that all that knowledge and power was used for activation of the negative state.”

“Verse 2: ‘Now the beast which I saw was like a leopard, his feet were like the feet of a bear, and his mouth like the mouth of a lion. And the dragon gave him his power, his throne, and great authority.’”

“‘Now the beast which I saw was like a leopard’ signifies appropriation by the pseudo-creators’ affection for violence against the power of The Most High. ‘His feet were like the feet of a bear’ denotes an affection for disregard of anything positive and good. ‘And his mouth like the mouth of a lion’ means appropriation to themselves the appearance of The Lord Jesus Christ.”

“‘And the dragon gave him his power, his throne, and great authority’ denotes that all other regions of the Hells, the rest of the Zone of Displacement, planet Zero and all religions, spiritual trends, philosophies, cults, etc. (dragon), submit themselves fully to the pseudocreators, giving them all available means they acquired and possessed since the time of the pseudo-creators’ lockup.”

“Verse 3: ‘I saw one of his heads as if it had been mortally wounded, and his deadly wound was healed. And all the world marveled and followed the beast.’”

“‘I saw one of his heads as if it had been mortally wounded’ reflects the fact of the pseudo-creators’ lockup and isolation and loss of knowledge of time travel and some other important knowledge. ‘Mortally wounded’ means an assumption of everyone in Creation that this is a permanent state and that the pseudo-creators will never be released again.”

“‘And his deadly wound was healed’ signifies that it is not so but that they will have another important role to play in the life of the negative state. ‘And all the world marveled and

followed the beast' signifies unconditional acceptance of the pseudo-creators as uncontested rulers."

"Verse 4: 'So they worshiped the dragon who gave authority to the beast; and they worshiped the beast, saying, "Who is like the beast? Who is able to make war with him?"'"

"So they worshiped the dragon' signifies acceptance of the negative state of evils and falsities as the only authority. 'Who gave authority to the beast' means recognition of the negative state that the pseudocreators are the actual activators of the negative state and fabricators of humans and all creatures of the Hells and other regions of the Zone of Displacement."

"And they worshiped the beast, saying, "Who is like the beast? Who is able to make war with him?"" denotes recognition of where the true source of the negative state is rooted and that nothing in and of the negative state can prevail over the pseudo-creators because they are the embodiment of the negative state, being its activators and fathers."

"Verse 5: 'And he was given a mouth speaking great things and blasphemies, and he was given authority to continue for forty-two months.'"

"And he was given a mouth speaking great things and blasphemies' signifies that the pseudo-creators will come with great words of love and wisdom, peace and unification, and positiveness and goodness. But, because those words are used for deceptive purposes, they are of pure evils, falsities, violence, disunion and destruction."

"And he was given authority to continue for forty-two months' means to prevail over the forces of the positive state until full illustration of life without any presence of anything positive is accomplished. 'Forty-two months' does not mean physical time elements. 'Four,' in this connotation, means full measure. 'Two' in this connotation signifies evils and falsities. Thus, 'forty-two' means manifestation of full measure of everything evil and false."

"Verse 6: 'Then he opened his mouth in blasphemy against God, to blaspheme His name, His tabernacle, and those who dwell in heaven.'"

"Then he opened his mouth in blasphemy against God' signifies denial that there is any other Creator but the pseudo-creators. 'To blaspheme His name' signifies denial of the true Nature of God which is The Lord Jesus Christ. **THE NAME OF GOD IS THE LORD JESUS CHRIST.** To deny this fact means blasphemy. 'His tabernacle' denotes denial of all true spiritual principles and their unification in The Lord Jesus Christ. 'And those who dwell in heaven' means denial of existence of the entire positive state. By blasphemy of these things means that the pseudo-creators will proclaim that there is no other reality but the negative state, being the only positive state. All else is nonexistent. And because they are the creators of the negative state, which is presented as the positive state, there is no other God and Creator but them. This is the true meaning of the word 'blasphemy' in connotation of this text."

"Verse 7: 'And it was granted to him to make war with the saints and to overcome them. And authority was given him over every tribe, tongue, and nation.'"

“‘And it was granted to him to make war with the saints and to overcome them’ signifies a successful removal of all agents of the positive state from the entire Zone of Displacement and planet Zero and of any grains of truth and good contained in various teachings of humans.”

“‘And authority was given him over every tribe, tongue, and nation’ means complete victory of the negative state in the Zone of Displacement and on planet Zero without any exception or exclusion.”

“Verse 8: ‘And all who dwell on the earth will worship him, whose names have not been written in the Book of Life of the Lamb slain from the foundation of the world.’”

“‘And all who dwell on the earth will worship him’ signifies all those who are in the externals of spirituality and in love with the external possessions and values. ‘Whose names have not been written in the Book of Life of the Lamb’ denotes all creatures in the Zone of Displacement and all humans who were originally fabricated by the pseudo-creators and who refuse to acknowledge The true Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ (Lamb).”

“‘Slain from the foundation of the world’ signifies the continuous effort of everyone in the negative state to reject the fact that The Most High made His/Her Divine Human and His/Her Human Divine, becoming The Lord Jesus Christ. To reject these facts means slaying this truth with one’s heart and mind (‘foundation of the world’).”

“Verse 9: ‘If anyone has an ear, let him hear’”

“‘If anyone has an ear, let him hear’ signifies that only those who keep their minds and hearts open to the truth are able to perceive the reality of these facts.”

“Verse 10: ‘He who leads into captivity shall go into captivity; he who kills with the sword must be killed with the sword. Here is the patience and the faith of the saints.’”

“‘He who leads into captivity shall go into captivity’ denotes the necessity to bear the consequences of activation and acceptance of the negative state.”

“‘He who kills with the sword must be killed with the sword’ signifies the necessity to learn the consequences of proclamation that the negative state is the only reality in being and existence. To proclaim this means to kill spirituality. Acceptance of this means spiritual death.”

“‘Here is the patience and the faith of the saints’ signifies that the positive state tolerates all these atrocities and abominations of the negative state for the sake of important spiritual learning, knowing about the promise made by The Lord Jesus Christ to the entire Creation and all else that the negative state, after this learning takes place, will be permanently and eternally eliminated and abolished.”

“Verse 11: ‘Then I saw another beast coming up out of the earth, and he had two horns like a lamb and spoke like a dragon.’”

“‘Then I saw another beast coming up out of the earth’ signifies formation of a new religious belief system derived from the pseudo-interior mind (earth here signifies pseudo-interior

mind). ‘And he had two horns like a lamb’ denotes combination and unification of all evils and falsities in the same manner the good and truth are combined and unified in The Lord Jesus Christ (Lamb).”

“‘And spoke like a dragon’ means that this new religion will derive from all available distortions and falsities as contained in all human religions, sects, cults, occults and various pseudo-spiritual trends (‘dragon’).”

“Verse 12: ‘And he exercises all the authority of the first beast in his presence, and causes the earth and those who dwell in it to worship the first beast, whose deadly wound was healed.’”

“‘And he exercises all the authority of the first beast in his presence’ reflects the relationship between this religion and the pseudo-creators. The rise of this religion is motivated solely by the pseudo-creators’ presence.”

“‘And causes the earth and those who dwell in it to worship the first beast, whose deadly wound was healed’ signifies that this new religion will proclaim the pseudo-creators as the only spiritual power and God in the multiverse who must be recognized and worshiped because they were able to break out of the locks put on them by The Lord Jesus Christ and to come out, proving that they are more powerful than The Lord Jesus Christ, who in their eyes is an imposter and fake.”

“The release and return of the pseudo-creators will be perceived as if the pseudo-creators were able to break out on their own, outsmarting all blocks put on them by the positive state. They will not recognize that it was by permission of The Lord Jesus Christ. This is the reason why ‘all the world marveled and followed the beast (verse 3).’”

“Verse 13: ‘He performs great signs, so that he even makes fire come down from heaven on the earth in the sight of men.’”

“‘He performs great signs’ signifies convincing proof of their mind powers and performance of miracles. ‘He even makes fire come down from heaven on the earth in the sight of men’ denotes that all this is done with great and intense affections, with the words of love, good and peace, knowing what people expect and what is pleasing to them.”

“Verse 14: ‘And he deceives those who dwell on the earth by those signs which he was granted to do in the sight of the beast, telling those who dwell on the earth to make an image to the beast who was wounded by the sword and lived.’”

“‘And he deceives those who dwell on the earth by those signs’ signifies that people who place all their values in the externals and outward appearances without any consideration of internal spiritual values will readily accept those words and miracles. ‘He was granted to do so in the sight of the beast’ means that this is done with full authorization of the pseudo-creators.”

“‘Telling those who dwell on the earth to make an image to the beast who was wounded by the sword and lived’ signifies externalization of the externals.”

“Those who are in the external form of worship need all kinds of external symbols, depictions

and pictures to the objects of their worship, in this case, to the pseudo-creators.“

“Verse 15: ‘He was granted power to give breath to the image of the beast, that the image of the beast should both speak and cause as many as would not worship the image of the beast to be killed.’”

“This verse describes the fact that all modern technology and scientific accomplishments will be used for control of people’s mind, behavior and actions so that nothing of the positive state remains in them.”

“Verses 16 & 17: ‘And he causes all, both small and great, rich and poor, free and slave, to receive a mark on their right hand or on their foreheads, and that no one may buy or sell except one who has the mark or the name of the beast, or the number of his name.’”

“These two verses describe a new form of genetic engineering revived by the pseudo-creators and given to the scientists for the purpose of altering the human brain and mentality in such a manner so as it does not contain any inclination toward, or even memories of, the positive state. If any such inclination and memories are found, a sensory deprivation will be imposed on such humans or, if they refuse to obey, they will be eliminated.”

“Verse 18: ‘Here is wisdom. Let him who has understanding calculate the number of the beast, for it is the number of a man: His number is 666.’”

“‘Here is wisdom’ signifies penetration of the mystery of the negative state and its full exposure. ‘Let him who has understanding calculate the number of the beast’ means that the proper understanding of the negative state can be derived only from the nature of the pseudocreators who originated it. ‘For it is the number of a man’ signifies that the negative state originated in the most external natural degree by the people on planet Earth. ‘His number is 666’ means that the duration of the negative state is limited to only one cycle of time in Creation and is confined within the Zone of Displacement and planet Zero. ‘666’ means a shortened cycle of time in which the negative state was being activated for the purpose of spiritual learning.”

“All other cycles of time have a code ‘777.’ ‘777’ means fullness of the positive state but ‘666’ means lack of this fullness which gives an opportunity for the negative state to come to its fruition. In actuality, ‘666’ means fullness of the negative state which is outside of the positive state. Because planet Zero has the natural correspondence of this most outside of the positive state, the negative state had to be originated on your planet. However, this is also the reason why it has to be finished also on your planet. This is the way of the hierarchy of spiritual organization of Creation. This hierarchy cannot be violated.”

“Now, the means by which the pseudo-creators will be released and reappear on your planet, and in what form and condition, cannot be revealed at this time. But it will be a very dramatic and obvious appearance by all means. Do not be surprised if they appear in space ships, proclaiming themselves to be the saviors of humankind which will be and already is on the verge of total doom and self-destruction.”

“As you know, many rumors exist on your planet regarding the appearance of space ships and alien life forms which will rush to help your planet. There are many ‘channelers’ who

channel various messages from these aliens and ancient people. Do not be taken in by any of them. In fact, no matter how positive and good and loving and wise they sound, none of them are from the positive state.”

“These phenomena all appear in preparation of the way for return of the pseudo-creators. Of course, it will be with ‘pomp and circumstance,’ to use your words.”

“There will be a certain recognition of and affinity to the pseudocreators by all creatures and humans, with an exception of very few agents of the positive state remaining on your planet for finishing off some business for The Lord Jesus Christ and then being recalled. This recognition and affinity will surface from the deeply buried memories in the recesses of the pseudo-mind, recognizing their own ‘creators-parents.’”

“You have to understand again and again that the pseudo-creators will appear as saviors at first. They will unify your planet into one nation. They will eliminate all wars, famines, diseases, and external suffering and misery. They will institute space travel throughout the Zone of Displacement. And they will do many other ‘positive’ things of similar nature.”

“Once they will have the entirety of humankind and the Zone of Displacement firmly in their hands, then and only then will they reveal their true intentions in such evil proportions that there are no words in your vocabulary or imagination that can describe them.”

“At that point they will resume their genetic work, attempting to develop a superhuman or an army of superhumans with the highest technological accomplishments of unimaginable proportions. They will succeed in producing a huge army of such superhumans with the most evil and negative intent and use this army to invade the forces of the positive state through the ninth dimension, through certain time and space warps, and all kinds of correspondential means. ‘The healing of the mortal wound’ means also restoration of their ability to travel through time and space but not into the past. The travel into the past will not be restored to them.”

“Once they complete this preparation and are ready to undertake this invasion, The Divine Providence of The Lord Jesus Christ will arrange a very slight, undetectable by any means, error in their calculation for the entrance into the ninth dimension. As the pseudo-creators with their army of superhumans attempt to transit into the ninth dimension and reappear in the positive state of Creation, by that error they will be sidetracked into limbo — a place and state outside of the twelfth dimensional structure of the fabric of time and space. And while in that limbo, a judgment will be pronounced on them.”

“Being in the state of limbo means total loss of all power and ability that the pseudo-creators have possessed. But it also means a totally neutral state, outside of any influence from the positive or the negative state, respectively. It also means a complete opening of all memories about the voluntary status of all activators of the negative state and all illustrations of the consequences, outcomes and results of the negative state. Suddenly, everyone will recognize the true reality of the origin of the negative state and the reason why it was permitted to rule this cycle of time.”

“With such an important realization, everyone in the negative state will be presented with a new choice — to convert to the positive state, undergoing the process of spiritual transformation in the New School or, should anyone choose not to convert, the removal of life energy from their minds and becoming a part of limbo-nothingness, becoming nothing.”

“By this act, the negative state will be permanently and eternally abolished and all learning

about its nature will be completed. Thus, the promise of The Lord Jesus Christ, given at the time of creation of the foundation of all being and existence, will be fulfilled. By this act, the last phase of The Second Coming of The Lord Jesus Christ will be completed and finished. His/Her words 'It is done!' (Revelation 21:6) will become reality."

"Now, **this is one of many possible scenarios of how all this will be accomplished. However, which alternative will be used depends on many complex factors that cannot be revealed for security reasons until all this takes place.**"

"In conclusion of this Chapter, let some additional reasons for the return of the pseudo-creators be revealed:"

(1)

"There is a certain spiritual principle in being and existence which regulates this course of events. This principle states:"

"Once something is initiated in one place, state and condition, it proceeds toward its manifestation at all levels of awareness in being and existence until it completes a full loop, ending at the same place, state and condition where it was initiated."

"As you know, the multiverse can be conceptualized as a round one. Everything in it goes in circular loops."

"The negative state was triggered by the pseudo-creators on planet Earth-Zero. Therefore, it must also end on planet Zero with return of the pseudo-creators. It is inconceivable to fully expose the ugly face of the negative state and learn its true nature without the full open participation of those who triggered it. Their former participation was from an entirely different position — as a triggering factor but not as an illustrative factor. Now the pseudo-creators have to end the negative state from the position of illustration. No one knows, or even remotely guesses, what life in the negative state is like with the open physical presence of those who activated it."

"As you know, after the activation of the negative state, the pseudocreators withdrew from planet Zero and established themselves in the Hells which they formed and founded. Thus, they had never participated directly in the illustrative phase of its activation. Their participation was indirect through their agents, creatures, demons, devils and Satans whom they fabricated for that purpose. In fact, the pseudo-creators' act of the activation of the negative state can be considered their first coming."

"Notice, please, the parallel that exists here between The First Coming of Jesus Christ and The First Coming of the pseudo-creators and The Second Coming of The Lord Jesus Christ and The Second Coming of the pseudo-creators. One precedes the other. Thus, first, there was a first coming of the pseudo-creators when they activated the negative state and established themselves in the spiritual world. It ended with the beginning of The First Coming of Jesus Christ who put the end to their first coming by locking them up and separating them from the rest of Creation and the Zone of Displacement."

"The First Coming of Jesus Christ began with the acquiring of the physical form, built from genetic material of the pseudo-creators and the Zone of Displacement, and ended with a total fusion and hybridization of that body with the totality of the Nature of The Most High; at which point, The Most High truly became The Lord Jesus Christ. By that act, The Second Coming of The Lord Jesus Christ was put into motion."

“In the interim, the consequences, outcomes and results of The First Coming of the pseudo-creators and The First Coming of Jesus Christ have been manifested, illustrated, realized and actualized.”

“Bear in mind the important fact that both The First Coming of the pseudo-creators and The First Coming of Jesus Christ happened on the planet Zero in a somewhat reversed direction. The negative state is triggered on planet Earth in the most extreme degree of the natural universe of Creation and spreads inward toward the spiritual degree of Creation. The appearance of the pseudo-creators in the spiritual world marks, in actuality, their first coming.”

“On the other hand, The First Coming of Jesus Christ proceeded from within to without: A divine element was separated from The Absolute External Mind of The Most High, fused with the elements of Mary and Joseph and put into Mary’s womb, giving a physical birth to a special hybrid. Jesus Christ’s appearance on planet Zero started His/ Her First Coming.”

“As the negative state ended in the domain of the positive state by the establishment of the pseudo-creators’ outposts in the Heavens, so the positive state in the form of Jesus Christ ended in the domain of the negative state in the place where the fullness of its expression and impression can be experienced — planet Zero, your planet.”

“Because of the nature of the above-formulated spiritual principle, The Second Coming of The Lord Jesus Christ cannot happen until The Second Coming of the pseudo-creators is completed.”

“In this respect, Paul’s assumption, formulated in the Second Epistle to The Thessalonians, Chapter 2, verse 3, quote: ‘Let no one deceive you by any means; for that Day will not come unless the falling away comes first, and the man of sin is revealed, the son of perdition...’ is a correct one.”

“Of course, Paul, like anyone else, had no notion of the pseudo-creators’ existence or who ‘the man of sin’ or ‘the son of perdition’ was. As everyone else, Paul assumed him to be one person, the son of Devil, who is another person; as Jesus Christ, one person, was the Son of God who is another person. In other words, this is a person that was named by Christians an Antichrist.”

“Now, The Second Coming of the pseudo-creators and The Second Coming of The Lord Jesus Christ again will happen in a reversed direction. This time it is a double reversion.”

“While in The First Coming the pseudo-creators started in the most external degree and ended in the spiritual world, in The Second Coming they will start in their own pseudo-spiritual world from the lowest degree (their most within) and end on the planet Zero, encompassing all levels, degrees and regions of the Zone of Displacement from their own most within (the lowest), to their most without — the natural degree of the Zone of Displacement — planet Zero.”

“On the other hand, The Second Coming of The Lord Jesus Christ begins not on planet Zero, as The First Coming was, but in the most within of Creation, in the spiritual world, from where it proceeds in steps through all levels, degrees and regions of Creation and ends on the planet Zero in flesh, in the physical body of The Lord Jesus Christ. By these procedures, all levels of Creation and the Zone of Displacement are able to fully partake in this act.”

“The statement that The Second Coming of The Lord Jesus Christ will end on your planet in

flesh, in the physical body, exactly the way it was at the time of Jesus Christ's departure from your planet, comes as a great surprise to you, Peter, and to all your children with whom you will share this revelation."

"As you know, Swedenborg and you assumed that The Second Coming of The Lord Jesus Christ is a purely spiritual event having no physical manifestation, as The First Coming was purely a physical event."

"Swedenborg's and your problem, Peter, was that you interpreted The Second Coming of The Lord Jesus Christ from the position of its initial phase. In that phase, it is really a purely spiritual event without any physical or literal manifestation. This event you perceived in finalistic terms, thinking that there is only one phase of The Second Coming. This is a limited, linear thinking. It is in violation of the above formulated spiritual principle: whatever begins in one step, place, condition, must also end there. Otherwise it will have no sense and no meaning. It would be an unfinished business."

"Of course, the literal description of The Second Coming of The Lord Jesus Christ in The Holy Bible has no real meaning. The symbolism used in its description represents the spiritual state of affairs of the human mind at the time of The Second Coming."

"The importance of these events is immense and cannot be calculated by any measures."

"The Second Coming of the pseudo-creators makes it possible for the negative state to be put into position of its full exposure through the process of its victory on planet Zero. Thus, it has to end on planet Zero."

"The Second Coming of The Lord Jesus Christ makes it possible for the negative state to be fully eliminated and abolished, and therefore, it must end on planet Zero. There is no other way."

(2)

"The full exposure of the negative state and the complete understanding of its true nature is not possible without knowing, seeing and experiencing its source. From the beginning of the second history of your planet, which started with the appearance of cavemen (cavehuman), humankind has been plagued with torturous uncertainty of why the negative state exists, what its purpose is and how it originated."

"The numerous attempts to answer these questions never even scratched the surface of the truth about their issues. It was not until the book Fundamentals of Human Spirituality was written that these questions were begun to be answered."

"But the full, exhaustive and completely satisfactory answers to these questions cannot be given until the true source of the negative state directly participates in what it unleashed on this cycle of time."

"Due to the fact that planet Zero is designated for such a concrete, full and exhaustive answer, that source — the pseudo-creators — must be permitted to return so that everyone can see and learn first hand how and why all these things happened. Only the pseudo-creators can give exhaustive answers to these questions."

"The answer from any other source, even if it were from The Lord Jesus Christ Himself/Herself directly, would be unsatisfactory because He/She or anyone else is not the originator or the source of the negative state. **Validation must be and is possible only**

from the true source itself. This is a spiritual-scientific principle of any assumption. Thus, a return of the pseudo-creators is a necessary condition for elimination of the negative state as a source of answering all those questions, so vital for the multiversal spiritual learning. Only the pseudo-creators have these answers in their fullest content.”

“That the pseudo-creators’ return has to be on your planet is an obvious fact, taking into consideration the position which your planet occupies in the hierarchy of the spiritual organization. No other place has the necessary resources for such a specific, concrete and experiential answering and learning.”

(3)

“The appropriate and valuable comparison of the fullness of the nature of the positive state to the fullness of the nature of the negative state can occur only from their respective sources and subsequent consequences, outcomes and results of both.”

“The source of the positive state is assumed to be God. The source of the negative state are assumed to be the devil and Satan. But, although everyone knows that the source of the positive state is God, no one exactly knows who the devil and Satan are. It is falsely assumed that there was some kind of archangel and his angels who decided to become God and were cast out of the heavens and fell into the outer darkness. The outer darkness, of course, is the Zone of Displacement. This spurious and rebellious archangel became the devil and Satan. Neither do people know the difference between the devil and Satan. In The Revelation of Jesus Christ, Chapter 12, verse 9 it is stated, ‘So the great dragon was cast out, that serpent of old, called the devil and Satan, who deceives the whole world.’”

“In this verse the dragon is called by both names the devil and Satan. He is also-called ‘that serpent of old.’ In the internal sense of this verse, the dragon signifies the entire negative state; the ‘serpent of old’ — the pseudo-creators; ‘the devil’ all evils of the negative state; and ‘Satan’ all falsities of the negative state.”

“In that verse the expulsion of the human era and all outposts of the negative state from the positive state and the intermediate world is described.”

“But, in actuality, no one knows what the true nature of ‘that serpent of old’ is; how he manifests himself; how he came about into his existence; how he became negative and evil, etc. His origin, as well as the origin of the negative state, was shrouded in great mystery.”

“On the other hand, in the negative state no one exactly knows who The Lord Jesus Christ is either. As described in Chapter Two of this book, there are at least seven possible surmises regarding His/Her nature. Most humans and creatures of the Hells assume that Jesus Christ is either the Son of God or an enlightened man or who did not exist at all but was invented by humans for self-deception and deception of others.”

“Most people also assume that the devil and Satan is a fallen angel, or original brother of Jesus Christ, as Mormons, for example, believe, who became furious when God preferred Jesus to him to become a savior. A savior from what? If there was no negative state, whom was it necessary to save?”

“So, the ‘brother’ of Jesus Christ, called Lucifer, got jealous and envious and rebelled against God — the Father. This is a foolish consideration full of contradictions. Feelings of jealousy and envy are negative feelings. They are of the negative state. If Lucifer experienced them, being the son of God, those feelings were coming from God. From where else would they come? After all, no negative state existed at that time. Because every feeling must have a

source, the only source of those feelings had to be God. Thus, in this foolish conceptualization, God is the activator of the negative state.”

“This foolish conclusion created nothing but more confusion. Thus, in fact, no one in the negative state has the right idea either of the nature of the positive state or the nature of the negative state.”

“Having no correct ideas about these vital issues, the participants in the negative state have no possibility of fully exposing the nature of the negative state. The full exposure is possible only from the position of having right ideas about its nature. Only the pseudo-creators have such ideas. Therefore, only they can illustrate and manifest the true full nature of the negative state. This is the purpose of their second coming.”

“Once this is illustrated, the last phase of The Second Coming of The Lord Jesus Christ can take place. In this phase the members of the negative state will be able to recognize for the first time who The Lord Jesus Christ is and what the full nature of the positive state is as compared to the negative state in its full victorious condition on your planet.”

“In such a comparison, the fullness of spiritual learning regarding the nature of the negative state, but also of the nature of the positive state, is founded.”

“Here is a great spiritual mystery. ***The members of the positive state cannot fully know and experience the nature of the positive state until the full nature of the negative state is exposed and the last phase of The Second Coming of The Lord Jesus Christ takes place on your planet.*** This can be accomplished only with the pseudo-creators on the scene.”

(4)

“In order to accomplish all of the steps described above, the process of the activation of the negative state has to be recapitulated. No one exactly knows how the negative state was actually concretely activated. The New Revelation gives you only the theoretical statements about this matter. It cannot give you a vivid, living illustration. This illustration is particularly necessary for the members of the negative state, and for their eventual salvation. However, many members of the positive state do not know it either. Their knowledge is only by recorded history in the Universality-Of-It-All, access to which has been closed until recently.”

“Only The Lord Jesus Christ and the pseudo-creators precisely know how the negative state was activated. But The Lord Jesus Christ, being absolutely positive, cannot illustrate that process by living examples on the members of the positive state. Therefore, the return of the pseudo-creators will take place, and they will be permitted to illustrate the process from A to Z, to use your figure of speech. What will happen here is that the pseudo-creators will resume their experimentations, during which they will be able to illustrate on living examples the process of the activation of the negative state.”

“Now everyone will have a concrete illustrative answer to the question of how the negative state was activated. Without having an answer to this question, the negative state cannot be deactivated and abolished. It would be still motivated to continue in its being and existence, until ‘how’ is answered.”

(5)

“The Lord Jesus Christ has personal, private and intimate reasons for encountering the pseudo-creators face to face, known only to Him/ Her. This reason cannot be revealed until this encounter takes place. In the first encounter, during which the pseudo-creators were

locked up, Jesus Christ still functioned from the position of relative separation from The Most High. One of the many mysterious reasons why The Most High needed the physical body of Jesus Christ was in foresight of the need for this final, more crucial encounter.”

“This last encounter will be from the position of unification, from The New Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ as unity of all elements, including the elements taken out of the Zone of Displacement and planet Zero, the elements which were originally fabricated by the pseudo-creators.”

“Here is the greatest mystery of all. The last encounter must take place in the fullness of all states and conditions and the place where the negative state was initially triggered. The spiritual war will end on your planet since it also began on your planet. The pseudo-creators started it, they also must finish it in a total defeat.”

“One aspect of this greatest mystery of all is that the pseudo-creators will be defeated from the position of their own fabrications. The indication of this fact can be found in the internal sense of The Revelation of Jesus Christ (Apocalypse) Chapter 17, verses 16-17:”

““And the ten horns which you saw on the beast, these will hate the harlot, make her desolate and naked, eat her flesh and burn her with fire.””

““For God has put it into their hearts to fulfill His purpose, to be of one mind, and to give their kingdom to the beast, until the words of God are fulfilled.””

“But it is also in the mysterious fact that The Lord Jesus Christ contains within Himself/Herself the fullness of the nature of the Zone of Displacement and planet Zero through the hybridized and divinized human body He/She acquired while on your planet. The point that will be proven here to the pseudo-creators, as well as to everyone in the negative state and the entire Creation, is that it is possible to have that kind of body, the body originally made from the ideas of pure evils and falsities, and yet to be totally and absolutely positive without any desire or craving for evils and falsities. The pseudocreators boastfully assumed that no one can be fully positive and good having such a body.”

“Again, here lies the greatest mystery of all. Because that body came from the elements of your planet, it is on your planet that this point will be illustrated in the face of the pseudo-creators. In this act is contained the possible salvation of the pseudo-creators themselves — another great mystery. By this final act the cycle of time in which all these mysteries are taking place will be completed and The Last Judgment, in its final phase, will commence (see the next Chapter). After this act, and after completion of the Last Judgment, a new cycle of time will come into its being and existence, called The New Heaven and The New Earth.”

“He/she who has ears to hear and listen, let him/her hear and listen to what The Lord Jesus Christ reveals in this Chapter.”

CHAPTER EIGHT

THE LAST JUDGMENT

On February 15, 1988, at 5:30 a.m., the word of The Lord Jesus Christ came to me again, saying,

“Another important spiritual concept, considerably misunderstood, misinterpreted and distorted, is the concept of The Last Judgment. There are many variations of how this concept is interpreted and in what manner its process will happen.”

“All interpretations of the process of The Last Judgment usually are derived from its literal description in The Holy Bible. And, although the theme of The Last Judgment can be tracked through the entire Holy Bible, particularly in the Prophet Daniel, the common interpretations are derived from what Jesus Christ said about it in Matthew, Chapter 24 (the entire Chapter) and Chapter 25, verses 31-46, and through the entire book of Apocalypse, but particularly its Chapter 20, verses 11-15; and also what Paul said about it in The First Epistle to The Thessalonians, Chapter 4, verses 13-18 and what Peter said about it in his Second Epistle, Chapter 3, verse 1-10.”

“It is assumed by most Christians that the literal description of this process, as contained in the above-mentioned Biblical texts, fully reflects the reality of how The Last Judgment will be executed. The exception to this rule is Swedenborg’s interpretation of the concept of The Last Judgment and his followers on your planet. In Swedenborg’s conceptualization of this process, The Last Judgment does not take place on your planet but in the intermediate world or what he called The World of Spirits. He also claimed that The Last Judgment was fully completed at his time and that he was a direct witness of this process.”

“On the other hand, the majority of Christians and others are still patiently waiting for the literal appearance of The Lord Jesus Christ on the clouds with his angels and their trumpets on your planet to give them great satisfaction and prove that they were right and everyone else (not of Christians’ literal belief) was wrong. They console themselves with the words of Apostle Peter, recorded in the abovementioned Second Epistle, Chapter 3, verses 3-4, ‘that scoffers will come in the last days, walking according to their own hearts, and saying, “Where is the promise of His coming? For since the fathers fell asleep, all things continue as they were from the beginning of Creation...”’”

“Another aspect of the interpretation of The Last Judgment was revealed in Chapter 3, ‘Principles of Spiritual Metaphysics,’ in the book by this transmitter Four Concepts of the Spiritual Structure of Creation. In that conceptualization of The Last Judgment, it was properly conceived that The Last Judgment is a cyclical process which has relevance to the state and condition of one individual, of one society, of one nation, of one humankind or whatever kind, of one planet, of one solar system, of one universe, of one dimension, of the entire Creation and of the entire cycle of time.”

“It is correctly assumed in that booklet that, once the usefulness of any state and condition fulfills its purpose and is fully exhausted, be it in the life of one individual or in the life of the entire cycle of time, its Last Judgment takes place, all aspects of its life manifestation are carefully weighed and considered, and a new state and condition for all participants in its process comes into its being and existence. It was assumed, at that time, that this process

goes on to eternity.”

“In this respect, what the literal sense of The Holy Bible is trying to convey to you, regarding this issue, is that everyone is judged by the quality and content of his/her spiritual state and how one manifested and utilized all of one’s abilities, gifts, talents; and what kind of intentional and motivational factors were the driving force of one’s behaviors, attitudes and relationships.”

“In an ultimate sense, in the latter conceptualization of this process, The Last Judgment is nothing else but an evaluation of the fact which determines to what extent and how one person, or the entire cycle of time, manifested, actualized and realized that aspect of spirituality and the presence of God within them which was endowed on them by The Most High.”

“The point here to realize is that every sentient entity carries within itself a very specific, very unique and non-repeatable aspect of The Lord Jesus Christ (formerly The Most High). The quality, the content and the quantity of that aspect differs infinitely from one individual to another. Each carrier of such an aspect or element, by which he/she lives and functions, is made fully responsible for its proper utilization, actualization, realization and manifestation. Because it is a borrowed aspect, something that belongs to someone else, the one who receives this loan or gift is fully accountable for it. That this is the case can be nicely seen from the parable of talents uttered by Jesus Christ and recorded in most Gospels. See, for example, Matthew 25:14-30. The return of the master, or the owner of money-gifts, signifies The Last Judgment which determines how this gift was utilized, or used or misused or abused or entirely neglected from being utilized, as the case was with the lazy servant who hid his master’s talent in the ground.”

“From this parable it is obvious how the literal interpretations of the Biblical statements are misleading, not reflecting the true spiritual reality of this, as well as any other, spiritual issue.”

“In the Swedenborgian’s interpretation of the concept of The Last Judgment, the error was not in the fact that Swedenborg really witnessed The Last Judgment but in the conclusions he drew from those events. Basically two erroneous conclusions were drawn by him: First was that The Last Judgment can take place only in the world of spirits (the intermediate world) because it is a world of balancing. Only in the state of balance, true just judgment can be made. The assumption of the need for balancing is correct. Its limitation to the intermediate world is incorrect.”

“It is true that the intermediate world corresponds to the principle of balancing and that everyone, after he/she leaves the physical body behind, and undergoes his/her last judgment or gives an account of how he/she used the borrowed gift of life during that particular life span, must appear in that world first. However, this applies only to the judgment of the individual life but not to the life of the planet, galaxy, universe, multiverse, or one cycle of time.”

“Secondly, Swedenborg assumed at that time The Last Judgment he witnessed was the true ultimate Last Judgment and what was foretold about it in The Holy Bible was fully fulfilled and that there will be no other Judgment. As was already pointed out in the book Major Ideas of The New Revelation, Chapter XIII, pages 208-210, what Swedenborg witnessed was one aspect of that Judgment which took place in certain regions of the intermediate world and which was executed on the originators and perpetrators of The Dark Ages on your planet and in that world.”

“The process of The Last Judgment is manifested in many forms and in many aspects and it takes place, from time to time, in all dimensions and spheres of Creation and the Zone of Displacement by the ways and means relevant to the nature of each particular dimension, sphere, place, state and condition, etc.”

“Because of this important rule, the content and the process of The Last Judgment will be different from place to place, from state to state, from world to world, from individual to individual, from one cycle of time to another cycle of time, etc.”

“This understanding of The Last Judgment has never been perceived by anyone (it was not time, until now) and it is being revealed here for the first time.”

“So, we have here two extremes in the interpretation of the concept of The Last Judgment: The first one, the literal Christian interpretation. It limits itself to your planet only and to the visible physical universe (humans do not know that what they see is not a true universe but something else). It does not take into consideration the spiritual and intermediate world, respectively.”

“On the other hand, the second view limits The Last Judgment to the spiritual dimension of the world of spirits, neglecting other dimensions and the Zone of Displacement.”

“The third view, reflected in the booklet Four Concepts of the Spiritual Structure of Creation, speaks about The Last Judgment from the standpoint of its continuous occurrence in all localities and globalities of being and existence.”

“Taken together, all three views have some merit and, to a certain extent, they do reflect the reality and the process of The Last Judgment.”

“In the first view, the literal interpretation of the process itself is misleading. What is true about that view is that The Last Judgment must take place also on your planet, in your own locality, as a part of the Judgment of the inhabitants of the Zone of Displacement, as it takes place on any planet in Creation.”

“How else can you interpret the fact that a sun of any particular solar system in your and any other galaxy, at one point of its life explodes into a nova or supernova, collapses and annihilates in the process all planets revolving around it (in a sufficiently close proximity to it)? This is a form of The Last Judgment of that particular solar system.”

“In the second view, the spiritual interpretation of The Last Judgment is a correct one. The Last Judgment must also take place on the spiritual level of one’s awareness and in a state and place of balancing. However, to limit its process only to this aspect is misleading.”

“In the third view, the global and local interpretation of The Last Judgment is a correct one. There is no misleading perception in that interpretation. However, it is not complete. At the time of that interpretation, it was not appropriate to know or to reveal further aspects of the process of The Last Judgment.”

“There are certain other aspects of the process of The Last Judgment that relate exclusively to the activation and life of the negative state.”

“As you remember from the above-mentioned parable of talents, three servants were given ‘the moneys.’ The first servant represents the entire spiritual world or the innermost level of Creation. The second servant represents the entire intermediate world or the interior level of

Creation. The third servant represents the entire natural world or the external level of Creation where the negative state was initiated.”

“The reason why the third servant represents the entire natural or physical world of Creation, although not all in that world participated in the process of activation of the negative state, is for emphasis — ***only in the most external level of Creation may and can the negative state be activated.***”

“Now, this is a very important realization. It should be ingrained into everyone’s memory in order to avoid an abominable view that the negative state could have started in any other degree or level of Creation.”

“In reality, the third servant, the lazy and wicked one, represents the entire Zone of Displacement. The second servant, in fact, represents not only the intermediate world but also the positive position of the physical or exterior-natural world which is under the domain of the positive state.”

“The parable implies that the use of the gift of life, which procures proper spiritual principles, was rejected by the third servant. Instead of using it for spiritual growth, the third servant hid or buried the talent into the ground. The inner sense of this symbolism contains the process of activation of the negative state. ‘To hide the talent in the ground’ signifies to take all proper spiritual principles and encapsulate them in a container without allowing them to have full impact and influence on one’s life. If you remove or hide these principles, what else remains?”

“As long as these principles are in an open and dominant position, the negative state cannot be activated. The first step in this process is to hide them very thoroughly. The intent to hide them, and the actual process of hiding them, is the process of activation of the negative state. By doing that, one becomes ‘wicked’ and ‘lazy.’ ‘Wicked’ relates to evils and ‘lazy’ to falsities. The automatic consequences of such an act are evilness and falsification. Hence, the negative state.”

“However, the spiritual principle here is that, whatever one’s actions are, one has to be accountable and responsible for them. Otherwise, there is no meaning to and learning about such actions. The feedback is an essential part of the process. But who is to judge their outcomes?”

“Only the source of true life and all gifts and talents is able to judge them justly and objectively. The Lord Jesus Christ is the only true source of life and all gifts and talents. Therefore, only The Lord Jesus Christ can preside over any form and aspects of The Last Judgment.”

“The third servant’s story implies that at one time some people were given this gift of life and all proper tools, talents and gifts for its development and implementation. However, they decided to use that life for entirely different purposes other than what it was meant for. As they rejected and buried the true spiritual principles of life, they inadvertently started an opposing trend to the flow of the true life.”

“Because that life belongs rightfully to The Lord Jesus Christ — no one has life from oneself, in oneself and by oneself — only The Lord Jesus Christ can judge people who did this.”

“In a general sense, The Last Judgment means a process of complete evaluation of any state, place, condition, behavior, attitude, lifestyle or whatever you have which exhausted its

usefulness and can no longer serve any justifiable purpose. In the moment this occurs, the determination is made what justification any such situation has for its continuation.”

“As you know, the justification of any being and existence is determined by the usefulness it performs for the good of the entire Creation. If the usefulness of it was exhausted, it must be terminated and replaced with something which will have this required usefulness.”

“The quality, the content, the quantity and the measure of its fulfillment will determine the destiny of all those who demonstrated and illustrated the mode of such usefulness. After completion of their mission, they determine the type of reward or retribution they will receive, and the position for the next step in their useful endeavor.”

“In the sense of this general definition of The Last Judgment, everyone without exception or exclusion, be that one of the positive or the negative nature, respectively, is subject to The Last Judgment at each point of one's completion of the task one was assigned. In this respect, the process of The Last Judgment is not a once-in-a-lifetime or once in-an-eternity occurrence. It happens at all times, places, conditions and states and in all dimensions.”

“And because the multiverse, and each cycle of time, is maintained by the spiritual quality of the sentient mind, whenever the sentient mind is undergoing the process of its Last Judgment on a multiversal or cyclical level, that multiverse and cycle of time is also a subject of The Last Judgment. Thus, it is not only sentient entities who undergo The Last Judgment, but also their respective environments and everything which is part of those environments because they reflect the quality and usefulness of their masters' state.”

“For that reason, at the time of The Last Judgment, the environments of the sentient entities collapse or disappear from their awareness permanently. This is reflected in the so-called cataclysmic events observed in your visible universe (antiuniverse).”

“In a more specific sense, The Last Judgment is the process of balancing between what you call the forces of good and the forces of evil for the purpose of a continuous maintenance and availability of all choices.”

“Whenever any imbalance occurs, and is threatening the life of freedom of choice, The Divine Providence of The Lord Jesus Christ intervenes and rearranges the position of these forces in such a manner as to restore this vitally important spiritual freedom. The rearrangement has all signs of The Last Judgment and is done by the process of visitation.”

“On your planet, such visitation or The Last Judgment occurs in the form of massive catastrophes: A massive world war begins which transfers millions of humans from your world into some other world or dimension where they are needed to balance out the lopsided spiritual condition.”

“On the smaller scale, this is reflected in airplane accidents or other disasters in which hundreds or even thousands of humans are killed or perish. These events are all the result of visitation and The Last Judgment for those humans who perished from your physical plane. This aspect of The Last Judgment has mostly a negative connotation because the imbalance is always caused by the negative state. The positive state is the balance itself and does not require these types of visitations.”

“However, the negative state, by its very nature, is a constant war against the positive state, trying to unbalance it. Being the imbalance itself, the negative state imposes its lifestyle on anyone who comes into its proximity. If the number of such people prevails, the imbalance

occurs. It threatens the stability of Creation, prompting the visitation which restores that stability.”

“The process of this aspect of The Last Judgment takes place by a simple change of the proximity of the positive state to the negative one. The Lord Jesus Christ arranges that the proximity is temporarily shortened. A greater degree of Divine Love and Divine Wisdom is poured out into a disturbed region. This process is called visitation.”

“For many humans, this process gives a false impression that God causes these events to happen. They call them acts of God and incorporate this in their legal documents. But the reality is that God — now The Lord Jesus Christ — can never cause any such acts. What happens here is that, as the presence of Divine Love and Divine Wisdom is intensified and poured out into the trouble causing region, it exposes the evilness of the negative state within that region and triggers the need for retribution, inherent in the nature of the negative state, as the condition of reward is inherent in the nature of the positive state.”

“Thus, it is not God who punishes them (He/She sends them nothing but love and wisdom) but they themselves trigger that punishment as a result of being in the negative state and identifying themselves with the negative state.”

“In the case of the positive people who were part of such a disaster, such events trigger the process of reward for their willingness of taking from The Lord Jesus Christ an assignment in the negative state and fulfilling it at the time of such a disaster.”

“From the standpoint of your planet, these visitations take place without any conscious awareness of the participants in such events. However, once they arrive in the intermediate world’s holding area, their memories are open and they recognize the full necessity of what happened to them. At that point, their Last Judgment is executed.”

“In this respect, in order for The Last Judgment to be just and fair, it must take place with full opening of memories and elimination of the unconscious processes. This is the first act of The Last Judgment. No one can be judged without knowing the fullness of one’s state and the content of one’s entire mind.”

“However, as long as the negative state exists, for all members of the negative state the ignorance and the unconscious processes are the very style of their life. Therefore, in order to maintain balance, through such periodic visitations, they are transported to the intermediate world where the unconscious processes disappear and their memories are open. In that state, they can be judged.”

“Due to the fact that only The Lord Jesus Christ is capable of opening their memories and eliminating their unconscious processes, it appears as though The Lord Jesus Christ personally judges these people. In fact, however, it is people’s memories of themselves and their actions that function as judge, jury and executioner — to use the figure of speech of your language in describing this process.”

“While humans and various creatures reside in the Zone of Displacement and on your planet, during their lifetime there, as long as the negative state exists in the active and dominant mode, certain memories and unconscious processes can never be opened. It would be in violation of the nature of the negative state that must be exposed first.”

“The opening of certain memories and making the unconscious processes conscious to their fullest extent, while in the Zone of Displacement or on your planet, would cause such anguish

that no one in close proximity to a person who would experience it, including that person, could survive for a fraction of a second. The assault of the negative forces on such a person, being out of alignment with the nature and laws of the negative state by this fact, would be of such tremendous proportions that that person, and also everyone around him/her, would be instantaneously pulverized into nothingness.”

“Thus, in a sense, hiding the memories and maintaining of the unconscious processes protects you from such a gruesome fate.”

“This is the reason why, under presently existing conditions on your planet, no direct Last Judgment can occur. Instead, it occurs indirectly through the above-described visitations, during which the necessary number of humans is taken out of your planet and transported to the intermediate world. There their memories are gradually opened, their unconscious processes are slowly eliminated and they can face their personal Last Judgment.”

“Now, this process and aspect of The Last Judgment gave an incorrect impression to Swedenborg that The Last Judgment always takes place in the intermediate world and that it was completed at his time.”

“If you apply the process of The Last Judgment as it was and is now in your world, then Swedenborg’s perception was correct. The incorrectness of this perception comes in, as with many other conclusions, with perceiving it as a permanent state. It is assumed that this is the way it is always going to be and the place of The Last Judgment will always be or had been the intermediate world.”

“The error of this conclusion, as well as many other conclusions, can be found in the literal interpretation of the sayings in The Holy Bible. It is an interesting observation to note that, although Swedenborg was the first one who was granted the knowledge and revelation about the inner, spiritual sense of The Holy Bible, he erred in this respect, taking some of its statements literally. He assumed, as all other Christians do, until this date, that once people are condemned, or condemn themselves, to the Hells, they must stay there to eternity. No force, situation and condition can ever take them out of the Hells.”

“In this case, because the Hells will always be; the hidden memories, ignorance and unconscious processes will also be forever. But, because people in the Hells were already judged in the intermediate world, or because the results of that Judgment were their condemnation to eternity, no other Last Judgment will ever take place. Of course, with this kind of logic, it is not difficult to arrive at such a conclusion.”

“What all these people failed to notice is that the negative state did not originate in The Absolute State. Therefore, it cannot have an absolute value. Only something that carries within itself The Absolute attribute in a relative condition, as all sentient entities do, can and may stay forever.”

“As you remember, the negative state originated in the relative state. And although people who originated it must live forever, their product cannot stay forever because nothing in it comes from The Absolute Source. The Hells are the embodiment of the negative state. Therefore, their usefulness must be exhausted and all creatures and people in the Hells must face another Last Judgment which includes the entire cycle of time in which the negative state was permitted to come to its fruition.”

“In this act is the third meaning of The Last Judgment, of which The Holy Bible speaks.”

"In the third meaning of The Last Judgment is described the process during which the entire negative state, all members of the Hells, the rest of the Zone of Displacement and your planet will be evaluated and judged to determine what further justification, if any, exists for continuation of the negative state's being and existence. Is there any more use the negative state can perform for Creation? Because none will be found at that time, the negative state will be permanently deactivated and abolished. All the Hells and all other regions of the Zone of Displacement will be eternally closed. It will be the final choice-making."

"At the same time, all members of the positive state, after learning everything about the negative state they could, will eternally reject the idea of choosing ever to deny the true source of life, the true spiritual principles and, most importantly, the true New Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ."

"Once the full learning of what not ever to choose occurs, and the choice is made not to choose it ever, such an idea will no longer be kept as a necessary condition within the minds of the sentient entities, needing to be continuously expelled into the Zone of Displacement. Once the choice is made, that idea in itself will exhaust its usefulness and will be eliminated. In that moment the Zone of Displacement will cease to exist."

"Remember, please, life of the Zone of Displacement is maintained by that idea, which is being continuously rejected by the positive entities, as the lessons about the nature of the negative state are being learned. On this idea, the entire negative state has been feeding, appropriating to itself the life of that idea by making it the essence and substance of its very being and existence."

"As you see, that which is rejected in the positive state becomes the life of the negative state. But what will happen when there is no longer any rejection because the idea itself is no longer occurring? After all, why should it occur any longer if all the lessons for avoiding of making the wrong choices have been successfully learned and a final choice of not having such an idea was made? To keep that idea alive would be a wasteful, futile and useless venture. No positive use would be served by its preservation."

"And this is the fourth aspect of The Last Judgment. This is a positive aspect, related to the positive state and the entire Creation. This is The Last Judgment of this cycle of time. In this connotation, The Last Judgment is a process during which all members of the positive state will make a final, most crucial and vital choice of all regarding the idea that they may reject at any time to reciprocate the Love and Wisdom of The Lord Jesus Christ, to consider Him/Her a true and the only God, the only Most High One Indivisible, to consider Him/Her and His/Her spiritual principles to be a true and the only source of life and their Creator."

"It was because of this idea that the negative state was permitted to be activated within this cycle of time. In order to decide whether to choose or not to choose to act upon such an idea, as a vital and fundamental condition of their freedom, it was necessary to allow the illustration on the living examples of all participants in the negative state of all the consequences, results and outcomes of such a choice. Once they will know all the answers to this issue to the fullest, all pervasive and exhausting degree, The Last Judgment will take place at all levels, degrees, regions and spheres of the entire Creation, the Zone of Displacement and planet Zero and the entire cycle of time during which all these have been taking place. By this important learning and by making the final choice to eternally eliminate such an idea, the continuation of this cycle of time will no longer be justifiable because it will serve no use."

"At that moment, the entire multiverse will collapse, all suns will explode into supernovas and

all matter will fall in on itself. Once this act is completed, and all aspects of this cycle of time are properly evaluated and judged, a New Cycle Of Time, and a birth of the New Multiverse will come into its being and existence. ***And this is what The Last Judgment is all about.***”

“However, there are some additional points that need to be revealed about The Last Judgment:”

(1)

“One of the many most fundamentally important reasons why The Most High acquired the physical body of Jesus Christ, fused into the totality of His/Her entire nature, becoming the fullness of The Lord Jesus Christ, was to be able to experience, first hand, the nature of the Zone of Displacement and the entire nature of the negative state. Having this new nature, The Lord Jesus Christ can be personally present, without any mediation, at any place within the Zone of Displacement and can know intimately what the situation of the negative state is at any given moment and place. As you know, before that, it was possible for The Most High to be present in the negative state only through mediators in order to avoid total annihilation of the members of the negative state.”

“Now, this situation is very crucial for just and objective evaluation and assessment of the condition of the negative state at its very source and place. Not having a direct, personal experience of the negative state, not knowing the direct and personal impact of the negative state’s evils and falsities, The Lord Jesus Christ could not judge the negative state justly, objectively and fairly. After all, nothing of the experience of the negative state existed within The Most High before the incarnation of Jesus Christ on your planet.”

“In order to be an impartial Judge of the negative state, The Most High chose, by His/Her own free will and choice, to have a direct, first hand, experience of the life in the negative state. Thus, He/She assumed a physical form, by the process described in the Second Chapter of this book, a form originally fabricated by the pseudo-creators from the elements of evils and falsities, and allowed Himself/Herself to fully experience the negative state from the lowest Hells to the most outward degree of their natural state — your planet.”

“Notice, please, that The Most High needed to follow a reverse process of experience so natural to the negative state. As you know, whereas in the positive state everyone starts in the most within degree and spreads out to the most without degree, in the negative state everything begins in the most without degree and then spreads out to the lowest most within. Thus, The Most High had to start on your planet, as a representation of that most without of the negative state and from there gradually proceed through all levels of the Zone of Displacement until He/She arrived into the lowest Hells (their most within) of the pseudo-creators.”

“Another reason for this reversed procedure was in the fact that many accommodations and alterations needed to be made within Jesus Christ before He/She could enter more inward or lower levels of the negative state. In this respect, you have to start with the most outward negative which does not have such a devastating impact and, through modifications and adjustments, proceed gradually to the more inward or lower states of negativity. Thus, by this process, The Most High, in the form of Jesus Christ, was able to experience all levels and all aspects of the negative state first hand.”

“The Last Judgment could never take place unless this experience were available to The Lord Jesus Christ first hand. Without this experience, no foundation or base would exist on which any ***absolute*** conclusions could be drawn about the negative state and its continuous justification for being and existence.”

“Remember, please, only from the position of The Absolute State, which knows everything about anything in an Absolute sense, can any just decision be made. As you know, only The Lord Jesus Christ is Absolute. Therefore, only He/She can be a true Judge of anything and anyone. But how could you judge anything or anyone if you have no first hand knowledge of that which is being judged?”

“After all, The Most High did not contain within Himself/Herself anything from the negative state experientially. The knowledge was always secondhand through His/Her spiritual presence with people who originated, activated and perpetuated the negative state. The experiential knowledge by these means is grossly limited by the inherent limitations of the relative beings who live in the negative state. From that position, no absolute knowledge can be acquired. If there is no such knowledge, no Last Judgment can take place.”

“The fundamental spiritual principle of The Last Judgment is that it can be conducted or executed only from the position of absolute knowledge of that which is being judged.”

“For that reason, it was necessary for The Most High to incarnate into the negative state, go through all its levels, regions and spheres, and acquire first hand experiential knowledge about the negative state and to become The Lord Jesus Christ. As you noticed, the words ‘experiential knowledge’ are emphasized. It points out the fact that The Most High, being absolute, had the theoretical knowledge about the nature of the negative state. But such knowledge is not sufficient for the proper and just judgment because it lacks the most important attribute — what does it feel like to be in an intimate, direct, personal and private contact with the negative state and not through mediation only?”

“But now the negative state will have no defense because such experience is available to The Lord Jesus Christ directly.”

“Notice, please, that in The Gospel According to Matthew, Chapter 25, verse 31 it is said, ‘when the Son of Man comes in His glory, and all the holy angels with Him, then He will sit on the throne of His Glory.’ As you see, the words ‘Son of Man’ are used here to emphasize His/Her experience of the negative state and the human aspects of the totality of His/Her Divine Nature which is called here ‘in His glory.’ To be in His glory means to be in the totality of all Divine States and Conditions with the full incorporation and fusion of the human aspects which Jesus Christ brought with Himself/Herself after His/Her departure from your planet. ‘The throne of His glory’ signifies the successful completion of the process of fusion of that body-flesh and incorporation into the totality of The Most High’s Nature all first hand experiences about the negative state. From this position now He/ She can judge the entire negative state.”

“Once that experiential knowledge is fully incorporated in The Absolute State, The Lord Jesus Christ knows the negative state absolutely. Now, He/She may and will, when the time is at hand, execute The Last Judgment.”

(2)

“The concept of The Last Judgment, as conceived above, requires that, at the end of one cycle of time, it take place simultaneously at all levels of being and existence. Because in this cycle of time the Zone of Displacement exists, and the negative state and its members exist, it incorporates also the simultaneous Last Judgment of the entire negative state and the Zone of Displacement.”

“The principle of The Last Judgment states that it can be executed only from the position of The Absolute State and by personal, face to face, presence of The Absolute Judge — The Lord Jesus Christ. Thus, it requires that The Lord Jesus Christ appear simultaneously and synchronously at all levels, degrees, spheres and regions of Creation, the Zone of Displacement and planet Zero in order to trigger the state of The Last Judgment. No one else can trigger it.”

“However, if The Lord Jesus Christ were not to have that physical human body-flesh, fused into Him/Her, His/Her appearance in the negative state would mean an instantaneous annihilation of everyone in the negative state, including the entire Zone of Displacement and planet Zero.”

“But be aware of this important spiritual fact: His/Her appearance in the positive state, without the form of The Lord Jesus Christ, being in His/Her Absolute State, would be as deadly as His/Her appearance in the negative state. Remember, no one even in the positive state is absolute. Therefore, no one can survive The Absolute presence of The Absolute One. Yet, the principle of The Last Judgment requires this Absolute Presence.”

“The human physical body-flesh, fused into The Most High, now The Lord Jesus Christ, makes such an appearance possible in an absolute sense. Thus, The Lord Jesus Christ can appear simultaneously and synchronously, at the same time, in the same discernible and perceptible form, at any time, at any place, at any state and in any condition in His/Her Absolute State without any danger to anyone.”

“This is another great mystery of the great revolutionary change of The Nature of The Most High into the fullness of The Lord Jesus Christ that makes this possible. In the foresight of this event, just before His/Her departure from your planet, The Lord Jesus Christ stated, ‘All authority has been given to Me in heaven and on earth’ (Matthew 28:18). There is no authority anywhere but the authority of The Lord Jesus Christ. From the position of this authority, The Lord Jesus Christ can execute the Last Judgment.”

“Until this process was completed, the other aspects of The Last Judgment were performed in the intermediate world. On your planet, the rest of the Zone of Displacement and in the Hells, this form of The Last Judgment took place by the means of the above-described visitations.”

“But the real Last Judgment, the final judgment for this entire cycle of time, cannot be limited to one dimension, region, level or world. It has to be an all inclusive one. Otherwise, the next cycle of time cannot come to its fruition. The necessity of the personal appearance of The Lord Jesus Christ in all worlds of the Zone of Displacement, in all the Hells and on your planet, is a condition for final elimination of the negative state. Only The Lord Jesus Christ can and will eliminate the negative state because only He/She knows now the negative state in an Absolute sense.”

“The next cycle of time cannot commence until the negative state is eliminated because it was permitted to flourish only within one cycle of time. This was the promise of The Lord Jesus Christ to the entire Creation before the negative state was activated. The promise from The Absolute State has an absolute value and commitment. It cannot be broken. Otherwise, it would abolish The Absoluteness of its condition.”

(3)

“The process of the final phase of The Last Judgment for this cycle of time will take place in a state of neutral condition. As you remember from the above, one of the important conditions

of the just Last Judgment is that all memories are open and accessible and the unconscious processes are abolished. But it is the nature and life of the negative state to be that way.”

“This is the reason why the direct presence of The Lord Jesus Christ in the negative state is necessary. By that process, and through that body-flesh (remember, that body was built from the elements of the negative state), The Lord Jesus Christ will be able to remove those conditions of the negative state, and to fully open their memories, abolish the unconscious processes and the state of ignorance without any danger of annihilation of the negative state.”

“The presence of The Lord Jesus Christ on your planet, in all the Hells and in the entire Zone of Displacement, in that physical bodyflesh, at the same time, gives everyone reassurance that one can stay alive in that body, or what it corresponds to, without any presence of the negative state in it.”

“This example nullifies any power of the negative state to destroy anyone with open memories, lack of unconscious processes and ignorance (as the case was before) and puts everyone in a neutral condition.”

“The only exception to this rule will be the pseudo-creators and superhumans genetically fabricated by them. They would not be able to survive that presence because of a special self-destruct code implanted into them to respond to that presence with an explosion.”

“For that reason, as you remember from the previous Chapter, during their travel through the ninth dimension, they will be warped out, outside of all dimensions, into a state called limbo, where, by the nature of that state, all codes and commitments are cancelled, or simply fail to respond. In that condition, The Lord Jesus Christ will appear to them, simultaneously and synchronously with all others everywhere, and will execute final judgment on them.”

(4)

“While in this neutral condition, all genetic and other blocks of the human mind, implanted by the pseudo-creators, as described in Chapter Six of this book, will be removed, the various levels of mind will be freed and reconnected, the physical body, built from the elements of the negative state, will be replaced with a temporary body, built from the elements of the neutral state, and the process of the final phase of The Last Judgment will commence.”

“As you know, this process must occur in the neutral state so as to not be influenced by any pressures and impositions from the negative or from the positive state, respectively. It must be totally unbiased. Only in the neutral state can the condition of unbiasedness be met.”

“The presence of those genetic and other types of blocks, and the typical human physical body, makes it impossible for humans to remember clearly, to know properly and to perceive correctly. The principle of The Last Judgment requires that all these abilities be fully restored and placed in a neutral condition with the presentation of all choices, so that humans and other creatures of the negative state may make a choice based on full knowledge and clarity of perception and memories.”

“But, at the same time, they need to be fully aware of all aspects of the negative state and all aspects of the positive state for a fair comparison. This is possible to accomplish only from the position of being outside of one or another.”

“A decision from the inside position of one or another lacks objectivity and validity. Thus, the necessity for a neutral state.”

(5)

"In fact, in the process of its Last Judgment, the entire cycle of time in which the negative state was permitted to come to its fruition must be put in the neutral state. The members of the positive state will be facing the vital and crucial decision regarding the permanent elimination from their mind the idea which they were rejecting on a daily basis, making it fall out into the Zone of Displacement."

"This important decision cannot be made properly from the one-sided position of the positive state. It biases that decision in the favor of the positive state, thus, in the favor of its permanent rejection. In order for such a decision to have an eternally permanent validity, it must be made in a neutral condition, from which an objective comparison between the true nature of the positive state and the true nature of the negative state can be made and the proper conclusion can be drawn."

"This is a true internal meaning of The Last Judgment. The decision to get rid of that idea permanently completes The Last Judgment and the new cycle of time may commence. However, should a decision be made not to get rid of that idea permanently (a remote possibility), the present cycle of time must continue and the negative state cannot be abolished. It would simply mean that the full learning about the nature of the negative state and what not to choose has not occurred and the lessons need to continue. This is a just and objective possibility of any situation."

"The only point here is that The Lord Jesus Christ would not initiate the process of the final phase of The Last Judgment (for this cycle of time), unless He/She were to perceive that all lessons were learned and that the negative state, therefore, exhausted its usefulness. But the final decision must be made in the neutral state by all concerned. The Lord Jesus Christ cannot impose anything on anyone contrary to their own free choice, based on their free will. Such is the nature of The Lord Jesus Christ. Because of this nature, only The Lord Jesus Christ may and can preside over the final Last Judgment of any cycle of time."

(6)

"In preparation for the opening of all memories and removal of unconscious processes and ignorance, as a condition for the Last Judgment to take place, a New Revelation is granted by The Lord Jesus Christ to all Creation and the Zone of Displacement. This New Revelation explains the most important spiritual issues related to The New Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ, to the situation in the spiritual world and in the Zone of Displacement and to all necessary information needed for that purpose. When the time comes, The New Revelation will trigger all memories and will give people, humans and creatures a sense of familiarity, making it easier for them to accept what they will learn, once their memories are fully opened and all repressions and suppressions surface to their conscious awareness, removing the state of ignorance about all spiritual issues."

"The granting of The New Revelation is a necessary prerequisite for The Last Judgment and opening of the memories because it will cushion the shock that all will experience when they learn the truth about all these matters."

(7)

"In the process of the final phase of The Last Judgment the entire Creation and the Zone of Displacement will be put in a special position of alignment and accessibility so that information will flow from all levels to all levels for examination, exploration and evaluation but, most importantly, for separation, differentiation and exposure of everyone's loyalties, intentions, motivations and the true faces of their identities. In the process of this phase, the

true nature of everyone's personal nature, 'I am,' will be revealed and will come to the light so that there will no longer be any confusion about the answer of 'Who am I and why I am where I am?' and 'What is the purpose of my personal life,' and similar issues."

"The Last Judgment cannot occur unless this step takes place first because only from the position of recognition of and identification with one's true identity and knowledge of one's mission and purpose of one's life can one be justly judged."

"For this reason, in the process of this phase of The Last Judgment, all impositions of the negative state, scientific and religious beliefs, or whatever you have in such an abundance on your planet, must be separated from everyone's true core — unique personality and individuality, deeply buried under those impositions — and must fully come to the light and one's awareness. Only those things can remain and be considered with which one fully identified oneself by one's free will and choice and by that act made them a permanent integral part of one's unique being and existence. Only these things can be appropriated to anyone and only by this free appropriation can one be judged. All else, imposed by any means whatsoever, must be discarded, put aside and not taken into consideration. It does not belong to that one."

"This is true about any appropriation — be it positive or negative. Unless one accepts anything by free will and choice, and not because it is required by some kinds of expectations, demands, orders, miracles, persuasions and mandates from the outside, it cannot be appropriated to that one, no matter what it is."

"The process of The Last Judgment is able to put all that in proper place and look upon it from the proper, just perspective. Nothing is judged by external impositions, but by the inner identifications from the position of one's free will and choice. Thus, for example, if one becomes a believer in the true spiritual principles of this or any other Revelation under the influence of any illness, or witnessing of miracles or signs, or any other outside events which force that one to accept those principles, such a belief is an empty notion, superficially attached to that one's external mind without any real roots in the state of his/ her internals or inwardness."

"Unless The New Revelation, or anything else for that matter, is accepted on the basis of principles of free will and choice, because it is the truth; and one recognizes its truth and accepts that truth for the sake of that truth, because one loves the truth, it cannot become an integral part of one's life."

"The process of The Last Judgment, in its final verdict, differentiates among these various positions."

(8)

"The process of The Last Judgment follows the fundamentals of spiritual principles of Creation — from within to without. Thus, when one is being scrutinized as to one's real nature, this process evaluates the state of one's internals first; then the state of one's interiors follows; and, finally, the state of one's externals is judged."

"In the final decision, it is very carefully established to what extent one's life in the externals was ruled by spiritual principles from one's internals. In other words, what was the degree of congruency between one's inner thinking and its external expression or verbal communications one used; between one's inner feelings and their external expression; between one's inner will and the external behavior; between one's inner intentions and their external mode of manifestation, etc.? The more discrepancy, the more the negative state

dominated that one's life, and the longer time will be required for conversion to the positive state and for undergoing the process of spiritual, mental and physical transformation. This is determined by the process of The Last Judgment."

(9)

"The most important purpose of The Last Judgment is the salvation of all by The Lord Jesus Christ from the negative state."

"In the final phase of The Last Judgment, the most important spiritual issues of life, on which one's life and one's position depends, will be scrutinized and determined."

"As you remember, everyone's spiritual destiny is determined by what kind of concept, idea, understanding, attitude, acceptance or whatever, one has about the true Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ."

"In the process of The Last Judgment this relatedness to and conceptualization of the Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ will be fully revealed and exposed and compared with the true reality of that nature. At this point, one will be given an opportunity to correct all one's misconceptions, distortions and falsifications regarding this issue."

"Remember, this will be done in the state of neutrality. The work of salvation cannot take hold unless one is free from any and all impositions from any sides and directions. In the state of that neutrality, The Lord Jesus Christ will personally reveal to everyone His/Her true Nature, as described throughout this book, and, by that act, will make it possible for everyone to compare his/her own belief system and how congruent it is with the true reality of that Nature."

"This is a necessary step and the most crucial one. The Last Judgment cannot be completed or even take place unless everyone is given an opportunity to learn experientially who The Lord Jesus Christ really is."

"In the final act, one cannot make a reasonable and valid choice in this respect, or any other respect, unless one is presented with experiential facts about this, or any other, matter. It is impossible to form a correct attitude toward someone whom you have never seen or personally experienced but only learned about by rumors or assumptions by others who are in the same predicament as you are. The relationship based on rumors and assumptions may or may not be correct. If you believe in The Lord Jesus Christ by rumors and assumptions, but not by a personal experience, you may be in the mode of distortion of the conceptualization of His/Her Nature. You follow only the religious dogmas which dictate to you the concept of The Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ and how you should relate to Him/Her, claiming that the dictated by them mode of this relatedness is the only possible and correct one."

"Under the condition of the activated and dominant negative state's existence, while it lasts, this situation is tolerated so that people will not fall into a profane and blasphemous attitude toward The Lord Jesus Christ. Since no one knows for sure who The Lord Jesus Christ is, no one really can profane His/Her true Nature."

"This situation is permitted for the sake of salvation of everyone trapped in the negative state by whatever means and belief systems."

"In the process of The Last Judgment one is put in a special condition, free of all impositions, and one is given a personal, private and intimate experience of who The Lord Jesus Christ

really is. From that experience, in the state of total freedom (as long as one is in the negative state, one cannot be free), one can make a final, most crucial choice to accept or not to accept this New Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ. All the consequences of both choices are shown to that one in that moment of time. That way one knows exactly what one chooses and what to expect as a result of such a choice. Remember, in this phase, no ignorance exists and one is not required to choose blindly. Therefore, it is obvious what everyone will choose.”

“In this opportunity lies the act of eternal salvation offered by The Lord Jesus Christ. And this is what the process of The Last Judgment is all about.”

“The importance of the acceptance of the true New Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ, in the final decision-making process, is contained in the internal sense, among many other things, of the description of The Lord Jesus Christ’s Last Supper before His/Her betrayal and crucifixion that culminated in His/Her victory over the negative state within the positive state (see the next Chapter).”

“As you remember, the first victory of The Lord Jesus Christ over the negative state was within the positive state — expulsion of the pseudocreators from the Heavens and their lockup.”

“The second victory of The Lord Jesus Christ over the negative state was completed recently, when the human era and its negative state was abolished in and expelled from the intermediate world.”

“The third, and final, victory of The Lord Jesus Christ will take place from within the negative state itself. This will culminate in the total elimination and abolishment of the negative state and the final act of The Last Judgment of the entire present cycle of time.”

“By this final act, the full process of The Last Judgment will be completed for this cycle of time.”

“He/she who has ears to hear, let him/her hear what The Lord Jesus Christ reveals in this Chapter.”

CHAPTER NINE

THE MEANING OF THE LAST SUPPER

On February 16, 1988, at 5:00 a.m., the word of The Lord Jesus Christ came to me, saying,

“If you carefully explore various spiritual ideas which underlie most religious doctrines and dogmas you will not be able to find one single idea, no, not one, that would not be distorted, misunderstood, falsified, perverted, externalized, ritualized and literalized.”

“This grave situation stems from the nature of the world where you live. As you know, this is the world where the negative state exists, side by side with the positive state, in an activated and dominant position. In actuality, the presence of the positive state on your world is considerably minimal and diminishes in geometrical proportion.”

“Since the activation of the negative state, the positive state has never been the prevalent condition on your planet. It can be said that the positive state felt and experienced itself in your world as being in the enemy’s territory. Because of this nature of your world, whatever spiritual ideas exist there are capable of taking hold only in a distorted, perverted, falsified, improperly understood, externalized and literalized manner.”

“As you remember from Chapters Five and Six, one of the major thrusts of the pseudo-creators, during their genetic engineering of the presently existing humans, was to separate one mind, functioning in the three aspects, into three separate minds, encapsulate them in a container specially built from genetic and other material, separate them from the rest of the body and bodily life and leave only infinitesimally small openings for flow of life energy in order to maintain the human body alive. The pseudo-creators placed there specially trained guardians and demons that capture any spiritual ideas coming from the most within Spiritual Mind and spiritual world, pervert them, mutilate them and, in that form, allow them to get through to the external conscious mind.”

“So, by the time any spiritual idea arrives to your conscious awareness, it goes through numerous traps, undergoing the above-mentioned negative transformation, and is perceived either in its distorted form or, very often, in a totally opposite sense from what it really meant at its originating point. Such is the state of the spiritual awareness in the entire Zone of Displacement and on your planet.”

“The effort here is always to ritualize, externalize and literalize anything spiritual stemming from the most internal state of the spiritual world. This process robs any spiritual idea of its true meaning. This is how the negative state succeeded in fully corrupting all religions presently existing on your planet. On this principle, the negative state fabricates any new religions, cults and spiritual movements.”

“In view of this important fact and reality, it is no wonder that the concept of The Last Supper is likewise misunderstood, distorted, ritualized, externalized and literalized, that is, taken literally. Around its performance, in some Christian religions, an intricate ‘mystical’ ritual is built in which it is assumed that some kind of mysterious transformation of bread into the real body of Christ and wine into His real blood takes place. As of this moment, no one has any proper understanding what The Last Supper really means and signifies. One exception to this rule was the original explanation of this concept in Swedenborg’s writings. But, although

Swedenborg explained one of the many proper aspects of The Last Supper's true meaning, his followers still take it literally and perform the external ritual itself, trying to imitate what Jesus Christ did. By doing that, they suffocate any meaning shed by Swedenborg."

"What is being disregarded and forgotten here is that The Lord Jesus Christ, during His/Her life on your planet, in all His/Her behaviors, activities and statements expressed some deep inner spiritual meaning conveyed by the language of the external forms. As you know, no other language was or is available in the negative state. This fact signifies that whatever The Lord Jesus Christ did or said has no literal, external connotation. All His/Her deeds and words were used as important symbols, containing a very deep spiritual meaning, without having any meaning in themselves except as containers to be discarded after their use."

"This is very difficult for humans to accept. Do not forget that you have there on your planet an acquired, for many millions of years, bad habit of taking everything literally and externally. It is not easy to break such a vicious habit. For your information, one of the greatest difficulties humans have, particularly the fundamentalist, conservative Christians and the so-called newborn Christians, after they come to the spiritual world, following their physical death, is this shocking realization: There is no true meaning in the literal sense of The Holy Bible which they so much cherished and emphasized. They are even more shocked when they learn that all Epistles of the Apostles do not contain any inner spiritual sense. This was one of the many reasons for Paul's downfall: He took everything in an extreme literal sense, especially regarding his own nation (Jews and Israel)."

"And yet, there is something spiritually very important contained in the story of The Last Supper. Something is being told to you that has been eluding all of you since that event occurred."

"It is not by coincidence that all four Gospels mention this event, although John's Gospel puts it in an entirely different perspective. This story is recorded in Matthew 26:26-30; Mark 14:22-26; Luke 22:14-20 and John 13:1-35."

"The content of this event is that Jesus Christ, knowing that He will be betrayed and given into the hands of gentiles to be crucified, celebrated the last Passover with His disciples. During this celebration, He took bread, gave thanks and broke it, and gave it to His disciples, saying that the bread was His body given for them and that they should do this in remembrance of Him. After that, He took a cup with wine and offered it to them, proclaiming in the process that the cup was The New Covenant in His blood, shed for many for the remission of their sins. And that He will not be able to drink of the fruit of the vine until the kingdom of God comes. This story is repeated in fullness of its literal sense in The First Epistle of Paul to The Corinthians, Chapter 11, verses 23-26."

"Now, taking everything that The Lord Jesus Christ said at that time literally, all Christian churches established a sacred ritual of The Last Supper, making it one of the most holy dogmas of their teachings. The ritual in itself became holy and not what it really symbolizes. In actuality, no one is even interested in the symbolism of its representation."

"Let us take the story of The Last Supper as recorded in The Gospel According to Luke Chapter 22:14-20:"

"Verse 14: 'And when the hour had come, He sat down, and the twelve apostles with Him.'"

"'And when the hour had come' signifies the completion of one phase of The Lord Jesus

Christ's mission."

"And 'He sat down' signifies the acknowledgment that this phase of the mission was fulfilled."

"And the twelve apostles with Him' means that all aspects of truths and goods, as well as evils and falsities, were properly arranged and placed into the order for the next, most decisive, battle with the negative state to take place."

"Verse 15: 'Then He said to them, "With fervent desire I have desired to eat this Passover with you before I suffer;"'

"Then He said to them' signifies the need to share. The Divine Love and Wisdom of The Lord Jesus Christ desire nothing more than to share everything it has and experiences with everyone in Creation."

"With fervent desire I have desired to eat this Passover with you before I suffer" denotes that a tremendously important spiritual issue needs to be shared regarding The Lord Jesus Christ's true Nature, as symbolized by the Passover, before His/Her entrance into the Hells."

"Verse 16: 'for I say to you, I will no longer eat of it until it is fulfilled in the kingdom of God.'"

"To eat Passover means to accept the truth of one's nature. Because the truth is always derived from The Most High, one's nature cannot be properly understood or acquired without acknowledgment that The Most High is the true source of one's identity for the reason that He/ She is the true source of one's life."

"In this respect however, it is Jesus Christ who says it. This has a much deeper meaning. By saying it, Jesus Christ accepts the fact of His/Her true Divine Nature, which became flesh, and accepts the fact that this flesh — the human body — has to be fused into The Nature of The Most High so that The Most High becomes the totality of The Lord Jesus Christ. This is the reason why Jesus Christ says, 'I will no longer eat of it until it is fulfilled in the kingdom of God,' meaning that the fusion of that body, made divine, cannot take place anywhere else but within The Most High through His/Her Absolute External Mind (the kingdom of God). This process is completed in the spiritual world and the full truth regarding this revolutionary matter will be revealed afterwards ('until the kingdom of God comes')."

"Verse 17: 'Then He took the cup, and gave thanks, and said, "Take this and divide it among yourselves;"'

"Verse 18: 'for I say to you, I will not drink of the fruit of the vine until the kingdom of God comes.'"

"Then He took the cup' signifies the acknowledgment of His external physical form which was built from the elements of Joseph and Mary but which now were in the process of the final act of divinization, signified by the words 'He took.' This means that The Divine from the elements that came from The Most High appropriated to Itself the divinized external form originally built from the elements of the Zone of Displacement."

"Gave thanks' means the full acknowledgment that this is a true fact. 'And said' signifies sharing of this truth. 'Take this and divide it among yourselves' signifies the necessity of acceptance of the fact regarding The New Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ and the way everyone's relationship toward Him/Her in His/Her New Nature is established."

“‘To divide it among yourselves’ means to do this by everyone’s free will through the process of sharing with each other the unique, individual experience in relationship to the true New Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ. Such a sharing enhances and enriches the perception of the experience one has in relating to this fact.”

“‘For I say to you’ emphasizes the truth of this matter. ‘I will not drink of the fruit of the vine’ signifies that nothing can be accomplished in the external degree of the Zone of Displacement, from the position of that degree, represented here by the fruit of the vine, because it does not contain any spiritual truth (wine). ‘Until the kingdom of God comes’ denotes it can be accomplished only from the position of the spiritual truth that experienced within itself directly all impacts of all falsities of the negative state. Only from that position can all these falsities be nullified.”

“Verse 19: ‘And He took bread, gave thanks and broke it, and gave it to them, saying, “This is My body which is given for you; do this in remembrance of Me.”’”

“‘And He took bread’ signifies acceptance of the fact that life within His physical body was of a purely Divine origin from The Divine Good. ‘Gave thanks and broke it’ signifies the acknowledgment that this fact is a true reality which is being continuously violated by the negative state. ‘And gave it to them, saying’ denotes revelation and sharing of this truth from the good of His/Her heart or Divine.”

“‘This is my body which is given for you’ denotes affirmation of the presence of Divine in the form built from the elements of the Zone of Displacement as a condition of salvation of all trapped in the negative state. ‘Do this in remembrance of Me’ means the need of the continuous awareness that The Divine was made Human and that the Human was made Divine because on such an awareness one’s liberation from the bondage of the negative state of evils and falsities depends.”

“Verse 20: ‘Likewise He also took the cup after supper, saying, “This cup is the new covenant in My blood, which is shed for you.”’”

“‘Likewise He also took the cup after supper, saying’ — again emphasis is put on importance of acknowledgment of the external physical form — flesh — and sharing the fact of that importance.”

“‘This cup is the new covenant in My blood’ signifies that this external physical form-flesh, made divine, will be fused and incorporated into the totality of The Full Nature of The Most High and a New Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ will come to its fruition that has never been in being and existence up to that point. Its Absolute Mentality, or recognition that The Mentality of The Most High was present in that body/blood, was shed for or exposed to the negative state.”

“‘Which is shed for you,’ or in Matthew 26:28, ‘which is shed for many for the remission of sins,’ signifies that exposure of that Mentality to the negative state or, in fact, the realization that The Most High, from the position of His/Her pure Love and Goodness, humbled Himself/ Herself to enter the Zone of Displacement; acquired from there the physical body-flesh; placed into it His/Her soul — mentality; and entered into the combat with all forces of the negative state which were trying to deny His/Her Divine presence by continuous assaults on His/Her physical body — the most vulnerable part of His/Her presence in the negative state, but, at the same time, the only part through which The Divine Presence could do the work of

Salvation.“

“Only by this work a permanent condition was established through and by which everyone in the negative state, who acknowledges this fact, can be liberated from the negative state and his/her sins-problems eliminated.”

“Several central terms in this story must be emphasized and understood. They are: ‘The fruit of the vine and wine,’ ‘the cup,’ ‘blood,’ ‘bread’ and ‘body.’ These terms all have multilevel spiritual meaning and significance. By them the process of divinization and hybridization of the human body-flesh of Jesus Christ is described. Because this process was the most important event that the entire Creation, and the Zone of Displacement, has ever experienced from its foundation, The Last Supper plays such an important role in all Christian religious rituals.”

“‘Wine’ and ‘blood,’ in all aspects of their meaning, signify The Divine Truth (one of its elements) which was taken out from The Absolute External Mind of The Most High, called Christ. But because separation of that element from the totality of The Absolute Mind of The Most High needed to take place, the principle of vine is introduced here. ‘The vine,’ in this connotation, signifies the outward state of the natural degree and reality of its being and existence where the negative state was initiated and put in an active and dominant mode. Thus, here ‘the vine’ also signifies the entire Zone of Displacement which is comprised of evils and falsities of the negative state.”

“‘The fruit of that vine or wine’ means all results and consequences of violation that the negative state performed on Good and Truth of the positive state which Jesus Christ had to incorporate into His/Her blood. ‘Blood’ here has two parallel meanings: Divine Truth encountering all falsities of the negative state and removing them from that part of His physical body-flesh that was formed from Joseph’s element. But ‘blood’ also means soul or mentality. Here the gradual repudiation of the mentality from the genes of Mary and Joseph and the gradual infusion of The Divine Mentality from The Most High into that body-flesh is described.”

“‘To drink of the fruit of the vine’ signifies the full experience of the atrocious and abominable mentality of the negative state and its subsequent replacement with The Divine Mentality that was to occupy that body making that body divine. Once that body is made divine, it can take hold in the fullness of the positive state — the kingdom of God. This hold cannot happen until this process is completed by the full fusion of all particles of the physical body-flesh into the totality of The Nature of The Most High or until The Most High becomes the fullness of The Lord Jesus Christ.”

“‘The cup’ that holds the fruit of the vine signifies this human bodyflesh as the most external container of The Divine Mentality. The Divine Mentality in itself is derived from The Absolute Interior Mind or Absolute Soul of The Most High which is called Jesus. Here is the mystery of unification of the principle ‘Jesus’ and the principle ‘Christ.’”

“As you remember, one of the major steps that the activators of the negative state needed to take was to isolate, separate and break the unity, oneness and harmony of all spiritual principles. The most important and effective step in this negative process is separation of Truth from its Good and Good from its Truth. This is an eternal spiritual marriage. Truth without its good has no life and meaning in itself. It is a dead horse (to use your figure of speech). However, Good without Truth has no means for its manifestation. Thus, in their separate state, they have no power. Such an accomplishment allows the negative state to come to its fruition and become powerful. What makes the positive state weak serves as a

power to the negative state.”

“In this respect, separation of ‘Jesus’ from ‘Christ’ denotes violation and denial of all fundamental spiritual principles. But that violation needed to be acknowledged and experienced by The Most High first, before the reunification of these principles could take place.”

“Remember, please, the incarnation of Jesus Christ was incarnation into the negative state, the state of disunion, separation and isolation. This constitutes its very nature. Jesus Christ could not appear in the negative state in His/Her original unified state. That would miss the point. An appearance in the unified condition would constitute an instant annihilation of the negative state. The negative state cannot stand for a fraction of a second such a unified state. And being that that unified state in Jesus Christ would be in an Absolute condition, the disaster for the negative state would be absolute. This would not be an act of salvation but a destruction. If this were the case, the negative state would be right in its depiction of God as a cruel, murderous and bloodthirsty monster.”

“For this reason, the entrance of Jesus Christ into the negative state had to be undertaken under the rules and regulations existing in the negative state — in the state of separation.”

“Thus, ‘Christ’ principle was separated first and fused into and hybridized with the elements of Joseph (falsities of the negative state) and the elements of Mary (evils of the negative state). From that position, from the position of ‘Christ,’ the process of gradual elimination of falsities and false mentality began, replacing them with the truth of Christ.”

“At the same time, the principle of ‘Jesus’ — good — was gradually introduced, as elimination of evils and evil mentality was taking place, culminating into the full replacement of that evil mentality with The Divine Mentality — Jesus. Once the complete repudiation of evils and falsities was completed, the reunification of Jesus and Christ took place. Now Jesus became Jesus Christ — the unification of good and truth which prepares the road for the entrance of the Spirit of The Most High into this unified Jesus Christ.”

“The Spirit of The Most High — The Absolute Most Within Spiritual Mind — cannot enter the fused hybrid — Jesus Christ — until all evils and falsities are repudiated from that body and re-unification of all separated and isolated spiritual principles takes place. The premature entrance of The Spirit of The Most High into Jesus Christ would mean the end of the negative state because nothing of the negative state can endure the purity of The Absolute Positiveness of that Spirit and nothing of the negative state can ever enter that Spirit.”

“The word ‘bread’ corresponds to The Absolute Spirit or The Absolute Most Within Spiritual Mind of The Most High.”

“Notice, please, the sequence in which the disciples are given the cup and the bread. By that sequence, Jesus Christ emphasized a proper spiritual procedure. First the bread is given, followed by the cup. This means that you have to derive everything from the most within to the most without and not in a reverse direction, as the case is in the negative state. In fact, the negative state is built on this reverse position — from without to within.”

“The starting point of all and everything must be the spirit or the spiritual principles. All and everything is derived from these principles. Whatever exists exists by its spiritual principles that continuously emanate from The Lord Jesus Christ. The word ‘bread’ signifies this fact because it gives food to the body, keeping that body alive and living. ‘Bread’ encompasses and signifies all goods that the body needs for its survival. It is the spirit (‘bread’) of that body

that gives it life. To take and eat that bread means to acknowledge this most important, vital and crucial fact. On accepting it (eating bread), one's life depends. ***On accepting the fact that this Divine Spirit was present in the physical body of Jesus Christ, which also contained His/Her Divine Mentality (drinking blood), everyone's salvation from the negative state depends. There is no other way out of the negative state.***

"Remember what Jesus Christ said to people, as recorded in The Gospel According to John, Chapter 6, verses 53-56? Quote:"

"Then Jesus said to them, 'Most assuredly, I say to you, unless you eat the flesh of the Son of Man and drink His blood, you have no life in you. Whoever eats My flesh and drinks My blood has eternal life, and I will raise him up at the last day. For My flesh is food indeed, and My blood is drink indeed. He who eats My flesh and drinks My blood abides in Me, and I in him.'"

"This is exactly what is meant by the statement quoted here. And this is exactly what the true spiritual significance of The Last Supper is."

"In the context of The Last Supper, Jesus Christ equated the word 'bread' with the words 'My body.' The emphasis is here on acceptance of the fact that the physical body-flesh will become an integral component of the totality of The Most High's Nature which becomes the fullness of The Lord Jesus Christ. 'The Lord' is the missing link. At the time of fusion, Jesus Christ was, in fact, 'Christ.' After the repudiation of mentality, inherited from Joseph and Mary, He became Jesus Christ. However, after the completion of the fusion of that body into The Most High, He/She became The Lord Jesus Christ."

"To accept this fact means to eat His/Her flesh — true bread, and to drink His/Her blood — a true drink. Only by this acceptance can one have an eternal life in the positive state, totally free from the negative state. To accept this is good (food) because it is the real truth (drink). Whatever is good is true. Whatever is true is good. Here is the true, genuine unification of all spiritual principles that constitute the life of the positive state."

"The meaning of The Last Supper is a constant reminder that there is no other way into the kingdom of God but through the full acceptance of this New Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ (as revealed in this book)."

"There are a few additional points worthy of noticing about The Last Supper:"

(1)

"In the foresight of the betrayal of Christianity, The Lord Jesus Christ instituted The Last Supper as a memento of what the true meaning of the First Coming of Jesus Christ was. It was foreseen by Him/Her that Christian religions, as all others, would be in the externals of spirituality but not in its internals. Because of this fact, it was necessary to devise an external means by which some awareness of these important spiritual factors could be conveyed to them. This is one of the reasons why Paul recapitulated the external process of The Last Supper, as was performed by The Lord Jesus Christ, and instituted it in all churches (I Corinthians, 11:23-26). It was Paul's role to bring this externalization to its utmost fruition."

"By conveyance of these facts, through such external means, albeit very obscure, some

proper spiritual life could be maintained on your planet and in the rest of the Zone of Displacement. These are the true remains of the spiritual fact which will serve at a later date for salvation of everyone from the negative state and for permanent abolishment of the negative state. This spiritual fact is the one on which the outcome of the verdict of the Last Judgment, described in the previous Chapter, and based on everyone's spirituality and its quality, depends."

"This is the reason why the issues, contained in the symbolism of The Last Supper, are emphasized so much. But it also shows you how far off most Christians are, as well as all others, in the conceptualization of The Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ when they separated Jesus from Christ and Christ from Jesus and The Lord Jesus Christ from God and God from The Lord Jesus Christ and the Holy Spirit from all of them. The Holy Spirit, in this particular connotation, was The Spirit of The Most High or that element from The Absolute Most Within Spiritual Mind, which was fused with the rest of the elements used in the process of hybridization of Jesus Christ and, later on, of The Most High, when The Most High became The Lord Jesus Christ."

"Now, the symbolism of The Last Supper emphasizes this unity and it will serve as a witness against all those who participate in its external rituals but in their heart reject the acceptance of the facts represented by it, as described in this chapter."

(2)

"One of the important aspects of the content and meaning of The Last Supper is validation of and emphasis on the important spiritual principle of sharing. This is reflected in the words 'divide it among yourselves' and by drinking from the same cup."

"This principle implies that each sentient entity and human is a unique one and has a unique and non-repeatable perception of The Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ from the specific position each individual occupies among others. That perception differs from individual to individual based on the unique structure of their personalities and their nature. No one is the same. Therefore, from the position of this *unsameness*, one tends to perceive, understand and incorporate The Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ somewhat differently. This reflects the crucial fact that no one can perceive and understand The Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ in an absolute sense. The act of perception and understanding is relative, relative to the specific nature of each individual."

"In order to give a broader and more varied perception and understanding of the true Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ, a spiritual principle of sharing was established. Everyone is to share one's perception and understanding of this Nature, as well as how one relates to It, with everyone else."

"But notice, please, the disciples were to divide **the same** piece of bread and drink from **the same** cup. This important fact indicates that it is absolutely the same Lord Jesus Christ that they are sharing, and not someone different; and that one's perception of understanding of and relatedness to The Lord Jesus Christ is as valid and as important as anyone else's and it is absolutely the same Lord Jesus Christ they relate to. In the foresight of the many religious sects springing up around the teachings about the nature of The Lord Jesus Christ, and claiming to be the only right ones, some symbolism of the unifying principle needed to be introduced. To a certain extent, The Last Supper serves this purpose. Again, it is a reminder that there is only one God and that that God is The Lord Jesus Christ who is perceived in infinite varieties of ways and manners, but, nevertheless, is the very same Lord Jesus Christ."

(3)

"Another important aspect of the meaning of The Last Supper is the indication of the foundation on which a relationship with The Lord Jesus Christ is established. It is not sufficient to intellectually acknowledge The Lord Jesus Christ as described in this book. That does not provide any reciprocity and, therefore, has no tangible, or any other, consequences. It must be built on a very personal, very private and very intimate attitude."

"The principle here is that, in order to establish any meaningful consequential relationship with The Lord Jesus Christ, one must make, from one's own free will and by one's own free choice, an invitation to The Lord Jesus Christ to enter one's heart. An intellectual relationship is a relationship from the outside, in a state of separation. One is separated from The Lord Jesus Christ. If this is the case, one is in the negative state. To be separated from The Lord Jesus Christ means to be in the negative state."

"The implication of this statement is enormous. You can never get out of the negative state or to be saved from its hold over you unless you invite The Lord Jesus Christ to enter you, to be an integral part of you and to be one with you. This is what is meant by the words 'eating His flesh' and 'drinking His blood.' This is a personal, private and intimate intake. This is a reciprocal relationship because The Lord Jesus Christ became an integral part of you and you became an integral part of The Lord Jesus Christ. This is what is meant by the words, 'he who eats My flesh and drinks My blood abides in Me, and I in him' (John 6:56)."

"To accept the true nature of The Lord Jesus Christ, as described in this book, and to invite Him/Her to enter you and to become an integral part of you, and to be the ruler of your life, means reciprocal sharing. The Lord Jesus Christ shares Himself/Herself with you and you share yourself with The Lord Jesus Christ and subsequently you share this unique experience with everyone else who is willing to share and to be shared. By doing this, you participate in The Lord Jesus Christ's Supper. And this is what The Lord Jesus Christ's Last Supper is all about."

(4)

"Once this is acknowledged, and this kind of sharing is established, no need exists to participate in an external ritualistic process of The Last Supper as practiced by all Christian churches."

"The original purpose of establishment of any church was to help people in the process of their mutual sharing. Certain steps were developed to assist people in concentrating on the issues at hand and on getting in touch with The Lord Jesus Christ within themselves so that they could invite Him/Her to enter all aspects of their spirit, soul and body and reciprocate His/Her invitation to become one with Him/Her by entering Him/Her (I in you and you in Me). This is the only role that any church should have. However, under the influence of the negative state, all these steps and procedures became only external rituals without any deeper meaning. They were pronounced or proclaimed to be holy in themselves and their external performance or participation in them was and is considered to be sufficient for leading a true spiritual life."

"The ritual of The Last Supper did not escape this fate. It became even more ritualized and externalized than anything else. It lost entirely its true meaning. Under the presently existing condition, it turned into a meaningless procedure that lacks any true spiritual connotation. In view of the availability of this New Revelation by The Lord Jesus Christ, The Last Supper, in a traditional Christian connotation, is hereby being abolished. It is no longer valid. The present form of The Last Supper, which is being instituted as of now, is to go inward on a daily basis and commune with The Lord Jesus Christ on a personal, private and intimate

basis, confirming the fact that The Lord Jesus Christ is in you and you are in The Lord Jesus Christ. By confirming that, you are in control of your life, able to repudiate all impositions of the negative state continuously impinging on you as long as you are in the physical body.”

“However, bear in mind, that, in order to be in this daily communication or communion with The Lord Jesus Christ, participating in His/Her Last Supper, it is necessary to accept The New Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ as revealed in this book. Failure to do so will get you in contact with the false ‘christs’ and false ‘Jesus Christ’ and all hosts of false prophets who will appear to you as angels of light. This is an important warning. Many humans will have a great degree of difficulty accepting this fact. But this is a New Revelation and The Lord Jesus Christ makes everything new and different. The old ways are irrevocably passing away.”

“He/she who has ears to hear, let him/her hear what The Lord Jesus Christ reveals in this Chapter.”

CHAPTER TEN

UPDATE, MODIFICATION AND REDEFINITION OF THE SPIRITUAL LAWS

On February 18, 1988, at 4:40 a.m., the word of The Lord Jesus Christ came to me, saying,

“In this book it was revealed that revolutionary changes have been taking place in the entire Creation. These changes were prompted by the profound changes that occurred in the conceptualization of The Nature of The Most High who became the totality of The Lord Jesus Christ.”

“It was said that The New Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ requires a new approach in the way sentient entities relate to Him/Her.”

“The important spiritual principles, formulated previously, are that, whenever a certain step, era, epoch, or whatever you have, fulfills its purpose, it is succeeded by the next step. All principles, states and conditions of the previous step are carefully evaluated and assessed in order to determine to what extent, if at all, they can be transferred into the next step.”

“As you know, the spiritual quality of the succeeding step is considerably different from the previous step and many, if not most, things are not transferable into the next step.”

“This is a spiritual law applicable at all times and to all steps.”

“A good example of such modifications and changes can be seen in Moses’ Law given to the children of Israel. At the time of The First Coming of Jesus Christ most of that law exhausted its usefulness and fulfilled its purpose. Unless any law exhausts its usefulness and fulfills its purpose, it cannot be modified or abolished or changed. This is what is meant by the words recorded in Matthew 5:18:”

““For assuredly, I say to you, till heaven and earth pass away, one jot or one tittle will by no means pass from the law till all is fulfilled.””

“Some humans incorrectly assumed that all spiritual laws are of a permanent, non-modifiable nature. But the above-quoted statement only indicates that the laws cannot be broken until all in them is fulfilled.”

“The First Coming of The Lord Jesus Christ was a fulfillment of that particular law. Therefore, it is not by coincidence that, following the above statement, Jesus Christ went right ahead and either abolished certain laws or considerably modified them. The whole fifth Chapter in Matthew, following verse 18, describes nothing else but the process of this abolishment and modification.”

“Later on, during His/Her mission on your planet, Jesus Christ reduced and modified the entire law of Moses to two laws, as recorded in Matthew, Chapter 22, verses 34-40 (and in other Gospels).”

“As you remember, these two principles are as follows:”

“‘You shall love the Lord your God with all your heart, with all your soul, and with all your mind.’ ‘And you shall love your neighbor as yourself.’” “And He said, ‘On these two commandments hang all the Law and Prophets.’”

“At the end of His/Her mission, Jesus Christ gave His/Her disciples a new commandment, recorded in John 13:34-35.”

“‘A new commandment I give to you, that you love one another; as I have loved you, you also love one another. By this all will know that you are My disciples, if you have love for one another.’”

“The next step, following The Lord Jesus Christ’s departure from your planet, was a step of exemplification and differentiation of spiritual principles.”

“How do you differentiate between the followers of The Lord Jesus Christ and all others? By showing deep love and appreciation to one another. If you behave in the same manner and way as everyone else, what is the difference between you and others? It is obvious that, at the time Jesus Christ gave this new commandment to His/Her disciples, no true love of one another existed on your planet. Otherwise, there would be no need to formulate this commandment or law.”

“Now, the above illustration can give you an idea how periodic updates, modifications and redefinitions of all spiritual principles and laws are occurring and why they are necessary.”

“At the present time, a new period in the history of this cycle of time has begun. This period is not the beginning of one new step only, as the situation was with previous periods and steps of this cycle of time. This is an entirely New Era within this cycle of time which is being initiated by The Lord Jesus Christ. This New Era could not have started until the profound changes in The Nature of The Most High took place and The Most High became The Lord Jesus Christ. Once this was accomplished, the previous era or period exhausted its usefulness and fulfilled its purpose and the New Era of spiritual development came to its fruition. The New Revelation, contained in this book, is a reflection of this New Era.”

“This New Era or Period involves the entire Creation and its multiverse, all sentient entities, the entire Zone of Displacement, and all its inhabitants and your planet.”

“The multiversal implications of this Era are enormous and will continue for a long period of time — to the very end of this cycle of time and beyond.”

“Because of this enormous importance, all spiritual laws that ruled the previous era or period must be redefined, updated, modified and, if necessary, abolished and replaced.”

“At this time the following laws will be considered:”

(1)

“The very first law relates to the love of The Lord your God. This law is being modified in the following manner:”

“YOU SHALL LOVE THE LORD JESUS CHRIST UNCONDITIONALLY WITH

WISDOM FROM THE TOTALITY OF YOUR 'I AM' ABOVE ALL AND ABOVE EVERYTHING FOR THE SAKE OF THE LORD JESUS CHRIST AND FOR THE SAKE OF THE PRINCIPLE ITSELF WITHOUT EXPECTING ANYTHING IN RETURN. BY YOUR OWN FREE WILL AND CHOICE YOU SHALL CONFESS THAT THERE IS ONLY ONE GOD, THE CREATOR, THE SAVIOR AND THE SOURCE OF THE TRUE LIFE — THE LORD JESUS CHRIST. BY YOUR OWN FREE WILL AND CHOICE YOU SHALL ACKNOWLEDGE AND ACCEPT THE NEW NATURE OF THE LORD JESUS CHRIST, RECOGNIZING THE FACT THAT THE HUMAN FLESH OF JESUS CHRIST WAS MADE DIVINE, AS HIS/HER DIVINE WAS MADE HUMAN, AND WAS FULLY INCORPORATED, FUSED AND HYBRIDIZED INTO THE TOTALITY OF THE MOST HIGH, MAKING THE MOST HIGH FULLY AND COMPLETELY THE LORD JESUS CHRIST.”

“Unless this fundamentally important new spiritual law, ruling the New Age, is accepted first, no other following laws will have any power or significance any longer.”

(2)

“The second law relates to the love of others. This law is being modified in the following manner:”

“YOU SHALL UNCONDITIONALLY LOVE WITH WISDOM FROM THE TOTALITY OF YOUR 'I AM' EVERYONE ELSE ABOVE YOURSELF FOR THE SAKE OF THE LORD JESUS CHRIST PRESENT IN THEM, FOR THE SAKE OF THEM AND FOR THE SAKE OF PRINCIPLE ITSELF WITHOUT EXPECTING ANYTHING IN RETURN.”

(3)

“The third law is an entirely new law, as derived from the above modified laws. One aspect of this law was contained in the old commandment, ‘Love your neighbor as yourself.’ The formulation of this new law is as follows:”

“YOU SHALL UNCONDITIONALLY LOVE WITH WISDOM FROM THE TOTALITY OF YOUR 'I AM' YOURSELF IN ALL ASPECTS OF YOUR MANIFESTATION — YOUR SPIRIT, YOUR SOUL AND YOUR BODY — YOUR ONE MIND, FOR THE SAKE OF THE LORD JESUS CHRIST IN YOU AND IN OTHERS, FOR THE SAKE OF OTHERS AND THE ENTIRE CREATION, FOR THE SAKE OF YOURSELF AS A UNIQUE AND NON-REPEATABLE INDIVIDUAL AND FOR THE SAKE OF PRINCIPLE ITSELF BECAUSE IT IS THE RIGHT THING TO DO.”

“Now, on these three laws all spiritual principles depend and from them all of the others derive. Their fulfillment means the fulfillment of the entire laws in being and existence.”

“Before proceeding to the other laws, some explanation about the content of the above-defined three laws is necessary.”

“The two terms need to be explained: ‘Unconditional love’ and ‘to love with wisdom.’ As you noticed, these terms did not exist in the old laws. The word ‘love’ was simply used. It was done so for a purpose of reflecting the spiritual condition that existed before and that was to follow after The Lord Jesus Christ’s departure from your planet.”

“As you remember, that condition was externalization, literalization and ritualization of all spiritual principles, making them void by that process. There is no wisdom in such an attitude

and process. Neither is there any comprehension of the principles themselves.”

“Because of this the word ‘wisdom’ was not used since it was a foolish approach. But neither could the word ‘unconditional’ have been used. It would be taken literally. Humans would incorrectly assume that one must love others in their evil and negative state. To love like that would mean to love evils and falsities.”

“So, only the word ‘love’ was used to indicate that the true source of life can be found only in loving God, others and oneself. But this does not define how that love should be manifested. Instead, one was referred to the Ten Commandments. They indicate only what one should not do. (On the issue of the Ten Commandments, see Chapter Twenty-Four ‘The Ten Commandments Revisited’ in this book.)”

“But, except urging to accept God, they did not say what one should do or they indicated it very vaguely. It was therefore assumed that following the rituals as prescribed by Moses’ Law, or in the Christian era, following the dictates of the literal statements of Jesus Christ and particularly of Paul, constitutes what one should do. Moreover, the clause of reward was attached to following these prescriptions. ‘If you do this, it will be well with you.’ Or, ‘just as you want men to do to you, you also do to them likewise’ (Luke 6:31). Again, setting a condition: ‘I will treat you well because I want to be treated well.’ Therefore, I do it for my own sake. I love God for my own sake, I love others for my own sake, and I love myself for my own sake. With the quality of such love, you cannot use the words ‘unconditional’ or ‘wisdom.’”

“The reasons why such love was initiated at that time and continued into the Christian era can be found in the spiritual quality that ruled the entire Zone of Displacement and your planet. By that time, all spiritual principles were perverted, distorted or totally falsified. No proper and genuine knowledge existed about anything. In order to motivate humans to do anything spiritual under those conditions, you must begin from the position they are in. That position is that they do everything for their own sake.”

“The first step in spiritual awakening is to have humans love for their own personal reasons. Once they are firmly grounded in such love, they are gradually introduced into the true knowledge of spiritual principles which, eventually, help them to change that attitude and begin doing things for the sake of common good.”

“However, in this New Era, such spiritual conditions are no longer tolerable. The previous conceptualization of love has fulfilled its purpose and a new understanding and practice of love is being formulated. Now it is time to begin loving unconditionally with wisdom. At the first look, it may seem that this statement in itself is contradictory. How can you love unconditionally with wisdom? Does it not imply a selective love? The contradiction is a seeming one.”

“The unconditional state applies only to the positive state. Whatever is positive can come only from The Lord Jesus Christ. The positive state has nothing in itself of the negative nature. Therefore, it is to be loved unconditionally for its own sake as something that constitutes the very life. In the positive state there is a fullness of the presence of The Lord Jesus Christ. The positive state is The Lord Jesus Christ who, at the same time, transcends it in all respects. Hence, the requirement to love The Lord Jesus Christ unconditionally above all and above everything because He/She is the only source of life who gives that life **to everyone unconditionally without any strings attached**. To love in such a manner is wise. Hence, to love with wisdom.”

“On the other hand, how does one manifest an unconditional love in the midst of the negative state full of hatred, cruelty, meanness and destructiveness? By rejecting the nature of the negative state. Unconditional rejection of everything negative, evil and false constitutes the unconditional love of everyone in the negative state. As you say it, it is not good for your health (for your life) to be this way. If I truly love you, I do not want you to be that way. In such a love is its wisdom. It is wise to reject everything negative because its presence repudiates the presence of the positive state, that is, The Lord Jesus Christ. Lack of that presence signifies lack of true life. To love evils and falsities unconditionally means to hate and despise everything positive, that is, The Lord Jesus Christ. This is a foolishness of such love.”

“Another distinction here is to love someone unconditionally in the negative state but to reject his/her evil and negative lifestyle. The rejection of it is not only verbal but, primarily, by your own lifestyle which is fundamentally different from the lifestyle of the negative state.”

“Remember the new commandment that Jesus Christ was giving to His/Her disciples? Love one another so that by that love others, who are not in such love, may know that you are of the positive state. You are loving here for their sake, for the sake of The Lord Jesus Christ, giving them an example of what it is like to be in the positive state as compared to being in the negative state. And this is what to love unconditionally with wisdom, being in the negative state, means.”

“Another aspect of such love is that everyone carries within oneself a presence of The Lord Jesus Christ in some degree or other. The agents and the slaves of the negative state also have that presence, otherwise, they could not live for a fraction of a second.”

“However, as Swedenborg already pointed out, their problem is that they deny that presence and turn their backs on it. By that act, they exclude their presence in The Lord Jesus Christ, that is, in the positive state. No reciprocity exists here. To love anyone like that unconditionally means to love unconditionally The Presence of The Lord Jesus Christ in them.”

“One loves The Lord Jesus Christ in others, and others because they carry that presence in them. All else is not relevant, has no significance and is unreal. How can you love something unreal? Such love does not exist.”

“In loving unconditionally The Lord Jesus Christ in others, and others for that sake, and loving unconditionally The Lord Jesus Christ in yourself, and yourself for that sake, is the true wisdom of that love. This is the only real love from which any other loves derive. This is what is meant by loving unconditionally with wisdom.”

“But what does it mean to love? How is love manifested in everyday practical life? It is not sufficient to verbalize such love. As you know, humans are masters in saying and claiming one thing but, at the same time, thinking and feeling exactly the opposite of what they are saying or claiming. Therefore, the verbal statements regarding such love are not sufficient by themselves. They can be considered only an external expression that such love may or may not exist.”

“In actuality, there are, at least, seven confirmatory signs that such love exists and is real in your life.”

“First, you continuously think about loving The Lord Jesus Christ, others and yourself unconditionally with wisdom. Each state or feeling, no matter what it is, must enter your awareness and become an integral part of your thinking. Without being consciously aware in

your active thinking of this unconditional wise love, no endorsement of such love exists.”

“Second, you intensely feel this unconditional wise love toward The Lord Jesus Christ, others and yourself. Whenever you think of The Lord Jesus Christ, others and yourself, tremendously warm, joyous and happy feelings spread all over you.”

“Third, you continuously experience a tremendous desire and will to love unconditionally, with wisdom, The Lord Jesus Christ, others and yourself more and more every day. All your will, effort, strength, power and determination are directed toward such pure, unconditional wise love.”

“Fourth, your intentions in all your activities, without any exception and exclusions, are to do everything from the position of this unconditional wise love toward The Lord Jesus Christ, others and yourself.”

“Fifth, your actions, behaviors and attitudes are directed toward continuous manifestation and reinforcement of this unconditional wise love toward The Lord Jesus Christ, others and yourself.”

“Sixth, you go inward (as described in Chapter Five of this book) two-three times a day to commune with The Lord Jesus Christ, others and yourself (the meaning of The Last Supper), asking The Lord Jesus Christ to help you to love with wisdom unconditionally more and more Him/Her, others and yourself and to teach you how to love properly and appropriately and the manner in which such love is to be exemplified, actualized, realized, lived and practiced on a continuous basis. Only from within yourself, from the presence of The Lord Jesus Christ within you, can you discover the specific manifestation of that love in your own individualized life. Remember, different individuals manifest different aspects and needs of that love. In acknowledging and expressing such aspects and needs is the wisdom of that love.”

“And seventh, you express and verbalize tactfully and with prudence this unconditional wise love by volunteering to share such love, if requested or asked for, without imposing it on anyone contrary to their free will and choice, but also without ‘casting pearls before swine and giving what is holy to the dogs’ (Matthew 7:6). While you commune and communicate with The Lord Jesus Christ within yourself during your daily practices of going inward, you ask The Lord Jesus Christ to give you a greater degree of discerning wisdom and intuition which would enable you to know and to intuit when, where, how and to whom to express, verbalize and share with your unconditional wise love.”

“To give love to ‘swine’ and ‘dogs,’ that is, to evils and falsities, or individuals totally identified with evils and falsities, means to endorse their evils and falsities. By endorsing them, you give these individuals the power which belongs to The Lord Jesus Christ. By giving them that power, you endanger your own life by the ceasement of the protection from The Lord Jesus Christ (transfer of power). In that case, they really will ‘turn and tear you into pieces’ (Matthew 7:6).”

“Now, to repeat, all these good things you do for the sake of The Lord Jesus Christ; for the sake of all spiritual principles; for the sake of others; for the sake of yourself as a carrier of a unique and specific presence of The Lord Jesus Christ in you; and for the sake that this is the right thing to do without expecting anything in return, that is, for the sake of the principle itself. To do this in such a manner is to practice what is required by the three spiritual laws formulated above. These three laws constitute the foundation of spiritual life. They constitute the life of the remaining ten laws which follow.”

“1. THE LAW OF FREEDOM OF CHOICE FOR THE SAKE OF PRINCIPLE:”

“Whatever one does, feels, thinks, wills, intents, says and acts, unless it is done so by one’s own freedom of choice and free will for the sake of principle, cannot be appropriated to that one. It does not have any personal spiritual validity. In the process of one’s personal Last Judgment it will be taken away from that one.”

“The requirement of The New Spiritual State is that only those things can become an integral part of your true life (from the standpoint of its eternal continuation) which were acquired by you from the sole position of your own free choice, by your own free will, for the sake of principle, because it is the right thing to do. Anything else, not acquired by such means, will fall away from you and will not be counted in your final judgment. It was imposed by some other external considerations. And even though some of them might be positive and good, they will have no influence on your life because they have never been internalized by you.”

“The process of internalization can happen only if you accept it by your own free will and choice. All other things, that do not go beyond your externals, remain in the externals. As you know, you cannot take with you anything external because your life is in your internals and not externals.”

“Being in the negative state, there are many things you have to do which you would never choose to do if you were living in the positive state. The lifestyle in the negative state very often requires from you to behave, to act, to feel and to say things that are not coming from your heart — your internals. They are imposed on you by the laws of the negative state. You do them because the initial choice, before your physical birth, for some important spiritual reasons, was to enter the negative state. That choice presupposed to do and to experience things in the negative state that otherwise would not be chosen. And yet you must do them in order to survive in the negative state: Pay your bills, hold your job, relate to humans who have nothing in common with you, tolerate things offensive to the positive state, and many other such things you have to do.”

“Now, if you were to identify yourself with these negative things and actions by your own free will and choice, because you find them enjoyable, comfortable and very appropriate; or if you were to choose them for the sake of your own reputation, worldly position and prestige, or for any other ulterior reasons, they would all become an integral part of your life; that is, they would be internalized within you, and, in the last accounting, they would be appropriated to you as your own.”

“However, the same is true regarding the positive and good things in both directions. Unless you choose to be positive, loving, wise and good by your own free will and choice, for the sake of principle, because this is the right way to be, without any strings attached, that positiveness, goodness and lovingness remains in your externals only. They do not enter into your internals.”

“As you know, many humans act, behave and look good, positive, wise and loving. But they do so not because they choose to be that way for the sake of principles, not because they really want to be that way, but because it is profitable for them to be that way. Their position, prestige, good standing in the eyes of others, or whatever you have, dictate to and impose on them to be that way. Under different conditions, they would never choose to be that way.”

“Therefore, nothing of that goodness, positiveness, lovingness and wisdom can be appropriated to them or taken into an account during their personal Last Judgment. It will be taken away from them and given to those who were that way by their own free will and choice

for the sake of principles themselves. This is exactly what is meant by the words of Jesus Christ, recorded, for example, in Luke 19:26:"

"For I say to you, that everyone who has will be given; and from him who does not have, even what he has will be taken away from him."

"Everyone who has' means everyone who acquired things by free will and choice, for the sake of principles without any external consideration and imposition. 'Him who does not have' means those who did so by other than this proper consideration, stemming from free choice to choose something for the sake of principles because it is the right thing to do. Their good works are separated from them and given to those who would do so with the right intent and motivation, as defined by this law."

"The modification of this law is reflected in the words 'for the sake of principle because it is the right thing to do.' This is an extension of the old law of freedom of choice which was limited by formulation of free will and choice without any consideration of principle itself."

"In the new spiritual approach, 'the principle itself' plays the most significant role. The important consideration here is not only how you choose something (whether by free will or not) but also why you choose something (is it for the sake of principle itself because it is the right thing to do or for some other reasons?)."

"So, the combination of 'how' and 'why' determines to what extent you apply this New Law in your life."

"2. THE LAW OF DIVERSIFIED ONENESS AND EQUALITY:"

"There is only One Absolute Principle of Life — The Lord Jesus Christ. Having an Absolute Nature, the Oneness of this Principle must manifest Itself in an Absolute Sense. But no two Absolute States coexist side by side in order to share themselves with each other in an absolute sense. Coexistence of the two Absolutes is mutually exclusive. Neither of them would be Absolute but only relative to each other. For this reason, all inclusive manifestation of The Absolute is diversified in infinite varieties and manners of ways. In the total cumulative sum of all these diversified manners and ways is the manifestation in an Absolute Sense. Because each particle of that Diversity is contained in The Absolute State, it is as important and as needed for the manifestation of that State in an Absolute Sense as any other particle or whatever it is. For that reason they are all equal. No preferential treatment of any one of them is possible or even conceivable."

"In this Diversified Oneness and Equality is rooted the nature of the positive state. Any deviation from this law constitutes violation of the principles of the positive state, and the negative state comes into its being and existence."

"The principle here implies that The Absolute State — The Lord Jesus Christ — is Absolutely Positive. The negative state does not stem from The Absolute Positive but from the violation and deviation of this principle."

"In order for the negative state to be and to exist, an idea of separation, inequality and preference must be conceived. But such an idea cannot be conceived in someone who is Absolutely Positive. However, it can be conceived in someone who is relative to The Absolutely Positive because that someone cannot consider oneself to be equal with It."

“The equality of the relative beings is founded on the fact that they equally contain within themselves the presence of The Lord Jesus Christ, that is, The Absolute State. Acknowledgment and acceptance of the fact that The Lord Jesus Christ manifests Himself/Herself in infinite varieties and manners of ways among and within each individual, unifies all individuals equally within The Lord Jesus Christ. By this process, the idea of separation, preference, inequality, etc., is nullified and does not take hold.”

“However, in the moment anyone fails to acknowledge and accept this principle, he/she begins to perceive himself/herself as isolated, separated from and unequal to his/her Source. This gives an impetus for the negative state to come to its fruition.”

“The negative state is founded on the opposition to this law.”

“This is an old law which is being reformulated here with the emphasis on the fact of how important it is to see your relationship to The Lord Jesus Christ in this perspective and how to avoid falling into the traps of the negative state which continuously exemplifies by the most vivid actions and lifestyle its opposition to this law.”

“The new aspect of this law can be found in The New Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ, which makes it possible to experience Him/Her on an equal basis through that physical body-flesh which was originally built from the relative negative elements of the Zone of Displacement and planet Zero and incorporated, after its divinization, into the totality of The Nature of The Most High. Through this New State, The Lord Jesus Christ can relate to you not only from the position of The Absolute State, but also from the position of the relative state, coming down to your level as one equal to another.”

“By this fact, the sense of inequality of the relative to The Absolute, which has potentials for the activation of the negative state, is being nullified and made void. An eternally important factor of the incarnation of The Most High in the form of Jesus Christ into a relative and negative condition, experiencing the relative condition, and incorporating it in His/Her Nature, makes it possible for Him/Her to relate to everyone from their relative position, that is, as one equal to another. Because of this crucial factor, the necessity for the activation of the negative state in the future, after this cycle of time is ended, is being eternally prevented. Before this incarnation and assumption of the relative body-flesh, no one could relate to The Most High with a sense of any equality. Such a situation is always a potential for reactivation of the negative state.”

“But now The Lord Jesus Christ can relate to you from your position — from the position of relativity. This also gives an opportunity to everyone who wants to experience The Lord Jesus Christ in the most unique, private, personal, equal and intimate manner.”

“As you see, the fact of The New Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ has enormous implication for all cycles of time that will follow the current one. From now on, at any time and at any place, with everyone in being and existence, The Lord Jesus Christ will be able to relate from each individual’s position and state, as one equal to another without ever producing a feeling of inferiority or inequality of the relative to The Absolute. Thus, to repeat, no opportunity for the negative state to be initiated again will ever occur. This is another aspect of saving grace of The Lord Jesus Christ.”

“Thus, this law is being modified and updated to include this most important fact, lacking from the old law because the process of fusion and hybridization, as described in the previous chapters, had not been completed yet.”

“3. THE LAW OF SPIRITUAL REALITY:”

“There is only one reality in being and existence from which all else derives its own reality — the spiritual reality. Nothing can be and exist in itself and by itself without a spiritual idea of its formation into reality which gives an impetus for such reality to become. In other words, any reality at all is formulated at first as a spiritual idea. Once it is formulated or has occurred in the spirit, it has a tendency to proceed into its concrete manifestation. The form of this manifestation can take any appearance or shape in accordance with the content of the originating idea.”

“In an absolute sense this law denotes that there can be only one true reality — the reality of The Absolute Being and Absolute Existence of The Absolute Spirit of The Lord Jesus Christ — from whom everything without exception and exclusion derives. Nothing can exist whatsoever without this Absolute Being and Existence. In this fact is the very spiritual principle of all reality.”

“First, there is a spirit; second, there is a soul of that spirit; third, there is a form of manifestation of that spirit and its soul; and fourth, there is an environment of that spirit built from the spirit’s ideas of the proper projection and manifestation of its form.”

“This law also indicates that whatever is and exists is the carrier and image of all principles and laws of its originating source. Thus, it has a tendency to assume its own independent being and existence, or its own reality based on the true reality of its source. For that reason, looked upon itself, it seems to have its own reality as though being independent of anything else.”

“The implications of this law for all sentient entities are enormous. Being that they originate from the Ideas of The Absolute Spirit of The Lord Jesus Christ, their life depends absolutely on The Absolute Life of The Lord Jesus Christ.”

“However, reflecting in themselves the image and likeness of their Creator, they appear self-contained, self-real and independent of their Absolute Source.”

“The principle here is that, once an idea occurs in The Absolute Sentient Mind, by its nature that idea tends to project itself into its own being and existence, becoming its own reality.”

“This is a necessary condition for sentient life and life of the multiverse. The motivation to be and to exist derives from one’s ability to be independent.”

“On the other hand, to be independent is one of the most vital prerequisites for establishing a reciprocal relationship with others and, most importantly, with one’s Absolute Source — The Lord Jesus Christ.”

“As you know, one of the purposes of Creation was to establish such a reciprocal relationship with creativees. If they were not to have this sense of independence and their own reality, they could not form a meaningful, free and lasting relationship with their Absolute Source.”

“Thus, in the process of their creation, they were endowed by their Creator with the same attributes their Creator has: Freedom of choice, independence and the sense of self-realness.”

“From that position, having these important attributes, all sentient entities can have a sense

of their own independent reality from which they can relate to their Absolute Source without any sense of compulsion or slavery.”

“Continuous awareness of this fact constitutes the very spiritual principle of this law. Rejection of the content, meaning and reality of this law gives an impetus for the negative state to come into its being and existence. The reality of the negative state’s independent being and existence is based on the fact of acceptance of this rejection. Whatever is rejected from the true being and existence becomes reality for the negative state’s being and existence.”

“If such truth of this matter were never to be rejected, no negative state would ever be and exist. In this fact is the very spiritual principle of the negative state’s own reality.”

“This is an old law. In the connotation of The New Spiritual State this law is being modified in the following manner:”

“As of now, the true reality of anyone’s being and existence is determined by the position, stance and relationship one chooses to have toward The New Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ as described throughout this book. Because this is The New Absolute Reality, the independence of all other realities in being and existence is defined by the degree of reciprocity one is willing to offer to this New Nature of The Absolute Spiritual Reality — The Lord Jesus Christ. The acceptance and affirmation of this fact puts everyone in the position of an independent sense of one’s own reality. From this position one can reciprocate whatever is coming from The Lord Jesus Christ. Rejection of this fact puts one into the midst of the internalized negative state which is built on the principles opposite to the positive state — separation, slavery, dependence and loss of one’s reality.”

“Thus, in this connotation, no other conceptualization of The Absolute Being and Existence can sustain any longer the true spiritual reality of one’s life. Unless one is willing to accept this New Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ, as the only true God Most High, one will become spiritually dead. Confession and worship of any other God or gods, under any other name or state, is no longer tenable.”

“All aspects of The Most High, that appeared or were conceived under various different names on your planet and elsewhere in the Zone of Displacement, were fully incorporated and absorbed into this New Nature, giving rise to a totally different spiritual reality.”

“Exposure to this reality requires a reexamination of oneself and redefinition of one’s attitude one chooses to establish toward this New Reality.”

“Humans on your planet, who will not have available the information of this New Revelation, will face this choice after they arrive in the intermediate world (the World of Spirits), following the death of their physical bodies. On the other hand, those who will have an opportunity to read these words and, yet, choose to reject the truth of this matter, will automatically side with the negative state.”

“Many humans will try to justify their reluctance to accept this New Spiritual Reality as the only feasible fact on the basis that they were raised or brought up in a different religious environment not conducive to the acceptance of this view. They claim of being Jews or Buddhists or Hindus or Taoists or Muslims or Christians or whatever you have there. Belonging to these kinds of religions makes it offensive for them to accept The New Nature of The Most High, under whatever name they accept Him/Her, as The Lord Jesus Christ.”

“A dangerous tendency exists here to compromise on your part, accepting their belief system as divinely inspired and indisputable.”

“In the true spiritual connotation of this law, unwillingness to accept this fact constitutes unwillingness to change. Reluctance to change denotes the negative state's hold over such an individual. As you know, the negative state hates any change, anything new and progressive. It likes to stagnate in one condition and maintain the status quo indefinitely.”

“It is a sign of spiritual maturity and reality of one's life to be able and to want to change. Reluctance to change means dependence on and slavery to the concepts, states and conditions which one believes have permanent value. In the moment you accept that your view, opinion, lifestyle, religion or whatever you have is permanent and unchangeable, you become its slave. You lose your spiritual reality, relinquishing it to your stagnant belief system.”

“The spiritual crime of all existing religions on your planet and throughout the entire Zone of Displacement is in the fact that they dogmatized and immortalized their doctrines about spiritual principles and the Nature of God, assuming that no changes, modifications or replacement could ever occur, particularly in the Nature of God. For them to think that the Nature of God could ever change means blasphemy and unpardonable sin. The need to change in all conditions and states, including in The Nature of The Most High God, who became the fullness of The Lord Jesus Christ, constitutes the true spiritual reality of being and existence. Thus, the old law of the spiritual reality is being hereby redefined to reflect this new spiritual reality of change.”

“The reality of any being and existence derives from its ability to change as needed, when needed, if needed and in whatever manner is needed. Because The Lord Jesus Christ is The Absolute Law in Himself/ Herself this law fully applies to Him/Her as well. In this fact is the very spiritual principle of the Law of Spiritual Reality. By accepting this law as a spiritual fact, you affirm the true spiritual reality of your own being and existence.”

“4. THE LAW OF SPIRITUAL UNILATERALITY.”

“This law was introduced into being and existence after the negative state was activated. It was first mentioned in the book Fundamentals of Human Spirituality and defined properly in the book Reality, Myths & Illusion without being labeled as such. The fundamental principles of this law can be formulated as follows:”

“The positive state is the only ultimate being and existence that exists in, of and by itself without any other source or state either equal to it or superior to it or opposite to it. Being that the positive state, in its absolute sense and totality, is the very Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ, who, at the same time, transcends it, The Lord Jesus Christ is the only Absolute Being and Existence who is in, of and by Himself/Herself without any other source of His/Her origin.”

“Simply stated, there is no other Absolute State which would be the same or superior or opposite to it but The Lord Jesus Christ only.”

“The reason why this law was introduced after the activation of the negative state is because the negative state proclaimed itself as being either equal to God or superior to Him/Her or opposite to Him/Her.”

“In other words, the negative state convinced many people that there is a duality of being and existence which is the very nature of the multiverse. It is portrayed as a two-faced god Janus. One of his faces is good and the other evil.”

“The assumption here is that God’s Nature is a dual one and that, therefore, God is a source of both good and evil. In this respect, there are two equal powers in the multiverse — positive and negative. They are supposedly on the opposite poles that maintain the entire Creation in balance. Thus, the negative state has been trying to convince everyone that it derives its origin from The Most High and, therefore, is equal, if not superior, to the positive state. And not only that, but it claims that it will exist forever as a necessary condition for maintaining the balance in the multiverse and, by that role, making the freedom of choice possible. This falsity and misconception is the invention of the Hells. The pseudo-creators were trying their best to prove this point. Many religious systems contain within their teachings this dual nature of Creation and The Creator. This belief system comes from the fact that the negative state opposes all laws and principles of the positive state. This is how the negative state maintains its life. Rejection of the validity of this law makes the negative state possible. But to oppose something and be opposite of something are two entirely different things. The first one (to oppose something) derives from the life of that which it opposes. The principle here is that if something, which is being opposed, were not to exist, there would be nothing to oppose. Therefore, the opposing state would not exist either.”

“The second situation (being opposite of something) assumes two forces which are opposite to each other in place, state, condition and nature. They have their independent existence.”

“That the two opposite forces can exist is an illusion derived from some laws of the structure of the Zone of Displacement. The Zone of Displacement was specifically structured in such a manner as to prove beyond the shadow of doubt that such opposite forces exist and are the true reality. Take, for example, the existence of the North Pole and the South Pole on your planet or electric polarity. It gives you an impression that they are opposite to each other either in place or in their state and condition. However, the true reality is that they are not. In the first place, the multiverse is not flat or cornered or linear. It is circular and rounded. Therefore, each point in the multiverse occupies the same position as any other point. They are discrete in relationship to one another and not opposite.”

“Secondly, the forces which operate in each universe are structurally integral to the nature of that universe, deriving from one unifying source — the spiritual principle as defined above in The Law of Spiritual Reality. Therefore they cannot be opposite to each other. They perform different functions but those functions are of one source and not of dual or multiple origin. The negative state could never become equal to the positive state to eternity, or opposite of the positive state, because it does not have life in itself and by itself. As you remember, its life is derived from the rejected ideas of the members of the positive state.”

“The new formulation of this law has two updates: One is that The New Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ is the only Being and Existence which has life in itself, of itself and by itself; and the second is that, once the members of the positive state make a final choice not to ever have in their mind any ideas that need to be rejected, such ideas will cease to be and to exist. With their cessation the source of the negative state’s life will dry out and the negative state will be no more. At that moment this law will become obsolete because the state of the multiverse will be unilateral by its very nature, having no challenge from its fall outs, opposing its nature and structure. At that point, no fall outs will be forthcoming.”

“5. THE LAW OF SPIRITUAL VALIDATION AND INTENT:”

“This law regulates the meaning of all activities in being and existence. It states:”

“Any idea, thought, feeling, act, behavior or whatever must be validated by its consequences, outcomes, results and impacts it has both on the entire being and existence and on its producer or originator individually.”

“This law consists of two aspects of validation: The beginning of any act and the end result of that act. The quality of such an act is determined by the original intent or intention with which any particular act was initiated. On the other hand, the content of such an act is determined by outcomes, consequences, results and impact it has in a widespread manner. Nothing can be validated and take hold if it fails to produce the end result. The degree of appropriation of the end results of such an act is determined by the original intent with which the act was undertaken. In other words, if any act was undertaken for any other reasons but with an intent for multiversal benefit, common good and use for all, the end results cannot be appropriated to its originator.”

“The validation and value of any act with regard to its initiator cannot be acquired unless it serves the ultimate principle of the common good and mutual benefit for all. This is the very spiritual principle of this law. Creation was created for such a purpose.”

“In the new, updated connotation of this law, there is an added important element:”

“The Lord Jesus Christ in His/Her New Nature is the ultimate originator and intentional factor of all positive activities in being and existence. He/She is the intentional beginning and the validating end of any activities at all.”

“In the negative state the intentions of all activities are directed toward denial, rejection, distortion, falsification or perversion of the proper understanding and acceptance of the true Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ. The end results of such activities are the appropriation of these evil and false acts to their originators by which they validate the foolishness and insanity of the negative state.”

“In the positive state everything is done with a positive and good intent to see, to experience and to validate the fact that The Lord Jesus Christ is the life and the inspirator of all such activities and the intentions with which they are initiated.”

“Doing things with such an intent, the members of the positive state are appropriated by The Lord Jesus Christ all positive and good outcomes, consequences and results of their activities. By that appropriation, their activities are fully validated.”

“One important new aspect of this law came into its being and existence just recently. This happened after the completion of the fusion and incorporation of the physical body-flesh into the totality of Absolute Nature of The Most High, making Him/Her The True Lord Jesus Christ. From that moment on, all validation of such activities will have a personal, private and intimate connotation. The Lord Jesus Christ in His/Her New Nature will personally, privately and intimately appear to every individual in the positive state and by that appearance will validate all ideas, thoughts, feelings, behaviors and activities of each particular individual. This is the most blissful and elating mode of validation.”

“Another new component of this law is that, because of this, all activities of the positive state will be intended for the sake of The Lord Jesus Christ personally and for the sake of the entire Creation and its multiverse.”

“The personal component of this experience could not come fully to its fruition until The New Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ was fully established.”

“One of the many important reasons for The First Coming of Jesus Christ was to establish such an experiential possibility for the entire Creation. As you remember, before that time, no direct, personal, private and intimate relationship with The Most High was possible. The Most High could relate only by mediation. The human physical body-flesh incorporated into the totality of The Most High’s Nature, making Him/Her The Lord Jesus Christ, abolished this means of mediation.”

“Now there is a direct involvement and validation of all activities of sentient entities in the entire Creation.”

“From the new perspective of this law, it is obvious how important it is for everyone to fully accept into one’s heart this New Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ. From now on, this will be the only source of true validation of all activities of all individuals.”

“Unless the end results of any activities are validated by the acknowledgment and acceptance of The New Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ, none of them have a proper positive intention. They are motivated from the wrong source and for the wrong reasons. Such a source and such reasons place one into the negative state. Of course, the life of the negative state is based on denial and rejection of this law. There, everything is self-purposeful without any regard for The Lord Jesus Christ or mutual benefit and common good. Therefore, their activities can never be validated in a positive sense and nothing of positiveness and goodness can be appropriated to them.”

“6. THE LAW OF DIVINE PROVIDENCE OF THE LORD JESUS CHRIST:”

“This is the Law of Foresight and Permission. It was first properly formulated by Swedenborg. It is an old law. In essence it states:”

“The Divine Providence foresees all things and provides all opportunities for all such things to become actualized, realized and manifested reality.”

“In the case of the negative state, The Divine Providence permits its being and existence only because it serves some very important spiritual learning for the entire Creation. The terms ‘foresight’ and ‘permission’ are used here in order to indicate that nothing is predetermined or dictated by The Creator. Predetermination and dictates imply absolute inevitability and no freedom of choice. This is contrary to the true Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ which is absolute freedom and choice in and by Itself. It is also in violation of The Law of Freedom of Choice.”

“The basic tenet of this law states that The Lord Jesus Christ governs the entire multiverse and the Zone of Displacement through His/Her Divine Providence. ***The Divine Providence is defined as an Absolute Ability to regulate all occurrences and destinies of the entire Creation from the timeless and spaceless position and condition.*** Thus, for The Lord Jesus Christ everything is and occurs here-and-now without any past, present or future. However, at the very same time, The Lord Jesus Christ, simultaneously and synchronously, is present in the past, present and the future.”

“This double aspect of His/Her presence allows Him/Her to continuously modify all situations in such a manner as to accommodate them to ever changing choices of all participants and enables the experience of all consequences, outcomes, results and fulfillment of such

choices.”

“In a general sense, The Divine Providence of The Lord Jesus Christ knows everything and foresees everything without time and place.”

“In a specific sense, The Divine Providence of The Lord Jesus Christ lets sentient entities modify their choices and life destinies in accordance with their free will to change the initial choice and its outcomes.”

“The activities of The Divine Providence in this specific sense are limited to the provision of proper opportunities for such changes to take place. All opportunities for all choices are continuously provided with properly defined consequences of any choice. At the same time, inherent in any act of choice, there is an ability to change, to modify, to reject or to replace that choice. Such an act is foreseen by The Divine Providence, and it provides the favorable condition for this to take place.”

“However, in the negative state, and on planet Zero, certain events are **permitted** to happen without any initial choice for them to happen. The choice to be in the negative state determines the feasibility of such permission. As you know, the nature of the negative state does not allow one freedom of choice. The choice *is* to be negative, that is, to be unfree. As a result of this situation, many things happen there that, under any other condition, would never be chosen.”

“Again, this is **permitted** not because it is willed by The Lord Jesus Christ but because of the important spiritual learning which will eventually lead to *unchoosing* the negative state. To *unchoose* the negative state is the right choice. For the sake of this right choice, many things in the negative state are permitted to happen that have no sense or meaning.”

“But, after all, the negative state has no sense or meaning. Its being and existence, among other things, is **permitted** only for the purpose of illustration and demonstration that it has no sense or meaning.”

“The Divine Providence does not govern, maintain and regulate anything or anyone by imposition, force, duress or command but only by free choice. In The Absolute State of The Lord Jesus Christ, all infinite numbers of choices in being and existence are clearly present and discernible in their absolute sense, with their absolute consequences. From that position The Lord Jesus Christ governs, regulates and maintains the entire multiverse and the Zone of Displacement.”

“In the new connotation of this law there is an inclusion of the Zone of Displacement which used to be, by the permission of The Most High, under the rule of the pseudo-creators. That rule was taken away by Jesus Christ during His/Her visit in all the Hells after His/ Her crucifixion.”

“The complete control of destinies of all in the negative state was acquired after the full completion of the process of fusion and hybridization of the physical body-flesh into The Most High.”

“The New Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ, through the elements of that body, can penetrate all aspects of the entire Zone of Displacement, all the Hells and your planet and regulate, influence and modify any situation and condition that exists there. This gives Him/Her an opportunity to prepare everyone in the negative state for their eventual salvation and liberation from the negative state and for the total abolishment of the negative state. Thus,

The Divine Providence of The Lord Jesus Christ is now fully in charge of the negative state with the above purpose in mind — salvation and liberation.”

“In the new aspect of this law, everyone’s future destinies are determined by one’s relationship to The New Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ. The more one accepts this Nature, the more one is led by The Divine Providence of The Lord Jesus Christ — as a free choice. The less acceptance of this Nature, the more inevitability exists, the less freedom of choice, the more presence of the negative state.”

“But inevitability is inevitable only by one’s initial free choice to put oneself into a state or condition or life of inevitability. In actuality, the only inevitability that exists is inevitability of being free to choose anything and to bear the full consequences of any choice. In this indisputable fact lies the meaning of the Law of Divine Providence of The Lord Jesus Christ.”

“One of the most important functions of this law is the continuous assurance that all choices are available at any time and that opportunities are provided for bearing or manifesting the full consequences, results and outcomes of such choices. This applies to both the positive state and the negative state.”

“In the negative state, the choice of inevitability and the consequences of such choice are fully manifested, illustrated and realized on concrete examples of people’s lives who made such a foolish choice.”

“Another important aspect of this law is in a continuous assurance that change in choices is always available to anyone who chooses to change his/her initial choice **after** learning the lessons from the consequences of the previous choice. The integral part of this law is the principle of Mercy and Forgiveness. This principle makes it possible to shorten the consequences of one’s foolish choices and accelerate the process of learning from them.”

“Once there is a realization that the choice was foolish and inappropriate, and once all consequences of such a choice are clearly seen and are in the process of being experienced, one may evoke the principle of mercy and forgiveness and stop the process.”

“This principle works against the inevitability of experiencing the consequences of any choice, providing a new opportunity for making a different choice. It is provided by The Law of Divine Providence that everyone who evokes this principle gets a respite.”

“The evocation of this principle is accomplished by full realization of this fact, by acknowledging that the lessons were learned, by approaching The Lord Jesus Christ in His/Her New Nature, by confessing one’s foolishness in this matter and showing remorse and willingness to change.”

“Once this supplication is submitted to The Lord Jesus Christ, He/ She, from the position of His/Her Divine Providence, carefully weighs all aspects of that individual’s life from the standpoint of The Absolute knowledge of what is the best for that individual as viewed from both his/her eternal and temporary life, and final decision is made in this matter. The consequences then are either stopped entirely or modified or changed or made more bearable.”

“What you have to be very clearly aware of regarding this law is that The Divine Providence of The Lord Jesus Christ always takes into consideration what is the best for each individual from the standpoint of that individual’s eternal life and not from the temporary condition in which each individual is at any given time.”

“This is a very important aspect of The Law of Divine Providence. If you are asking for something, and it seems to you as a very good idea indeed from the momentary temporal position, but in an ultimate sense if the fulfillment of your request can hurt your future development and the quality of your eternal life, your request will be denied for your own benefit.”

“It is very important to realize that humans, in their attitude, do not take into consideration this factor. As a consequence, they get very bitter against God if He/She does not answer their request. The principle here is not to ask for anything but that the will of The Lord Jesus Christ be done in your life at any given time or on a continuous basis.”

“Such a request allows The Divine Providence of The Lord Jesus Christ to regulate your life in such a manner that your immortal life in the positive state is eternally assured. Thus, it is a wise decision to give yourself into the hands of this Divine Providence so that you are led by The Lord Jesus Christ and not by your desires, wishes and wants which may or may not be (usually they are not) consistent with what is the best for you in an ultimate sense. Remember, you do not know yourself in an absolute sense. Your knowledge of yourself, as well as everything else, is limited by your relative condition. Only The Lord Jesus Christ knows you in an absolute sense. Therefore, only He/She, in His/Her Divine Providence, knows absolutely what is the best for you to eternity.”

“In respect to the negative state and all its followers, all efforts and governing of The Divine Providence of The Lord Jesus Christ are directed toward the ultimate salvation of everyone from the negative state and the ultimate deactivation and abolishment of the negative state.”

“This is The Law of Divine Providence of The Lord Jesus Christ.”

“7. THE LAW OF CREATIVITY, SPIRITUAL USE AND PURPOSE.”

“This law derives from the nature of The Creator.”

“Inherent in this nature, immanent to its condition, is an Absolute need to create always something new and different. But also inherent in this need, immanent to its condition, is the fact that whatever is created is created with some important purpose in mind, for some important use.”

“This is the law of justification.”

“Whatever is and exists, either by a direct creation of The Creator, or by permission of The Creator (the negative state), is and exists for some important use and with some important purpose. The justification of its being and existence is through its use and purpose. If it cannot serve any use and purpose, it either would not be created or it would not be permitted to come to its fruition.”

“Once anything exhausts its usefulness and fully serves its purpose, it comes to its end and is replaced by something entirely new with a different use and for a different purpose.”

“No two things exactly the same can ever be, or be created or permitted to be and to exist, because they would duplicate the same use and purpose. This would be in violation of the law formulated here. The creative act of The Creator is never wasteful. On the other hand, once something exhausts its usefulness and serves its purpose, it cannot be replaced by the same thing because it already manifested the quality of its own use and purpose. It would be

a repetition of the same state or situation already fully experienced before. Again, this would be a waste of creative effort. Thus, it must be replaced with something entirely new, never having been in existence up to that point, with a new purpose and use.”

“This fact is a necessary condition of life of the entire Creation in order to avoid stagnation. Stagnation is a deadly enemy of the creative process. Thus, all Creation is assured that there is always something new, something different available with a new and different purpose and use.”

“This law is applicable both to The Creator and to all sentient entities created for certain purposes and uses. This law implies that sentient entities were created in the likeness and image of their Creator. Therefore, they bear His/Her Nature in a relative condition. This nature is to be creative with purpose and for use by all.”

“Thus, the major purpose for which sentient entities were created was to be creative and to share their creative efforts with all. In that is their use for The Creator. The Creator, being Absolute and Absolutely Creative, can manifest Himself/Herself in infinite varieties and manners of the creative efforts of all sentient entities. Because creative effort in everyone stems from The Absolute Creative Effort of The Creator, who absolutely always is, the sentient entities’ purpose and use in themselves can never exhaust their usefulness and fully fulfill their purpose. Thus, the sentient entities, once created, will be forever useful and purposeful.”

“However, the products of their creation, or whatever was created for their purpose, in many instances, once they fulfill their purpose and exhaust their use, will be terminated. These products in themselves do not have absolute value because they derive from the relative needs. Different situations, states and conditions, in which sentient entities find themselves at each particular step and development of their creative effort, require different products conducive to the nature of each step. Once that step is completed, the products or tools that helped that step to come to its fruition are no longer useful and serve no purpose. They are replaced with something new which will better serve toward the development and establishment of the next step in the creative effort of all sentient entities.”

“As you know, one such product of the activities of some sentient entities was the negative state. They activated the negative state for a certain purpose and with a well-defined use.”

“In the previous conceptualization of this law, it was erroneously assumed that the negative state can have eternal purpose and use. This would be the case only if it were to be initiated in The Absolute State of The Creator. But it was not. The Absolute State is of The Absolute Positive Nature (The Law of the Spiritual Unilaterality). Therefore, it can never initiate anything of the negative nature. It would be contrary to His/Her very Nature.”

“But the sentient entities who activated the negative state may and can initiate something which does not come from The Creator directly. It comes from their need to have an answer to the spiritual question of what life would be like if it were to derive not from The Absolute Positive State of The Creator and His/Her spiritual principles but from some other state and condition.”

“The negative state is the answer to that question. To repeat, the purpose of the negative state is to answer that question. Its spiritual use is in answering that question by living and concrete examples of the lifestyles of humans and other creatures who volunteered to be in the negative state for this very purpose. Thus, it is obvious that, by the requirement of this law, the negative state cannot continue forever but only until it fully answers this question for

the learning of all.“

“The process of learning itself is an eternal process. However, the subject of learning is a temporary process until it is fully mastered. Once something is fully learned, the subject of learning is no longer necessary because it already served the purpose of learning. Nothing more can be learned from it. Subsequently, it is eliminated from the curriculum. Instead, a new subject comes into being and existence which gives you the opportunity to learn something entirely new.”

“The incorrect impression of many people about the eternal continuation of the negative state came from the confusion between the process of learning (which never ceases) and the subject of learning (which continues until it is fully mastered).”

“The eternal continuation of the negative state would be in violation of this law because it is a subject and object of learning but not the process of learning itself.”

“Except for The Absolute State and sentient entities, who derive from this Absolute State, all subjects and objects of learning are limited by their content. If this were not the case, nobody could fully learn anything about anything. This would be a desperate situation for Creation because Creation would be eternally impotent to learn anything. It would be learning always the same thing without any hope of mastering the subjects and objects of its learning.”

“In that case the answer to the above question could never be learned and all people would be doomed to stay or to be locked up in one state and condition to eternity. Such a destiny would lead to existential suicide of the entire Creation. And this would be the end of all creative efforts. A situation of this nature could serve no purpose and use. By this law, it is an utter impossibility.”

“The new aspects and updates of this law are that the only Absolute Creator in being and existence is The Lord Jesus Christ in His/Her New Nature. The Absolute Change in His/Her Nature proves the fact that The Absolute starting point of all positive changes is the change in the very nature of The Creator.”

“This fact was not known until the process of change within The Most High, who became The Lord Jesus Christ, was completed. Because this change is of Absolute Proportions, the learning of the aspects of this change will have infinite possibilities.“

“This change initiated an entirely new era of creative learning which will determine all creative efforts of all sentient entities until the very end of this cycle of time. In this fact is one of the many infinite purposes and spiritual uses of The New Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ.”

“Any successful creative effort of all sentient entities, as of now, will depend on their ability and willingness to accept this New Nature and to accommodate their own nature, in its structure and dynamics, to The New Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ. The more acceptance, the more creativity, spiritual use and purpose in their own creative striving, the more acquirement of the true meaning and purpose of life in general and their lives in particular.”

“8. THE LAW OF SPIRITUAL PROGRESSION:”

“This law was extensively defined and discussed in the book Fundamentals of Human Spirituality. The law basically states:”

“Every sentient entity enters the being and existence at a certain point of Creation,

into a certain state, process, condition or time and place. At the moment of its entrance, it starts its life from the lowest point of spiritual awareness and progresses, from that moment on, onward and forward, never ever to return physically or spiritually to exactly the same place, time, condition, state or process. No two alike or similar conditions in any manner, way or form could ever be repeated or experienced no matter what."

"The implementation of this law takes many forms. The major aspect of this law is its discrete mode and continuous mode. There is a discrete progression and continuous progression. The progression from step to step, from one degree to another, from one level to another, from one dimension to another, from one state to another or from one place to another is always discrete. No direct connectedness exists among any of them except that one precedes the other, and the other succeeds the previous one. In that sense they only correspond."

"A good example of the discrete mode is your incarnation on planet Zero. There is no connectedness, or even conscious memory, to any of your experiences before coming to this planet. Not only that, your planet has no direct connection to any other place. In your solar system, several planets exist. They all depend on each other's gravity but no physical connection exists among them. They are enclosed in their own sphere and environment which is not transferable to any other planet."

"Once you leave your planet and your body, you cannot transfer your planet and your body to your next step or level or dimension. You may succeed your planet and body by some new state, body, place or condition, but you are not able to take anything concrete from the previous step except your memories and affections for the purpose of comparison to build upon."

"This is a discrete mode of spiritual progression. It implies that you can never come back to the same situation by the same mode of experience, as many followers of the foolish concept of reincarnation would like you to believe. In the physical concept of reincarnation you repeat the same planet and, in your case, the same process of the physical birth in the mother's womb, and, moreover, into the same natural degree of the negative state. Thus, you have here, at least, triple repetition of the same condition. Such a possibility would be in a full violation of this law."

"This statement is applicable to any situation in or dimension of Creation and not only to your planet or the Zone of Displacement. The discrete mode of spiritual progression precludes any possibility of physical, literal reincarnation at any place or state."

"On the other hand, the continuous mode of spiritual progression is applicable only within each step, degree, level, dimension, state or process."

"Once you position yourself in a certain step, you remain there until that step has nothing more to offer for your spiritual progression. You start from the least degree of knowledge regarding the content of that step and you end up with the greatest possible knowledge about its content, as relevant for your needs. From the least to the most is the continuous mode of spiritual progression. From the lowest to the highest is its discrete mode. The corresponding factors to the meaning of the words 'lowest' and 'highest' is, in actuality, from the most external position to the most within inward state."

"In the negative state this process, of course, is of a regressive nature but of the same basic trend."

“The entire process of spiritual progression or regression, respectively (in the negative state), is always determined by everyone’s position toward The Absolute State, that is, to The Lord Jesus Christ. This is one of the most significant aspects of this law.”

“In the new connotation of this law, as of now, the extent, degree and quality of one’s spiritual progression or regression, respectively, in any of its modes, is determined by one’s attitude toward The New Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ.”

“Because this is an entirely new state, which completely replaced the previous one, no true spiritual progression is possible any longer without acknowledgment and acceptance of The New Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ first. How can you relate to something or someone that no longer exists? This is the new Law of Spiritual Progression.”

“9. THE LAW OF ETERNAL CONTINUATION:”

“Any sentient entity which is a carrier of any element or attribute of life emanating from The Absolute Source of Life — The Lord Jesus Christ (formerly The Most High) — must continue in its unique, individual and individualized life as a self-identified personality, distinctly different from any one else’s, as its own ‘I am,’ to eternity in the mode of eternal selfawareness.”

“The important emphasis here is on the words ‘unique,’ ‘self-identified,’ ‘distinctly different personality,’ ‘own I am’ and ‘eternal self-awareness.’ The reason for this emphasis is to avoid a false impression that many so-called spiritual teachings on your planet and in the entire Zone of Displacement convey, claiming that, somewhere along the line, one will lose one’s own identity as a self-aware unique individual and will merge with God, becoming some kind of god or one with God. What is the use in such a futile merger if no awareness will exist that one is what one is and that one is a part of that imaginary God? This equals the eternal death.”

“How can one validate, in accordance with The Law of Validation, the fact of one’s merger if one will have no personal, private, intimate, unique and fully conscious aware experience that such an act has taken place? If there is no conscious awareness of this fact, the act cannot be validated. Therefore, for all practical purposes, it has never occurred.”

“The sense of any being and existence is derived from being aware of that being and existence. As you remember, the life of the multiverse depends solely on mentation of the sentient mind. The life of any specific aspect of being and existence of that multiverse depends on a specific, unique and non-imitable mentation of various sentient minds. In their totality they do comprise one sentient mind. However, this act is ruled by the above-defined Law of Diversified Oneness and Equality. The greater degree of diversity of unique sentient minds, the greater the presence of The Lord Jesus Christ.”

“Since The Absolute Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ is inexhaustible to eternity, in order to experience a greater and greater degree of His/ Her presence, it is necessary to continuously create unique, nonduplicable and self-aware individuals whose being and existence would make it possible for such a vital experience.”

“Disappearance of these individuals into The Absolute State of The Lord Jesus Christ would make that experience less and less possible until the entire multiverse would cease to exist. No purpose and use would exist in such an act. This would also violate the seventh law formulated above. However, there is another aspect to this law that needs to be formulated.”

"In accordance with this law, the unique eternal life of any sentient entity does not depend on the external or physical form of its manifestation. Whereas the unique spirit and soul are carriers of life, the physical body is not. It lives only by the presence of that spirit and soul in that particular form. Therefore, this form is modifiable, changeable, replaceable and perishable."

"To judge on the state of affairs of one's spirit and soul from the state of one's body or external form is a gross error. Many foolish humans on your planet assume that the cessation of life in their body means the end of their life and they themselves cease to be and to exist."

"The external form or physical body is chosen by the spirit and soul of each unique individual in accordance with the spiritual needs one has in respect to one's spiritual progression. As you remember from the previously formulated law (No. 8), external forms of one's manifestation are not transferable to any other state, place and condition but only within each place or state."

"Once there is a need to transcend that step, state, condition, place or whatever one has, one puts aside the external form of one's manifestation, by whatever means, and assumes some other form. In that moment, no life remains in that form and it reverts itself to the elemental state of its environment from which it was formed and vivified by the sentient mind (spirit and soul)."

"The new aspect of this law relates to the quality of one's eternal continuation. From now on, this quality will be determined by everyone's position and attitude toward The New Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ. The total identification with this nature will give one the greatest possible meaning, delight, satisfaction and motivation for this eternal continuation and greater degree of uniqueness, individuality, self-awareness, independence and sense of unrepeatability of one's 'I am.'"

"This is the most desirable outcome of such an identity because it assures a greater and greater degree of the presence of The Lord Jesus Christ. There is no greater delight, pleasure and elation in Creation than to have the experience of such a greater and greater presence of The Lord Jesus Christ in the most personal, private and intimate mode. It inspires infinitely and inexhaustibly every sentient entity in being and existence."

"10. THE LAW OF SPIRITUAL MORALITY AND EXPERIENCE:"

"This law defines what is proper, right and moral from the standpoint of spiritual principles. It determines a desirable and acceptable mode of experiencing and behaving. It states:

"All experiences, behaviors, actions, thoughts, feelings, desires, wishes, wants, intentions and tendencies are spiritually proper, right and moral if they derive from an inclination to promote common good, mutual benefit and use for all and if they are done, expressed or impressed for the sake of The Lord Jesus Christ, others and oneself."

"You can experience everything possible to experience if it is done with this purpose in mind. Nothing is prohibited and no restrictions are put on anything if the intent and motivation are right and if it is done for the purpose of enhancement and enrichment of one's life in order to become a better individual, a more spiritual individual, a more loving and wise individual, a more knowledgeable individual, a totally selfless (in a sense of ego states) individual, a more modest, humble and innocent individual, a more useful, beneficial and helpful individual and

more and more as and like The Lord Jesus Christ.”

“No other definition of the spiritual morality and experience exists. It is spiritually immoral to deny this fact. It is spiritually immoral to deny being and existence of spiritual principles. It is spiritually immoral to deny existence of The Creator.”

“In the new connotation of this law, it is spiritually immoral to deny and reject the fact that The Most High made His/Her Divine Human and His/Her Human Divine. The greatest spiritual immorality of all is to deny and to reject The New Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ. Whoever does this commits spiritual adultery.”

“It is spiritually immoral to deny The New Revelation of The Lord Jesus Christ and the spiritual laws formulated here .”

“Sexual morality is not excluded from this law. Any sexual deviation and perversion of the normal sexual act is spiritually immoral because it violates the fundamental principles of unity of masculinity and femininity.”

“Sexual deviation and perversion is not determined by the sexual act between consenting adult males and females (in whatever position and mode sexual intercourse takes place) but by rejecting to have sex with the opposite gender or by doing it to one’s sexual partner or to oneself in a hurtful and harmful manner.”

“It is spiritually immoral to get sexually involved with anyone for any selfish, ulterior or inconsiderate reasons. This includes even one’s own spouse.”

“It is spiritually highly moral and appropriate to be sexually involved with any **consenting** adult person of the opposite gender if it is done for the sake of sharing, mutual benefit and mutual enhancement and enrichment of both lives and for sheer pleasure, delight and relaxation. This includes both the so-called single and the so-called married individual.”

“Whatever helps spiritual progression and contributes toward infinite variety of experiences regarding the spiritual reality of Creation, uniquely reflected in each individual, is spiritually highly moral and proper. Whatever contributes to the greater knowledge and understanding of The New Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ, others and oneself is spiritually moral and appropriate. Whatever interferes with such experiencing is highly immoral and dangerous.”

“In this respect, the totality of the nature of the negative state is completely immoral because it denies the validity of this law. On the other hand, the negative state puts restrictions, limitations and taboos on human life, stifling the necessary experiences for its proper spiritual growth and development. It is highly spiritually immoral to put such restrictions, limitations and taboos on anyone. It is in violation of the law of freedom of choice for the sake of principles (No.1) and the need to have unlimited experiences for the purpose as defined in this law.”

“Nothing hurtful and harmful can come from any experience if it is done from the position of love and wisdom and for the sake as outlined in this law.”

“It is spiritually highly immoral and dangerous to deny the fact that The New Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ is both Absolutely Masculine and Absolutely Feminine.”

“From this stems the fact that it is spiritually immoral and dangerous to prefer or to emphasize one principle over another, particularly regarding males and females, considering

one more valuable and godly than the other.”

“It is spiritually proper, right and moral to consider males and females equally valuable and equal in all respects without any exception and exclusion.”

“It is spiritually highly immoral to force, to impose and to insinuate anything on anyone and to manipulate, to use, to abuse, to defraud, to deceive or to purposefully and knowingly mislead people in any manner and way (including in sexual matters).”

“In the new connotation of this law, whatever contributes to the establishment of a personal, private and intimate relationship with The New Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ is the most moral and desirable occurrence. For such a person everything is permissible because he/she will do everything from, by, through, with and of The Lord Jesus Christ in the spirit of unconditional love and discerning wisdom in recognizing what is by the will of The Lord Jesus Christ and what is from the negative state. Such a person will have no desire, wish, pleasure or whatever to do anything from the negative state or that is pleasing to the negative state.”

“The fundamental aspect of this law is that no one can be judged to behave morally or immorally, as defined by this law, by external, outward criteria. Many humans externally fulfill the requirements of this law, but internally they are not in accordance with the principles of this law.”

“On the other hand, many humans seem to act immorally, by definition of other humans or human laws, but their inner intent and motivation is congruent to the spirit of this law.”

“Therefore, it is highly spiritually immoral to judge anyone in any respect by external factors. And since internal factors of any behavior and attitude are known only to The Lord Jesus Christ and to the person’s most within Spiritual Mind, it is spiritually moral to leave all the judgment to The Lord Jesus Christ. It is between Him/Her and each individual.”

“In an ultimate sense, in the new connotation of this law, spiritual morality and experience, as of now, is solely determined by one’s relationship to The New Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ.”

“He/she who has ears to hear and to listen, let him/her hear and listen to what The Lord Jesus Christ reveals in this Chapter.”

CHAPTER ELEVEN

THE CONCEPT OF SIN AND HUMAN PROBLEMS

On February 22, 1988, at 6:00 a.m., the word of The Lord Jesus Christ came to me, saying,

“The topic of this Chapter has a direct relevance to the Tenth Spiritual Law formulated at the end of the preceding Chapter (The Law of Spiritual Morality and Experience).”

“While in that portion of the preceding Chapter there is a tendency to look upon an individual’s behavior from the standpoint of what is and what is not right and proper, in this Chapter, the issue is the proper conceptualization, definition and understanding of what humans call sins and what they consider to be human problems.”

“The concept of sin has rocked human awareness and the entire Creation from the time of activation of the negative state (for many millions of years) until the present time, and will continue to do so until the very end of the negative state.”

“The concept of human problems has a direct relevance to the concept of sins because, before the activation of the negative state, problems were not known to any sentient entity.”

“In actuality, both concepts are characteristic of the typical human era, defined in the book Fundamentals of Human Spirituality and updated in the last chapter of the book Major Ideas of The New Revelation. Before the appearance of humans on your planet, these concepts were not known to, or experienced by, anyone.”

“Most religions on your planet incorrectly assumed that the origin of sin could be tracked to one single person called Adam and his woman called Eve, and to one single beast called serpent in some kind of garden called Eden.”

“The story of Adam and Eve and the tempting serpent is a symbolic depiction of the genesis or origin of sin and human problems, but, in its literal sense, this story has no relevance to any physical reality whatsoever.”

“As you remember from revelations through Swedenborg and through this transmitter, Adam originally, before creation of Eve, represented the very first androgynous people on planet Earth who were setting up a favorable condition on that planet for the development of what was going to come after their departure. On the other hand, Adam and Eve represent the second type of people who appeared on planet Earth in a separate form of male and female.”

“It is in this separate form — depicting separation of femininity and masculinity — that favorable conditions were found for the initial process of activation of the negative state. That you are not dealing here with two single individuals is obvious from Genesis 5:2 where God calls male and female mankind.”

“As you remember, the Garden of Eden represents the state of knowledge and wisdom that these people possessed and were using.”

“The serpent represents the sensory and sensual equipment of people’s physical organs for dealing with the inputs from the external environment and outputs to the external world.”

“In a deeper sense, which has not been revealed until this moment, Adam represents, in fact, the original Most Within Spiritual Mind of Mankind. Eve represents the original interior mind or mentality of mankind which always derives from The Most Within Spiritual Mind (remember, everything proceeds from the most within spiritual, to the most without external-natural), as is obvious from the fact that Eve was created from Adam; meaning, from the inner spiritual principles as occurrence goes into its proceeding for the purpose of its outward manifestation or becoming.”

“The serpent, in this connotation, represents the original external mind of mankind. As you noticed, at this point the word ‘mankind’ is used instead of a more correct one ‘humankind.’ At that point, typical humans, as they are now, had not yet been fabricated.”

“The term ‘mankind’ here means both females and males. ‘Man,’ in this connotation, does not mean male but a combination of both male and female.”

“The life in the Garden of Eden before the Fall represents unity, oneness and harmony of these substantial aspects of one sentient mind in full consciousness, awareness and knowledge of all laws and principles governing the spiritual, mental and physical realms. As you see, no discord or separation existed here. Therefore, no sins or problems were conceivable. No unconscious processes and ignorance existed at that time either.”

“‘The serpent’ also represents scientific explorations of the external mind by its sensory and sensual tools related to the life of the planet and external environment in general. Thus, the beast represents here an affection to look outward for the purpose of regulation of the external environment in order to accommodate it for the needs of mankind. This is the purpose and use of any external mind.”

“As you look continuously outward, you may become preoccupied with that which is happening outside of you. In that trend, there is a danger of becoming so absorbed in your activities, related to that outward world, that you begin to consider it as a separate entity or a state or a condition independent of the sentient mind. In such a consideration there is a seed for possible activation of the negative state.”

“Separation of anything existing outside the sentient mind into its own, independent singularity makes it eventually possible to consider it as having life in itself and by itself without any sentient originating force.”

“The fundamental spiritual rule that needs to be repeated here is that whatever exists and is, is and exists by virtue of the sentient mind’s idea of its being and existence. In an absolute sense, the entire Creation is possible only because it is a concretized idea of The Absolute Sentient Entity — God Most High, now The Lord Jesus Christ.”

“However, as you remember, once such an idea is concretized, it assumes its own independent being and existence to reflect the nature of its Creator who is an Absolutely Independent Sentient Being. This is true either in an absolute sense or in a relative sense. However, the source of life of that independence (in a relative condition) is always from the originating factor or state.”

“But if you look on something outside of you, and you see how that something thrives and lives without any apparent regulation from anyone, you may lose the true spiritual perspective and, instead of seeing it as your own concretized idea, you will begin to consider it as an independent being and existence without any connectedness to its original source.

Eventually, you may come to the conclusion that there is no original source.”

“So, the external mind, looking and exploring continuously outside, may come to such a conclusion. This starts a dangerous trend of separation.”

“‘If things outside are separated from me,’ the external mind may say, ‘and if they have their own independent being and existence, it is quite conceivable that I, the external mind, have my own being and existence independent of any other aspect of the entire sentient mind.’ Once such an idea occurs, it must be put to the test.”

“Notice, please, that the serpent approaches with its question not the most within Spiritual Mind — Adam — but the mentality, that is, the interior mind, called here woman. The reason the interior mind is called woman is because that mind constitutes the soul of any sentient entity, as well as of the entire Creation, as well as of The Lord Jesus Christ. The Spiritual Mind — man’s being and existence — is grounded in its soul — woman. Without its soul — woman, the spirit — man — has no means to manifest its life. On the other hand, without its spirit — man, soul — woman — has no life. From this position, their equality is absolute.”

“So, the serpent, or the external mind, approaches the interior mind — soul — with an idea to be considered by and presented to the spirit — the Spiritual Mind — for the purpose of its possible implementation.”

“Notice, please, very carefully from what direction that question or that idea is presented. Here is the very first violation of the spiritual law — the idea does not come from the most within level of The Spiritual Mind but, instead, from the most outward level of the external mind. The external mind has no business initiating any ideas because, simply, such activities are not its function. This is the very first step toward the split and separation of the external mind from its source — the most within Spiritual Mind. As you see, the foundation is being laid here for the activation of the negative state and for sins and human problems to come to their adverse fruition.”

“The idea, of course, was what is going to happen if the origin of life and sentient entities were to derive not from the inner, Divine, spiritual source but, instead, from some other source, or from no source at all but as some kind of a wild chance or statistical probability, or by whatever other means. What kind of life would it be? Is such life possible? And if it is, how, and in what manner, would it be different from what is known and experienced right now?”

“After all, no experience of such life existed at any level of the sentient mind. Something important was lacking here. How can we continue in our life if we have no experience of something entirely different?”

“This is what in actuality the serpent, — the external mind — was asking its mentality — the interior mind — woman. The interior mind — woman — perceives the validity of that question. After all, it is the function of the soul — woman — to have such perceptions as food for thought and feelings. Really, the idea is worthwhile of exploration. After all, the idea occurred. Once it occurs it must become reality. Its reality can be validated only by the consequences, outcomes and results of its implementation (remember the fifth law — The Law of Spiritual Validation and Intent!).”

“The only tragedy is that the idea came from the wrong direction. Therefore, it must be answered by the means and language inherent in the external mind — concrete, factual and outward experiential mode.”

“The soul — interior mind — woman, finding that idea interesting, presents it to the most within Spiritual Mind — man. Not being the originator of this idea, The Spiritual Mind has no choice in this matter but to accept its validity. Once it is accepted by this most within mind as valid, this idea becomes truly alive and it begins to thrive and to live its own independent life.”

“In the moment it does so, the concept of sin comes into life, producing all human problems.”

“From the above description it is obvious that sin and human problems, that is, the negative state, originated in the most external outward part of the external mind of sentient entities who lived on the original planet Earth. The process of its activation was described elsewhere (Fundamentals of Human Spirituality and Chapter Six of this book, ‘Mystery of the Pseudo-Creators.’ Also see the next Chapter). It shall not be repeated here.”

“From this standpoint, how then can the concept of sin and human problems be defined?”

“As you can see, the traditional religious definition of sin has no merit. To assume that one or two persons sinned by disobeying God, who deliberately tempted them by putting into the midst of the Garden of Eden a special kind of tree, prohibiting them to eat its fruit, is totally foolish. Why would God want to tease that couple in such a cruel way? Would such a God not be a childish or a senile creature who purposefully would create people with a curiosity for knowing and then would deprive them from the acquirement of the most vital knowledge by prohibiting its use?”

“Such an attitude does not make any sense. As Einstein pointed out already, God does not play dice with Creation (with universe in his words). God does not make cruel jokes.”

“It is obvious that a deep allegory is used in the story of Genesis to indicate the danger if the negative state were to be activated. What is being conveyed here is a warning not to yield to the desires of the external mind to come up with the ideas leading to the activation of the negative state. Only the external mind, in the most external world of Creation, given an opportunity and a chance, can do that.”

“The warning here is obvious: Do not give to the external of the externals such a chance and opportunity because it will lead to the activation of the negative state. And once the negative state is activated, it must run its full course. It cannot be stopped until it is completely manifested, realized and actualized to its fullest potentials. This is a spiritual law that cannot be violated.”

“Once any idea occurs, especially within the sentient mind, regardless of on what level of that mind, it must proceed toward its becoming. It fully manifests itself to the entire Creation for its validation or rejection.”

“In order to make a righteous decision, whether the idea should be validated or rejected, it must be manifested in its consequences, results and outcomes and by its concrete results first. No other way exists.”

“Now, this is what in actuality is conveyed in that story, recorded in Genesis, Chapter 3, in The Holy Bible (among many other things which are not relevant to the topic of this Chapter).”

“Another side of the traditional religious definition of sin is simply to enumerate the type of behaviors which will be considered sinful. A typical example of such prohibited behavior is the literal meaning of the Ten Commandments. If you do what is prohibited by these

Commandments, or by any other spiritual laws, you commit a sin. This is a proclamatory definition. It is a command that must be obeyed without questioning or defining the reasons why any behavior can be sinful.”

“A good example of inconsistency in such a definition is the commandment ‘You shall not murder/kill.’ But it is O. K. to slaughter millions of humans in human world wars and even to be decorated and praised for such acts. In one case, you can be sentenced to death, but in another case, you can be praised and decorated for the very same act.”

“Of course, here you have a totally different situation. It only points out the fact that the same act, seen from a different perspective, may or may not be sinful.”

“However, the Ten Commandments, in most instances, are formulated in the negatives — ‘you shall not!’ The mode of such a formulation does not define the concept of sin. Instead, it states what should not be done in order to avoid sin and consequent human problems. Do not forget, please, that the language of the Ten Commandments is a negative one, from the position of the negative state, given to the negative humans. Humans like that are not able to see or to comprehend what should be done. First, they need to be told what should not be done before they can grasp the meaning and the need for proper behavior. You have to talk to them from the upside-down position in which they live. Otherwise, they will not understand you. Only after you state what should not be done can you proceed with a description of what should be done and why it should be done. (More on the Ten Commandments and their real meaning see Chapters Twenty Four and Twenty Five of this book).”

“However, in the positive state the situation is entirely different. People there do not need to be told what should not be done. To state something to them in the negative terms presupposes that they are doing it. If they are doing it, they are not in the positive but in the negative state. Therefore, commandments like that are superfluous to them and they have no meaning.”

“Only the negative state needs commandments. People in the positive state have ingrained in their very hearts all spiritual laws that govern the multiverse. These laws are integral to their lives without any need to question why it is so. From the position of the positive state, it is very clearly seen why something is the way it is.”

“In definition of the concept of sin you have to take into consideration two factors: First is the general all-inclusive discrete factor from the standpoint of the Primal occurrence. The second factor is a continuous specific one from the standpoint of its maintenance as applicable to everyday life.”

“From the standpoint of the general discrete factor, the definition of sin is as follows:”

“Sin is an acceptance of and identity with the occurring in the relative sentient mind’s idea of freedom of choice to stop reciprocating love and creative effort of The Absolute Creator (in this case The Lord Jesus Christ, formerly The Most High) and to consider the source of the sentient mind’s life something or someone else, or no one or nothing at all, with all consequences, outcomes and results of such a choice.”

“Now, as noted above, this is a very general, all-inclusive definition. It gives you an understanding of how sin can be initiated or originated.”

“The normal response to such an idea, leading to the activation of the negative state, if

accepted, is to reject it and repudiate it from one's mind. This is the normal state. This is how normality, from the standpoint of the positive state, can be defined. On the other hand, to accept this idea as valid and to identify oneself with it, as the only reality, is abnormal and insane. This is the starting point of all forms of insanity."

"As you remember from The Law of Spiritual Validation, defined in the preceding Chapter, any accepted idea must be validated by its consequences, outcomes and results. Once the full identity with that idea occurs in any sentient mind, it immediately starts to produce its consequences, outcomes and results until its content is exhausted."

"Fortunately for Creation, that idea occurred in the relative sentient mind and not in The Absolute State of The Absolute Sentient Mind. Therefore, it is fully exhaustible, being relative to the relative nature. As you remember from the previous statements (in the other books by this transmitter), relative to the relative is fully exhaustible and cannot continue to eternity. On the other hand, relative to The Absolute must continue to eternity because it carries within itself the presence of The Absolute in the relative condition. Such a condition can never be exhausted."

"The need to bear the consequences, outcomes and results of any idea defines its specific application."

"From the standpoint of the specific factor, sin can be defined as follows:"

"Sin is any behavior, feeling, thinking, willing, intent, attitude and relatedness consistent with the acceptance of and identity with the idea of freedom of choice to derive the origin, meaning, purpose and sense of life from any other source, or no source at all, but the true spiritual principles and laws of The Most High God, who is now The Lord Jesus Christ."

"Failure to derive anything from such true spiritual principles constitutes the life of sin. It is sinful to do so."

"There are two aspects to this definition: One is failure to derive; the other is, deriving it from the wrong source."

"The first aspect is manifested in the life of the atheists. They simply reject or deny the existence of any God and His/Her spiritual principles. They consider life a by-product of dead matter, a transient, freaky, temporary occurrence, without any meaningful sentient planning."

"The second aspect is manifested in the life of humans who even admit that all originated in some kind of Universal Consciousness and its spiritual principles, but their understanding and definition of these principles is either false or derives from the wrong source. Or they simply do not care either way."

"In the positive state the most important factor is the relationship with and attitude toward The Creator and His/Her true spiritual principles. They govern the life of the positive state, giving it meaning, purpose and goal. In the negative state, the most important factor is one's ego and how to have power over everyone and everything else. If God and His/Her spiritual principles can serve this purpose, they can be accepted."

"However, as you know, the acceptance, based on this particular principle, is a total falsification, distortion or perversion of all spiritual principles and the true Nature of God, which have in themselves an entirely different perspective."

"No wonder that many negative humans and other creatures in the Hells and on your planet, as well as in the entire Zone of Displacement, confess believing in God and in spiritual principles, appearing to be their ardent followers and supporters. They approach this issue from the wrong direction and with the wrong intent. They approach it from the position of sin. It is sinful to use the name of God and spiritual principles for any ulterior, selfish and manipulative reasons. A thought, a tendency, a desire or an actual act in using them with such a purpose in mind constitutes a specific sin. This is what a specific sin is all about."

"An even more specific aspect of manifestation of sin is in saying one thing and doing the exact opposite of what one is saying."

"A good example of this kind of sin can be illustrated on the sexual scandals you have been hearing about (in the U.S.A.) in the religious circles. Take, for example, the case of Jim and Tammy Bakker and Jimmy Swaggart (to mention those most talked about). In itself and by itself, what they did may or may not be sinful. To have sexual intercourse with a prostitute or with someone else but one's marital partner in itself is neutral. No sin exists in the act itself. In this case the sin begins with the type of attitude, behavior, feelings and needs that they approached the women in question. If this approach were to be for the sake of mutual benefit, common good, respect to the needs of the sexual partner, for sharing the delight and pleasure of sexual intercourse with them, then there would have been no sin committed, and no scandal would have ensued. They would be still preaching their falsities in the name of God."

"However, they sinned not by the act itself but by their wrong attitude and spiritual hypocrisy. They were teaching millions of humans fire and brimstone of the Hells for committing adultery, considering sexual intercourse to be a sin across the board, unless it is done with one's marital partner, and only in one certain position, and then going out and doing exactly what they condemned in others. Now, this is a real sin. This is a sin of hypocrisy. It violates all true spiritual principles and spits in the face of The True Lord Jesus Christ."

"Thus, in a global sense, sin, as such, has one very specific origin, as defined in the general definition of sin. Its manifestation however, is another matter. It can have immense numbers of forms, combinations, states, exhibitions and processes."

"The manifestation of sin is as numerous as humans and creatures in the negative state. After all, sin exists only because humans and other creatures chose it as their style of life. The most common (but least considered so) manifestation of sin can be seen in human problems."

"In a general sense, from this standpoint, all human problems are the result of some kind of sin. Because sin is a purely spiritual state (deriving from the denial or rejection of all proper spiritual principles), all human problems can be traced to spiritual roots. This is the reason why in the previous portion of The New Revelation it was stated that human problems are sins (for example, in the book Who Are You and Why Are You Here?)."

"As you remember, the members of the positive state do not ever experience or have human types of problems. They do what is normal. It is normal to reject and dissociate yourself from the above-mentioned idea (as defined in a general definition of sin). Therefore, by that act, they reject sin as having no reality. Since there is no sin, no problems of any kind can ensue."

"Production of human problems (all of them without any exception or exclusion) is contingent upon the existence of sin."

“From this standpoint the definition of human problems is as follows:

“Human problems are symptoms of wrong spiritual attitudes, belief systems and lifestyles inconsistent with the true spiritual principles of life and the nature of the true spiritual reality, and these symptoms are rooted in either existential sin (a primal sin) or its specific, individualized manifestation.”

“The existential primal sin is a global sin of being and existence of the negative state. As you know, the negative state is sin in itself. A specific manifestation of sin is a chosen lifestyle of each individual in the negative state and whatever each particular individual adds to it.”

“The existential primal sin is also known as hereditary sin. To be born into the negative state spiritually means to be born into nothing but sin.”

“However, as Swedenborg already pointed out, such sin cannot be appropriated to any specific individual unless that individual fully identifies with it and continues to promote it and to live in accordance with its content. In that case, this sin becomes his/her individualized sin.”

“The individualized sin includes also everything that each particular individual invents in this respect during his/her stay in the negative state, adding to and compounding all sins put together. These kinds of sins are appropriated to their carrier. They become one’s chosen lifestyle and full identity.”

“All these sins are producers of human problems as defined above.”

“From the standpoint of the human classification of problems, you can recognize the following clusters of problems:

1. Spiritual problems;
2. Mental or psychological problems;
3. Physical, organic or bodily problems (somatic problems);
4. Social problems;
5. Economic problems;
6. Environmental problems;
7. Racial problems;
8. Political problems.”

“In an ultimate sense, all these problems are, more or less, independent offshoots of the same tree — spiritual problems — which, in turn, are the consequences, outcomes and results of the original sin. Once the original sin is committed, it spreads out like a malignant cancer, influencing, directing and dictating all aspects of life, taking it over completely and becoming its dominant factor. After a while, under its influence, such life begins to be considered a normal and natural phenomenon needed for human survival.”

“Gradually, in the process of many millennia, it is conveniently forgotten how the original sin came to its fruition and people begin to believe that this situation has always existed and is a normal occurrence of being and existence. And, thus, the negative state establishes itself as a seemingly independent, equal to and necessary concomitant of being and existence as the positive state is.”

“In evaluating the definition of the concept of sin and human problems, you have to

distinguish among the following categories: Sins, evils, falsities and the negative state.”

“Sins derive from the most general categorization of the very first act of the activation of the negative state. This act gave an impetus to pandemonium of all sufferings and human problems on your planet and throughout the entire Zone of Displacement.”

“To activate the negative state was an evil act. Therefore, all evils are sins. To falsify, distort or pervert truth in any manner and way is an evil act. Therefore, it is sinful to do so.”

“Thus, evils relate to the intentional factors of manifested sin.”

“Not all human sins are intentional and, therefore, evil. However, all evils are sins because an evil act, in order to be classified as evil, must have a malicious intent to do something violent to good, in this case, to the positive state and one’s Creator. A purposeful denial or rejection of being and existence of The Creator and His/Her true spiritual principles, or denial and rejection of the fact that all life originally stemmed from The Creator is a violent act. Done so with a malicious intent to replace or derive this kind of life from someone else that is not a true source of life, is an evil act. To falsify the truth about this matter and justify the need to derive the source of life from any other source other than The True Creator is another evil act. In accordance with the above definition of sin, both these acts are sinful.”

“However, if one does something sinful without an evil intent, it cannot be considered evil. It is an error in judgment or ignorance from the lack of proper knowledge and understanding of what is right and proper.”

“Unfortunately, the concept of sin is so distorted and misunderstood on your planet, thanks to all the falsities and perversions that permeate all your churches and cults, that everything one does contrary to the dogmas and dictates of the churches’ doctrines or teachings is considered sin. The Catholic Church, for example, came up with several unpardonable sins which, if one commits them, condemn one to eternal suffering in the Hells. Such definition of sin and unpardonable sin, and condemning people to eternal damnation to the Hells, without any opportunity, imagine, to eternity, forever, to confess one’s sins, asking for mercy and forgiveness, and to be forgiven, is an atrocious abomination. It is an ultimate sin because it is committed with an evil intent to damn humans to eternity and to falsify The True Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ.”

“Because of such an abominable connotation of the concept of sin, as promoted by all churches on your planet and throughout the entire Zone of Displacement, The Lord Jesus Christ hereby decrees that the term ‘sin’ is not to be used any longer within the positive state and by all who live in the negative state but are of the positive nature.”

“The word ‘sin’ is hereby being replaced by the word ‘negative state.’ The term ‘negative state’ is all-inclusive, containing within itself everything related to sins, evils and falsities.”

“The definition of the negative state in The New Revelation precludes its eternal continuation. Therefore, everyone who is identified with the negative state will always have an opportunity, no matter what he/she did, to convert to the positive state through the confession of one’s negativity (sins, evils and falsities), asking for and receiving mercy and forgiveness and being transformed into a positive entity.”

“As mentioned in the book, Major Ideas of The New Revelation, the act of salvation of The Lord Jesus Christ, being that He/She is Absolute, has an absolute validity for all times, for all places and for all conditions and states. The Lord Jesus Christ does nothing in a relative

sense. To proclaim that the act of salvation of The Lord Jesus Christ is limited in time, space, state, condition or scope, is to limit the powers of His/ Her Absolute State and abilities. The imposition of such limitations on The Lord Jesus Christ is an evil, and therefore, sinful act in itself. Whoever considers this to be true, commits an evil act and is identified with the negative state.”

“This situation is particularly relevant since the fusion and hybridization of the physical body-flesh of Jesus Christ was completed within The Most High and The Most High became the totality of The Lord Jesus Christ. One of the many fundamental reasons why this most crucial act was undertaken and completed by God Most High, The Creator, now The Lord Jesus Christ, was for the very purpose of giving an eternal opportunity to everyone who believes that he/she is condemned to eternity to be in the negative state of the Hells to come out of the negative state.”

“This act enables The Lord Jesus Christ to enter the Hells directly and then to personally interact with everyone there, as well as everywhere else, on a personal, face to face, intimate basis. He/She will introduce Himself/Herself to everyone in the negative state personally, allowing them to have a private, personal and intimate experience of who The Lord Jesus Christ really is and how She/He really relates to people. Up to that point, all members of the negative state believed falsities about The True Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ and how He/She relates to people and what the positive state, as well as the negative state, is all about.”

“As far as the originators of the negative state are concerned — the pseudo-creators — by the presence of The Lord Jesus Christ, the memories of why the negative state was permitted to be activated will be opened and they will be able to experience The New Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ from an entirely different perspective. After all, they will be dealing with someone who incorporated within Himself/ Herself the very elements they so skillfully fabricated, convinced that with this kind of fabrication the being and existence of the negative state would be assured forever.”

“In actuality, everyone believed this, even those in the positive state. This was easy to believe because The Most High was totally separated and isolated from the negative state. Such a separation and isolation implies that the negative state has its own life independent of the positive state. Whatever or whoever has such life is forever.”

“But The New Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ totally and completely refuted this incorrect belief. The most important proof in this respect is that all elements of the negative state, from which the negative state is composed, can be transformed into positive elements, as The Lord Jesus Christ clearly illustrated by His/Her monumental act. By this act, He/She is giving everyone, including the pseudo-creators, an opportunity to convert to the positive state — if they submit themselves to The Lord Jesus Christ for the operation in order to make the necessary transmutations and genetic spiritual alterations which would make it possible for them to become positive and free from the negative state.”

“After all, The Lord Jesus Christ is always the very first who undergoes all necessary processes to accomplish whatever is the most beneficial for all sentient entities. In this way, He/She sets an eternal precedent for all. Without such a precedent, no one would be able to accomplish anything because the beginning of all knowledge and experience is The Lord Jesus Christ.”

“In view of these indisputable facts, whoever reads these words, and after reading them, still continues to believe in eternal damnation, will be committing an evil act. He/She will be

identified with the negative state (formerly with sin).”

“On the other hand, humans who do not read this work or who have no conscious knowledge of this fact during their lifetime on your planet, will be presented with these facts personally, face-to-face, by The Lord Jesus Christ, after their body physically dies.”

“The Lord Jesus Christ hereby appoints His/Her original disciples (from this planet) to be in charge of the specially selected numerous staff for the purpose of spreading this good news and glad tidings to the entire Creation and gradually to everyone in the Zone of Displacement (when the time comes to do it there on an all-pervasive scale).”

“Thus, by this act, The Lord Jesus Christ proved beyond the shadow of a doubt that the negative state cannot be forever. Otherwise, He/She would have failed in His/Her effort to incorporate its purified elements into Himself/Herself.”

“This act itself, which began with the incarnation of Jesus Christ into the negative state and was ended just recently, is the most fundamental reason why The Lord Jesus Christ is called Savior and Redeemer of all. Without the completion of this act, the purpose of The First Coming of The Lord Jesus Christ would have completely failed and the negative state would have won its case, really staying to eternity and gradually taking over the entire Creation. Fortunately for all, The Lord Jesus Christ never fails. From the standpoint of this act, the religious conceptualization of the concept of sin and unpardonable sin is no longer tenable. Therefore, it is being replaced with the word ‘negative state.’”

“The term ‘unpardonable sin’ reflects the concept of everyone’s ability and freedom of choice to maintain the negative state to eternity. It is something that exists as a potential but not actual occurrence. Such an idea must be present in the universal consciousness simply because it is an available choice. All choices, including this one, must be present for everyone. Otherwise, the principle of freedom of choice itself would be violated. You must be free to choose to stay negative (to live in sins — in the old terminology) forever, to eternity. Wanting to stay like this, even after The Lord Jesus Christ comes to you and talks to you personally, privately and intimately, would be committing an unpardonable sin.”

“However, in the process of The Last Judgment, as was described previously, this idea will be refuted from the sentient mind. All members will choose freely to nullify this idea and abolish it permanently because the lessons from its being there will be fully learned by that time. No need will exist to keep it any longer. Once this choice is freely made, the negative state will be no more.”

“Assuming the case of someone wanting to continue being in the negative state even after such an experience with The Lord Jesus Christ and all other experiences of the positive state is entirely impossible.”

“You have to understand that, in the process of The Last Judgment, people in the negative state, for the sake of objectivity, fairness and comparison, will be allowed to experience privately, personally and intimately not only the interaction with The Lord Jesus Christ, but also the quality of life in the positive state.”

“As you know from many negative spirits and demons who recently converted to the positive state, once they have had this experience, it never crosses their mind to go back to the negative state. Remember from your own clinical practice, Peter, only those negative entities return back who refuse to ask The Lord Jesus Christ to enable them, for a moment of time, to experience the true life in the positive state so that they acquire an ability, which they lacked,

to compare it with what they had up to that point. So, the returned ones do not have such an experience.”

“But even if you assume that someone, after all, is going to want to continue being negative, the arrangement was made by the promise of The Lord Jesus Christ that, at the time of the final phase of The Last Judgment for this cycle of time, the life energy from such a person would be withdrawn and, after purification, given to someone else (remember the statement ‘he who has nothing even what he has will be taken away from him’?).”

“The reason why this is so is because, before the activation of the negative state, it was agreed by all concerned and promised by The Lord Jesus Christ that the negative state would be permitted to come to its fruition only under this condition.”

“Remember, please, the memories of such a potential rebel will be opened so that he/she will recall that this was the ultimate choice and promise and that he/she freely agreed to such arrangements. After all, if he/she were not to agree, **he/she would never have come into being and existence**. Only that person could and can become a part of the negative state who fully, completely and freely agrees to be a subject of such an arrangement.”

“In order to better understand the topic discussed in this chapter, some additional points need to be taken into consideration:”

(1)

“It is necessary to strongly emphasize again and again that the origin of sin, human problems and the negative state in general is attributed by all religious systems on your planet and in the entire Zone of Displacement to the wrong source. As you know, they assume that someone in the positive state, of the rank of archangel and his cohorts, who was supposedly very close to The Most High, in fact, one of His/Her first sons, committed an act of rebellion against God and subsequently was expelled into the outer darkness, where he established his own domain of the negative state in order to pursue his own negative goals. This supposedly happened in Heaven, that is, in the most within of Creation. Now, this is a favorite story spread by the means of religious doctrines by the very negative state itself.”

“In actuality, this story was invented by the pseudo-creators who, in their original phase, were the sons of God. After all, originally, before the so-called Fall, they were a direct endowment of God. From this fact that they were, or their predecessors were, to be exact, the original endowment of The Most High, comes the original incorrect impression that they were archangels of God who resided in the vicinity of His/ Her throne, that is, in the most within sphere of Creation. To reflect this fact, The Holy Bible, in its literal sense, calls them cherubim, anointed one, etc. Anyone who is a direct endowment of The Most High, regardless of at what level of Creation he/she is incarnated, is called by such names to reflect the unity, oneness and harmony of Creation.”

“But the pseudo-creators capitalized on the literal sense of The Holy Bible and came up with a distortion of this story claiming that, in actuality, the negative state came into its being and existence from the throne of God.”

“The negative state in its entirety needs very desperately for people and humans to believe that its origin comes from the most within; the simple reason being that anything coming from the most within must stay forever, to eternity and is equal to anything and anyone else in the positive state. Thus, this is an attempt to equalize and to immortalize the negative state with the positive state. It wants to convince everyone that it will be forever and that there is no way out of the negative state.”

“Up to this point, it was permitted to believe this story in order to give the negative state a chance to prove its point and to be fully actualized, realized and manifested. This is necessary for the learning purpose. If humans and others were to know the true origin of the negative state, they would never play its games. However, now is the time to correct this false impression.”

“Nothing of the negative state can come or be initiated from the level of the most within of Creation. The most within of Creation is pure positive state. In the condition of purity of the positive state, no ideas of negativity can occur. There is the most direct presence of The Lord Jesus Christ in the state of the most within. No coexistence of The Lord Jesus Christ, at that time The Most High, with anything negative was possible. In such a close proximity to The Absolute Source of the purity of the positive state, any attempt to even remotely think about anything negative would have caused an instantaneous annihilation of anyone who would have had such thoughts.”

“Why do you think it was necessary for The Most High to undergo such an intricate, complex, incomprehensible and elaborate process of incarnation into the negative state as Jesus Christ and then fuse His/ Her body-flesh into the totality of His/Her Nature?”

“If the survival of anything negative in such close proximity to The Most High would have been possible, no need to undergo such a lengthy and complex process would have arisen. The Most High God could have done it comfortably from His/Her most within position.”

“But, of course, no such situation existed at that time. Being Absolute, and being in an Absolute Positive State, by the very nature of that state, nothing of the negative nature could have existed in it or near it. So, if it were to come close to The Most High, it would have turned instantaneously into nothingness.”

“One of the most amazing and mysterious acts that The Most High has ever undertaken was to humble Himself/ Herself immensely and lower Himself/ Herself, in a specially designed condition, as described in Chapter Two of this book, to the level of the negative state in order to experience the negative state and to offer everyone salvation from the negative state without annihilating them in the process. Do you think that if there were any other, easier way to complete this goal that The Most High would not have taken it?”

“After all, if the negative state could have originated right under the nose of The Most High, to use your figure of speech, as all churches on your planet believe, you could be assured that no need for incarnation of The Most High into the negative state would have ever come to its fruition. If something is originated from the most within, it can be dealt with from within by the very means of that within. In that case, no need to come to the without would exist.”

“But look, The Most High, in the form of Jesus Christ, had to leave that within and come to the most external of the most without, its fall out — the Zone of Displacement — in order to deal with the negative state from the very position in which it originated. Because the negative state originated in the most extreme position of the most without, it can be dealt with only from that position. Any other means would either fail or end up in a total annihilation of the entire Creation.”

“You have to be aware of a very important spiritual rule here: The place, state and condition in which anything at all originates has the only effective means for dealing with it in any effective manner. A different place or state or condition lacks such proper means. Remember, all states, dimensions and levels of Creation are discrete and not continuous.

The continuous mode exists only within them but not among them. Therefore, the rules of one state, condition or place do not apply to any other different state, condition and place."

"This is the multiversal spiritual law. It applies to one single particle as well as to anyone else, including The Lord Jesus Christ. After all, The Lord Jesus Christ is The Law and Principle Himself/Herself. Such laws can never be violated. Violation of any such law by the One Who is Absolute Law Himself/Herself would mean the end of the entire multiverse and Creation. There would be nothing to sustain them."

"Thus, the need for The Most High, in the form of Jesus Christ, to submit Himself/Herself to the laws and principles that govern the negative state. By fulfilling those laws, which cannot be broken until they are fulfilled, He/She was able to get hold of the negative state and, from that time on, direct its destiny to its very end. So, it is necessary, once and for all, to dispense with this abomination and stop considering the negative state's origin, origin of sin, evils, falsities and human problems, from the spiritual state of the most within. Such a consideration only feeds the life of the negative state."

(2)

"In evaluating human problems, whatever they may be, you have to take into consideration the following important factors:"

"There are problems with which an individual is born. A good example of these kinds of problems is birth defects, whether physical or mental. These particular problems relate to the events that took place before conception in the mother's womb. They have a deeper spiritual meaning and learning and relate to the fact that one was born into the negative state."

"In actuality, and this is new, to be born into the negative state is to be born with all kinds of defects. Thus, everyone who is born on your planet is spiritually, mentally and physically defective. Among other things, the process of physical conception and birth itself causes these defects. Remember, in that process, one's spirit and soul are trapped in very unusual and peculiar conditions and genetic patterns which exist nowhere else in Creation."

"This entrapment puts one's spirit and soul in a convoluted, limiting and isolated state which gives very little chance for their proper expression, impression and function. This is the reason it was said previously that to be born into the negative state is to be born into problems because the negative state is nothing but problems. However, in addition, you need to realize that to be born into the negative state means, in fact, to be born with problems. The choice to be born into the negative state is preceded by acquirement of some kinds of problems which enable one to be born into the negative state."

"So, when you enter your world, you bring with yourself nothing but problems. They are ingrained into you by the most unnatural process of incarnation onto your planet. As you see, you have here a compounding situation: You are born with problems and, at the same time, you are born into problems. This is a very unfavorable situation. It makes everyone defective in all respects, regardless of whether one is an agent of the positive state or the negative state."

"Since there is nothing normal about or in the negative state (after all it is a deviation from the positive, normal and natural state), nothing normal and natural can be born to it or into it."

"All of you have a totally distorted, at best, or totally false, at worst, perception of the true reality and your own identity."

“The genetic patterns of your nervous system and brain, through which your spirit and soul are allowed, in an extremely limited degree, to perceive reality, are so convoluted, rewired and messed up by the original purposeful genetic engineering of the pseudo-creators that it makes it impossible for them to function in any normal and reasonable fashion.”

“Thus, unfortunately, your definition of normality is, in fact, a definition of abnormality. From the position you are in, you can have no conscious ideas or knowledge of what the true normality is.”

“Of course, within your definition of normality, that is, abnormality, there are different degrees and levels. These levels and degrees range from the so-called regular problems of everyday living in the negative state and subsequent states of anxieties, fears and worries (considered normal under the circumstances but abnormal from the position of the positive state) to the full state of insanity as depicted in psychotic conditions of schizophrenia, for example. Whether it is a simple regular worry or schizophrenia, either of them is abnormal and unnatural to the positive state. It has no reality there. It is an abomination of the negative state.”

“Because you are born with problems and into problems, other types of problems that humans have are the problems they acquire in and from the process of living in the negative state. These problems can be called imposed problems chosen initially by the choice to enter this world into a very certain type of situation, such as family, economic, political, educational, religious, cultural or whatever you have there environmentally. By acceptance of the standards of one’s overall environment and condition, one, inadvertently, accepts the problems that they all have.”

“This causes further discrepancies and strains, already existing from being born the way one was born, on one’s spirit and soul, making one even more abnormal and further from the true reality and normality.”

“Further complications arise from the fact that one is being ruled by unconscious processes and ignorance that such is the case. Thus, in most instances, humans do not know why they behave, act, think, feel, etc., the way they do and why they have all these problems. Because they have no, or almost no, answers to these questions, they consider their predicament to be a normal state of affairs. They come to the conclusion that their state is a necessary concomitant of life in general and therefore, everything has to be the way it is. No other alternative exists.”

“Do you see why the negative state builds on unconscious processes and ignorance?”

“This situation fully illustrates the nature of the negative state and the source of human problems.”

“It is abnormal to have unconscious processes and to be ignorant. Therefore, because you have them, none of you can be fully normal. Even the full awareness that such is the case does not cure you from abnormality of your state. It only allows you better self-control and regulation of your everyday living.”

“Another complication of this situation is the type of physical body in which your spirit and soul reside. As you remember, that body was built from the negative animalistic genes. Therefore, it is the least suitable form for carrying life. In actuality, the true life in that body functions as a deadly poison. The body is being gradually destroyed by such life. In order to make that body function at least on a temporary basis, only an extremely limited amount of

that life is allowed to be in that body at any given time.“

“As you know, your body is very feeble, easily tires, wears out and needs constant attention and frequent rest. This is a very wasteful manner in which to live life.”

“Moreover, because of this deadly poisonous process which is going on in all cells of your body, it lives in constant conscious or unconscious fear of its death. This chronic pathological situation makes human abnormality even more pronounced and obvious. For that reason, you can easily say that being a human is being abnormal in all respects.”

“In order that no true life in its full force enters that body, the sentient mind in that body, as you remember, was separated and split into three different areas and put in an unconscious mode. Only very little awareness of that mind is available to humans. It is limited to some conscious awareness of the external mind.”

“Now, the external mind, in most instances, is not even aware of the existence of its own unconscious part, not to speak of the most within Spiritual Mind or interior mind. How many humans truly know that they have within themselves the most within Spiritual Mind and the interior mind?”

“Thanks to psychological discoveries some humans have limited knowledge that they have a subconscious and unconscious mind. But the mind they are talking about is an integral part of the external mind and its content, consisting mostly of repressed and suppressed memories of events from the physical birth to the present time. Only C.G. Jung was able to postulate the existence of some levels of the interior mind with its racial memories and archetypes. However, until recently, no knowledge existed that there is such a thing as The Inner Mind in the spiritual connotation of its definition (that is, the most within Spiritual Mind).”

“Surely, many humans talked about the inner mind even before the book by this transmitter Principles of Spiritual Hypnosis was published. But what they considered to be the inner mind was only some aspect of the true interior mind.”

“The separation of one sentient mind into three areas, and putting it into the unconscious, unaware mode of humans, contributes further to the abnormality of human life, producing enormous amounts of problems.“

“Another insane arrangement of the negative state is the way the true sentient mind is separated from the body by the genetically imposed envelope and the false sentient mind built around it.”

“This false sentient mind consists of false memories, feelings, emotions, thoughts, intelligence and all other false mental factors and their pseudo-spiritual ideas. This gives humans a totally false identity and understanding of life because humans are connected to the false sentient mind and not to their true sentient mind.”

“As you remember, the true sentient mind is trapped in those envelopes and surrounded by the false sentient mind. In most instances, humans have no access to their true sentient mind, except in dreams or in a deep spiritual trance. But dreams and spiritual trance speak in an entirely different language than what you use in the so-called awakened state. Therefore, whatever is conveyed to you in dreams or spiritual trance is subject to the conscious interpretation. That interpretation comes from the position of the negative state. For this reason, it has very little validity. Thus, dreams and spiritual trances, by and large, do not represent any danger to the negative state.”

“Having no proper connection to their true mind, humans assume that their false mind is the true mind and that no other mind exists. This creates within them continuous tension and existential anxiety, making them even more abnormal.”

“As you see, by this insane arrangement, the true nature of the negative state is being illustrated, demonstrated and exposed for the sake of important spiritual learning of the entire Creation.”

(3)

“It is obvious from all preceding revelations that human problems in their entirety are the results, consequences and outcomes of what was called the original sin and what is designated here as the activation of the negative state.”

“As you remember, the activation of the negative state was possible by putting to the test and experimenting with the question of what life is like if it is derived from any other source other than The True God Most High, presently The Lord Jesus Christ, and His/Her true spiritual principles.”

“As you see, the issues were purely spiritual. Is life possible without the true spiritual principles and true God and with non-spiritual or distorted spiritual principles and no God or false god(s)? And if it is possible, what kind of life would it be?”

“Experimenting with and testing this question activates the negative state and brings about all existing problems in whatever mode, form, shape, condition and situation they occur.”

“If this is the case, and everything proves that this is so, then, in order to resolve or, at least, minimize these problems, it is necessary to initiate any type of treatment for them which takes into serious consideration the spiritual factors. Thus, any treatment and remedy of this situation must include the spiritual approach. Otherwise, you are treating symptoms fed by their negative source. You need to be aware of this negative source first before you can permanently get rid of the symptoms.”

“If all human problems, in the most general sense, stem from lack of proper spiritual awareness or clinging to the wrong spiritual principles, then the ultimate cure can be found in correction of this situation and realigning human awareness with all these facts that are revealed in this book.”

“However, the first step in this process is the acceptance of everything being revealed here as truth. The next step is in being willing to give up everything that was believed or considered to be true up to this point in this respect. And the third step is replacing all old false belief systems and habits with the new ideas, inviting The Lord Jesus Christ, in His/Her New Nature, to take full control of your spirit, soul and body and begin the process of spiritual transformation by whatever means deemed appropriate to each particular problem.”

“It is said to begin the process of spiritual transformation. This implies an ongoing process. In actuality, spiritual transformation can never be fully completed while you live on planet Zero or in any region of the Zone of Displacement. It can only be initiated there.”

“Remember, you have that body on you, which is impeding or making this full spiritual transformation impossible to accomplish. For that, you need to put aside your body. This means physical death of your body. Your body was formed from the lowest, most negative and most non-spiritual elements of the negative state. Because of this nature, it cannot

survive the full spiritual transformation. One of the major purposes of fabricating such a body was to prevent humans from experiencing the full spiritual transformation while they are still on planet Zero. Such a complete spiritual experience would endanger the negative state's being and existence on your planet."

"But that body must run its course. Sooner or later it must die. It is totally inevitable for this to happen."

"The inevitability of death of that body will always produce some degree of fear, anxiety, worry, anguish and sadness. The body does not want to die. It clings to that life, even though that life is poisonous to it, because it has no other life or a chance."

"You all must go through this process, no matter how far you progressed along the line of your spiritual transformation. You agreed to this when you were entering the negative state. The process of dying is the nature of the negative state. The negative state is in the process of dying in an absolute sense. It is only a matter of time when it dies; as it is a matter of time when your body is to die. This is your cross that you have to bear; that you agreed to bear. Do not expect more than can be accomplished under this existing condition."

"Once you are free from your body, you will be put in a special division of The New School in the spiritual world where all genetic and spiritual blocks of the negative state will be removed from you and your true sentient mind will be completely unified and realigned with the forces of the positive state. In that moment, and only in that moment, your spiritual transformation can be completed."

"Of course, this will happen only if you choose it to happen. After all, everyone has a choice to continue in the negative state's mode of life even after the physical death of one's body. Many other levels of the Zone of Displacement and the Hells exist where one may continue in the negative lifestyle until the time when the negative state is to die eternally."

"The resolution of human problems, or an attempt for their resolution, by any other means — without this spiritual consideration — is a futile venture. They either get worse or are resolved on a temporary basis only until something else strikes. The seeming cures that people experience without spiritual means have only temporary, transient validity. This validity is nullified once they enter the spiritual world. There, no other means except spiritual means are taken into consideration. In the case of non-spiritual cures, all problems experienced in the body before the cure will fully return in a much more potent manner through their corresponding spiritual factors."

"As you remember, each specific problem has its specific spiritual root. The problem is a symptom or correspondence of that spiritual state. Therefore, once you enter the spiritual world, the fullness of that spiritual state is exposed and comes to your awareness. You suddenly realize that the problem has not been resolved, only its physical symptom. As a result of that realization, you become spiritually ill. In order to avoid this serious spiritual illness, humans are hereby advised to combine ***all modes of healing with the spiritual one*** — as described above. That way, when they arrive into the spiritual world, their cure will be valid because they considered the proper spiritual factors of and means for cure of their problems whatever they were. This spiritual rule applies for all human problems and their all-inclusive aspects."

(4)

"There is another complicating factor of human problems and all evils and false states. As you remember from Chapter Five of this book, around the various levels of the human true

mind, besides the false mind and envelopes, special 'guardians' were placed to assure that everything positive, coming from the true sentient mind, is captured, perverted, distorted and falsified and in that condition relayed to the conscious part of the external mind. As you also remember, these 'guardians' are backed by special types of demons who keep the 'guardians' in full obedience to the negative state."

"This statement will be very difficult to accept by many humans. However, this is the true reality of the structure of your world and your mind. The process of how all these things were accomplished by the pseudo-creators is difficult, if not impossible, for you to understand because of gross limitations genetically imposed by them on your endowment. Once you are freed from these limitations, you will be able to see clearly that this was the case and how it was accomplished."

"One of the purposes of these gross limitations being imposed on your perception and understanding of reality of your true condition is to make sure that you are not aware that this arrangement truly exists. No experiential or scientific proofs are available to verify such a statement."

"How do you prove to humans that the various levels of their mind, through some kind of mysterious non-temporal, non-spatial warp, are encircled by the 'guardians' and demons from the negative state? No such tangible proof exists. This was done purposefully so that humans not only would not be aware that such is the case, but would blame the wrong source for all their problems, sufferings and misery."

"Thus, the negative state comes out from this clean as a whistle, to use your figure of speech. Being that this is the case, the majority of humans will laugh at such an assumption and will readily accuse the transmitter of this Revelation as suffering from some kind of mental illness with delusions of grandeur and religious delusions."

"It is easier to label someone with paraphrenia (a form of paranoid psychosis in which there are conspicuous hallucinations in several modalities with well-preserved and well-functioning personality — a diagnosis of ICD-9, that is, the International Classification of Diseases) than to admit that this might be the case. Who can believe such fantasies about the evil, negative spirits and demons present within us? Of course, only few humans believe such nonsense and they themselves are possibly mentally unstable."

"But here is the point: One of the many functions of these entities is to make sure that no one believes in their existence. Or, if someone even believes in them, no one will admit that they are within one's mind, present right under one's nose, so-to-speak."

"These entities do not want humans to believe that, in actuality, they are the perpetrators and, in many instances, the source of human problems. If humans were to believe that this is the case, they would put all effort into getting rid of them: And humans would. And they would be cured from their problems or, at least, they would be able to control their problems instead of being controlled by their problems."

"You see, these creatures were originally fabricated by the pseudocreators with a special purpose in mind. They were structured in such a manner as to be able to produce, impose, induce, maintain and perpetuate human problems in the form of such emotions as fear, anxiety, worries, panic, depression, melancholia, all types of psychosis and all types of physical and mental illnesses."

"In order to accomplish this, it was necessary to split the sentient mind into three parts,

isolate, separate and encapsulate them from each other and from the conscious awareness of humans; place them in a physical form not suitable for any true life; and superimpose on them a pseudo-mind ruled by the laws of their own making, fabricated by the pseudo-creators from the negative animalistic genes. Now you have a mind and a body under full control of the negative state. Being their originator, knowing their structure and function, you can manipulate them in any way you want. You can impose on them any state, condition, problem or illness you want.”

“The creatures, fabricated for that purpose, were given a full blueprint of that mind, mentality and body, so that they could influence them, alter them and punish them in any manner they wished for the purpose of keeping that mind, mentality and body consistent with the nature and dominance of the negative state. In view of this fact, the process of any treatment and spiritual transformation must take into consideration this factor.”

“The Medieval Ages were aware of this fact and they were not too far off, except they went into the opposite extreme. Instead of incorporating this factor **as one of many causative sources of the problem**, they assumed that the possessed person was guilty and burned him/her at the stake. To solve the problem this way was as evil and as demonic as not to solve it at all or to deny that such a situation exists.”

“You have to understand that, at that time, numerous factions existed in the Hells. They waged vicious wars against each other. Whichever faction prevailed severely punished all members of the defeated faction. On your planet, at that time, this situation was manifested by the phenomenon of the inquisition. The inquisition was usually representing the winning factions of the Hells, and humans, burned at the stake, the defeated ones.”

“Thus, nothing positive and good whatsoever existed in the mode by which the problems of this nature were solved at that time.”

“At the present time, there is a revealed methodology that can be properly applied for dealing with human problems in an all-inclusive manner. It was described in Chapter Five of this book.”

(5)

“Another compounding factor of human problems is a cosmic, existential and spiritual isolation purposefully imposed upon them. The purpose of this isolation is to keep humans in total ignorance, guessing about anyone and anything else in Creation and its multiverse.”

“To have full access to all levels of being and existence, both through spiritual means and scientific means, would endanger the negative state’s active and dominant position. People in the negative state would recognize the nature of the negative state and the source of its origin and then ultimately, they would overthrow it.”

“For that reason, it was necessary to fabricate a special condition, with special worlds and dimensions that would have very little awareness of and almost no access to anywhere else.”

“In order to assure the secrecy of how the negative state was originated and how it operates, this isolation was not limited to some other state other than the negative state, but also within the negative state itself.”

“Thus, the regular members of the negative state have no access to other worlds within their own realm. The most restricting position was imposed on your planet.”

"Humans on your planet have no experiential, tangible or scientific knowledge that the spiritual and intermediate worlds exist; that there is such a thing as the Zone of Displacement; that there is really Hell. They know of the Hells; but who was physically there who can prove their real existence? Most of them do not believe in the Hells and think of them as a religious fable invented by preachers to keep humans in fear of and obedience to them. And the same is true about Heavens. Who can scientifically prove their existence?"

"This limitation applies also to the external universe visible by human eyes and senses. After all, humans can see planets and stars in the sky. It would be difficult to deny their existence. But to travel to and visit them is another story. So far, humans have succeeded only in visiting their own Moon. But in what a restricting manner! What bulky suits they had to wear to survive there! How many accidents and failures they had to experience before they accomplished the first step on the moon! What about travelling to other stars? With presently existing technology, it would take them many lifetimes to reach and to explore any other stars within their own galaxy, not to speak of other galaxies."

"This situation is a serious factor and perpetrator of human existential anxiety, desperation, loneliness and severe doubts compensated by the extremes of an inferiority and/or superiority complex."

"There is nothing certain, nothing stable, nothing reliable, nothing permanent in the human condition. Just in the moment you think you acquired the most reliable knowledge and understanding of some factors of life, giving you stability and certainty, something comes up, a new discovery, that completely ruins the stability and certainty of that previous knowledge or state."

"Human existence has gone on like this since the activation of the negative state and fabrication of humans. It allows the full illustration of the true nature of the negative state and points to one of the many specific sources of human problems."

"In the process of treatment this factor needs to be taken into consideration. Not too much can be changed in this respect, being that you are presently living in this type of body and environment. But realization of this fact can give you better control of this problem and a sense of acceptance and peace, knowing that this is a temporary, transient condition."

(6)

"Another serious factor contributing to human problems, carefully designed and projected by the pseudo-creators, was a gradual establishment of many different races, with many different languages."

"This situation reinforces the state of isolation and separation existing on your planet. The line of easy communication, conveyance and sharing of information and knowledge, mutual understanding and respect is made considerably more difficult by this arrangement. Humans have a very hard time understanding what their neighboring nations, with different customs, cultures and languages, are after. As a result they become suspicious and mistrusting of one another."

"You need to have special interpreters and translators to communicate with one another. And how much is lost from the true meaning in the process of translation?"

"But this situation creates a much more serious problem. Being different, having different languages, a stronger or greater nation, by virtue of sheer numbers, has a tendency to proclaim itself to be more superior than any other nation. It assumes the right to dominate

others, to make others serve its own political needs or simply proclaims that other nations have no right to exist and therefore, it exterminates them.”

“Of course, some other nation makes similar claims. As a result of such foolish claims, a clash is inevitable, leading to devastating wars, turmoil and bloodshed.”

“Once you lack proper spiritual unifying principles, no other common denominator exists that can or may make humans cooperate, to understand each other or to be supportive of one another for any significant length of time.”

“Any other ground, on which an attempt is made to accomplish such a unification, will eventually end in a total breakdown.”

“As you know from the history of this effort on your planet, all such attempts ended either in a total failure, or such a unification was artificially maintained by force, brutality, threats and political corruption.”

“Any degree of weakening control by such means led to an instantaneous uprising or revolution, ending in a civil war and mutual slaughter.”

“This situation is another form of illustration of what can happen if the proper spiritual principles are discarded, distorted, perverted, mutilated, falsified or replaced by any other consideration.”

“In the positive state of Creation, no such situation exists. This is reflected in the fact that in the spiritual world there is only one language spoken by all sentient entities, regardless of their form, shape, race, gender or any other affiliation. The infinite varieties of differences among them are not seen as a potential for separation, isolation and hate but, instead, as a continuous opportunity for mutual enhancement and enrichment of their lives and spirituality. The greater degree of diversity among them, the more possibility of better knowing The Lord Jesus Christ in their unique experiences.”

“As you see, the common denominator of all of them is The Lord Jesus Christ. If you interact from, by, through, with and of the common denominator — The Lord Jesus Christ — you interact from the position of unifying spiritual principles. No problems can arise in relating from such a position.”

“But, as you remember, this ‘diversity principle’ was cunningly and craftily used by the pseudo-creators to fabricate many diverse races with a totally different principle in mind. The purpose here was to illustrate a lifestyle without having this spiritual common denominator. Instead, very opposite feelings were introduced that became a driving force of much human misery and suffering — hate, intolerance, supremacy, mistrust and political paranoia — leading to destruction, wars and bloodshed and all modes of justifications, excuses and rationalizations for having such feelings, attitudes and behaviors.”

“This situation clearly illustrates that no other common denominator but a spiritual one — The Lord Jesus Christ — is capable of sustaining any lifestyle free of problems.”

“Another purpose of this devastating isolation and separation by means of races, cultures, customs and different languages is to keep humans from exchanging important spiritual information, experiences and insights that might lead to the discovery of truth regarding the origin of the negative state and human problems and, as a result, an attempt at unification in order to get rid of the negative state.”

“This purpose is not so obvious or apparent on the surface. However, deeply inward, from the presence of that genuine sentient mind, albeit entrapped and isolated, some feelings about all of these do break through to the conscious awareness, making humans strive, desire, wish or, at least, hope for such a unification.”

“Feelings of this nature are dangerous to the existence and being of the negative state, limiting its chance for survival for too long. Therefore, fabrication of diverse and different nations, races, cultures, customs, traditions and spoken languages, on a totally different principle than a spiritual one, is accomplished, making such feelings only feelings, without any hope for a possibility of such a unification and elimination of human problems.”

“As long as the negative state exists in its activated and dominant condition, this situation will continue till the end of its life; the reason being that this is the very nature of the negative state — to be like this. Nothing else is conceivable for the negative state.”

(7)

“The most devastating source of human problems, however, is the spiritual one. Although it is not as apparent as any other mentioned above or will be mentioned below, it has far greater consequences for all aspects of human life and for all members of the entire Zone of Displacement. This source relates to the way humans conceptualize the nature of The Lord Jesus Christ or God and all true spiritual principles deriving from Him/Her.”

“As it was mentioned many times before, and will be mentioned many times after, the destinies of all sentient entities entirely depend on this factor. Now, this factor was well known to the pseudo-creators. Therefore, much effort was put into the establishment of a situation and lifestyle which would make this issue the most difficult to properly conceptualize.”

“The first step in this effort was to fabricate a special breed of humans (humankind on your planet) who would be born by animalistic, parasitic means in the mother’s womb, into total ignorance, while being fully unconscious regarding anything at all, but particularly regarding spiritual issues and the nature of God.”

“Once you have someone who has no conscious knowledge of anything; and once you fabricate him/her in such a manner that any knowledge must be fed to him/her from the outside and not from the inside, you can give him/her any information about anything you wish and in the manner you wish. Endowed like that, an individual has little choice but to accept as truth whatever he/she is being told by others in the position of authority.”

“In order to make sure that you accept any information desirable to keep the negative state alive and thriving, you fabricate that individual in such a manner as to make him/her totally and completely dependent in all his/her needs on those in a position of authority. This creates a false, but a very secure, impression that authorities have the proper knowledge and whatever they tell you stands as truth.”

“It does not matter that later on you will rebel against these authorities. By that time you are so corrupt, contaminated, polluted and poisoned by all that external information that your whole identity will be established around it.”

“In actuality, your rebellion is welcomed by the negative state. After all, it was set up by the negative state to be that way. It prevents the dangerous unification with the authority figures. It supports the principle of isolation and separation on which the negative state is built.”

“So, having established your own false identity around such information, you will live a life based on this false, distorted and perverted identity. It will securely support your problems, creating new ones all the time.”

“Now, in order to make the negative state more secure, permitting it to last longer, if possible to eternity, the ignorantly born humans are presented with various different concepts about spiritual issues and the nature of God. After all, look at how many religions and their numerous sects exist on your planet.”

“Each major religion comes up with its own ideas of the nature of God, spiritual principles and the mode of worshiping and relating to that God. They use different names for God and prescribe different rituals and procedures in their approach to God.”

“They proclaim that only their God and their way of approaching Him/ Her is the proper one, the right one and the acceptable one. Every other way is, therefore, from the devil and should be eliminated and destroyed.”

“Thus, in the name of God, bloody religious wars ensued, that have raged with a fanatic fervor since the time of activation of the negative state.”

“In order to prevent humans from being too unified within one religious system, the condition was induced by the Hells for the fabrication of numerous sects within the same religion. Now you have to fight not only one major religion against another, but also one sect against another within the same religion.”

“This situation assures that no proper understanding, conceptualization of and relatedness to the true God — The Lord Jesus Christ — can ever be established as long as this situation exists.”

“The differences in various religious systems are so great that no reconcilable common denominator can be established or found. They do not even speak the same language!”

“This whole situation portrays God in a very peculiar manner. What kind of God is this that causes or tolerates such things to happen? Who is right? Or who is wrong? Too much confusion about this issue leads many to the opposite extreme, proclaiming that no God exists. Otherwise, He/She would not tolerate such abominations.”

“Of course, the point to realize here is that none of these religions and their respective sects are right. They are all wrong. None of them were established by God, that is, by The Lord Jesus Christ. They all were fabricated in the very Hells in order to keep humans in total darkness regarding the true nature of God and the origin of the negative state.”

“Remember, please, the proper knowledge, understanding and acceptance of The True Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ or God, makes the negative state void. Simply, it cannot exist under this condition. The only way to assure the existence and being of the negative state is through a continuous distortion, falsification, perversion and mutilation of the proper understanding of this Nature.”

“Is there any better way to accomplish this goal than through religions and their numerous sects? Whatever is done in the name of God has much more power and effectiveness. It is more effective than outright atheism. Most humans will despise atheists. This is not an efficient way to keep humans in the negative state, that is, in their problems. It is much better

to give them many religions, many sects, cults and various spiritualistic trends with a conviction of righteousness and holiness of their cause than some puny atheistic concepts that very few take seriously.”

“In an ultimate spiritual sense, this situation with all religions is the true feeding source of all human problems, or of the entire humankind, regardless of what their nature is. Although this will be difficult, if not impossible, for humans to accept or even to understand, nevertheless, this is a spiritual fact.”

“If the most important determinator of one’s life and position in Creation is the proper conceptualization, understanding and acceptance of The True Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ and the consequent lifestyle one chooses, then it is very obvious why this factor plays such an important role in all respects. Therefore, any identification with a belief system that perpetuates falsities, distortions and perversions regarding this issue will be the major source of one’s problems.”

“However, the negative state is even more cunning than this. If humans were to be fully and completely aware of the true source of their problems, they would seek proper ways of resolving these problems.”

“There are numerous ways to discourage humans from the discovery of truth. One of them is to proclaim that suffering has a great spiritual value and will lead one into heaven. Therefore, one should patiently suffer in this life, not trying too much to avoid it, so that one can become worthy of Heavens.”

“The other way, a more potent one, of perpetuating so many religions, sects, cults, etc., is to answer humans’ prayers once in a while and make their request be fulfilled. After all, even false gods need to do something about their godly reputation. So, they allow performance of all kinds of miracles, predict futures that do come true, answer one’s prayer to assure their followers that their God is a true God; and many other such things. Of course, all these things are done preferably in public, with many witnesses present so that humans can spread the ‘good’ news of their experience, trapping humans into believing that they are dealing with the true God and that, therefore, their belief system and the way they conceptualize the nature of God is the right one.”

“It is very easy to be trapped in this kind of predicament. It assures that humans do not have any need to seek true answers regarding these issues, or anything else for that matter, and thus, that they continue in their belief system and lifestyle relevant to this system. This way, the perpetuation of human problems, and thus of the negative state, is safely assured.”

(8)

“The most sensitive and secretive area of human problems is related to the issue of sexuality. Much was revealed about the true nature of sexuality throughout the books of The New Revelation. As expected, many readers were not able to accept what was said about this issue in those books. More on sexuality in the light of the current portion of The New Revelation will be revealed in Chapter Twenty of this Book.”

“Sexuality seems to be the area of human life most controlled by the rules of society and religion. None are so strictly enforced as these. Because of this peculiar position of sexuality in human society, it became the major source of human problems, either overtly or covertly.”

“As the spiritual issues mentioned in the previous point, the inappropriate, false, distorted and perverted understanding, practice of and attitude toward sexuality leads to many human

problems. Unfortunately, most of these problems are not classified as having a sexual connotation. They are disguised as something else to mislead humans into believing that they do not have any sexual problems.”

“Why is it that sexuality has such a tremendous impact on human life?”

“As you remember from the Chapter on ‘Sexual Life’ in the book, Understanding and Fulfillment of Our Earthly Life, one of the primary functions of sexuality is an all inclusive sharing. Sexuality is the most private, intimate and personal tool of sharing. Through it, The True Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ and His/Her spiritual principles can be experienced in the most direct and non-distorted manner.”

“Because of this primary connotation of sexuality, besides many others, its proper function and practice posed the greatest danger to the negative state.”

“After all, the intimate, private and personal experiences within a person’s spirit, soul and body cannot be refuted by any theoretical or even practical considerations.”

“For this reason, sexuality became the greatest target of all distortions and genetic alteration by the pseudo-creators and other ‘prominent’ members of the negative state.”

“It is not necessary to repeat here what already has been revealed about these issues in other books of The New Revelation and what is going to be revealed in the Twentieth Chapter of this book.”

“The point which is being emphasized here is that inappropriate understanding, conceptualization and practice of sexuality leads to development of all kinds of spiritual, mental, physical and sexual problems. It is another form, even more dangerous, of separation and isolation of humans from each other. Being disconnected from its spiritual source, human sexuality can never give anyone full satisfaction, knowledge and experience of the intimate presence of The Lord Jesus Christ during sexual intercourse.”

“On the other hand, the physical restructuring of the human sexual organs from their original position, done initially by the pseudocreators, does not allow humans any true exchange and sharing of the true content of the experience that one’s sexual partner has.”

“Thus, no matter how hard you try, you are still unable to experience or even to know, what exactly it is that your sexual partner is experiencing and how.”

“By this cursed arrangement, no true unification of masculine and feminine principles can ever occur. The major purpose of the proper practice of sexuality is to experience this unification because in it is the strongest, the most potent, the most understandable and the most discernible presence of The Lord Jesus Christ.”

“This very ability, the most crucial, vital and important one, was removed from human sexuality. In the present connotation of human sexuality, sexuality is reduced to the level of animalistic copulation, lust and procreation of species. These are all negative connotations. Nothing positive is contained in them. The procreation of species has no positive meaning because it is for the sole purpose of perpetuation of life of the negative state. Whatever helps in this effort cannot have any positive connotation as humans falsely believe.”

“Any regulatory impositions on one’s free expressions, whatever they may be, create tension, anger, violence and deep resentment. This is particularly true regarding sexuality. Because

practice of human sexuality is completely distorted and misunderstood, nothing normal exists about the ways human sexuality is expressed and manifested.”

“All known sexual deviations, perversions and pathologies are the result of this abnormal position that sexuality has within the human systems.”

“It is the area most guarded by the negative state, guarded from any possible changes in the existing understanding, conceptualization and practice of sexuality.”

“The major problem, stemming from practice of human sexuality, is the intense sexual drive most humans experience, and, at the same time, the limitations, taboos, and religious, social and legal requirements that make it impossible for proper fulfillment of one’s sexual needs.”

“Another aspect of these needs is that, by fabricating a non-spiritual sexuality, isolated from its true spiritual source, naming it abnormal, these needs are, very often, deviant, perverted and abnormal in themselves. This was done purposefully in order to justify the controls society and religion impose on humans in this respect. That way, it is most certainly assured that sexual practices will never lead anyone to the discovery of their proper spiritual connotation and meaning, as revealed in the books of The New Revelation.”

(9)

“Human problems are compounded by a peculiar economic system that exists on your planet.”

“In order to keep humans even more preoccupied with the external factors of their survival, keeping them away from the inner spiritual reality, an intricate reward system was instituted in the form of precious metals and money. Without money, nothing can be obtained for fulfillment of one’s physical or even mental needs. Everything costs something.”

“Thus, a form of mental problem arises from this situation — an obsessive need to possess many material goods, valuables and money, wasting all one’s efforts and energies on acquiring them.”

“These material riches become the ruling value of life. If you can buy anything you want with money, the more money you have the more things you can have and the more powerful and influential you become. This striving makes humans dependent on money or on material valuables which can provide them with many things they otherwise could not have.”

“Thus, a peculiar form of dependence was developed, directed toward all external, transient, temporary, perishing values. The majority of human activities are spent in acquiring such values. And yet, despite the fact that humans know only too well that nothing external, acquired in the process of their life on planet Zero, can be taken with them beyond the grave, and that all their possessions must be left behind, nevertheless, they become slaves of these strivings.”

“The factor of dependence on external values is a source of many human problems. It closes the door to any spiritual considerations. Because the true reality and destiny of one’s life totally depends on a proper spiritual attitude, such a disregard becomes a major source of many disasters.”

“This situation was carefully planned as an assurance that humans would have no time, desire or willingness to pursue any proper spiritual activities which would lead them to the state of their true internals.”

“Once anyone becomes hooked on something, it is a most difficult task to break that dependence. A good example of this devastating situation is drug and alcohol dependence. Professional counselors, working with drug and alcohol addicts, are only too well aware of what it takes to overcome this terrible habit.”

“Yet, the entire structure of human life on your planet is built on this type of dependence in one form or another. Everyone is dependent on something or someone. You depend on your job to make enough money for taking care of the essential survival needs of your body. You depend on other humans to do many things for you. You depend on police to protect you from danger of criminals. One could go on forever in enumerating such human dependencies.”

“Notice, please, that these dependencies are all of the external nature. Something or someone else out there will take care of this or that need. The responsibility is shifted from the state of within to the state of without.”

“By this mode of life, the negative state is able to flourish and feed on human problems. Because it needs human problems for its survival, the negative state continuously fabricates conditions in human life under which new and different problems can be initiated and old ones successfully maintained and perpetuated.”

(10)

“One of the many reasons why the presently existing human body was fabricated the way it is was to make it an assured source of problems which would feed the life of the negative state.”

“The human body, in its present form and condition, is nothing but problems. Not only is it a problem in itself and by itself, but, as mentioned previously, it requires a tremendous amount of attention and care to keep it alive and relatively healthy.”

“Do you realize how many human activities are related to this purpose? How much time do you spend on taking care of your body?”

“The most peculiar thing about the human body is that it does not give you any choice in this matter. By its very existence, it demands from you attention and care. It demands food and drink. It demands rest and sleep. It demands elimination of urine and feces. And yet, despite all of that, the human body is in the process of dying. As you know, the human body is plagued with all kinds of germs, viruses, bacteria and cells that are ready to devour it or are continuously in the process of devouring it.”

“Look at the arrangement of your brain cells — one of the most important parts of your body. From the very first moment of birth, the brain cells are dying without ever reproducing. And no one knows why these cells are unable to reproduce like some other cells in other parts of the body. This is a very wasteful mode of being and existence.”

“Here is an important spiritual correspondence. The human brain cells are unable to reproduce because they are in the closest *corresponding* proximity to the spiritual reality of the positive state. They are the direct receptacles of life which is allowed in an infinitesimally small amount to enter the human body and maintain its life for the time being. Brain cells are the most sensitive elements-carriers of thought processes that make it possible for the spiritual principles of life to come to one’s conscious awareness. Because of this most close proximity to the positive state, they represent a grave danger to the negative state. In order to

avoid this liability, the pseudocreators, in the process of their genetic experimentation, developed a type of brain cell from which the ability to reproduce was removed.”

“If the brain cells were able to reproduce, the potentials of the human brain, having all its cells intact from the very moment of birth to the last breath, would be so great as to surpass anything known to humans. In such a powerful condition, being in the closest corresponding proximity to the true source of life, it would be very easy for such a brain to discover the true spiritual reality and the source of and reason for the negative state’s activation. This discovery would mean the end of the negative state.”

“Thus, it was necessary to establish a different type of receptacle of conscious life with a continuously diminishing amount of brain cells.”

“The need for the greater number of such cells at the physical birth than in the process of life after the physical birth stems, among other things, from the fact that entrance into the negative state on your planet is the most complicated, dangerous and devastating occurrence. Lesser amounts of those cells would not be able to take upon themselves the surge of all human problems imposed by that birth and by the process of that birth in itself. You have to remember that at that moment, the life of the brain faces all eventualities and force of life in the negative state in a moment of time — as cosmic rays touch it directly. Once adjustments are made, those cells can begin the process of dying out at a daily rate until the body dies.”

“Other cells in the body do not represent this danger for the negative state because their function is not to be the carriers of thought and other mental processes. Therefore, they are allowed to regenerate or reproduce themselves.”

“The genetic restructuring of the brain cells in this manner made them extremely vulnerable and weak. They are unable to sustain at full scale the bodily functions and their own function at the same continuous level. Therefore, they need frequent rest and prolonged sleep.”

“As you know, at least one-third of human life is spent in bed, sleeping and resting. No one is able to survive for too long in that body with a continuous lack of sleep. None of the bodily cells, but particularly brain cells, are able to sustain themselves without their sleep or rest or alternate activities.”

“From the spiritual standpoint, this is a very wasteful manner of life. To waste one-third or more of one’s life in bed sleeping or resting clearly indicates that there is something very wrong with the whole arrangement of life on your planet. It indicates a serious problem of great proportions.”

“However, the human body was built that way for a very good reason — to take away from humans as much time as possible and to preoccupy them with all kinds of external activities in order to keep them unaware of any true factors of spiritual life and spiritual reality.”

“When you are deadily tired from all the hassles and activities of your daily chores and duties (making a living!), who cares about anything but going to bed or resting or watching television, etc.? The more tired you are and the more preoccupied you are with making a living, the less time and desire you have to consider anything else. This situation greatly compounds and perpetuates human problems because it does not allow humans to establish a proper lifestyle consistent with the true spiritual principles of living. In actuality, humans are physically not even equipped to be able to live such a proper life. Everything in their structure is geared toward a non-spiritual, deadly mode of life. By such a life the negative state is being

fed and perpetuated very successfully and efficiently.”

(11)

“The tremendous limitations and restrictions inherent in the condition of human life in the physical body create another unfavorable situation. By and large, by this condition, humans have difficulties in changing. There is a tendency to establish themselves in a certain relatively permanent state, position, job or lifestyle and pursue it to the very end of their bodily life. They develop a habitual type of behavior, routine procedures with very little deviation in the process of their living from day-to-day. Little is changed in such a condition.”

“Humans become very comfortable the way they are and they not only resent any change in this respect, but are threatened by it. They experience anxiety and fear whenever such changes are imposed on them. Because they are ruled by the unconscious processes and ignorance, the unknown factors of any future change become one of the most threatening situations for them. Humans feel secure and comfortable with things the way they are regardless of how bad or good they are. They feel very insecure and uncomfortable with any possibilities of breaking the routine of their everyday living. Clinging to the familiar, known and comfortable lifestyle develops within them a state of stagnation which impedes any possibility of spiritual progression.”

“The stagnant state of human life dominates all its aspects. Humans cling to the same views, opinions, philosophies, religions. They drink the same drinks, eat the same type of food, associate with the same type of other humans, tell the same type of stories and jokes, do the same type of work, etc.”

“This situation is determined by the fact that, due to the inherent limitations of the structure of their body and mentality, it is very complicated for humans to be mobile and flexible. If you have to take your body with you everywhere you go, you also have to take with you all necessary factors which can take care of that body and support its life. It is much easier to stay where you are, or to move into close viewing proximity to where you were before, than to leave everything behind you and start all over again in some new, unfamiliar place, situation, state or condition (unless, of course, you are attracted to such a change by some material, financial, economic or political consideration — all external, non-spiritual factors).”

“This is also true regarding one’s philosophy of life. It is easier to maintain to the end what you believe in than to change it to some other, unfamiliar view, philosophy, religion or whatever you have. In the old ways you are firmly established; you have your own circles of friends who share with you your lifestyle in all respects. Changing into new ways very often means loss of all your old friends and habits, and being for a while isolated and separated from the familiar and comfortable support system. Frequently, your former friends consider you crazy if suddenly you change in whatever direction, leaving your secure, well-established and reputable, from their standpoint, lifestyle. Now, this kind of attitude permeates humans’ life across the board. The stagnant condition of their life effectively prevents them from acquiring any proper spiritual awareness regarding the true reality of life. The nature of the negative state is a stagnant one, opposing any progression with an exception of those changes that contribute to its perpetuation and flourishing.”

“However, the major target here is not physical change but spiritual. The negative state does not want humans to change their spiritual orientation, whatever it may be. Unless, of course, it is within the same negative system which is only an appearance of change but not a real change. The negative state wants humans to continue believing their distortions and falsities, considering them good, proper, right and godly. Humans establish within their minds a self-righteous attitude about their belief system.”

“With such an attitude who wants to change anything? If I am right and everyone is wrong, why should I change from something which is right to something which is wrong? It would be foolish to do so.”

“This attitude is another source of human problems. Humans do not want to realize that the stagnant condition of their life suffocates even that little of their true spirit’s and soul’s life that occasionally comes through all blocks and limitations imposed on it by the negative state’s structure.”

“Not having enough proper influence from the spiritual sphere of their inner life, humans find themselves in all kinds of problems. Of course, as is the case with most of them, they associate the source of these problems not with this fact, for it is not consciously obvious, but with some kind of external factors, out of their sphere of influence. It is always easier to blame something or someone else for your problems than admit that your own wrong spiritual attitude is causing them.”

“Such is the nature of the negative state. It is ruled by the law of pseudo-spiritual stagnation and regression rather than by the law of spiritual progression, as is the case in the positive state. This situation with humans obviously supports and perpetuates the life of the negative state to its fullest extent.”

(12)

“The gross limitations in the human communication system is another source of serious problems and misunderstandings existing among humans. The expressive abilities of human thoughts and feelings are limited by the words they use to express themselves. A different meaning to the same expressed word may be conveyed and the impression of the receiver can be totally different than what was intended by the sender. This situation with the human mode of communication was deliberately planned by the pseudo-creators.”

“As you remember, originally, before genetic restructuring of the human brain, the mode of communication was totally different. The vocal cords did not exist. The process of communication was not from the externals to the externals, as is the case now, but from the internals to the internals. The communication went on from one sentient mind to another sentient mind without any mediation by loudly spoken words.”

“This type of communication did not allow any misunderstandings or deceptive mode of communication. One could not, nor even had desires, to conceal one’s true thoughts and feelings. Everyone was an open book. All ideas were shared unconditionally. Such a situation could not create any problems or breakdown in communication. With this arrangement it would be very difficult to activate the negative state. Open communication from within to within by the mind’s ideas and concepts has no unconscious mode and ignorant aspects. It also precludes any ability to convey one thing and, at the same time, to think or feel just the opposite of what is being conveyed.”

“In order for the negative state to be activated, it needed to conceal its true purpose and origin. Otherwise, it could have never been activated. From this need arises the need for development of unconscious processes and ignorance. Thus, it was necessary to trap the sentient mind into a special condition, described in Chapter Five & Six of this book, so that its true spiritual content and origin would not be available to the human external conscious mind.”

“The problem is that within the most inner part of the sentient mind, which every human being

has from the genes of the original sentient mind, used in the process of hybridization with the beastly genes, is contained the true information about the origin and purpose of the negative state.”

“Therefore, if this mind were to be openly accessible and in a communicative mode with any other mind, the negative state would have a very slim chance of survival.”

“Thus, it was necessary to fabricate a totally different mode of communication which would make it impossible for anyone to discover the truth about this and many other important spiritual matters. For this reason, an external mode of communication through the vocal cords was devised which limits this communication to the conscious mind, utilizing the sense of hearing placed on the external body.”

“By this arrangement another important thing was accomplished by the negative state which is an obvious source of many human problems. It reinforces the inherent isolation and separation that humans live in. No one knows exactly what is really going on in another human mind. Everyone depends on what is being said by the external words, through the external vocal box, heard by the external hearing aid — ears — rather than on what is being thought and felt internally.”

“Thus, humans remain frustratingly remote from one another no matter how physically close they happen to be at the time of communication.”

“And because very often what is being said is not what is being thought or felt, or the impression of what is being conveyed is different from what is being expressed, misunderstanding, suspicion, paranoia, alienation, bitterness, frustration and many other problems in human life arise from this situation.”

“All these problems are the symptoms of the negative state’s dominance of human life on your planet.”

“As you see, there is not one area of human life which is not saturated by problems imposed by the nature of the negative state that rules all its aspects.”

“The problem with this situation is that most people take it for granted, considering it as a normal and natural occurrence.”

“You can be assured that nothing normal and natural exists in this situation. But because most humans consider this to be normal and natural, very little effort is made to change this situation.”

“By doing nothing about it, humans fuel, support and reinforce their problems. In this way, the negative state is assured of their continuous and unceasing support and, as a result, human problems will continue to multiply, spread and appear in various new, worse and more unbearable forms.”

“This situation will continue until the negative state destroys its host, on which it is parasitically feeding.”

(13)

“The above-described arrangement makes it possible for the negative state to feed humans any information suitable and desirable for the negative state’s purposes.”

"If you have no, or very little, information from within yourself about anything, and if you are structured in such a manner as to receive all information from without, you have no choice in this matter but to listen to what is coming from the external sources of information. On the inputs of information from without, your life may very well depend. Lack of proper information may lead to a total deprivation of your life."

"This purposeful arrangement leads humans to the slaving dependence on the information conveyed in such an external manner. When your sentient mind is trapped without being allowed to give you any needed and necessary proper information, you must depend or rely on or turn your attention to some other source."

"There is very little opportunity for anyone to discuss or to explore how valid the information received from without is. One must take it on faith. This is easy to do because very often one's life depends on it. Life dependence on something is the most powerful reinforcer of all. After a while, you are habituated to believe the truthfulness of any information coming from the external without questioning its source or verity. And if any information happens to come your way from within you, you will have a tendency to disregard it, particularly if it is in dissonance with the content of the external information."

"If your life depends on inputs from without, the within source will be automatically suppressed and disregarded as bothersome and troublesome. After all, your life does not depend on what is coming from within (at least, that is what you think!). That might be even considered insane. Thus, you become totally habituated to expect everything from without, from the external source."

"Now, in a true connotation of the proper spiritual principles, no valid information exists in the without. Instead, it is a means for expression and projection of that which is contained in the within. This is a proper spiritual order. This is how things are in the positive state. The without is an extension and a process of the within and has no independent being and existence. However, under this condition, no negative state can be properly activated or survive for too long. Therefore, it was necessary to separate and isolate that without, close the access to the within, feed all kinds of false, distorted, perverted and mutilated information to the without and make humans dependent on it."

"Being isolated from their true source, humans accept the without as the only reliable true reality which can give them the necessary information needed for their survival. Now you can manipulate humans in any way and manner you want or as it suits the needs of the negative state!"

"Not having proper information about the true reality of life, being separated from their internal source and from the true spiritual principles, humans are exposed to nothing but problems. These problems are being fed to them under the disguise of proper and valid information which they receive from without."

"Thus, human problems, in most instances, stem from this devastating isolation, separation and split of their most within Spiritual Mind from their awareness and consideration and from its true spiritual principles and ideas, as well as from the fact that they are being made dependent on something that has no reality in itself and by itself."

(14)

"As mentioned many times before, one of the major efforts of the negative state is to keep its origin, purpose, and nature secret, disguised and concealed. This is one of the many reasons why humans are structured the way they are. In this particular structure, no conscious

awareness exists about anything related to this issue.“

“Because humans are in such ignorance about the true originating factors of most of anything in their life, they live in total uncertainty about everything. This uncertainty permeates all aspects of their life.”

“The state of uncertainty is intolerable to the human mind. Because it is a chronic condition of the human existence, it is behind many human problems.”

“Another aspect of this problem is a chronic lack of proper feedback on the results, consequences and outcomes of human affairs and activities. No one exactly knows for sure what to expect from anyone or anything. The feedback you are all expecting is either not forthcoming or it is misleading. This only supports the state of your chronic uncertainty. To repeat again, nothing is certain in human life. Nothing is reliably predictable. The expectations humans have are very rarely fulfilled or they are fulfilled in a totally unexpected manner.”

“Not having any point of certainty, not having any reliable source of information and feedback, humans end up either in despair and depression or resignation and apathy, or they simply give up. Some of them commit suicide. This situation supports many negative mutual problems humans encounter in their life.”

“This is one of the many faces of the nature of the negative state. This situation gives humans an impression that whatever happens in their lives is happening by mere chance and that they have very little control over their destinies. If this is so, then no direct planning and decisive force exists in the multiverse that provides one with needed opportunities for self-regulation. Everything is left to unpredictable chance. The unpredictable chance, ruling one's life, implies that one's own life, and being and existence, is also by mere chance.”

“This is how the non-spiritual principles are established and how doubt about existence of anything governing the life of the multiverse comes to its fruition.”

“The obvious thing about this whole situation is that this type of perception of reality and style of life were carefully planned out to the minutest details.”

“It is difficult for humans to believe that, having no apparent control over the destinies of their lives, being ruled by the principle of unpredictable chance and statistical probabilities, this situation is, in actuality, not by chance but by a sentient mind's inventions and efforts.”

“As you remember, in order to make it look like chance, the pseudocreators destroyed all traces of their existence and put blocks around the true mind of humans, so that humans would never discover the true story of why things are the way they are. Who can ever prove that anything like this happened?”

“This situation is an obvious answer to the question of what life would be like if it were to derive from any other source other than The Lord Jesus Christ and His/Her true spiritual principles. In other words, what life would be like if it were to derive from the position of pure chance, unpredictability, statistical probabilities, uncertainty and without any feedback from the true source of life. The lifestyle of humans on your planet and throughout the entire Zone of Displacement is the vivid and concrete exemplification of the answer to this question.”

(15)

“Because humans have no, or very little, true spiritual awareness from within, they do not pay

too much attention to what is going on within them. Their tendency to look outside, to the external source for all answers to their questions, supported and manifoldly reinforced by the existing structure of their life, leads them to the firm belief that they are not the source of their own problems. As everything else, the problems come from the outside.”

“By this attitude, humans arrive at the conclusion that they cannot be truly responsible for their problems because they have no control over what is happening outside of them and that the problems have no, or very little, spiritual connotation or origin.”

“This is a purposeful displacement. Take, for example, a common flu or cold that you humans are so prone to develop on a continuous basis. When you get a cold or flu, you hear a very forceful statement, ‘This cold or flu is going around and I caught it.’ As you see, the flu or cold came from outside. You caught it from someone else. You are not responsible for having it. It was imposed upon you without your asking for it. It was totally beyond your control.”

“This is how humans define and perceive most of their problems. It very rarely crosses their mind that maybe, just maybe, they are responsible for whatever happens in their lives. They shift or displace the responsibility on some outward circumstances beyond their control. This is an easy way out.”

“As you remember, it is the nature of the negative state to blame the positive state for all its miseries and problems. The negative state assumes that if no positive state were to exist, it could have no problems. The problem of the negative state is the positive state. Therefore, the negative state cannot be responsible for whatever happens in the life of the negative state. Eliminate the positive state and all your problems disappear.”

“This philosophy is more apparent and propagated openly in the other regions of the Zone of Displacement and all the Hells. It is not so obvious on planet Zero because of its peculiar position.”

“On your planet this situation is demonstrated in a more indirect manner through some humans’ statements and beliefs that if God were to exist, He/She would not allow anything like that to happen. This is a favorite cop-out of many humans from taking full responsibility for their own life. So, you must blame God for not existing that such atrocious and abominable things happen. Or, you must blame God, if He/She exists, for being cruel and inconsiderate by permitting all these things to happen.”

“However, in the rest of the Zone of Displacement, being that it is in the state of total negativity, there are no restrictions to proclaim that the positive state and, therefore, God is to be blamed for everything.”

“The shifting and displacing responsibility and putting the cause of all human problems into the wrong source potentiates all human problems and makes new problems continuously appear.”

“Unless humans become aware of the true source of their problems, as defined at the beginning of this Chapter, and unless they take full responsibility for their lives and for everything that is happening to them, no matter what it is, and no matter how much it appears to be out of their control, they will have nothing but problems and more problems. By this false attitude, they fully support and perpetuate the life of the negative state.”

(16)

“The major source of human problems is the beastly or animalistic component of their

endowment. As you remember, during genetic experimentation of the pseudo-creators, they succeeded in removing ninety-five percent of all aspects of the true sentient mind. The five percent that was left was fused with ninety-five percent of the beastly animalistic traits. The result was a hybrid that appeared in the form of cave human, the parent of the modern humans.”

“The problem with this situation is that humans consider their animal part as fully human. If it is human, then it is natural and normal. Therefore, no effort is made to get rid of any animalistic tendencies considered to be human.”

“The most common traits of this animalistic nature are fear, anxiety, aggression, attack, cowardice, suspicion, territorial rights, possessiveness, ownership, rejection and destruction. These traits are considered to be human, inherent in their nature.”

“Humans do not realize that, before that time, such traits, states and emotions were unknown to any sentient entity as a direct experience. The very first indirect experience of these traits came to its fruition at the time when the pseudo-creators succeeded in fabricating their first animal endowed with these traits. Later on, after they combined the genes of this specific animal-beast with the genes of the sentient mind, the full direct experience of these adverse states became available to the sentient mind trapped in that animalistic body.”

“Thus, a situation came into its being and existence when all these adverse traits started to be considered human, and animals were put almost on the human level by equating humans to the animals. Being that you are in this predicament, it is very difficult for you not to experience such adverse traits. Regardless of how much you want to get rid of them, they pop out in the most unexpected manner without any warning. Because of their seeming autonomy within the human system, these traits are considered to be unavoidable, performing some kind of protective function, little understood by the human conscious mind.”

“This is a destructive system within human life. Two life forms were forcefully put together or fused that had nothing in common. The result was the activation of the negative state and the production of human problems. As mentioned before, this was, in the old conceptualization of this term, the most sinful act. It destroyed in humans the true likeness and image of God.”

“The spiritual problem here is that humans in their present form still consider themselves the likeness and image of God. If this is so, what kind of God do you get? An angry, hateful, wrathful, jealous, punishing or punitive and sometimes loving, kind and merciful God. So you have here a contradictory conceptualization of The Nature of God in exactly the same manner as human nature is contradictory, being the fusion of two incongruent elements. What happened here is that, in order to justify the being and existence of such humans, it was necessary to continue in the assumption that humans were created in the likeness and image of God. In actuality, from their current position, humans fabricated a god into their own likeness and image, projecting all their traits on him and, at the same time, conveniently making him the source of all their problems, as well as happiness (whatever humans consider to be happiness).”

“In this way you can put the origin of the negative state into God and not some other source. If God can be angry, hostile, punitive, destructive, jealous and cruel and, at the same time, loving, kind, wise, merciful and patient, then He must be the originator of both states. If this is the case, then the negative state is definitely equal to the positive state and, therefore, the negative state must stay forever. No matter what you do, you cannot be free from the influence of the negative state.”

“After all, if you believe that your life is under the influence of God, then you must accept the fact that you are also under the influence of the negative state since it is God who is the source of the negative state also. The situation is hopeless. No matter what humans say or The Bible says about eternal salvation and being in bliss of Heavens, the fact remains the fact. God, in the conceptualization of humans, contains within Himself negative feelings and emotions, and who knows with what kind of whim He can suddenly strike out against anyone. After all, He is God and He can do whatever pleases Him.”

“This is an inevitable conclusion from the above consideration. And do not forget that this conceptualization of God is backed up by the literal statements of The Holy Bible which is considered to be The Word of God. Who dares to dispute The Word of God? This is how humans are trapped in the negative state. This is the source of their problems — the wrong conceptualization of The Nature of God.”

“What no one realizes is that presently existing humans are a total distortion and mutilation of the true image and likeness of God. Very little, if anything, is in them that comes from that image and likeness. It was destroyed purposefully during the genetic fusion, described in this book. Once the pseudo-creators succeeded in this most devastating and sinful effort, they falsely proclaimed their fabrications to be likenesses and images of the true God in order to lead humans away from accepting the true God and His/Her true Nature. This was permitted to happen for the reasons revealed elsewhere in this and other books of The New Revelation. Thus, the only true ultimate source of all human problems can be found in the situation briefly described in this point.”

(17)

“The compounding factor of human problems is the way humans perceive and conceptualize the spiritual life and the structure of the positive state. This point has a direct relevance to the preceding point.”

“If you incorrectly assume that presently existing humans are the true likeness and image of God, then all spiritual conceptualizations, religions and the ways humans perceive life in the heavens will be influenced by this false assumption. Thus, all their expectations, hopes and projections will be totally unrealistic because, in actuality, there is nothing in the spiritual world of the positive state that is humanly possible. If you derive everything from the wrong spiritual source, you end up conceptualizing everything spiritual in the wrong terms and with the wrong understanding.”

“The crucial issue in fabricating humans into the **unlikeness and unimage** of God was to develop false spiritual principles that would have nothing, or very little, in common with true spirituality. This was a necessary step because the point was to prove that life can be initiated also from false spiritual principles or no spiritual principles at all. After all, if humans fabricated a god into their own likeness and image, then, such a god, in actuality, cannot exist because he is only a fantasy or projection of human wishful thinking.”

“Therefore, all spiritual principles derived from such a god are, in fact, non-spiritual because no true spirituality exists. And if, by any chance, some humans choose to believe in God, that will be acceptable also since their belief will be based on the false assumptions that they are his likeness and image. If this is so, then their god is also a likeness and image of humans because it logically goes both ways. Thus, there is no danger in allowing humans to believe in such a god. In fact, the opposite is true: Belief in such a god keeps humans much further away from the true God than not believing in the existence of any God.”

“This logic is irrefutable. Moreover, this situation produces various spiritualistic trends that

further split humans in all kinds of factions, each faction claiming that their god is the true one and everyone else's is the false one. Now, this really will keep humans even farther away from accepting the true Nature of the true God."

"Until recently, this situation used to create a very peculiar situation in the intermediate world. All humans, coming from your planet, expected to find there a lifestyle in accordance with their distorted, perverted and falsified image of how such a life should be. They were permitted to form various societies there founded on those false principles, believing that they were in heaven. They perpetuated that state until the foolishness of their condition fulfilled its measure and the necessary spiritual lessons were learned. After that they were judged and placed into various conditions congruent to their false spiritual conceptualization."

"As you remember, recently, the typical human era fully ended in the intermediate world (the World of Spirits) and no one is permitted to stay there long enough in order to form such peculiar societies. At that time, there was a shift in the spiritual state of the entire multiverse of Creation which abolished that condition permanently. However, this situation is permitted to be continued for a time, times and half time in the entire Zone of Displacement, all the Hells and on planet Zero. Not having proper conceptualization of the spiritual principles and their effective application, human life ends in nothing but problems. The consequences of this situation are the appearance, perpetuation and compounding of human problems."

(18)

"And, finally, a new source of human problems is coming into its being and existence. This source relates to the appearance of The New Nature of The Most High who became the totality of The Lord Jesus Christ."

"As you remember from the previous Chapter, this fact requires that all sentient entities in the entire Creation undergo the process of spiritual transformation in order to align them with this New Nature so that they can relate to The Lord Jesus Christ in a more personal, private, intimate and even more spiritual manner. The impact of this change on your planet and the entire Zone of Displacement is in the process of being manifested. Of course, it will have a greater degree of adverse effect on them than anything so far has had. The New Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ drives the entire negative state insane in its frenzy to refute, deny, reject, disregard and destroy any possibility of accepting this Nature. This primarily means three things:"

"1. Closer proximity of The Lord Jesus Christ to the negative state as a first step toward the beginning of eventual elimination of the negative state;"

"2. Mobilization of all forces of the negative state to fight the acceptance of The True New Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ by anyone in their domain;"

"3. Preparation for release of the pseudo-creators."

"Each step means a greater degree of human problems and appearance of new problems unknown to humans up to this point (one such new problem occurred recently in the form of Acquired Immune Deficiency Syndrome — AIDS)."

"As you remember, the more The Lord Jesus Christ shortens the proximity between the positive state and the negative state, the more the ugly and putrid nature of the negative state is exposed and comes to the surface. This means more problems for all who are in the negative state and on planet Zero because the exposure of the negative state takes place through the intensification of all problems. On the other hand, the more the negative state

mobilizes its forces against the positive state, the more intense its impact on its inhabitants and followers. The more intense the impact, the more severe the problems become. And the release of the pseudo-creators will start a brief era in which the negative state will totally win, also on your planet, compounding the problems to their unimaginable ultimate severity.”

“When this happens, the negative state will exhaust its usefulness, its sinful existence will come to its end and all human problems will cease to exist. For more on human life, see the next Chapter.”

“He/She who has ears to hear, let him/her hear what The Lord Jesus Christ reveals in this Chapter.”

CHAPTER TWELVE

THE CONCEPT OF LIFE IN GENERAL AND HUMAN LIFE IN PARTICULAR

On February 28, 1988, early in the morning, the word of The Lord Jesus Christ came to me, saying,

“In order to understand the concept of life properly, it is necessary to realize that there are basically five manifestations of life. In actuality, to be more precise, there is The Absolute State of Life and its Absolute Process and five derivations and manifestations of that One Life.”

“The One Absolute State of Life and its Absolute Process can be defined, in a general sense, as Absolute Life in Itself and by Itself, without any origin, beginning or end.”

“The content of the words ‘origin’ and ‘beginning’ supposes some other source of life which has life in itself and by itself. Thus, in order to properly postulate life, one must logically assume that there is a permanent state of life, which always is, and there is a permanent process of life, which always continues. The word ‘life’ means to be and to exist. Being is a state of life and existence is a process of life. To be and to exist means to live. To live means to be and to exist.”

“The Absolute State and Process of Life postulates Absolute Awareness of Its Own Absolute Being and Existence. Inherent in and immanent to this Absolute State and Process of Life is The Absolute Awareness of Life. In this respect The Absolute Life can also be equated to the state and process of its own awareness. Without its own awareness, life has no meaning, purpose or sense. This is particularly true regarding The Absolute Life.”

“You can say here that the true connotation of life is rooted in being aware of itself. The awareness of life constitutes its sentience in an absolute sense. This means that The Absolute Life is The Absolute Sentience.”

“Because there is such a life in its absolute sentience, whatever is and exists is and exists within the sphere of The Absolute Awareness or Absolute Sentience. No being and existence is possible without this connotation. The being and the existence totally depend on this Absolute State and Process of Sentience which conceives and produces the being and the existence. Thus, all life, in all its forms, conditions and manifestations, derives from this One Absolute Sentience which is Life in Itself and by Itself.”

“In general, as pointed out above, you can distinguish five derivations and manifestations of this Life:

1. The true sentient life.
2. The true non-sentient life.
3. The mixture of sentient and non-sentient life — the human life.
4. The dead life — the negative state.
5. The forms of manifestation of life.”

“The third, fourth and some forms of manifestation of life are not direct derivatives of The Absolute Life. They are derivatives of the sentient and non-sentient life which are direct derivatives of The Absolute Life. These are indirect derivatives in a sense that the gift of life and its principles were used by some sentient beings to produce something that originally was not conceived within The Absolute State and Process of Life.”

“The true sentient life is a most direct receptacle of The Absolute Sentient Life in its infinite variety of elements. Each such element is attached to that receptacle or container, vivifying it, making it alive and self-aware. Thus, the receptacle becomes a carrier and manifestor of the specific life element which originated in The Absolute State of Life and was detached from it by its Absolute Process.”

“The true non-sentient life is the least direct receptacle of The Absolute Life. It is a reflection of the end product of emanating life energies which lack full degree of self-awareness. Its purpose is to carry these energies to their ultimate manifestation and use and to maintain the flow of these energies in a continuous dynamic condition.”

“The mixture of sentient and non-sentient life is a by-product of activities of sentient life in order to produce an entirely different lifestyle for the purpose of originating the negative state.”

“The dead life is the negative state which consists of its own sentient and non-sentient life, respectively. The reason it is being called the dead life is because it does not contain within itself directly anything from The Absolute Life. Whatever lacks a direct presence of that Life cannot be considered truly alive. But because it carries within itself self-awareness, by utilizing the stolen principles of sentience, it must be called the dead life. After all, it lives and strives and produces.”

“The forms of manifestation of any life are a condition through which and in which their respective life is manifested, realized and actualized. They derive from the emanating energies of The Absolute Form of The Absolute Life. These energies produce elements, atoms, molecules, particles, etc., of spiritual, mental and physical nature from which various environments and forms of life are built. Because of their most outward, external nature, they do not contain self-awareness in themselves and by themselves. They are forms of self-awareness. They can format in any conceivable structure in accordance with ideas of sentient life for its specific manifestation. Because the sentient life generates infinite varieties of ideas for its manifestation, infinite varieties of life forms exist.”

“The forms of life and the content of life are two entirely different things. The content of life is self-awareness of unique being and existence of life within itself. The forms of life are external expressions of a variety of unique sentient lives.”

“The Absolute Sentient Life, by and through its Absolute SelfAwareness, constitutes The Absolute Sentient Mind. All other sentient lives, derived from It, constitute their own sentient minds. It was proven before that this Absolute Sentient Mind is now called The Lord Jesus Christ. And deriving from His/Her Life are the sentient entities in various forms of their manifestations.”

“The Lord Jesus Christ, in His/Her presently existing nature, contains within Him/Her all elements of life, including the elements taken from the dead life and human life. By a special process of divinization, He/ She maintains the true life in those dead elements and human elements. In Him/Her they are alive.”

“By and through this New Nature, The Lord Jesus Christ can also be present in all aspects of the negative state without the negative state being present in Him/Her. This is a necessary requirement in order to control, regulate and keep in check the dead life and human life of the negative state.”

“The negative state needs to be kept in continuous check because it is a cancer of true life that, without being checked, would spread enormously and devour all true life, turning everyone and everything into the dead life. Its spread is permitted only to a certain extent. The boundaries of its spread are determined by the needs it has for its fullest and most complete manifestation as a comparison to the true life.”

“The full appreciation of the true life is not possible unless there is a comparison with the fake or dead life.”

“As mentioned above, while The Lord Jesus Christ is in all aspects of the negative state, nothing of the negative state is in The Lord Jesus Christ.”

“As you remember, one of the many purposes why The Lord Jesus Christ acquired The New Nature was to enable Him/Her to be present in all aspects of the negative state without annihilating anyone in the dead life. The true life functions as the most deadly poison to the dead life. Without having the elements of the negative state for shielding and temperance, the dead life would turn instantaneously into nothingness. As you know, this would nullify any attempt of salvation of anyone from the dead life.”

“But, at the same time, those elements function also as a protective shield against the negative state of the dead life so that nothing from it can enter The Lord Jesus Christ. If such an entrance were to take place, a most unusual and powerful explosion would occur which would destroy the entire being and existence, including The Absolute State and The Process of Life.”

“The reason why The Absolute State and Process of Life would also be destroyed is that by the destruction of the multiverse it would nullify the very principle of life — preservation of life to eternity. In it the infinite varieties of unique manifestations of that Absolute Life take place. If you destroy the way and the mode of that manifestation, you destroy the principle of preservation. This principle is applicable to any state and condition of the true life, including The Absolute True Life.”

“The Principle of Preservation states that self-aware true life in any form, state or condition must be preserved to eternity. The crucial word here is ‘self-awareness.’ Cessation of self-awareness is cessation of life. If there is no self-awareness, no awareness of life exists. If there is no awareness of life, there is no feedback of living. If there is no feedback of living, there is no life.”

“Thus, any form of self-awareness from its Absolute State and Process, which always is, to its relative carriers — sentient entities — must be preserved for being and existence forever, to eternity.”

“Entrance of anything negative into The Lord Jesus Christ would cause a destruction of this most important factor — self-awareness. The result would be non-being and non-existence. Fortunately, The Lord Jesus Christ is equipped with the means to avoid anything of this nature happening. Thus, as stated above, and repeated here for emphasis, The Lord Jesus Christ is present in all aspects of the negative state, but nothing of the negative state is

present in The Lord Jesus Christ. This fact needs to be kept in mind at all times.”

“But why does life in any form, condition, shape and manifestation exist at all? Why is there a need for being and existence of this life?”

“In the answer to this question is contained *the greatest mystery* of all.”

“First of all, The Absolute Life in The Lord Jesus Christ, by its very Absolute Nature, simply always is. It has no beginning or end. This is very difficult to understand for someone who is limited by the linear mode of thinking.”

“Simply stated, the condition or state of non-being and non-existence or non-life does not exist. It cannot be postulated. It has never been and it will never be. The only condition that has ever existed, exists and will exist is the being and existence, that is, life. Thus, life was, is and will be regardless of in what condition, shape, form or state. Conditions, shapes, forms, states and various manifestations of this life are changeable, modifiable, removable or reversible to their original elemental non-aware state. They can cease to be and to exist. However, life in itself and by itself can never cease. Nothing can be changed about this particular nature. No matter how much you destroy the form or the mode of that life’s manifestation, you cannot destroy life.”

“Many humans on your planet foolishly believe in destructibility of life with the destruction of their physical body. Humans who are violently opposing abortion are of such a nature and belief. They claim that, by the destruction of the fetus — external form of life — the life is destroyed. They do not realize that by the act of abortion, life in itself, contained in that fetus, if at all, cannot be destroyed by any means.”

“If you destroy the future container for its manifestation on your planet, that life simply goes elsewhere, finding another form or container or condition or state or place. All you did by the act of abortion is prevent that particular life from entering your planet. In actuality, no harm to that life itself was done. Not to mention the fact that the carrier of that life was saved from the entrance into the misery and suffering of the negative state or dead condition of life which exists on your planet.”

“In a sense, the prospective human being, who was prevented from the entrance into the negative state’s dead life and human life on your planet, should be congratulated for such a great accomplishment! Also not to mention the fact that the spirit of that life, which is a true life, does not enter that fetus anyway until the end of the fifth month of its development (approximately). Whatever movements exist in such a fetus before that time are not from any presence of the spirit of that life but from the formations of various organs of that fetus. So, it is necessary to accept the fact that life is indestructible.”

“The most difficult aspect of the proper understanding of the true nature of life is in the fact that life is spirit. The spirit of life is life proper. The Absolute Spirit of The Lord Jesus Christ is The Absolute Proper Life. These two terms cannot be separated. In reality, the spirit is the producer, emanator, sustainer and preserver of its life or any life. The state of self-awareness is the producer of life energy.”

“You have to understand that the process of unceasing self-awareness of the spirit is an active continuous process that produces a tremendous amount of a very special spiritual energy. This energy is conceived as life energy. It establishes the fact of life by feedbacking its selfawareness. ***Awareness of self-awareness is what establishes the fact of life.***”

“Now, at the very beginning (that is, without any beginning), you have an uncreated Absolute State and Process of Life — The Lord Jesus Christ (at that time, God Most High) — Who Always Is. He/She is an Absolute Awareness of His/Her Absolute Spirit. The Absolute Spirit is Absolutely Aware of Its Absolute Self-Awareness. By that process, It established The Absolute Fact of The Absolute Life. The Absolute Life Energy, produced by the process of this Absolute Self-Awareness, is of such a magnitude that it gives birth to all beings and existences in the entire multiverse and to the multiverse itself relative to Its Absolute Condition. This is how the origin of all life can be conceived.”

“To repeat: There is an Absolute Spirit who is in a state and process of Absolute Self-Awareness. This Absolute Spirit is Absolutely Aware of Its Absolute Self-Awareness. By the process of this Absolute Awareness the fact of The Absolute Life is established. This process itself produces tremendous life energies (from the fact of the establishment of this Life). From these specific Life Energies all beings and existences are originated.”

“These life energies, continuously emanating in an absolute sense from The Lord Jesus Christ, constitute the fundamental blocks and ingredients of the true life of Creation and its multiverse. No other source and origin of the true life has ever existed or will ever exist.”

“This is the most crucial and fundamental rule of life — as its very spiritual principle. Because The Lord Jesus Christ (GOD) is an Absolute Spirit and its Absolute Life, all life is of purely spiritual content. Regardless of its form of manifestation, life is always a spiritual phenomenon. Even dead life of the negative state is a spiritual phenomenon of its dead spirituality. After all, it was patterned from the stolen spiritual principles of life. By perverting, falsifying and distorting these principles, a dead life of dead spirituality came into its being and existence. But the only thing you can pervert, falsify and distort are the true spiritual principles. If they were not to exist, there would be nothing to pervert, distort and falsify. Thus, the dead life of the negative state is a purely spiritual phenomenon also. If the pseudocreators were not able to use the genuine spiritual principles, they could fabricate absolutely nothing.”

“As you see, even the dead life of the negative state is sustained by and is possible because of the existence of these fundamental spiritual principles.”

“If The Absolute Spirit is a producer of Absolute Awareness of Its Absolute Self-Awareness, then, how do you define the word ‘spirit?’ What is spirit?”

“In an absolute sense Spirit is a pure Absolute Consciousness of The Absolute ‘I AM.’ This Absolute Consciousness is Absolutely Aware of The Absolute SelfAwareness of Its Absolute ‘I AM’. By this Absolute Process, The Absolute Fact of The Absolute Life, from which all else originates, is established.”

“From this fundamental spiritual principle stems an indisputable fact that the source of everyone’s life is his/her spirit. In actuality, the unique spirit of every sentient entity is the very life of its totality. Spirit is life of its soul, as well as of its body or any other external form of its manifestation.”

“Because it is the spirit who is the carrier of the unique life from The Absolute Spirit, one lives and is alive only by one’s spirit. The spirit’s soul is the process of mentation of that spirit; whereas the physical form of the spirit’s manifestation is its concrete manifestation in the external environment.”

“As you see from this conceptualization, spirit is the state, soul is the process and body is the manifestation. The state and the process, being the actual carriers of the unique elements of The Absolute State and The Absolute Process of The Lord Jesus Christ, must live forever, to eternity. They are the true life that cannot be destroyed, as the principle of preservation of life, formulated above, implies.”

“The form or the body of their manifestation does not have this privilege because it is bound by its own limited environment from which that body is built. After it serves its purpose for its spirit and soul, it must return to its environment. As mentioned elsewhere, that environment is not transferable to any other state, dimension or condition. It must be left behind.”

“The next question is why The Absolute Spirit in Its Absolute Life needs to originate any other spirits in their own unique life relative to Its Absolute Life? Why The Absolute Spirit is not content to be by Itself and in Itself without reaching out? The answer to this question can be found in the very Nature of that Absolute Spirit.”

“One of The Absolute Aspects of that Absolute Nature is its purposefulness. The Absolute Life of The Absolute Spirit has an Absolute Purpose. The Absolute Purpose gives It an Absolute Meaning.”

“In the previous description of The Nature of this Absolute Spirit — The Lord Jesus Christ — it was proven that fundamental principles of this Nature are The Absolute Divine Love and The Absolute Divine Wisdom. The purpose of The Absolute Love is to share everything that it contains within Itself with someone else. The Absolute Wisdom of that Love gives the meaning to that purpose. Unless the purpose is directed to some ultimate goal, it has no meaning. The ultimate goal of such a purpose is to establish a state or a situation which would enable such sharing to take place.”

“As you remember from before, the unification of The Absolute Love and The Absolute Wisdom results in the process of Absolute Creativity. Having a purpose in mind as a goal to give meaning and fulfillment of Love and its Wisdom, through sharing, The Absolute Creativity is motivated to act. The creative principle of The Absolute Spirit cannot act without proper motivation. Therefore, it is motivated by the purposefulness of this goal to have meaning, conceived in the principle of sharing. Unless you share what you have; unless you have feedback of that sharing, your state, your love, your wisdom or whatever you have, has absolutely no sense and no meaning.”

“The true love cannot be entirely directed to its own within, to one’s own self because in that direction it is not able to provide feedback of the results of being shared. To love self exclusively means a dead end or dead life because the originator of that love is also its recipient. No consequences, outcomes and results can be discerned in such love except that it is dead. Such love has no wisdom, no purpose, no goal and no meaning.”

“But the wisdom of the true love requires from its love to be shared also in an outward direction in order to be called or conceived as love. Love cannot be conceptualized as love unless it produces consequences, results and outcomes of its state and process.”

“In order to do so, by its principle of creativity in wisdom, it must create spirits comparable to itself who become objects and recipients of this love. These spirits must be conceived outside of The Absolute Spirit so that a reciprocal relationship is established through which and by which all consequences, results and outcomes of love and its wisdom can be fully manifested, actualized and realized.”

“Thus, all created spirits must appear outside of, apart from and different from The Absolute Spirit and, yet, at the same time, they must be comparable to The Absolute Spirit in order that any meaning of their life and the results of their own love could come to their fruition.”

“If they were inside of, part of and the same as The Absolute Spirit, no true sharing of that love would occur because it would remain within itself. It would preclude reciprocity by which all results, outcomes and consequences of that love are validated. But, at the same time, these spirits must carry within themselves all attributes of their Creator if they are to respond in any meaningful and reciprocal manner to that love and properly manifest all its outcomes, results and consequences.”

“Therefore, all created spirits are endowed with the same life as The Life of The Absolute Spirit, the only difference being that in The Lord Jesus Christ this Life is Absolute and Uncreated, while in the created spirits it is relative to that Absolute State. However, that same life is now perceived outside of, apart from and infinitely different in the forms of its manifestation from The Absolute Life of The Lord Jesus Christ. In this condition, the full mutual and reciprocal relationship can be established.”

“The main goal here is to establish a relationship with a purpose in mind to share all principles of love and wisdom. The purpose of that sharing is to establish a meaningful life outside of the state and the process of The Absolute Life Itself. By such purposefulness The Absolute Meaning of The Absolute Life is established. This is the reason why this Absolute Spirit, at this time called The Lord Jesus Christ, needs to originate other spirits in their unique life and why He/She can never be content to stay by Himself/Herself and in Himself/Herself. This kind of state would have no meaning and purpose. This would be contrary to His/Her very Nature.”

“The question, of course, is why Life, especially its Absolute State and Process, exists at all. Why Life always is and is existing? Why no other state and process is conceivable? There is no simple answer to this question. It is a very complex situation, extremely difficult to express in your type of words which would convey a meaningful and comprehensive answer. This is a great mystery related to the very nature of Life.”

“What you have to understand, if you can, is that being and existence of life is being and existence itself. Being and existence itself is The Absolute Spirit of The Lord Jesus Christ. The Absolute Spirit of The Lord Jesus Christ is The Absolute Life in Itself and by Itself. Because of its Absolute Condition, no other being and existence is conceivable but the one that is and exists. It is and exists in order to give meaning, purpose and goal to being and existence. Because such meaning, purpose and goal can be found only in life, the life is and exists. The Absolute Spirit of The Absolute Life always is and exists in order to provide this meaning, purpose and goal for the being and existence. Without it nothing can be conceived whatsoever.”

“Now, as you remember, in order to establish a meaningful relationship between The Absolute Spirit of Life and the created spirits of many forms of that Life, it was necessary to equip the created spirits with the similar attributes contained in The Absolute Life. Any other attributes would not do because no awareness of the self-awareness of the created spirits without them could be established.”

“Simply stated, without these attributes, the created spirits would have no life within them. No relationship can be developed without having an awareness of the self-awareness of ‘I am.’ Thus, all created spirits must foremost have a full sense of their own ‘I am’ in the same manner as The Absolute Spirit has an Absolute Awareness of His/Her Absolute ‘I AM.’ The

only possible meaningful relationship that can be established is from one 'I am' to another 'I am' and from that another 'I am' to the first 'I am.' This is the reciprocity of any relationship."

"Another important, crucial and vital aspect on which such relationship must be built, in order to be meaningful, fulfilling and satisfying, is The Absolute Spirit's state of Absolute Freedom. The Principle of Love of sharing states that no love can be established under any other condition other than mutual freedom of choice. As you know, to force someone to accept your love, if he/she has no desire to do so, would end in slavery and not reciprocal love."

"For that reason, all created spirits are equipped with the spiritual principles and attributes of freedom of choice. This freedom of choice gives their life meaning, purpose, goal and a sense of vital independence. Only from the position of independence can a free and independent sharing and love be experienced and give one a sense of validation of one's life."

"Remember, please, any spirit's life can be validated only from the position of freedom and independence (The Spiritual Law No. 1). If you put someone into a position of total dependence on someone else without any awareness of choice to be or not to be, to exist or not to exist this way, no validation of that life can take place. You are in violation of The Spiritual Law of Validation and Intent, formulated in point five of Chapter Ten of this book."

"If no validation exists, no outcomes, consequences and results of life can be manifested. If they are not present, no true life exists and no true relationship can be established. The purpose of such life is defeated without having any meaning and goal. Such a situation would be contrary to the very Nature of The Absolute Spirit of The Absolute Life of The Lord Jesus Christ."

"Therefore, the creation of all spirits is possible only on the principle of freedom of choice and independence for the sake of principle itself, for the purpose of establishing a meaningful, fulfilling and satisfying relationship which can bear lasting fruits and give a positive feedback to The Absolute Love and its Absolute Wisdom on all consequences, outcomes and results of Its Absolute Creative Effort."

"Once you create such free spirits, you must provide them with all possible opportunities for their actual self-expression and self-realization to the fullest of their potentials. You provide them with various specific gifts and environments in which those gifts can evolve and be manifested. From that position, in the state of total freedom and independence, they can decide whether they desire or not to accept and reciprocate the love of their Creator — The Lord Jesus Christ. By The Law of Validation, either choice, in order to be valid, must bear its consequences, outcomes and results, establishing a lifestyle consistent with that choice."

"Affirmation and choice to accept and to reciprocate freely The Lord Jesus Christ's Life as the only source of life, love and wisdom establishes the fact of the true sentient life."

"Negation and choice not to accept and reciprocate freely this Life establishes the fact of dead life or the life of the negative state."

"Either choice must be present and given opportunity to validate itself through and by its consequences, results and outcomes. Having only one choice would signify no freedom to choose. That would mean no life."

"As you see, the true meaning and purpose of dead life or the negative state is in its contribution to the establishment of the fact of life that has no meaning, purpose and goal as

a comparison to the true life of purpose, goal and meaning.“

“Once this fact is established and full comparison takes place, the negative state of dead life will no longer have any justification for its being and existence.”

“The foundation for the proper choice will be permanently built and everyone will know what not to choose. As you remember from before, the true choice is possible only if one knows what not to choose. The negative state’s purpose is to illustrate the fact of what not to choose. In this is its temporary value that it has for the true life of the positive state.”

“The true life of the positive state is primarily the sentient mind. The requirements of validation of life are the existence of awareness of the self-awareness which constitutes the being and existence of the sentient mind. As is obvious from the above, life cannot be and exist without being aware. So, in the process of creation of this life from The Absolute Life of The Absolute Spirit the first step was creation of the sentient mind comparable to The Absolute Sentient Mind.”

“The Absolute Spirit contains within Itself The Absolute Sentient Mind in its three fundamental aspects — The Absolute Most Within Spiritual Mind or the true Absolute Spirit; The Absolute Interior Mind or its Absolute Soul or Mentality; and The Absolute Exterior Mind or The Absolute Spiritual Form or Spiritual Body.”

“The true sentient mind is structured in the same manner. The Most Within Spiritual Mind from The Absolute Most Within Spiritual Mind is the receptor, producer and formulator of all genuine ideas of life. This is the true spirit of everyone’s life. The interior mind is the receiver, transformer and establisher of the mode and style of everyone’s life in accordance with the spirit’s ideas of such life. This is the very soul or mentality of life. The exterior mind is the manifestor, actualizer, concretizer and realizer of everyone’s life.”

“In its three fundamental functions, the entire sentient mind is a unity, oneness and harmony of its true life. Through such a function the true life is and exists. This is what true life is all about. As these functions are produced, received, transformed, manifested and realized, by this process they generate and emanate a tremendous sphere of life energy. This life energy reflects all thoughts, concepts, ideas, states, processes, feelings, emotions, affections, attitudes, behaviors and all else of the sentient mind. They all have their own life, dependent on the life of the sentient mind as the life of the sentient mind depends absolutely on The Absolute Life of The Absolute Sentient Mind of The Absolute Spirit — The Lord Jesus Christ.”

“From these reflections of the life energy of the functions of the sentient mind are generated other non-sentient life forms, such as animals, birds, fish, insects and various plants, as well as inanimate forms of being and existence, such as matter, air, water, fire and all other elements and particles.”

“These particular life and inanimate forms cannot have a direct sentience or state of self-awareness and its awareness because they are only corresponding factors of the states and processes of the sentient mind. Whereas the states and processes of this mind are sentient, their corresponding reflectors are not.”

“The higher the level of mentation and produced thoughts, ideas, concepts, feelings, affections, etc., the more similar the corresponding factors to them are. Thus, on the highest level of this production, you will have an appearance of non-sentient life forms, such as, for example, higher animals that will remarkably resemble the sentient mind without ever reaching sentience themselves.”

“The less spiritual and genuine ideas, concepts, thoughts, feelings, emotions, affection or whatever are, the less resemblance occurs. And all ideas, thoughts, concepts, affections, etc., related to other than spiritual or mental affairs will generate plant life forms, and, on their lowest level, the inanimate forms of being and existence.”

“Thus, the quality and the content of the sentient mind will determine the quality and the content of the non-sentient life forms and inanimate forms of being and existence. The true positive life of the sentient mind will produce only positive, beneficial and useful non-sentient life and inanimate forms.”

“On the other hand, the dead life of the pseudo-sentient mind, that is, the negative state, will produce the opposites — negative, destructive, poisonous, dangerous and adverse non-sentient life and inanimate forms.”

“This is the process by which life of the entire universe and the Zone of Displacement is generated and maintained.”

“But there is another peculiar life form which had never existed before and which initially occurred as an isolated occurrence, limited only to one place and state. This peculiar life form is the result of combination and fusion of two contradictory states — the true life of the positive state and the dead life of the negative state. The result of this combination and fusion was the fabrication of a strange and unusual life form called humans, made full of contradictions and opposites.”

“In reality, human life does not fit entirely into either category of life previously discussed. It is an abnormal occurrence in being and existence, permitted to thrive, to flourish and to function only with one purpose — to illustrate a sentient life form that does not directly derive from The Absolute Life of The Absolute Spirit of The Lord Jesus Christ.”

“This life form is neither alive nor dead. As you know, in the positive state of Creation everyone is fully alive. In the negative state of the Zone of Displacement everyone is fully dead — with preservation of self-awareness which allows these dead entities to perceive and consider their death as life.”

“On the other hand, in human life neither condition is fully established.”

“As mentioned above, this peculiar condition exists only on your planet. As you remember, your planet is called planet Zero. This is not by a coincidence. Its name reflects the peculiar and strange situation in which humans are. This is a neutral state that can go either way — positive or negative. This is the reason why only on planet Zero can such a mixture of positive and negative coexist side-by-side. It gives humans a choice to make a free decision about which manifestation of life to join.”

“The problem with humans is that, as opposed to the positive entities and all other entities in the negative state, they came into their self-awareness by the process of gradual learning from without. In their original state, they are ignorant, with very little self-awareness and with a considerable amount of unconscious processes. This does not give them from the very beginning any valid ability to make such a choice. The free choice-making process, in order to be valid, must be in a state of full awareness of self-awareness, with full knowledge of all choices.”

“Humans were fabricated without this ability or, to be precise, this ability, from the moment of

their physical birth, was put into unconscious mode, trapped in a peculiar condition which would not allow it to be fully manifested.”

“On the other hand, all other sentient life forms are created with full knowledge and abilities of free choice-making because they are born fully self-aware. The same is true about those who fabricated humans and other creatures of the Hells. They also came into their being and existence with full knowledge and awareness of self-awareness.”

“So, in order to give humans an opportunity to develop this ability and to be presented with free choice, they were placed in this neutral condition on planet Zero and, in the process of their life, are exposed to both alternatives. These alternatives trigger their original endowment (whether positive or negative), enabling them to pursue their life assignment based on their own free choice. At the present time, and under conditions presently existing on planet Zero, there is no other way to put humans into the position which would trigger their inborn endowment.”

“As you know, the incarnation of Jesus Christ took place on planet Zero. This was a necessary step for Him/Her to take. One reason was to fully activate the positive alternative. This alternative was more unconscious and in a state of potentials rather than in an active mode. But the most important reason why this incarnation happened on planet Zero was because your planet’s unusual condition functioned as an interim state of preparation for Jesus Christ to enter the fullness of the negative state — the Hells. Your planet gave Him/Her a means by which He/She could safely enter the Hells and accomplish there His/ Her real mission.”

“Humans incorrectly believe that the primary mission of Jesus Christ was to be born on your planet and from that position to save humans on planet Zero. But, although this was also on Jesus Christ’s mind, it was not His/Her main purpose. The main purpose was to acquire these special means by which He/She could enter the negative state in its pure evil and falsified condition and accomplish there His/Her wellplanned mission. This mission will culminate, when the time is right, in a total elimination of the dead life of the negative state which is a malignant cancer of the entire being and existence.”

“In order for humans to be able to validate their lives and destinies, they needed to be put into a condition in which concrete examples of both lifestyles were present. These lifestyles are able to trigger inclinations, tendencies, traits and behavior patterns within humans consistent with their original choice, of which they have no conscious awareness or knowledge. Otherwise, they could never recapture the meaning, the purpose and the goal of their being born on planet Zero. They could not validate their lives because they would be completely ignorant of these facts.”

“How many humans really know who they are and why they are on planet Zero? Such knowledge is completely lacking. Instead, this fact is substituted with concrete external examples of the way humans live their lives either in the positive or the negative manner. These examples evoke in them a desire to follow this or that lifestyle, giving preference to the one most consistent with their true nature.”

“As you remember, the true human nature is determined by several factors: 1. Being born from the positive state as agents of the positive state to illustrate the examples of the positive life of love and wisdom. Presently, fewer and fewer humans are born from this stock. 2. Being born from the negative state as agents of the negative state to illustrate and perpetuate the examples of the negative life of evils and falsities. More and more humans are born from this stock. 3. Being born from various ideas of both sides with the sole purpose of being

incarnated on planet Zero. More and more humans are born from the negative ideas and fewer and fewer are born from the positive ideas. This is a necessary arrangement if the negative state is to also win fully on planet Zero.”

“Now, the presence of these factors is able to trigger in humans the nature corresponding to each particular state which they fully manifest, in most instances not even knowing consciously why they are the way they are. This is how they compensate for the lack of proper knowledge and total ignorance about this situation.”

“In order to better understand human life forms, it is necessary here to briefly summarize the process by which humans came to be the way they are.”

“Several phases of history of sentient life on your planet can be clearly established.”

“The very first phase was the androgynous one. In this phase, sentient entities in an androgynous form populated your planet for a relatively brief period of time — approximately for twenty centuries. They were a direct endowment of The Most High, created for the purpose of preparation of your planet for what was to come.”

“As you remember, at that time your planet was situated in a different part of your galaxy. Once the androgynous people fully accomplished their mission, they left your planet and established themselves elsewhere in the positive state of Creation.”

“Very little physical, mental and/or spiritual resemblance exists between those people and humans presently existing on your planet. Only some extremely limited elements of their sentience were retained in humans. But these elements are not manifested in humans in any other manner than having some limited degree of an ability to be aware of their selfawareness.”

“The need to retain some degree of this crucial ability stems from the fact that validation of any life form and its lifestyle depends on this ability. Nothing can be illustrated and learned if such an ability is lacking.”

“The purpose of a sentient androgynous life form on your planet was revealed in the book Fundamentals of Human Spirituality.”

“The second phase of this history began with the separate male and female forms of sentient beings. From the genetic material of the original androgynous people, The Most High created two separate forms and endowed them with the spirit of life. The entire knowledge and abilities that the first people had and gathered were fully contained in that special material and were fully transmitted to the second people. They were born in full consciousness of that knowledge, as well as of everything else, including the awareness of their self-awareness. Because The Most High was the one who performed this process, these people can still be considered the direct endowment of The Most High. In actuality, the only difference between the first type and the second type of people was their physical form and lack of a direct experience of total unity of feminine and masculine principles.”

“As you remember from before, the separation of feminine and masculine principles is a first remote prerequisite for activation of the negative state.”

“But there is another point here which has been concealed so far and is being revealed now for the first time. Notice, please, that in the process of creation of the second type of people on your planet, a totally different approach was used than in the process of creation of the

first androgynous people.”

“In the process of creation of the first people, particles from the emanating energy of the most outward degree of The Most High’s Absolute External Mind were used (not as in the birth of Jesus Christ, during which an element from The Absolute External Mind — its very center, was directly used!). These particles were fused with the elements of their prospective physical environment. This fusion gave birth to the first people.”

“This process allows the presence of The Most High to be manifested in the most outward position of the most external degree of Creation to its fullest possible extent. This region of Creation is not able to carry more than what is contained in the particles of emanating energy of the most outward degree of The Most High’s Absolute External Mind. But because the particles derived directly from the emanating energy of The Absolute Life of The Absolute Spirit, now called The Lord Jesus Christ (at that time called The Most High — this is why the term ‘Most High’ is used here), the first people on your planet, under existing conditions then relevant to the nature and position of that planet, were the most possible direct endowment of The Most High.”

“Due to this fact, they contained an unimaginable degree of knowledge, wisdom, love, abilities, talents, gifts, science and all other equipment that you have no possibility of imagining or comprehending. They were masters of their inner and outer universe to the fullest possible extent.”

“These full abilities and knowledges, as well as everything they acquired in the process of their life on planet Earth (still called Earth at that time), they passed on to the next people who came after them.”

“Now, the next generation, in a separate male and female form, was created by the fusion of three elements. From the genetic material, left behind by the first people, The Most High used one masculine gene and one feminine gene plus one element from the physical environment for building their physical body. In the process of combining these elements and their fusion, a separation was accomplished by the method of suppression of the external genetic characteristics either of feminine or masculine genes, respectively.”

“As you noticed, the fundamental difference between the first and the second people was that, whereas in the process of creation of the first people particles of emanating life energies from the most outward degree of The Most High’s Absolute External Mind were used, this was not the case in the process of creation of the second people. Instead, the second people were derived from the genes of the first people.”

“One of the many meanings of the story of Adam describes this process by the act of The Lord God taking out of Adam one of his ribs and making it into a woman. In this connotation, the word ‘woman’ does not mean only female. It also means any sentient entity derived from some other primary sentient entity rather than directly from The Lord God.”

“In the case of Adam — the first people — a direct approach was used. In the case of the second people, called Adam and Eve, an indirect approach was used. This difference has a great spiritual significance.”

“One condition with the first people that could not have been changed was that they were created as a unity of feminine and masculine principles. *Whatever comes from The Lord God Most High directly cannot be in any other condition.*”

“However, as you remember, for the purpose of activation of the negative state, it was necessary to use a different approach. The negative state cannot be activated from the position of unification of these principles. The production of the true life process is accomplished by the process of this continuous unification. This is the true nature of The Lord Jesus Christ who at that time was called The Lord God Most High. Thus, whatever derives directly from any aspect of The Most High, in this case from emanating life energies, as described above, cannot appear in any other condition.”

“In the foresight of activation of the negative state, in order to give it an opportunity to come to its fruition, it was necessary to establish a life form which would not be derived directly from any aspect of The Lord God — even from the emanating life energies from the most outward aspect of His/Her Absolute External Mind. Those energies are direct emanations and radiations of The Most High. They cannot be used for this separation.”

“Another reason for the differences between the first and the second people was that, as you remember, The Most High could not be present in the process of activation of the negative state. His/Her direct presence would make this activation utterly impossible. When you create someone from the very particles emanating from you, you are fully present in those particles.”

“However, when you use those same particles, combined and fused now with the elements of the external physical environment, and from their own fusion you create something or someone else, a new hybrid will come to its being and existence which will not have the full direct presence of yourself. Thus, as you see, the process of distancing of The Most High from the future act of triggering the negative state’s dead life had begun.”

“Once the second people fully established themselves on planet Earth, a third phase in the history of your planet was initiated. The life of the second people flourished for many millions of years. In the process of this time many great spiritual, mental, physical and scientific accomplishments were achieved.”

“Not only did these people have a direct access to and use of all knowledge and abilities left behind by the first people, but they creatively developed this knowledge further and invented and discovered numerous other concepts and secrets of life which they fully utilized for the betterment of their lifestyle in general.”

“While they were experimenting with the genetic material left behind by the first people, as well as with their own genetic endowment, they conceived an idea of creating a life form which would be exactly like them except that it would not be a direct act of The Lord God Most High who created them by the process described above. These people were permitted to conceive these ideas in their minds for the purpose of bringing the negative state closer to its activation.”

“The reason this idea could be conceived by the second people so easily was that they had the knowledge and experience of their own conception as a derivation from the genetic material of someone else instead of from The Lord God. Thus, they concluded: If The Lord God produced them through the mediating means and not directly, using the already existing external material in the form of the first people, why not use their own material and create a life form in their own likeness and image. Such a conclusion logically follows this process.”

“After long experimentation, the second people succeeded in this effort. As you remember, they used one gene of their female species and one gene of their male species and fused them in such a manner as to bring about infinite variations and diversities in the production of life forms.”

“From that point on, a new mode of bringing people to this world was established. People were created not by The Most High but by other people, using The Most High’s methodology by which the second people were created.”

“Now in this new breed of people, the direct presence of The Most High in the form of any of His/Her direct elements or particles is almost nonexistent.”

“The initial purpose and intent in creating this third type of people was not a negative one. In actuality, it was a positive one, stemming from the creative effort of life forms present in them from The Most High. This simply means that when you have certain abilities, they become a motivating factor for initiation of activities consistent with the nature and content of those abilities.”

“If you have the knowledge and ability of how to produce life forms, you will be motivated to use that knowledge and those abilities to do exactly what they give you. This is a vital spiritual principle. After all, why would you have such an endowment? For decoration only? You are endowed with all kinds of knowledge, gifts and abilities in order to use them, to develop them, to master them and to continuously improve them. You cannot do this unless you practice it.”

“No other reason, intention or motivation of the second people existed to do anything but to fully actualize, realize and manifest their abilities, knowledge and gifts. However, their accomplishments were used to allow the negative state to come to its fruition for the reasons fully described elsewhere.”

“The third phase of history of your planet actually begins at the time when all people from the second phase departed from your world and settled elsewhere. The third people were all the result of the genetic engineering described above.”

“In the process of that genetic engineering, all abilities, talents, gifts and knowledge, now accumulated to immense proportions, unimaginable for you, were genetically transferred to the third people. Thus, these people were born, through the process of something which remotely resembles bi-cloning, into the full knowledge and understanding of all which was transmitted to them and how to use it.”

“The history of the third type of people lasted the longest time — many millions of years. With each new generation, created by this special process, a certain degree of spiritual deterioration occurred. Having no immediate experience of being created directly by The Most High, and being produced by the so-called scientific external means, in the process of many millions of years, these people gradually came to the conclusion that they could be totally independent and self-sufficient in all their endeavors without any need to involve some kind of Higher Power or Source.”

“Now, this consideration is the very first step in activation of the negative state’s dead life. However, the third people, or to be precise, the four hundred thousandth generation of the third people, who conceived this idea still did this for the sake of utilization and application of their abilities and knowledge themselves rather than with an evil intent. In order to test this theory (that they can produce a life form which would have no need to consider any higher spiritual power as a true Source of Life but to be totally independent of any source except their own self-sufficiency), this particular generation produced a fourth type of people who eventually became the original pseudo-creators.”

“Although this new type of people was produced basically by the same methodological procedures, a different set and combination of traits within genetic material was used. The suppression of genetic traits which carry the memories and facts of dependence on the spiritual principles was successfully accomplished, and emphasis was put on genetic traits that carry mental and physical dispositions of self-sufficiency, independence and striving for self-actualization by one’s own efforts and powers and all other dispositions related to this trend.”

“So, a fourth phase in the history of your planet began, once the fourth type of people set in. Again, in the process of this genetic engineering, which led to the production of the fourth people, all knowledge, abilities and accomplishments, in all their tremendous accumulation, were passed fully on to them. Nothing was lacking except the suppressed need to depend upon and derive everything from the true spiritual principles of The Absolute Life of The Absolute Sentient Mind of The Most High God.”

“The fourth type of people thus was born also into the full knowledge of everything and into the awareness of self-awareness with an added component of a new choice not to be dependent on anything spiritual.”

“Also, these people had a long history, spreading through many millions of years.”

“In the process of their history, developing further their gift of total independence and self-sufficiency, they conceived an idea of total separation from the rest of Creation in order to test the theory of what would happen if they were to be totally different. In other words, the question, foreseen by the Creator, The Absolute Source of Life, of what life would be like if made totally separated from and independent of the rest of Creation and the Creator, was finally asked.”

“As you see, the formulation of this question somewhat differs from the formulation of its final version. It does not say what life would be like **without** the Creator or if it were **to derive from any other source** other than The Most High and His/Her spiritual principles or false spiritual principles. Instead, in this formulation the words ‘separated’ and ‘independent’ or ‘totally different’ are being used.”

“This is not by a coincidence. The final version of this question cannot come to its fruition until a separate lifestyle different from and independent of the rest of Creation is first established. Only in a state of separation can such a final version of this question be conceived at all. In the conception of the idea of total separation from the rest of Creation the second crucial step toward the full activation of the negative state’s dead life was accomplished and finalized.”

“So, this idea was put to the test. At this time, though, these people decided to apply the successful results of their experimentation on themselves. First, they used the tremendous genetic pool available to them from the various life forms to produce a new life still in their likeness and image but with a different outlook on life, the multiverse and The Most High. The point here was that, if you want to become different from anyone else in Creation, you must come up with something totally dissimilar to them. This dissimilarity, in its initial stage, is not that much of the external nature and of the degree of knowledge, intelligence and how to apply and utilize them, but more so of the inner and interior nature.”

“How do you establish something totally different in this respect? By establishing a fundamentally different lifestyle. However, at that time, no other lifestyle but a positive one existed or had ever been experienced. So, how do you go about defining a lifestyle which is totally different from the known positive one? By a careful classification, analysis and

definition of all aspects of the positive state and by coming up with the exact opposite of everything contained in the nature of the positive state. The opposite principles can establish a totally different lifestyle.”

“So, in the process of this phase of genetic engineering, all positive traits were suppressed and, by a very special genetic design, totally new ideas were ingrained in all subsequent genes used for fabrication of the fifth type of people. Now these types of people were produced with traits fully opposing the positive state but with the full preservation of all intelligence, knowledge, abilities, talents, gifts, etc., that their fabricators had.”

“After successful completion of this experiment, the experimenters altered their own genetic makeup and fused themselves with the fifth type of people, becoming a leading part of their force.”

“Now for the first time in Creation, a new lifestyle was established that had never been before and will never be again after it fulfills the purpose of its deadly being and existence.”

“The fifth phase of the history of your planet relates to the fifth type of people. Also, this phase lasted several millions of years. In the process of this phase, the fifth people gradually ‘perfected’ the state of complete separation, isolation and independence from the rest of Creation, bringing their opposing traits to the most extreme state.”

“In the process, a deliberate extreme hate toward everything of the positive state and particularly toward The Lord God was developed and implemented in all aspects of their life. By this step, the negative state of deadly life came to its full activation. It was in this phase that the final version of the above question was formulated.”

“Having the entire knowledge and abilities fully preserved and at their full disposal, being the most developed scientists of all times, the fifth people, now justly called the pseudo-creators, conceived the idea of fabrication of humans and other numerous creatures both sentient and non-sentient and inanimate forms, as well as the idea of populating the Zone of Displacement.”

“For this purpose they developed in the spiritual dimension of the Zone of Displacement several worlds known to you under the name of ‘Hells.’ Thus, the Hells were established. From that position, they proceeded to do what was described in Chapter Six of this book.”

“As you see from this brief description, the negative state was clearly initiated on the level of the most extreme outward degree of the physical dimension of Creation and nowhere else. It has never had any equal position with the positive state because it derived from the life of the positive state by conceiving an idea of opposing the nature of the positive state. It has no roots whatsoever in The Lord Jesus Christ called at that time The Most High or The Lord God.”

“By opposing the nature of the positive state — the carrier of the true life — the negative state became a carrier of the dead life.”

“The fabrication of humans and their lifestyle, as manifested on your planet from cave human to the present time, was for the sole purpose of proving that a life form totally different from anything and anyone else can be produced, which has no knowledge, no idea, no concept and no awareness of anything spiritual, or anything at all, but is born in total ignorance and, yet, at the same time, is able to develop all these factors through its own effort and striving.”

“Thus, humans are here for the purpose of proving that no God or spiritual principles are needed for creation of life because it can appear without any intelligent creative effort. The purpose was to fabricate evidence, pointing out the origin of humans from the animals in an evolutionary — not a creative — manner. Everything was set up for this purpose.”

“The facts revealed here corroborate the statement that humans are not a direct endowment of The Most High, although the material used in their fabrication, ***in its very original condition***, came from The Most High. But by the time that material was used for fabrication of humans it was altered and mutated from its original condition and content so many times that for all practical purposes it could not be considered as coming from The Most High.”

“Humans are the most gruesome purposeful mutation of genetic material many times purposefully mutated, combined and fused with the most gruesome purposefully mutated beastly genes derived from animals built from even more gruesomely mutated animals, fabricated by the pseudo-creators.”

“Because of this unusual condition, only in humans can the extreme manifestation of the dead life of the negative state and its efforts take place as compared to the true life of the positive state. The originators and activators of the negative state themselves could not fulfill this function because they fully knew what they were doing. They possessed the state of full awareness of the self-awareness which originally generated the true life within them. Only when they decided to genetically alter themselves, in accordance with the above procedure, they turned their life into a dead life.”

“From the position of dead life, producing a form of life which is neither dead nor alive, the proper illustration and exemplification of the true nature of the negative state can and may begin.”

“The principle to be aware of here is that only from the position of ignorance and unconscious processes, inherent in the condition of human life, which is neither dead nor alive, when one has no idea how the negative state was originated and what its purpose is, can its true nature be fully learned.”

“The pseudo-creators had never lost the full knowledge of its origin and purpose because they were the ones who originated it and set a purpose for it. Therefore, they cannot be its exemplification.”

“As you remember from before, the exemplification must always be by the consequences, outcomes and results of this activation and not by the act of activation itself. Humans and their corrupt, greedy, avaricious, hypocritical lifestyle of double standards are the highest point of this exemplification. Creatures in the Hells cannot serve this purpose because they are in the full state of the dead life itself.”

“From this understanding of the origin of human stock, a definition of human life in particular can be derived:”

“Human life in particular is a process of a state which exists between the true life and non-life for the purpose of full exemplification of all consequences, outcomes and results of activation of the negative state in order to provide an important spiritual learning for the entire Creation and its multiverse about the true nature of something entirely different from the positive state so that everyone knows exactly what not to choose.”

“In a true meaning and content of this definition, human life cannot be considered a true life. But neither can it be considered an entirely dead life. It is a peculiar state that has never existed before anywhere and it will never exist anywhere once it fulfills its purpose, as reflected in the definition offered above. In actuality, no other purpose and meaning of human life has ever existed or will ever exist.”

“To try to find any other purpose and meaning for this unusual state, called human life, is a futile venture which may lead, in many instances, to suicide.”

“Once you realize the true meaning and purpose of the so-called human life, it puts everything in an entirely different perspective.”

“As you remember from the previous Chapter, it was stated there that nothing is normal on your planet. The abnormality of your condition derives from this peculiar position. Only the true life is normal. The dead life of the Hells is a normal life for them or no life from the position of the positive state. However, your condition is neither of them. Therefore, it does not fit any known category of life or non-life.”

“This is an insane pathological condition which allows the fullest possible manifestation of all consequences, outcomes and results of activation of the negative state.”

“Being in a condition that you are, from your position, it is extremely difficult for you to properly conceptualize the concept of life in general and human life in particular. When you are in a state of abnormality, you lack proper orientation points to be able to discern what the true life is all about. In fact, the normal life from the abnormal condition looks as abnormal. Not knowing what normality is, having no experiential example of the normal life, you tend to reject anything that does not fit with or is different from anything you have and have experienced in your everyday life. In actuality, it is scary to you. Because it is scary, as an unknown factor, it is considered to be abnormal.”

“Thus, humans, by their very structure, are purposefully prevented from acquiring the proper knowledge and experience of the true life. They are, in fact, not even built, in any aspect of their structure, to be able to do so.”

“For this reason, most humans on your planet, if they were to read this book, would consider it a product of insanity and mental derangement.”

“In order to bring more light into the concept of life in general and human life in particular, the following points need to be considered:”

(1)

“As you remember, life is a process of the state of the spirit’s awareness of its self-awareness or ‘I am.’ Thus, one must always distinguish between the process of something and a state of something. In this respect, life can be considered a purposeful product of the ongoing process of awareness of self-awareness of ‘I am’ of the spirit. The word ‘process’ implies something dynamic, continuously going on. There is a certain discrete sequence here, occurring concurrently and simultaneously, yet, nevertheless, in a sequence. The sequence is postulated for the purpose of better understanding of what this is all about.”

“First, there is a spirit. In this case, The Absolute Spirit. Secondly, there is a state of the spirit. The spirit is — this is the state. Thirdly, there is a process of the spirit — awareness. The spirit is aware that it exists. Fourthly, there is awareness of self-awareness. The spirit is aware that it is aware of its state. Fifthly, there is ‘I am’ which is the process of self-

awareness from the awareness. This is the process of the spirit. The spirit is not only aware that it is but also that it is 'It' that is aware — thus, 'I am.' Sixthly, there is energy of the process of the state of the spirit — its 'I am.' Seventhly, there is an awareness of the produced energy from this ongoing process."

"The combination of this energy and its awareness constitutes true life of the spirit. In this sense, life is a necessary product of these seven steps. They all occur synchronously, concurrently and simultaneously. From their unified totality, life derives. Or to be precise, **from the process of the unified totality of all states of the spirit, life is and exists.** Thus, life is immanent to the state of the spirit and its process."

"No other condition of the spirit can be or exist. Thus, life is the very nature of the spirit. Or, even more precisely, the spirit is the true life of the life itself."

"In a discrete mode, the spirit precedes life and life is a manifestation of the spirit's being and existence. Life is a mode by which and through which the spirit operates. No other mode of operation is available. This is the way it is. This is something constant, unchangeable."

"When humans conceptualize the nature of God, they assume that it is totally unchangeable and is eternally the same. However, the matter of fact is, it is not God whose nature is constant and unchangeable to eternity but, instead, it is the mode of operation — life — which is constant and which always was, is and will be from eternity to eternity. Nothing can be changed about this mode of operation. It is always the same."

"The Lord Jesus Christ, being The Absolute Spirit of The Absolute Life, is in a constant, unchangeable mode of operation. He/She can operate by, through, with and of His/Her life only. This is the only possible mode of His/Her operation."

"In this respect, **and only in this respect**, He/She is truly unchangeable and always the same. But this does not relate to His/Her Nature which is a constant process of its dynamic manifestation in infinite varieties of ways and manners."

"Can you conceive any other mode of operation but life? None. This is true in an absolute sense as related to The Absolute Life of The Absolute Spirit of The Lord Jesus Christ."

"The true sentient life follows the same pattern from its relative to The Absolute Condition."

"The same pattern is followed in the dead life only in an opposite sense."

"The situation with human life in particular is different. Human life is a total distortion of all patterns. It is paradoxically a state of neither state and a process of neither process. It is an impossibility which was made temporarily possible. It makes no sense and has no meaning."

"Paradoxically again, in making no sense and having no meaning is the true sense and the true meaning of human life. To repeat: In illustrating this no-sense and no-meaning is the temporary value of human life."

(2)

"The concept of life in general can be better understood from the way it functions and is manifested. Its structure can be conceptualized in three aspects."

"The first aspect stems from the state of life which is the spirit of life. Because we are dealing here with the spirit, this aspect is called **the spiritual aspect**. It is the starting point of life

itself and all its functions and manifestations. Because it is the originator of everything else, everything else, by virtue of this fact, appears as though in a certain distance from or proximity to the spirit or this spiritual aspect of life. Such an appearance gives an impression that the spiritual aspect is in the state of ***the most within.***”

“Thus, the spiritual aspect of life is the most within state of life. The most within of this most within is, of course, the spirit itself and its ‘I am.’ Because ‘I am’ is an active state, it is in a continuous process of production of spiritual energies. These spiritual energies emanate from the spiritual aspect of life and form its second aspect.”

“Thus, the second aspect of life is a process of self-aware ‘I am.’ It produces its own process of thinking, feeling, willing, etc., summarily called ***mentation***. This is the process of mentation of ‘I am’ which thinks itself, feels itself, wills itself, directs itself and moves itself. In other words, this is what used to be called the soul of life.”

“Self-mentation is the foundation on which all other forms of mental activities of life are based. It is impossible to think about others, for example, unless you are aware of the fact that it is you who thinks. You have to do it from your own self-awareness. If you are not aware of your own state and process, you cannot be aware of someone else’s.”

“As mentioned a long time ago in the book, Messages From Within, you can relate only from yourself. No other position of relatedness is available.”

“Remember, there is only one available position from which the spirit can operate — life. Life is the process of spirit’s self-aware ‘I am’ which generates mental processes. Because it is, after all, life of ‘I am,’ only from the position of ‘I am’ anyone can relate to anyone or anything else. To repeat it again, no other position is available. These are the facts of life.”

“Since the second aspect of life is the process of the first one, it appears to be somewhat distant from the state of the most within. Its proximity, being between the first spiritual aspect and the third, upcoming aspect, can be called an ***interior aspect or mediating soul or mental aspect of life.***”

“The process of continuous mentation of ‘I am’ or the interior aspect of life generates its own life energies. These energies constantly emanate in an outward direction and form a third significant aspect of life — ***the external or exterior manifestation of life.***”

“The process of mentation requires its validation through the consequences, outcomes and results of its activities and the ideas of the spiritual aspects. These states generate actions, behaviors, attitudes and positions of life directed toward its ‘I am’ and everyone and everything else. It is also a form of life’s manifestation in its external environment.”

“Because of its more distant proximity to the spiritual and mental aspects of life, this aspect is called the external or exterior aspect of life. Its form is called the body of life.”

“These three fundamental aspects of life are always discrete to one another. They are conceived in a synchronous, concurrent and simultaneous mode of their being and existence. Within themselves they function in a continuous and successive mode. However, no continuity exists among them because of their discrete nature. They correspond to each other: The most within to the interior, the interior to the exterior, the exterior to the interior and the interior to the most within. Summarily, they are unity, oneness and harmony of life.”

“In the totality of their function and manifestation they constitute what is called the ***sentient***

mind.”

“Thus, the sentient mind can be conceptualized in those three unified aspects of life called the most within or Spiritual Mind, the interior or mental mind and the exterior or external mind. In this respect, the sentient mind can be considered as a carrier of the true life. Through it, the true life is actualized, realized and manifested.”

“The non-sentient life, being the externalized corresponding outward factors to the sentient minds’ ideas, mentations and affections, cannot have this structure. It is formed from the most outward life energies, emanating from the most external aspect of life. Because its formation is based on this external aspect, the non-sentient life reflects the structure of the external mind only. In itself and by itself, the external aspect of life does not have self-awareness. This comes from the most within aspect of life — ‘the I am.’ ‘I am’ is aware of its external aspect. The external aspect is aware of itself from the ‘I am’s awareness. Because of this arrangement, the non-sentient life is limited to the external aspects of life within which it has its own relative inner, relative interior and relative exterior degree, respectively. Having no true within or true soul, the non-sentient life can never establish a concept of ‘I am.’”

“In actuality, the non-sentient life’s function is entirely different. The purpose here is to establish life forms which would characterize behavior of the most external aspect of life in a form of outward, concretized illustrations, utilizing the elements of the environment from which the non-sentient life forms are built in combination with the ideas of the sentient mind.”

“Thus, non-sentient life does not have its own independent life. Instead, it is a derivative of life energies, emanating from the activities of the most external aspects of the true sentient life.”

“The structure of the dead life is similar to the structure of the true life except in an upside-down position. The most within of the dead life is the most without and the most without is its most within. The interior aspect of the dead life proceeds from the most without which is considered to be the most within. This arrangement produces evils and falsities of dead life which are the breath of the negative state.”

“The human life in particular is a totally distorted structure of the true life. It contains considerable characteristics of non-sentient life in order to keep humans in the outward aspects of life. At the same time, human life contains within itself the most within spiritual aspect, the interior aspect or soul and the exterior aspect. However, these aspects within human structure are isolated, separated, closed off and put into the mode of unconsciousness.”

“A further deviation in the human structure of life is the infusion of dead life in the form of its false inner aspect, false interior and false exterior aspect.”

“Thus, human life can be considered a monstrous combination of isolated, separated and distorted elements of the true life, dead life and non-sentient life. This is a very unusual and unique combination which, as mentioned above, makes the impossible possible.”

“This structure of human life produces a lifestyle described in the preceding Chapter and illustrated by the history of humankind on your planet. No comments will be offered regarding this issue in this Chapter. This Chapter has a different purpose.”

(3)

“The three aspects of life and sentient mind as described above have a very specific function

and a mode of their manifestation or, if you want to use the word 'living,' the mode of living. They are regulated by their own principles formulated within each aspect from the ultimate spiritual ideas generated in the most within state of 'I am.'"

"The specific function and mode of living of life from the position of its three aspects imparts on life its quality. This is the quality of living."

"The state of life — the most within, the process of life — the interior aspect, and the manifestation of life — the exterior aspect, have their quality. The quality of this life is determined by the nature of the spirit and its soul."

"What is the nature of this spirit? Of course, it stems from The Absolute Nature of The Absolute Spirit of The Absolute Life of The Lord Jesus Christ. Its central theme and principle is to give, to share, to receive and to reciprocate what it is and what it has for the sake of principle itself. Because, most importantly, it has life as an immanent factor of its nature, it gives, shares, receives and reciprocates life. Thus, the quality of life is determined by to what extent and fullness this giving, sharing, receiving and reciprocating takes place. The more of it, the greater the quality; the less of it, the lesser the quality. None of it, no quality at all. In the latter case, life lacks any positive quality."

"In the case of non-sentient life, its quality is determined by the function it plays for maintaining the external environment in an ecological balance, in order that sentient life may have a healthy environment for its manifestation. And, also, to what extent it is capable of reflecting the corresponding factors of the activities of the external aspect of life and sentient mind."

"In the dead life of the negative state, the quality of life is determined by the opposing principle. It is non-sharing, non-giving, non-receiving and non-reciprocating unless it is under duress. The quality of dead life is an illustration of a lack of any quality."

"The quality of human life in particular stems from its peculiar structure. Being a forceful, unnatural mixture and distortion of all the above, it produces something totally negatively new — ulterior motivation for doing anything."

"Thus, you can see humans who give, who share, who receive and who reciprocate, but the intent with which this is done, in most instances, is never free from ulterior reasons. It is very rarely done for the sake of principle itself. And even though some agents of the positive state, living on your planet, strive to do so for the sake of principle itself, the structure of their life within them, the way it is arranged, is such that it does not allow them to be totally free from such ulterior considerations. Being aware of this fact, the agents of the positive state do not identify themselves with this attitude and, therefore, it is not appropriated to them."

"Thus, the quality of human life is in illustration and manifestation of a totally different mode of life which is neither a true life of purity of principles themselves, nor a dead life of no principles at all, but a total distortion, perversion and mutilation of all principles of any life and non-life."

(4)

"The nature of the spirit of life determines conditions under which true giving, sharing, receiving and reciprocating of this life can take place. Again, these conditions derive from the nature of the spirit itself. As you remember from the above, one immanent factor of the spirit's life is its freedom and independence. This is the innermost factor of the spirit's life. On the intermediate level, it is manifested in the condition of free and independent mentation. On the

exterior level, it is manifested in the condition of free and independent choice to behave, to act and to relate in accordance with that choice.”

“Because of this important nature, any true giving, sharing, receiving and reciprocating can take place only on the basis of freedom and independence. It must be done freely, based on an independent choice. You are free to choose independently to do this for the sake of principle itself. Only in this condition can the true quality of life really be conceived and manifested. The spirit’s freedom is its means by which it expresses and impresses itself. The spirit’s independence is the process by which its life operates. These two modes of the spirit’s life underlie all its activities. Without them, no activities would be possible.”

“In non-sentient life the principle of freedom and independence cannot be actualized because it lacks self-awareness. The life of freedom and independence depends upon the awareness of self-awareness of ‘I am’ which conceptualizes its freedom and independence. No such conceptualization is available to the non-sentient life because it is ruled by the blind instincts ingrained into it. These instincts are reflections of life energies, emanating from the most outward level of the external aspect of life for orientation in the external environment. There is no need to develop the concept of ‘I am.’ Therefore, in this case, freedom and independence would be superfluous.”

“In dead life of the negative state all conditions are by a necessity and force. Therefore, freedom and independence is a poisonous atmosphere for all in the negative state. Their freedom and independence is expressed in their choice to have no freedom and independence. This choice is the source of their dead life. Without it they could not be and exist.”

“In human life in particular, the connotation is the gruesome combination of all the above. Fusion of a sense of freedom and independence, with the state of no freedom and independence and with non-sentient life form’s blind instincts, creates a peculiar condition in human life. By this condition humans acquired a mixture of needs: to be dependent and independent at the same time; to be free and not to be free; to have everything done for them and to want to do everything all by themselves; to direct and to be directed; to control and to be controlled; to conform and to rebel, etc. ***Human life in particular is an illustration of all possible contradictions placed in one container.***”

“On such contradictions the true nature of the activated and dominant negative state can be illustrated the best. No consistencies in human life exist. No unifying principle is available to humans. If human life is a life of contradictions and inconsistencies, it can never experience the state of unification. Thus, no true life can be manifested in human life because the true life is based on the principle of unification as a free choice in the spirit of independence.”

“The only free and independent choice human life, in its present structure, has is to be a stage on which all these contradictions and inconsistencies can be played out for the sake of learning of all in the true life.”

(5)

“Inherent in the nature of the true life and its spirit is a sense of responsibility for that life. Since the spirit is a producer of life (in the sense that Absolute Spirit is The Absolute Producer of The Absolute Life), it is the spirit or the spiritual aspects of life that take full responsibility for its life.”

“The concept of life and the concept of responsibility for life cannot be separated. Once life is produced and is and exists, it cannot be left unattended, so-to-speak. Life, among other

things, is a process and an extension of its spirit. Whatever happens to life is the responsibility of its spirit. The soul of the spirit, or the intermediate aspect of life, is responsible for proper forms of mentation of that life. Here responsibility lies in providing life with proper tools of its expression and impression. If spirit has no means for its expression and impression, it has no life. The soul of any spirit is responsible for providing continuous modes of these expressions and impressions.”

“The body of the spirit and soul, or the exterior aspect of life, is responsible for life’s actualization and realization in its fullest condition and form. It is responsible for giving life a sense of concreteness and tangibility.”

“In a general sense, the sentient mind, being a carrier and manifestor of this life, is responsible for how its life is being carried and manifested. Only the sentient mind, in its ‘I am,’ can be aware of its life. Whoever is aware of its life bears full responsibility for that life.”

“This is one of the most important spiritual principles of life itself. Life would never be generated from its spirit unless there were a full commitment of the spirit to be responsible for its life. Otherwise, life would make no sense. Only from the position of this responsibility for life can life come to its fruition.”

“The sense of responsibility for life derives from the state of awareness and self-awareness. It also derives from the sense of free and independent choice to produce life and be responsible for it.”

“In this sense, the responsibility for non-sentient life lies in those who produced such a life. Because non-sentient life fully derives from activities of the sentient mind, the sentient mind is fully responsible for non-sentient life also. Non-sentient life has no self-awareness and, therefore, no sense of responsibility either. The sentient mind is responsible for equipping it with a set of special principles and instincts which assure the non-sentient life’s continuation and proper function.”

“In the conditions of dead life of the negative state, a total voluntary relinquishment of any responsibility of life is in force. There, the tendency is to pass on all responsibilities to someone or something else. Because this is a voluntary condition, all participants in the dead life are fully responsible for their dead life.”

“In the case of human life the responsibility for it stems from the fact that participants in the human life agreed to partake in it by their free choice, with a choice for not remembering that such a choice was made.”

“The peculiarity of human life is that it lacks any conscious memory of anything that was chosen before assuming this strange and unusual life. Thus, in most instances, humans have no conscious awareness or a direct experience of either the true life or the dead life. All humans know is what they directly experience. They bear full responsibility for this gross limitation by virtue of the fact that they chose it to be this way. Thus, whatever type of life one has, as a carrier of that freely chosen life, one must take full responsibility for it.”

(6)

“As pointed out above (points 3 and 5), one of the most fundamental aspects of the Nature of Spirit is to give and to share what it is and what it has and to take responsibility for its own life.”

“This nature and principle determines the duties the spirit has about its life. In the case of The

Absolute Life of The Absolute Spirit, The Absolute Duty is to continuously create new unique life forms in order to actualize the principle of giving and sharing, as well as receiving and reciprocating. You cannot share and reciprocate yourself with nothing.”

“In this respect, the duty to give life, for the purpose of this sharing and reciprocating, is an inherent trait of the nature of Spirit. On the level of the most within aspect of life, the duty is to continuously generate ideas of the new sentient life forms on whom can be imparted unique and specific life for the purpose of providing favorable conditions and circumstances in which this sharing and reciprocating can take place in a free and independent spirit.”

“On the level of the interior aspect of life, the duty is to provide a process of very specific and unique mentation through and by which this sharing and reciprocating can be actualized and realized.”

“On the level of the external aspect of life, the duty is to provide a most favorable environment and modes of behavior, attitudes, strivings, desires, wishes, wants and tendencies which make such sharing and reciprocating a concrete and tangible experience of a very desirable nature.”

“Basically, there are two aspects to this duty. One is directed toward one’s own life. The other is directed toward sharing and reciprocating that life. In the first case, it is the spirit’s duty to keep one’s life in the most optimal condition and function for the sake of principle itself. This is the way it is supposed to be. In the second case, the duty is to establish as many relationships with other spirits of life as possible for the purpose of sharing and reciprocating one’s own unique life.”

“In the highest spiritual sense, it is the spirit’s duty to share and to reciprocate one’s unique life with The Absolute Source and Giver of Life — The Lord Jesus Christ. Only if one does so, does one receive from The Lord Jesus Christ the reciprocal sharing of His/Her Absolute Life in relative steps. It has to be in relative steps because, being on the receiving end, the spirit of anyone cannot take in The Absolute Content of The Absolute Life of The Lord Jesus Christ. The spirit is relative to this Absolute State and therefore receives this sharing in steps congruent to its specific relative nature.”

“In non-sentient life forms this duty is reflected in their primary instinctual behavior. It does not give them any sense of duty. Instead, it compels them to take care of themselves and their environment as a matter of survival. They receive life from the sentient mind whose duty is to see to it that such instincts keep functional and that life flows continuously in all its forms and manifestations.”

“In the case of dead life of the negative state the duty is perceived in preservation of its own status by all means, striving to equalize itself with the positive state. This is a negative duty. Everyone in the negative state is compelled to perform acts which are destructive to the true life and ultimately favorable to the dead life.”

“In the case of human life in particular, you can see the combination of all three modes of life but in a perverted, distorted and falsified condition. The contradictions of human life are emphasized by the fact that humans feel they have duty for something that cannot be alive or is alive only for a brief period of time. The human body is the greatest object of that duty in order to maintain within it a semblance of life.”

“Because the human body lasts for only a few decades no matter how much you perform your duties toward it, it does not give you any true sense of that duty. After all, it will die, no

matter what you do.”

“Not having any direct experiential and tangible awareness of their spirit and soul — many humans even denying their existence — the life of humans becomes a mockery of duty toward itself.”

“Nowhere else can you see such a contradictory behavior toward itself. On one hand, humans anxiously and dutifully take care of the external aspect of their life; sometimes of the mental or interior aspect of their life; very rarely of the spiritual or the most within aspect of their life. On the other hand, at the very same time, they do everything which is harmful to all aspects of their life. You can see clearly, that with one hand humans build and with the other hand, at the very same time, they destroy what they built. This does not make any sense. So, the sense of any duty toward human life has no sense either.”

“On such nonsense, the true nature of all consequences, outcomes and results of the activated negative state can be illustrated and learned the best. In this sense, human nonsense has the only sense. In this respect, human duty lies in illustration of this unusual situation.”

(7)

“Life in general has a certain structure and content, and dynamics and components which constitute its nature. These are the internal factors of life.”

“The structure of life in general consists of the building blocks derived from the nature of its spirit. On the level of the innermost aspect of life these are generated by the spirit’s idea of life. Life is preceded by the ideas of life. The spirit wills life through its continuously generated ideas of life. Cessation of these ideas of life means cessation of all life.”

“This statement has to be understood conceptually and operationally. In reality, the ideas of life and life itself are synchronous, concurrent and simultaneous occurrences. But because they appear in a discrete mode of the spirit’s conceptualization, the ideas of life, in that sense, precede life itself.”

“The analysis of life’s structure requires breaking down the process of life formation. But, as you remember from the beginning of this Chapter, the truth is ‘that spirit is life and life is spirit.’ They simply always are.”

“However, because life proceeds and spirit always is, it is logical to conceptualize the spirit as originator of life because it lives by its own idea of life. Thus, in this sense, discretely, first there is a spirit, secondly, there is an idea of life and, thirdly, there is a continuous actualization of that idea — life itself.”

“As you see, on the most within level, the major building block of life is the idea of life which is continuously occurring and is maintained in the sentient mind.”

“The other building block of life on the innermost level is the state of the spirit where these ideas are formed. The sentient mind of the spirit, continuously aware of its self-awareness, generates the ideas of life for the purpose of self-sustaining and ultimate giving and sharing of that life.”

“Thus, in an ultimate sense, the sentient mind of the spirit is the most vital and crucial building block of life. Without it, no life could be apprehended.”

“Still another building block of life on the innermost level is the ‘I am’ of the spirit. The assertion of life, that is, that life is, stems from the self-aware ‘I am.’ Without awareness of ‘I am,’ no ideas of life can be generated and no sentient mind can be conceived. The proper succession of these three building blocks of life in the innermost level of life is from the self-aware ‘I am’ of the spirit, through the sentient mind of the spirit, to the ideas of life of the spirit.”

“On the level of the interior aspect of life, which constitutes its soul, the following vital building blocks of life can be detected:”

“The actualized idea of a unique unrepeatable life constitutes its very specific mentality. The general ideas of life of its spirit, being the foundation of life, on this level are conceived as a unique and specific manifestation in the process of mentation of life. Life must be perceived specifically in order to take hold. Thus, a specific perception of life is one building block of mentality of life through which life is self-perceptive.”

“The second building block on this level is a thought and a sensation which enables life to be thought of and to be sensed by its own aliveness. Life must be a subject of thinking, feeling and sensation in order to be perceived and lived.”

“The third building block on the interior level is the will and its intent. Life must be willed by its carrier in order to be and to exist with an intent to be shared, reciprocated and fully actualized.”

“On the level of the exterior aspect of life, the building blocks are: The specific form of life’s manifestation which gives life a sense of tangibility and concreteness. The form of life is a means of life’s manifestation for the purpose of feedback of its aliveness.”

“The second building block on this level is the sense of acceptance. Life must be accepted in order to validate its being and existence. The feedback of acceptance to its source gives life a meaning and purpose.”

“The third building block on the exterior level is a desire, a wish and a want to be alive, giving feedback to its source that life is truly desirable, wished and wanted.”

“By all these building blocks taken together, and by all their numerous derivatives, life is established in its being and existence. Once it is established at its source, it proceeds toward development of its infinite ways of manifestation by creating various receptacles of life and by endowing them with that life (with itself) so that they live and are alive.”

“In the case of non-sentient life, being a derivative of a derivative, its manifestation is limited to the environmental processes.”

“In the case of dead life of the negative state, the process is the same but with a totally opposing purpose and meaning. The purpose is an ultimate destruction of all true life. This destructive purpose gives a meaning to the dead life.”

“In the case of human life in particular, the process of life’s establishment is perverted, distorted, falsified and mutilated. Humans have no conscious ideas of what life is all about. They have no sense of the purpose of their life the way it is and it gives them no tangible meaning other than that they are somehow alive on a temporary basis.”

“The contradiction of human life from this standpoint is derived from a hope unfounded by

experiential perception that somehow they will live forever (although not all humans believe this to be so). And, at the same time, humans desperately cling to the life of their body, which is inevitably slipping away from them, believing that with the cessation of life of their body, no self-aware perception of life in their unique personalities will be available to them.”

“As mentioned in Chapter Eleven of this book, human life is ruled, among other things, by the principle of uncertainty. Nothing is certain in and about human life. No one knows for sure what happens after one’s physical body dies. Will life be no more? Is life limited to the few years one has on one’s planet? And although there is much information on life, supporting both alternatives — no life after death and a new life after death — all this information is only guesswork and opinions, surmises, suppositions and assumptions which may or may not be true.”

“No one has a direct full experience of a prolonged nature of what happens after a human dies. Some humans have certain brief encounters in this respect, but not sufficiently long enough to give others any certainty whether the experience was genuine or only a discharge of brain cells’ stored ideas, derived from one’s belief system, of how life after death should be, as some ‘scientists’ proclaim.”

“Thus, human conceptualization of life has nothing genuine as to the way life really is. In reality, human life can be considered a caricature of the true life forcefully combined with dead life and non-sentient life.”

(8)

“One of the most important internal factors of life is its content. You can say that the content of life in general is what gives life to life. In the most within level of life the content of life is defined and established by the content of its spirit. As you remember, the purpose of life, among other things, is to give, to share, to receive and to reciprocate for the sake of principle itself. This principle describes the content of life. In order to do so for the sake of principle, the spirit of life contains within itself a state called LOVE.”

“Love can be defined as a most intense self-awareness and awareness of the spirit’s life which gives the spirit immensely pleasurable sensation of its state. Love loves life absolutely. All other forms of love derive from this general love of life.”

“The true Nature and Content of The Absolute Spirit is pure Absolute Love. It is its eternal, unalterable state. It is this Absolute Love that actually is the source of life in all its manifestations. Because the nature of love is to love life unconditionally, it creates and produces many forms of life in order to impart and bestow on them its love. The very nature of love is to share and to give, unconditionally, this love to someone else. In order that this can be done, The Love of The Lord Jesus Christ created, creates and will create to eternity infinite varieties of sentient life with whom this love can be shared and reciprocated based on the above-mentioned principles of free choice and independence.”

“The responsibility of love of life is to provide life with opportunities to love and to be loved. In this responsibility is contained its Absolute Wisdom. It is wise to love life and to regulate it in such a manner as to have continuous opportunities to express, to impress, to feel and to live that love. Wisdom is the regulator of love. Love is life of its wisdom. Together they constitute the driving energy force of life.”

“Love and wisdom can be conceived as blood and oxygen which nourish all bodily organs and cells to keep them alive and functional. Thus, love and wisdom are the very life of life itself and the very content of life in general. Wisdom carries its love to all life manifestations,

adjusting it to the level of unique quality of receptivity and reciprocity of every subject and object of that love. From this statement it is obvious that the true meaning of life can be found in love and its wisdom. This is the true foundation and content of life.”

“On the interior level of life the content of life is manifested in its goodness and truth. Life in general is always good. That it is good is the truth of the matter. It is good to live, to be and to exist. It is true that one lives by one’s goodness, love and wisdom. The truth is that anything that is not of true life of love and wisdom cannot be good. Therefore, it cannot be truly alive. The state of love and the process of wisdom, as well as the state of good and the process of truth, require full awareness of self-awareness of ‘I am’ of the spirit of life. Only from the position of ‘I am’ can the discernment of love and wisdom take place. ‘I am’ lives by awareness and experience of its love through its wisdom. It manifests by its goodness through its truth.”

“On the exterior level of life, the content of life is manifested in its concrete loving acts and behaviors and pure faith in its power and purpose. It does only what is good from its love to the extent that it is wise and necessary to manifest its true nature. It considers only what is true and appropriate and wise in order to give all acts and behaviors a loving, caring, understanding and appreciating quality.”

“All three aspects of the content of life are functions on which giving, receiving, sharing and reciprocating can be properly realized. The realization of this factor gives life true reality. By it life is real.”

“On the level of non-sentient life this content is manifested in the instinctual and structural drive to preserve its species in order to maintain a continuous life flow in all its aspects.”

“On the level of dead life of the negative state the content of that life is in the opposites: Love is turned into burning hate; wisdom into foolishness; goodness into evil; truth into falsities; concrete loving acts and behaviors into concrete hateful acts and malicious and vicious behaviors; and pure faith into a total denial of anything positive, good and true.”

“On the level of human life in particular, the content of life is a forceful mixture of all the above. The sense and meaning of love, wisdom, good and truth and loving acts and faith are distorted, perverted and misunderstood. Love of others is turned into self-love so that loving others is for the sake of oneself and not for the sake of others, and love to God is turned into love of this world and everything external. In such a perverted love, humans find their pseudo-wisdom and pseudo-truth.”

“Love to this world here signifies love to everything external without any consideration for internal spiritual factors. It has a broad implication. It does not mean only to love objects of the external nature, such as, for example, money, property, goods and all kinds of material possessions, but also various rituals, customs, cultures, conventions, traditions, habits, attachments and external religions and other various external affiliations. They are all loved for one’s own sake and not for their own sake as a means for acquirement of higher spiritual awareness. Thus, for example, anyone who loves to go to church and to perform certain required rituals there for the sake of one’s own feelings, he/she loves this world or the externals which constitute this world. This love replaces the true love of life — God or The Lord Jesus Christ. Even if all this is done in the name of The Lord Jesus Christ, it is done, in most instances, for some ulterior reasons instead of for the sake of The Lord Jesus Christ as a principle because this is the way it is supposed to be.”

“This is a peculiar abnormal condition of human life in particular.”

(9)

“Another internal factor of life is its dynamics. As you know, life is not a stagnant state. The spirit of life, being in its own state, manifests its state in its process. Thus, life is a continuous dynamic active process. It never stops or rests. Even its rest is an active, dynamic process because it requires awareness of rest. Without awareness of rest, no rest can be conceived and subsequently experienced.”

“The most obvious and the most important aspect of life’s dynamics is its creative drive. By its love and wisdom, life is driven to continuously create. Through its creative effort, life can fully manifest its love and wisdom. Creativity is a continuous process of the spirit’s love and wisdom. In actuality, creativity can be conceptualized as life of love and wisdom itself. How can love and wisdom realize themselves but through their creative acts? By these acts Creation knows it is being loved and wisely cared for on a continuous and permanent basis.”

“In an ultimate sense, creativity of life is for the purpose of giving, sharing, receiving and reciprocating the acts of love and wisdom. Unless you have someone who can appreciate, respond, observe and participate in the acts of creativity, your creative efforts will make no sense.”

“Creation was created by the act of pure Love through the process of its pure Wisdom in order to give life a feedback of its creative efforts from its beloved Creation.”

“On the innermost level of life, creativity is conceived as an idea of life itself. The content and the meaning of the word ‘life’ reflects its creative state which is constantly in its process. Thus, first, you have an idea of creativity which gives an impetus to creativity to begin to create. This is its innermost state.”

“On the interior level of life, creativity is conceived as a purposeful and meaningful process which is well-planned, thought through and sensed by all modes of mental processes. In actuality, one of the many reasons why the mental processes were conceived was for the purpose of making creativity discernible, perceptible and sensible. Mental processes in themselves are the act of creativity of its spirit. They are sensors of creativity.”

“On the exterior level, creativity is conceived as a concrete tangible end product that gives feedback to its spirit on the results, outcomes and consequences of its creative efforts. The feedback is a necessary concomitant of this entire process. Through it, the spirit is enabled to judge the results of its creative activities and be further inspired in its dynamic creativity.”

“Thus, another aspect of life’s dynamics is inspiration. Life is inspired by its being and existence. Inspiration is the result of the process of the spirit’s awareness of its own life that gives it an inspiration to be unceasingly creative in infinite varieties, manners, ways and modes. It is life of creativity itself.”

“On a non-sentient level of life this creativity is reflected in the ability to procreate one’s own species in an infinite variety of ways. There are no two blades of grass or two leaves which are exactly alike. Neither are there two locomotive creatures that are exactly alike. No uniformity exists in Creation on any of its levels.”

“On the level of dead life of the negative state, the process of creativity is blocked and limited to destructive purposes. All inspirational effort is directed to the sustenance of the dead life which continuously breaks down. The purpose here is to fabricate a stagnant condition which would stifle the creative effort of the true life. Thus, in a dead life, creativity and inspiration are

turned into the process of fabrication and cunningness.”

“On the level of human life there is a distortion and perversion of creative efforts and inspirational endeavors in a combined contradictory manner of all the above.”

“Human creativity and inspiration are conceptualized as products of some kind of life force within them that drives them to build and to destroy at the same time; to appreciate and to despise at the same time; to admire and keep in contempt at the same time; to love and to hate at the same time; to produce and devour at the same time; to accept and to reject at the same time; to confirm and to deny at the same time; to believe and disbelieve at the same time; to hope and to despair at the same time; to possess and to be possessed at the same time; etc. — and this is all within the same individual.”

“The contradictions of these states keep human life in a constant tension and uncertainty. This state is considered to be a normal state of human life and a presumed source of inspiration and creativity. As a result, whatever humans create and are inspired to do has very little in common with the true inspiration and creativity.”

“Human products, considered to be the pinnacles of creative efforts, such as, for example, art, music and science, are very feeble imitations of true creativity and inspiration. Thus, on the level of human life, creativity is turned into imitation of its efforts, and inspiration into very vague, barely readable facsimiles of its original.”

“The problem with humans and their human life, from the standpoint of creativity and inspiration, is that they are so isolated and separated from anyone and anything else in Creation but their own likes on their own planet that they have no comparison of what they do with any other state or condition of creativity and inspiration in the rest of Creation. Humans have no proper feedback from the rest of Creation on what they are doing and how it compares to all others in Creation. The feedback is only within their own system as compared to the efforts of two different individuals. A feedback of this nature cannot be considered a true feedback because it does not give one an idea how one stands in comparison with someone or something totally different than what humans on planet Zero can offer.”

(10)

“The integral factors of life are its various components. These can be conceived as a summary of all structural building blocks, content and dynamics of life. Thus, the major components of life on the most within level are all ideas of love and wisdom, all ideas of creativity and inspiration, and all ideas of life itself subsumed under the self-awareness of ‘I am’ as the most fundamental component of life. These components are formed in the sentient mind of the spirit as a condition of its state and process. No state and process can exist without formation of these ideas. This is an immanent condition of the spirit’s being and existence. From it all life processes derive.”

“On the interior level these components include all forms of mental processes subsumed under the name of thought processes, reasoning, logic, rationality, emotivity, will, intention and good and truth. These components form mental life or soul of life. Through and by them life perceives and experiences itself.”

“On the exterior level of life the components of life include concrete acts, behaviors, reactions, responses and feedback. In them life is fully actualized and realized.”

“From the standpoint of non-sentient life its components are reduced to instincts and genetic

codes that allow them to be and to exist without awareness of self-existence and self-being.”

“From the standpoint of dead life of the negative state its components comprise everything which is opposite to the components of the true life.”

“From the standpoint of human life again you have the contradictory mixture of all the above in a distorted, perverted, falsified and mutilated condition. As mentioned before, human life lacks any conceptualization of the starting point of any life. Because it has no direct awareness of how and why life began in general and human life in particular, it is grossly limited in its ability of defining and distinguishing its own components.”

“Having no experiential basis for discerning any other sentient life forms, humans are referred to their own surmises, opinions, hypotheses, scientific theories and guesswork which are all fundamentally wrong. They claim that human life is derived either from some kind of God, who is conceptualized in a totally inappropriate manner, or from some kind of a cosmic stew which, by some kind of unpredictable chance, combined its components and elements in such a manner as to give an impetus for the beginning of life which, in the process of its evolution, culminated in an appearance of human life.”

“Now, here is the answer to the question of what life is like if it is derived conceptually from this hypothetical dead stew or from some imaginary pseudo-god who has no bearing in reality, that is, from the false God and false or distorted spiritual principles. This is what human life is all about. In being an illustrative example of this answer, human life provides an invaluable learning for the entire Creation which resides within the true life of The Absolute Life of The Absolute Spirit of The Lord Jesus Christ.”

(11)

“Besides the internal aspects of life, as illustrated above, there are also external factors of life. Life likes to take its form. Through its form life can be concretely discerned, perceived and experienced also from outside or from without.”

“It is obvious that in this connotation life can be conceptualized both as a subjective state and as a phenomenon observable from the outside. There is a carrier of life and there is an experiencer of life. An experiencer of life is its subject. A carrier of life is its object.”

“This is a correspondence to the general formal structure of life which is manifested, as you remember, in its three aspects: The most within, interior and exterior. These three aspects of life can be conceptualized from both the experiencer of life and the carrier of life. The experiencer of life is experiencing it in its three modes: as an internal or most within state, as an interior process and as an exterior manifestation. In all three cases of this experiencing, this is an internal or subjective experience.”

“On the other hand, the carrier of life, being its own object, observes life as if being outside of it. Thus, it distinguishes itself from experiencing life within itself and observing that life outside itself.”

“In order for such an observation to be feasible, in the spirit of life an idea of a form for life’s manifestation is conceived. This form has for its purpose not only to become an object of observation but also, most importantly, a medium of a concrete, tangible sharing of its states and processes. Simply stated, in the external form, life becomes touchable. In order to be touched, felt and observed externally, a form of life must be equipped with certain sensory organs of perception, sensation, reception and communication. These organs, in all their modes, become the external factors of life. They can be of spiritual nature, of mental nature

or of the physical or bodily nature. This arrangement corresponds to the requirements of the spiritual world, the intermediate world and the natural world.”

“As you remember, each world comprises its own inner, interior and exterior state. Each has its own very specific organs of perception, sensation, reception and communication, congruent to the nature of its world. These organs enable everyone to experience and to share life at all levels of its manifestation. They are built from the ideas of conception of life for the purpose of its experiencing and sharing.”

“The spirit, in this case The Absolute Spirit of Life, generates an idea of purpose of life. It establishes this purpose as sharing and reciprocating in wisdom its love and everything it has. From this idea, another idea is generated which defines the various modes of sharing and reciprocating. The idea of these modes produces the necessary organs, tools and means by which all this is accomplished at all levels and aspects of life.”

“On a non-sentient level of life, these organs are limited to the external degree. Nothing of the inner nature is sensible to them and a very limited amount of the interior level is manifested in them.”

“On the level of dead life of the negative state, all these organs were restructured in such a manner as to perceive, sense, receive and communicate only dead life without any ability to see or to experience anything else.”

“On the level of human life in particular, you have a forceful combination of some aspects of the true life’s organs, non-sentient life’s organs and dead life’s organs. This unusual combination gives human life a peculiar set of sensory organs that completely and totally distort, pervert and mutilate all proper perception, sensation, reception and communication on all levels of life. In fact, with human sensory organs the situation was carefully designed to give humans only a distorted view of life in all its aspects.”

“As you know, in most instances, humans are able to perceive only their own external physical world and functions of their bodies. They are able, to a limited degree, to experience their own state of mind and emotions. However, because of genetically altered sensory organs, even the perception of their own physical environment, as well as the function of their own bodies and mind, does not correspond to the true reality. In fact, what humans think or feel they perceive, sense and receive, in reality, is not what they think it is. Their perception of the world is not the same as the world really is. It is grossly distorted.”

“This situation gives human life an entirely different perspective. Having no other mode or source of information but only such distorting sensory organs, humans make conclusions about life in general and human life in particular that reflect very little reality of life. Yet, they are not aware that all external aspects of their life, as well as internals, were purposefully altered, cross-wired or improperly rewired so as to make such a strange phenomenon as human life possible.”

(12)

“There is another external factor of life which can be considered an external of the external. This factor can be conceptualized as environment of life. The concept of environment stems from the spirit’s idea of various environments into which the external form of life, with its internal and interior content, structure, dynamics and all components, can be placed.”

“As you remember, there is an Absolute Spirit — The Lord Jesus Christ — Who is Life in and by Himself/Herself. From The Absolute Spirit of life all life emanates and generates.”

“In order for this Life to fulfill its function and purpose, recipients of this life are created who become carriers of various elements of this Life. Since life proceeds from the most within, through the intermediate state to the without, in the without it appears apart from its source. Only by this appearance can a proximity to its Source be established and communication begin. The word ‘proximity’ postulates an imaginary distance between two points which are in a state of continuous communication. The Absolute Point of Life sends and the relative point in distance receives and reciprocates what it receives by giving a feedback to the Starting Point.”

“In order to have a point of reception in this needed proximity, a very specific environment is created for it in which the relative point perceives itself as a free and independent agent of reception and reciprocation of life with its own environment. This environment can be conceived as a base or a matrix on which life is imparted from The Sender.”

“Once such an environment is created, from it elements are taken and fused with the ideas of the external form for life’s expression and impression. Thus, you get a very specific body of the spirit’s and soul’s life which is accommodated to the external structure of that environment. The environment is equipped with certain physical, cosmic, magnetic, electric, chemical, gravitational and similar strong and weak forces and states conducive to the maintenance of the life’s external form — body — in order for that body to be an effective sensor, perceptor, conductor and reciprocator of the received life.”

“Each specific structure of the unique spirit and its life requires a specific environment and base or matrix for it to be fully realized and actualized.”

“There are as many environments and matrixes of life as there are unique families of spirits with their unique souls and forms of manifestation. Because in their case the environments are accommodated to their needs, the spirits fully control these environments, adjusting them as needed, when needed and if needed. This is a normal way of interaction between the environment and the life of the spirits projected into it. This is the arrangement of the true life.”

“The non-sentient life forms can be considered an integral part of such environments. Their primary purpose is to provide specific components of that environment which are needed for the proper manifestation and function of the sentient life. This is accomplished in the form of maintaining the balance and proper ecology of each specific environment. The specificity of that environment determines the specificity of the non-sentient life forms which will appear in that environment as a correspondence to the specificity of unique spirits which will occupy that environment.”

“The dead life of the negative state produces its own negative environment with its own negative non-sentient life forms conducive to their own purpose of destruction of the true life. The environment of the dead life is poisonous to anything from the true life, just as the environment of the true life is deadly to the dead life. They do not mix, and they send and receive on totally different waves. The waves of the dead life broadcast in the opposite direction from the waves of the true life and they never meet except in the neutral zone of planet Zero.”

“The matrix or base of dead life of the negative state consists of all particles, chemicals or whatever it has which derives from the rejected ideas of the true life to deny its Absolute Source — The Lord Jesus Christ. So, the dead life of the negative state consists of fall out and waste rejected in the positive state of the true life. The environment, base and matrix of

human life is an outrageous and impossible mixture of the true life, the dead life and the non-sentient life.”

“In order for such a devastating life to take hold, it was necessary to produce for it a very special environment, the most uncomfortable and unusual body with the most feeble matrix that bears the imprint of human life. As you know, human life in its body is based on what scientists call carbon-oxygen-protein matrix. This combination is required in order for human life to be manifested at all. No other physical environment is able to sustain the human body alive. Contrary to the human scientists’ belief, this physical matrix of life is the least suitable environment for any life. No other form of life is able to take hold in it.”

“But because humans have no direct experience of any other life except their own and their non-sentient forms, as well as only of their own environment, which carries life the way they know it, experience it and perceive it, they conclude that no other base or matrix of life exists.”

“Let it be known now that the environment of human life and the forms of its manifestation — the human body — as well as non-sentient life forms that accompany human life, are deadly and unbearable to any other life. Their life environment is not suitable for anything but to sustain, on a very short basis, the abomination of the contradictory mixture of artificially fabricated life called human life.”

“As you see, human life is an artifact that has no basis in the reality of true life in its pure condition. This artifact functions as a distortion and grossly hideous caricature of the true life.”

“This is one of the primary reasons why The Lord Jesus Christ stated during His/Her life on your planet, ‘...he who hates his life in this world will keep it for eternal life’ (John 12:25). ‘To hate his life in this world’ signifies to reject it as a true life. Nothing lovable exists about life in this world. By doing that, one establishes a favorable condition for keeping an infinitesimally small amount of the true life that human life has from the above-mentioned mixture. From that tiny amount, one acquires the fullness of the true life after one departs this human life. This is signified here by the words ‘will keep it for eternal life.’”

“That human life’s environment and body and its non-sentient accompaniments are the most unsuitable conditions for life is reflected in the fact that humans are not able to survive in it for more than a few decades. As you remember, in the true life’s various environments, sentient entities can live for eons or to eternity if they choose to stay in the same environment. So can dead sentient entities live for eons in their dead environment without any difficulties as long as the negative state is permitted to be and to exist.”

“As you see, the situation with human life is entirely different in a negative sense. Nowhere else and with no one else does such a situation exist. This is a good vivid illustration of the answer to the question formulated many times above.”

(13)

“As mentioned previously, one of the major purposes of life’s being and existence is to share and reciprocate that life from the position of love and wisdom through various means and modes. Some internal and external factors of life were described above by which and through which this sharing and reciprocating takes place.”

“Because this is the major purpose of life, life itself and its Absolute and relative sources are structured, built and formatted in such a manner as to be able to fully and completely accomplish this goal of sharing and reciprocating. This is the fulfillment of the very nature of

life and its spirit.”

“The simple reason why the purpose of life is to share and reciprocate is that such is the nature of the content, structure, dynamics and all components of life. Life cannot be and exist without this purpose.”

“So, in order for this purpose to be fully actualized and realized, the spirit of life and its life are equipped with a special mode of relating, sending, giving, sharing, receiving, reciprocating and communicating on all levels of their being and existence — all-inclusively. This mode is known under the name of sexuality.”

“In this respect, sexuality can be conceived as an all-inclusive means of life’s sharing and reciprocating that occurs simultaneously on all levels of life and in all its aspects — inner-spiritual, interior-mental and exterior-physical.”

“The primary purpose of sexuality is to be a means of a total exchange of the states and processes of one unique carrier of life with another unique carrier of life of the opposite gender.”

“In an absolute sense, sexuality is an Absolute Means of The Absolute Spirit of Absolute Life — The Lord Jesus Christ — to exchange, for the purpose of sharing and reciprocating, the entire content of love, affection, wisdom, truth and all sensations of true life, and to give birth to new creative ideas which will initiate further carriers of sentient life that so far have not been in being and existence. In this way, more and more opportunities are provided for sharing and reciprocating, always with new elements of life not experienced before. This is done for continuous enrichment and enhancement of life itself.”

“The creative effort of The Absolute and relative spirits culminate in this all-inclusive mode of life.”

“In the innermost spiritual level of life sexuality is manifested in the most pleasurable, orgasmic experience of producing new ideas of life which will enable the spirit of life to share itself in the most private, personal and intimate manner.”

“For the spirit there is nothing more pleasurable and delightful than to invent new ideas which will be utilized in creation of someone new and different, with a different and new environment and all its components that need to be provided for that someone with whom a new and different mode of sharing and reciprocating can take place. This process continues to eternity.”

“On the spiritual level of life, the sexual intercourse of life is actualized by a momentary merging of two different spirits of the opposite gender for the purpose of an exchange of their unique ideas. The result of this exchange and sharing is the birth of an entirely new idea of life which is utilized for the endowment of life to a new, hitherto unknown, carrier of life — a sentient entity. The birth of such an idea is the most pleasurable experience of the two temporary-merging spirits and their unique ideas. This is a spiritual base for the orgasmic experience. This is a spiritual connotation of sexuality.”

“On the intermediate level of life, sexuality is manifested as a most pleasurable orgasmic experience of reception and processing, through its mental state and process, of all generated ideas by the two momentarily merged spirits for the purpose of exchange and sharing of their ideas of life.”

“This experience allows the birth of new thoughts, feelings, affections and senses of goodness and truth and a different state of mentality that infinitely differs from anything experienced before. This newly emerging mentality is subsequently imparted on the newly born sentient entity — as a result of this exchange. At the same time, the experience of this newness and difference further enhances and enriches the mentality of the two momentarily merging spirits, adding to it something that has never been conceived and conceptualized before.”

“In the process of spiritual and mental sexual intercourse a special type of energy emanates from those engaged in this process. This energy is utilized by the general life energy for creating new environments, states, conditions, times and places for residence of the newly created sentient entities from this sexual intercourse.”

“Through the general life energy, emanating from The Absolute Source of Life — The Lord Jesus Christ — and all other relative sources — the sentient entities — this special energy is shared with all in Creation. Thus, everyone benefits from this specific, private, intimate and personal experience of the two spirits and souls of the opposite gender engaged in sexual intercourse.”

“In this respect, it is time to reveal that Life energy, continuously emanating from its Absolute Source — The Lord Jesus Christ — is of a purely sexual nature. After all, life is for sharing, giving, receiving, reciprocating and exchanging. In whatever form, state, condition or process this sharing and exchanging takes place, in its ultimate sense it is always of a sexual nature.”

“Of course, you have totally disregarded this understanding and conceptualization of sexuality which has nothing in common with the way it is conceived and practiced by humans. Nothing whatsoever of human conceptualization and understanding of sexuality is contained in the true sexuality.”

“Simply stated, in the spiritual and mental connotation of true sexuality, sexuality is an avenue through which life energy continuously flows for the purpose of sharing, reciprocating and exchanging. It is a creative energy of the spirit of life from which sentient entities are created in order to endow them with a unique life in the image and likeness of The Absolute Source of Life with whom all this exchange can become reality. Such an act is the most pleasurable experience for The Absolute Creative Spirit. This pleasure is the source of experiencing an orgasm — a tremendous indescribable delight of accomplishing this act.”

“This is the reason why life energy, continuously emanating from its Absolute Source — The Lord Jesus Christ — is of a purely sexual nature.”

“On the exterior level of life, sexuality is manifested as a most pleasurable and orgasmic concrete sensation of all spiritual and mental activities that are being exchanged in the form of bodily and physical reactions which unify the experience in one unique whole. The spiritual and mental exchange is conveyed through the sensory and sensual experience of this exchange which produces a new idea of form of manifestation. This idea is subsequently utilized into the building of a body — external form — for the newly born sentient entity through which and by which that sentient entity will manifest its life for the purpose of its own sharing and reciprocating.”

“Now, in the totality of the above-described concepts, true sexuality can be conceived. All other forms and means of sexual intercourse basically derive from this conceptualization.”

“On the level of non-sentient life, sexuality is limited to the sole purpose of procreation of

species and maintenance of life flow at the most external level. The limitation of this process is regulated by the structural and instinctual drive that allows plants and animals to have only seasonal needs for sexual acts.”

“On the level of the dead life of the negative state, the act of sexual intercourse is for the sole purpose of production and implementation of the ideas of evils and falsities which would allow the perpetuation of this dead life, if possible, to eternity. Because the purpose here is evil and false, all deviant sexual behaviors stem from its implementation. After all, the purpose here must be to oppose the purpose of sexuality in the positive state of life.”

“On the level of human life, the concept and practice of sexuality is the most peculiar, distorted, perverted and abnormal. As everything else, human sexuality is a distorted, rewired, falsified and deviant combination of the sexuality of true life, non-sentient life and dead life of the negative state. Nowhere else in Creation does such a conceptualization, understanding and practice of sexuality exist. In humans, sexuality takes its most aberrant and pathological form.”

“Because of the structural genetic changes, human sexuality, in most instances, has very little spiritual and mental connotation. In this respect, it resembles a more non-sentient life’s mode of sexuality, except that it has the same continuous, and not seasonal, pattern as the true life and dead life have. The sexual organs of humans are in the most unnatural place and their anatomical structure is the least suitable for conveyance and exchange of unique ideas of life between a male and a female. Human sexual intercourse takes place in total separation and isolation of each sexual participant. No other than verbal and external conveyance of what is being experienced within each partner during the sexual act is possible.”

“This mode of exchange does not provide any deeper response that would be able to penetrate the entire spirit, soul and body. It is limited to a superficial physical experience of touch which excites bodily hormones, enabling sexual intercourse to take place.”

“Thus, humans are totally deprived of any true experience of how sexual intercourse is and what it can accomplish. This situation is insurmountably complicated by the tremendously ridiculous and foolish restrictions, taboos, inhibitions, prescriptions and laws that regulate human sexuality. Because of this, sexuality became the most sensitive and problematical issue of human life. Instead of being a blessing, delight and pleasure, as it was meant to be, human sexuality became a curse, a shame, an embarrassment, a problem, a source of manipulation and a sinful act, unless practiced by prescribed rules of human society, laws and religion.”

“This situation with human life and its sexuality illustrates how sexuality should never be conceived, understood, conceptualized and practiced.”

“For more on the mystery of sexuality in general and human sexuality in particular, see Chapter Twenty of this book.”

(14)

“In the totality of life’s manifestation, as it flows out of its spirit, there are two distinctly different trends that give life a different meaning, sense, perception and quality.”

“Everything subsumed under the terms of love, goodness, affection, will, intuition, creativity, feeling, warmth and similar factors of life are conceived as feminine principles and contents of life.”

“Everything subsumed under the terms of wisdom, truth, reason, logic, rationality, thoughts and similar factors of life are conceived as masculine principles and contents of life.”

“In The Absolute State of The Absolute Life of The Absolute Spirit, these two principles are in the process of continuous Absolute Unity, oneness and harmony. As they emanate from their absolute state, they impart on all aspects and forms of life’s manifestation a certain specific quality which influences how their interaction and relatedness is to be realized.”

“In a higher sense, the feminine principle of life constitutes its essence, while the masculine principle its substance.”

“In actuality, continuous interaction and relationship of essence and substance within The Spirit of Life constitutes life itself from which life springs and emanates.”

“In the process of interaction of feminine and masculine principles, for the purpose of producing and sustaining life, a special energy is created that becomes a means through which all aspects of femininity and masculinity conjoin themselves together in a kind of a spiritual marriage. This means was described in the preceding point under the term of sexuality.”

“The essence of life or femininity is a continuous state that, by its very nature, needs to share and to be shared. The substance of life or masculinity is in a continuous process that, by its very nature, provides the most suitable means for such a meaningful sharing of life. Masculinity is the eyes of femininity through which life is evaluated and appreciated. Femininity is a creative power of masculinity by which life is made possible. In their integral oneness they constitute one spirit of life.”

“In this respect, ***spirit can be defined as an integral oneness of all feminine and masculine principles for the purpose of originating, emanating, maintaining and sustaining life in all its forms and manifestations.***”

“The process of integration is the very sexual process. It produces a state of immense delight, joy and pleasure of being unified to one another.”

“Thus, all sexual energies produced by such a conjunction and unification are always directed from feminine to masculine principles and from masculine to feminine principles. In the reciprocal experience of this mutual conjunction the orgasm is born. The orgasm is an intense state of such a conjunction which produces, in its spirit, a tremendous desire to share this blissful state with someone else. From this desire all life energies are directed toward the actualization and realization of this desire. As a result of this direction, Creation is created and imparts the image and likeness of its Creator. Thus, every life form in Creation contains within itself, to some degree or other, feminine and masculine principles.”

“Without containment of both principles simultaneously within each individual carrier of life, no life can be sustained. After all, life is an integral oneness of all feminine and masculine principles. Because of this important factor, whoever and whatever is alive is alive by this unified integral presence. That presence constitutes one’s sexuality. One feels and experiences oneself as a sexual being.”

“In order to illustrate the importance of this fact, some sentient entities appear in their external forms as male or female. Within each male and female both principles of femininity and masculinity are contained but one is emphasized over the other by a choice to

demonstrate an external yearning for their merger into an integrated totality. Thus, by their own nature, both male and female have an intense sexual attraction and desire for one another in order to reaffirm the purpose of their life — ultimate exchange of all principles of life from all perspectives, giving birth to new ideas which are subsequently utilized for the creation of new life forms.”

“On the level of non-sentient life, the principles of masculinity and femininity are manifested in the form of instincts to preserve the species so that life in that form is not extinguished.”

“On the level of the dead life of the negative state, these principles function in the opposite sense. Their purpose is to destroy the need for unification and integration and keep them separate so that no signs of the true life can take hold within the sphere of the dead life. In order for this separation to be accomplished, the genetic restructuring of feminine and masculine genes took place and was imparted on all activators and perpetuators of the negative state so that the dead life could come to its fruition.”

“In human life the principles of masculinity and femininity are totally separated not only in the external form, as it appears in male and female, but also through human’s entire mind. This separation is reflected in the way male and female are conceptualized within their respective societies. One principle is put over the other as though one is more valuable and needed than the other. Moreover, human conceptualization of the nature and purpose of femininity and masculinity is so purposefully distorted and perverted that nothing of the true understanding of their nature remains in it. Not only that, but, by combining all contradictory aspects of various life forms in the process of fabricating humans, the true nature of femininity and masculinity within humans has no relevance whatsoever to what true masculinity and femininity are.”

(15)

“Inherent in the nature of life itself is its usefulness. The principle, formulated many times before, is that nothing exists without some purpose. Everything in being and existence needs to be not only validated but also justified. The justification of any being and existence is by the use it serves or performs.”

“Thus, even life itself must be justified by its usefulness. Is life useful? What kind of use does it serve? In The Absolute State of The Absolute Spirit of The Absolute Life — The Lord Jesus Christ — this usefulness is manifested in Its creative process. If one creates for the purpose of sharing and reciprocating, for the sake of principle, one does something useful for everyone to enjoy and from which everyone can benefit. Because the creative process is immanent to life itself, its usefulness is determined by its very nature. Life, because it is life, is useful.”

“The usefulness of all other carriers of life is determined by the extent they utilize that life for their own creative effort for the purpose of sharing and reciprocating for the sake of principle itself. The more they utilize their life in them for this purpose, the more useful they are and the greater degree of justification their living has.”

“The usefulness of the non-sentient life is derived from the services it renders in keeping proper balance and ecology of the environment and providing a source of energy for the bodies of sentient entities.”

“The usefulness of the dead life of the negative state can be seen in the fact that it has no use. The illustration of non-useful life is useful for the learning of what the real use is. By this act, the dead life temporarily justifies its being and existence.”

“The usefulness of human life is determined by the fact that it illustrates to the entire Creation of what not to choose and how not to live. In this illustration is its justification.”

(16)

“In The Gospel According to John, Chapter 11, verse 25 it is written: “Jesus said to her, “I am the resurrection and the life...”

“This statement brings into focus a totally different understanding of what life is all about. So far, life was described structurally, as a state and process of The Absolute Spirit of The Absolute Life — The Lord Jesus Christ — and how it functions within the carriers of that life or within all those who are endowed by that life.”

“In the connotation of the above statement, there is another approach toward understanding life. This approach does not refer to the structure, dynamics, content and components of life, by which life in general is described and comprehended, but by the spiritual quality of life. Thus, you have here life as such and living that life.”

“The question is how life is being lived. In other words, the question is what is the quality of the lived life? This is a spiritual consideration from the standpoint of its ethical and moral application. It is not enough to have life but that life must be lived in some manner and way.”

“The manner and way any life is lived determines if one is truly alive and living. As you see, two words are being used here — ‘alive’ and ‘living.’ Most linguists use these words interchangeably, as synonyms. However, in the connotation used here the word ‘alive’ means to be endowed with life; this is the state of life. One has life. While the word ‘living’ means the process of life or how that life is being lived.”

“As you remember, everyone in the negative state believes that they are fully alive and living. But, from the standpoint of the true life, their life is a dead life. Thus, their life is not a true life.”

“The perception of one’s own living and being alive does not spiritually mean that this is a fact. One can consider, feel and think oneself being alive, yet, one, in fact, can be dead.”

“As you see, the word ‘dead,’ in this connotation, is not used in the same meaning and content as it is with humans on your planet. To be dead for them is equated with complete cessation of all functions of their bodies and all bodily organs. From the standpoint of the true life, this is not a true death. In The Holy Bible this kind of death is called the first death. The first death is a blessing in disguise because it frees one from limitations and restrictions of human types of distorted, perverted, unnatural, abnormal, defective and insane life. One is resurrected from this kind of life or death, respectively, and one enters either the true life or the real dead life (whatever the choice may be). A choice to enter the true life prevents one from the influence of the second death which has no power over the true life, as is obvious from Revelation 20:6.”

“From this illustration it is obvious that aliveness and living is not determined by the factor of having life but by the quality of living the life and by the attitude one has toward the true source of life.”

“In actuality, the quality of living the life is always determined by the type of attitude one has toward the true source of life. First of all, does one acknowledge that there is an Absolute Source of life from which one’s life originates? And if one does, what is one’s attitude toward

that Source? What kind of relationship has one with that Source?”

“The acknowledgment of being and existence of that Source in itself and by itself is not sufficient to validate one’s aliveness and living. This is only a first step. The important spiritual principle here is that, as mentioned many times before, the aliveness and living can be validated only by the type of attitude, thoughts, feelings, behavior, etc., one has toward the Source of one’s life.”

“Because The Lord Jesus Christ states that He/She is life and that He/ She has life in and by Himself/Herself, it is the attitude toward The Lord Jesus Christ specifically which determines whether one is truly alive and living. No other factor is able to validate this fact.”

“Now, notice, please, the specificity of this statement: The Lord Jesus Christ is the true life. Acceptance of this fact and structuring the living of one’s life in accordance with this acceptance and in accordance with what is being taught by The Lord Jesus Christ makes one alive and truly living. The specificity of this statement is very obvious in naming The Lord Jesus Christ as the only Source of this fact and not some other God, Father, Son, Holy Spirit, Buddha, Krishna, Jehovah, Allah, etc.”

“There is no other God but The Lord Jesus Christ who can validate and make one alive and living.”

“From this statement it is obvious that a worshiper of any other God but The Lord Jesus Christ, whatever name is used, cannot be truly alive and living. This will be a very shattering and unpleasant statement for all those who worship someone else and not The Lord Jesus Christ.”

“Because The Lord Jesus Christ is not only The Life but also The Resurrection, He/She is able to bring to the true aliveness and living all those who worship other Gods, under any other names, who, after learning this indisputable fact, show a desire to recede from their falsified and distorted belief and accept The Lord Jesus Christ as the only One God Indivisible, The Most High, Who is the only true Source of all true life.”

“This statement applies also to most Christians because they do not accept the true Lord Jesus Christ, but only a Son of God under the name of Jesus or Christ or Jesus the Christ or Jesus Christ as a second person in one Godhead. Such a conceptualization of The Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ is a spiritual abomination which makes all its believers totally spiritually dead. Denial and rejection of this fact constitutes the pseudo-life or dead life of the negative state — the entire Zone of Displacement and all the Hells.”

“Persistent and continuous denial and rejection of this fact, even after The Second Coming of The Lord Jesus Christ, when He/She personally reveals Himself/Herself to all in the dead life and on your planet (as described in Chapter Four of this book), constitutes the second death from which no resurrection is possible. In this case, whatever life energies are present in such individuals will be withdrawn from them and they will turn into nothingness.”

“At the point of finalization of this cycle of time, without The Lord Jesus Christ, Who is the only life and the only resurrection, they truly become nothing in an ultimate sense of this word and not only spiritually.”

“Thus, spiritually, it is immoral and unethical to reject or to deny The True Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ. Anyone who does that lives an immoral and unethical life. By such an attitude, one nullifies one’s being and existence or one’s aliveness and living. As you see, aliveness

refers to the being and living to the existence.”

“On the level of non-sentient life, which totally depends on the being and existence of sentient minds, its quality and form depends on a degree of true aliveness and living of those minds. Thus, the acknowledgment and acceptance of The Lord Jesus Christ as the only Source of the true life with all consequences of such an act, generates non-sentient life forms of the most pleasant, beautiful, peaceful, delightful and useful nature. On the other hand, denial and rejection of The Lord Jesus Christ as the only Source of the true life, produces non-sentient life forms of the most vicious, fearsome, destructive, ugly, aggressive, violent, repulsive and poisonous nature.”

“As you see, without The Lord Jesus Christ there is only destruction and degradation of life and living. This is what happens in the dead life of the negative state.”

“On the level of human life, again, you have an abnormal and pathological combination of all the above but in a perverted, distorted and falsified manner. You have there a small minority that accepts The Lord Jesus Christ in a manner which is true and proper. These humans, being that they live a human life of this nature, are in the first death. Actually, they are very much alive and living within. Human life on your planet is considered to be the first death. On the other hand, as mentioned at the beginning of this Chapter, humans are neither dead nor alive. This is the reason their condition is called the first death. They will be resurrected by The Lord Jesus Christ (no one else can do that) from the first death either into the true life or into the second death. Humans who accepted The True Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ and lived in accordance with this acceptance, will be resurrected into the true life.”

“Then you have those on your planet who either believe in some other gods or worship the wrong Jesus or Christ or The Lord or Jesus Christ or The Lord Jesus Christ as a second person of Godhead. These humans are, in fact, the ones who are neither dead nor alive and living. This is the vast majority of humans on your planet.”

“Then you have a third category of humans who are from the dead life of the Hells. They are truly dead and nothing of true life and living is contained within them. Again, their number is very vast and continuously increasing.”

“The presence of all three manifestations of life (as mentioned just above) determines the nature of your non-sentient life. The proportion of the number of humans in each category determines the number of positive or negative non-sentient life forms, respectively, on your planet.”

“Thus, on your planet you have representations of the positive nonsentient life forms and representations of the negative life forms. The negative representations are vastly prevailing. However, you have to understand that on your planet, being that everything on it is in a distorted, perverted and falsified condition, even the positive non-sentient life forms are contaminated by that condition and they do not look like anything that appears in the positive state of the true life.”

“Similarly, as humans who are the agents of the positive state (those who profess and accept the true nature of the positive state of the true life) and who are residing in the bodies formed from the elements of dead life, are influenced by the nature of that structure; so are the so-called positive non-sentient life forms influenced by this negative arrangement.”

“The definition of anything positive on your planet can be conceived only in relationship to the obviously negative rest. Because of a total separation and isolation of humans from the rest

of Creation and its multiverse, they have no way of knowing and understanding what pure positive is or appears like. Therefore, their positive, in most instances, has very little resemblance to the truly positive.”

“However, because humans are deprived of having such true knowledge, their positive is accepted by The Lord Jesus Christ as such and after the resurrection, humans of this nature are freed from their ‘positive,’ purified from all negative, which clung to them from being on planet Zero, and are imparted a true positive state. In view of this fact, it is obvious how vital, crucial and fundamentally important it is to acquire proper knowledge and understanding of The Lord Jesus Christ in order to be alive and living.”

(17)

“The Absolute Life of The Lord Jesus Christ penetrates the entire being and existence, giving, sustaining, maintaining and regulating life in all its forms, conditions, states, processes and manifestations. This is also true regarding the dead life of the negative state and the human life. As you remember, one of the most mysterious acts of The Most High was His/Her entrance into the negative state of all the Hells via your planet. On your planet Jesus Christ acquired a type of human body which made it possible for Him/Her to interact with the negative state and put it under His/Her control.”

“To repeat here again: By a special process, that body was fused into The Most High and The Most High became the fullness of The Lord Jesus Christ. As The Lord Jesus Christ, through the original elements of the Zone of Displacement, He/She penetrates everyone and everything also on your planet and in all the Hells, as well as in the entire Zone of Displacement.”

“Thus, as revealed in the Second Chapter of this book, the very Nature of The God Lord Most High underwent profound changes. A revolutionary New Nature was established by Him/Her, making Him/ Her no other but The Lord Jesus Christ.”

“This situation requires a crucial modification of the entire being and existence for the purpose of accommodation of everyone to this change. From now on, the aliveness and living of everyone will be determined by what kind of attitude and stance one will have to this New Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ.”

“In order to be alive and living, one needs to acknowledge and to accept the following facts:”

“a. The Most High God made His/Her Divine Human as Jesus Christ on your planet in the manner described in Chapter Two. Thus, Jesus Christ was a true God.”

“b. Jesus Christ made His/Her Human Divine and took His/Her human body with Him/Her after departing from your planet. In the interim state, between the crucifixion and resurrection, He/She entered all the Hells and accomplished there one of the most important missions, putting the entire negative state under His/Her control.”

“c. In the process of time and non-time, and in space and non-space, Jesus Christ was reunited to The Most High Lord God and fused His/Her human body into the totality of The Absolute Nature of God. Thus, The Most High Lord God became to eternity The Lord Jesus Christ.”

“d. By this crucial act The First Coming of Jesus Christ was completed and

The Second Coming of The Lord Jesus Christ has begun."

"On acknowledgment and acceptance of these basic four principles one's aliveness and living will depend. Whoever fully accepts them, will be alive and living. Whoever rejects or denies them will become dead and non-living. Again, to repeat, it is immoral and unethical to reject or deny these facts."

"In accordance with these factors, the modification of life in all its aspects and at all its levels, including non-sentient life, dead life of the negative state and human life, will take place. The more acceptance, the more positive modification; the less acceptance, the more negative modification."

(18)

"The four factors in establishing the fact of aliveness and living also play the most crucial role in determining the various lifestyles of life and living."

"The mode of lifestyle allows the life and living to be what they really are. The ethical and moral aspects of life and living, from the spiritual standpoint, are manifested in the lifestyle one practices."

"Because one lives and is alive by one's attitude toward The Lord Jesus Christ, whatever that attitude may be, it influences his/her likes, loves, attractions, tendencies, behaviors, views, opinions, ideas, concepts and everything that one has, clings to and seeks out."

"The interesting point here to realize is that The Absolute Being and Existence of The Lord Jesus Christ makes it possible for any life, including the dead life of the negative state and human life, to be and to exist. After all, without The Lord Jesus Christ, no life is conceivable. Therefore, life in general is possible only because of The Absolute Life of The Lord Jesus Christ. Even the denial and rejection of The Lord Jesus Christ makes the dead life of the negative state possible. To deny and to reject is an active state. The being and existence of The Lord Jesus Christ makes it very possible to deny and reject it. Without His/Her Being and Existence, nothing would be and exist to deny and to reject. Thus, no denial and rejection would exist either. From this you can see how everything depends on the being and existence of The Lord Jesus Christ."

"However, the quality of one's lifestyle depends solely on the personal, private and intimate attitude one has toward The New Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ, as reflected in the four factors described in point 17."

"In the positive state of life, everyone fully accepts The New Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ with elation and great pleasure. It gives them an opportunity to acquire and to share something totally different, that has not been in being and existence before. Because of the full acceptance of The New Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ, their lifestyle reflects fully that nature. It is founded on principles of love and wisdom, good and truth, giving and receiving, sharing and reciprocating and behaving, acting, thinking, feeling, willing, intending, etc., for the sake of all spiritual principles themselves."

"It is a life of joy, delight, pleasure, contentment, satisfaction, creativity, productivity, happiness and great usefulness for the sake of all and, mainly, for the sake of The Lord Jesus Christ. It is life free of problems and any adverse experiences. Nothing of the negative state can enter such a life, as nothing of the negative state can be in The Lord Jesus Christ. Whoever reflects The Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ reflects also everything that is contained in that Nature."

"In the negative state of the dead life, founded on the principles of rejection and denial of The New Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ, as well as His/Her former Nature, the lifestyle is the exact opposite of that which is in the life of the positive state. If you deny or reject the true New Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ, you also deny and reject everything which is contained in that Nature. Thus, your lifestyle will be something which is not contained in that Nature."

"Instead of love, you will have hate and self-love; instead of wisdom, you will have foolishness; instead of truth, you will have falsities; instead of joy, delight and pleasure, you will have misery, lust and insanity, seeking out of the lowest sensual 'pleasures;' instead of doing things for the sake of principles, you will do things for the sake of your own profits without any regard for anyone or anything else, etc."

"This is a definition of the dead life. It is life of true immorality, unethical conduct and spiritual abomination. Therefore, it is dead and no one there is alive and living."

"The lifestyle of human life reflects the distortions, perversions and falsifications of both the true life and the dead life. In a sense, to a certain degree, human life is worse than even the dead life because, by a forceful combination of contradictory elements, artificially held together by a special genetic and spiritual code, human life has no stability, no permanency and no certainty. No one knows for sure anything about anything. Being in such an unnatural, contradictory and impossible state, human life produces numerous contradicting, irreconcilable views, opinions, philosophies, religions, attitudes, lifestyles, etc., all claiming to be the only right and godly ones."

"This situation develops a general human lifestyle characterized by tensions, pressures, misery, wars, crimes, aggression, terrorism and whatever else you have in such an abundance on your planet. As you see, human life contains within itself nothing truly positive and good deriving from the true New Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ."

"Now, recently on your planet, as well as in the entire Zone of Displacement, a new, spiritually tremendously dangerous trend appeared which will establish a different lifestyle. You are facing a tremendous number of teachings, workshops, cults, groups and trends, proclaiming that the cure for all ills and problems of human life is in not paying any attention to anything negative but, instead, simply to love. Love everything as it is and all problems will go away. Notice, please, that there is no wisdom in such love. It is a blind love, leading the blind, both ending in a ditch dug out by the negative state, where they are killed or critically wounded."

"All these teachings, movements and trends are of hellish origin, leading humans away from their being aware of the existence of the dead life of the negative state **without removing from them the negative state first**. This is the most cunning way for the preservation of the negative state in human life to its fullest extent, which will lead toward the eventual complete temporary victory of the negative state on your planet."

"You are hereby being advised and given this knowledge that all leaders of such movements, teachings, workshops, trends, cults, workshops, etc., in most instances, are demonic spirits incarnated on your planet for the purpose of bringing the victory of the negative state under the disguise of love and in God's name. Unless these movements fully confirm the four spiritual factors, defined in point 17, and deny and reject any other conceptualization of reality of the true life, you can be assured that they are coming from the Hells and their dead life."

"What is being proclaimed in these 'new age's' various movements, directly and subliminally,

is that you should love yourself the way you are. This means, do not pay attention to your problems because, if you love yourself, they will disappear. But, what is really being implied here is — do not get rid of your problems but love them and you will get well.”

“Well, if you have cancer, for example, please, love your cancer and it will go away. By loving your cancer, the negative state gives it more life, fueling its spread until it will kill you with all your love. Your love of yourself, the way it is being taught by the so-called new age humans, has no wisdom. The true wisdom of that love tells you that you need to get rid of your problems — the negative state — the cancer — first before you can truly begin to love yourself. In getting rid of your problems, you establish and reaffirm love toward yourself. Sometimes, drastic measures are required to do so. Most cancers have to be surgically removed.”

“How can you successfully and effectively remove anything negative — your cancer — if you do not know, are not aware of, or even do not want to know or acknowledge the nature of your problem — cancer? Before a surgeon removes the cancer, he or she must diagnose the cancer first — admit that the negative state exists. After that, it is necessary to determine the nature of that cancer. Following this, a determination is made as to what extent that cancer — the negative state — has spread within your body and how operable it is. Once all these factors are determined, the steps for recovery and cure are defined and implemented. This is a natural course of any process. But movements presently existing conveniently avoid talking about or describing the negative state, considering such an effort as negative in itself. Instead, they talk about love and positive feelings. In actuality, what they are saying to you is love the negative state and feel good about it and you will be received in the dead life of the negative state. They promise you heaven in the Hells, of course, conveniently omitting the word ‘hells.’”

“It is necessary to realize and to accept the fact that, at this point, no teaching or movement exists on your planet and in the entire Zone of Displacement, except for The New Revelation of The Lord Jesus Christ, as reflected in this book and preceding books of The New Revelation, which derive from the true life of the positive state and The True Lord Jesus Christ. Many humans, if not the majority of them, will have tremendous difficulties in accepting this statement. But, of course, in an ultimate sense, you will determine who is who or what is what by the fruits of their work, if not during your life on planet Zero, then definitely after departure from your physical body and entrance into the spiritual world. In other words, their lifestyle and what it produced will be the judge of the truth of this matter.”

“The lifestyle of the non-sentient life depends solely on its structural genetic code and instincts, derived from sentient life, be it of the true life, the human life or the dead life. It is nothing more than a reflection of their respective lifestyles.”

(19)

“As you remember from the previous discussion, life in general has two modes of being and existence. One is a discrete mode and the other is a continuous mode. In a true sense of this word, life cannot be and exist without its carriers who, by their conscious awareness of self-awareness of ‘I am,’ validate or make life possible.”

“The carriers of life cluster in a discrete mode of their being and existence. Within this mode they live their life in a continuous mode, that is, from the least degree of knowledge and manifestation of life within the discrete mode to its fullest degree.”

“Being that all carriers of life are relative to their Absolute Source, that is, to The Lord Jesus Christ, they tend to run out of stimulating factors of life within the mode they live at each

given time or state. Only The Lord Jesus Christ, being The Absolute Originator, Carrier, Emanator and Giver of Life, can never run out of such stimulations because He/She unceasingly creates them from His/Her Absolute Source of all infinite varieties of ideas which He/She continuously generates for that purpose.”

“In order for life to continue to be productive, creative, constructive and useful, as required by The Law of Use, it must be stimulated by new possibilities.”

“In the relative carriers of life — sentient entities — this need is expressed in their urge and desire to move on — once they fulfill their purpose in the state, condition, time and place where they are at any given moment of their life.”

“The moving on to somewhere and something else reflects The Law of Spiritual Progression, described in Chapter Ten of this book.”

“The style of life and the quality of activities in which any carrier of life was engaged during his/her residence within any discrete mode of life and its continuous mode, determines in which direction the moving on will occur.”

“One of the spiritual laws of life, not mentioned so far, requires the thorough evaluation of the quality and content of one’s life within and during each mode of life. This is the **The Law of Reward**. It states,”

“Every sentient carrier of life, by agreeing from his/her own free will and choice to carry and manifest that life, after completion of each tour of his/her freely assumed duty and obligation to life, deserves to be rewarded for his/her endeavors and contributions made within and during each mode of his/her specific being and existence.”

“The reward in general is a new extension of life from The Lord Jesus Christ in some other discrete mode of being existence and its within continuous mode, never ever experienced before; until and as long as the carrier of one’s life in that mode completes one’s purpose and serves one’s use.”

“However, there are specific aspects of this reward. Not only is one granted by The Lord Jesus Christ an extension of one’s life somewhere else but one is also given a new quality and content of that life never ever experienced before.”

“The quality and content of the new life, to be assumed or carried by the carrier of that life, is determined by the quality of contributions one made for the benefit of all for the sake of principle within and during the position one previously occupied in those two modes of life.”

“In the positive state of life, the quality and content of the new life to be carried is always better and superior to anything previously experienced. There is always an improvement in all conditions of the carrier of that life. However, this principle does not imply that the conditions in the previous modes were worse or bad. In the positive state of the true life bad or worse conditions do not exist. All conditions are good and excellent there. But in a progressive mode of the true life, these conditions become continuously better and more excellent. No regression in this state is ever possible.”

“The only possible regression from this mode of life is when someone is requested by The Lord Jesus Christ to incarnate on your planet or enter some region of the Zone of Displacement or any Hell with some specific mission from The Lord Jesus Christ. This is a

voluntary regression to serve a greater degree of use and purpose, helping The Lord Jesus Christ in accomplishing His/Her Grand Plan about the negative state.”

“The fact of incarnation on your planet or entering the Hells is a shocking regression. But this is done not as a negative reward or retribution but as a voluntary assignment. Within the period of this assignment there is always a risk of regression by the fact of either becoming lost in the intricacy and obscurity of the negative state or of becoming a slave of the negative state. These risks are understood and considered before the assignment is assumed and a promise is made to eventually be freed from that condition and be returned to the progressive mode of the positive state of the true life and there to continue at the level which was interrupted by this mission. However, within the positive state’s life *itself*, no regressive trend exists or is even conceivable.”

“The situation is the same in the dead life of the negative state except in an entirely opposite manner. The reward becomes punishment because one’s dead life within and during any mode of dead life’s being and existence is always evil and negative. Such a pseudo-life rewards its carrier with the only things it has — greater degree of evilness and negativity. So, instead of progression, everyone there is ruled by The Law of Regression.”

“You have to understand that reward or punishment systems are ingrained in the structure and nature of life itself. The purpose is stimulation of new ideas of life in a positive sense or discouragement of the continuation of the dead life in the negative state.”

“In a negative sense, if you are being continuously punished for your ‘accomplishments’ in the services of the negative state, you are stimulated to think about your predicament and eventually come to the conclusion that you are not living a true life. Such a conclusion may stir within you a desire to change your status quo. It gives you an opportunity to petition The Lord Jesus Christ, who will appear to you personally and privately, for resurrecting you from your dead life.”

“Because the nature of the negative state is built on the opposites of the positive state’s nature, whatever reward is given to anyone there is turned into a punishment. This is a logical outcome of such a reversal. The situation with human life is different. As mentioned previously, there are three categories of humans presently existing on your planet. The first category is the agents of the positive state. The number of these is relatively very small and it is diminished almost every day. Because they are the agents of the positive state, they are subjects to the laws that govern the life of the positive state.”

“The second category is the agents of the negative state. The number of these is rapidly increasing almost every day. Because they are the agents of the negative state, they are subjects of the laws that govern the dead life of the negative state; unless, of course, during their life on your planet they decide to convert to the positive state. In that case, after their departure from your planet, they are placed in a special condition in The New School where they undergo a very complex process of spiritual, mental and physical restructuring, rebuilding and transformation, receiving a new identity and being placed in the positive state of the true life where they become subjects of the law of spiritual progression.”

“The third category is the slaves of the negative state or humans proper. These are in the greatest majority. During their tour of duty on your planet, they are allowed to determine by their lifestyle and fixed identities which way they want to go and what laws they want to follow. Because such a final decision cannot be made from the position of human life on this planet, it is made after their departure from it.”

“Human life, being in total ignorance and being an impossible combination of all kinds of contradictions, does not allow humans to see or comprehend the real truth or what real life is all about. Therefore, they cannot be judged from the state of their ignorance. Instead, after their physical death, they are put in various conditions in the intermediate world which trigger their preferences and identities, allowing them to make a choice based on true information and knowledge and not on ignorance, guesswork, distortions and uncertainties of human life. The problems with humans are that they do not know the truth. Members of the dead life know the truth but deny and reject it. Members of the true life know the truth and accept and incorporate it in their lives. Only humans have no knowledge of the true reality of any life. Therefore, they must be first decontaminated from this condition and shown alternatives.”

“The reward of human life is based on the fact of how much humans attempted to do their best with what they had for the sake of principle without purposefully hurting, cheating, defrauding or hating anyone, etc. In their case, the only decisive factor in their favor or against them is the intent with which they do whatever they do. The outcome of their activities is not a good or reliable indicator of anything because humans do things from a distorted and perverted understanding of life and its principles. This situation enables many human activities to appear as being good and positive while they are produced with an evil intent. At the same time, many human activities may appear as bad and negative though they were intended for a good purpose. Therefore, the quality of human life and its reward or retribution, respectively, is determined solely by the intent with which humans approach their activities.”

“The intent of humans is taken into consideration after they are through with human life on their planet. It is used as a basis on which all decisions and choices regarding their future destinies are made.”

“Because of this situation, it is advisable for humans to very carefully examine all their **intentions** with which they do whatever they do. This should be done on an ongoing basis.”

“The reward system of the non-sentient life is in provision of its security and safety in the positive sense; insecurity, unsafety and destruction in the negative sense; and survival of the strongest in the human life sense. As you remember, the non-sentient life forms are mere correspondences of the sentient minds’ state of affairs.”

(20)

“The reward system, inherent in the state and the process of any life, also functions as feedback, already mentioned above. It informs the carrier of life how he/she is doing and what the impact of his/her life activities have on all participants within the discrete and during the continuous mode of their life at each moment of their being and existence. This feedback is a necessary concomitant of life because it provides the carriers of life with motivation to continue in their life activities. It gives meaning and purpose to their life and they are encouraged to do continuously better. Without this type of feedback, life for any of its carriers would be meaningless, giving no motivation for its continuation.”

“In the true life of the positive state this feedback is provided on a continuous basis. Everyone always knows how he/she is doing and what impact his/her contributions toward life have on all others. Nothing is hidden from anyone and everyone has an immediate pleasure and joy of seeing the results of one’s activity and what kinds of fruits it bears.”

“In the dead life of the negative state the punishment does not function as a feedback. It is considered as an accidental occurrence germane to the reality of the dead life. In fact, the punishment is perceived as being outsmarted by someone and the purpose is to concoct something else which would outsmart the one who outsmarted you first, so that he/she can

be punished in an even more severe way than you were. Thus, as you see, the feedback in the negative state is how successfully one carrier of the dead life can outsmart or set up another carrier of the dead life for failure so that he/she can punish the outsmarted one.“

“In human life no true feedback is possible. Originally, it was purposefully fabricated in such a manner as to deprive humans of any true feedback of their activities. The feedback humans receive is not a true feedback because it does not come across the discrete modes of life. A true feedback is possible only if it is coming from all levels of a discrete mode and a continuous mode of life simultaneously.”

“Human life is isolated and separated and therefore it is a self-feeding loop that has no discernible or directly experiential inputs from any other modes of life. For this reason, humans are deprived of any conscious knowledge of how the activity of human life influences the multiverse at large or what impact it has on other modes of life.”

“The reason for this condition of human life is that it illustrates the nature of life that has no direct feedback about anything from anything or anyone in other modes of life. On such life all consequences, results and outcomes of the negative state can best be demonstrated.”

“As usual, in non-sentient life, the corresponding factors of each mode of sentient life are reflected.”

(21)

“Another function of the reward system of life in general is to generate feelings of **appreciation, gratitude** and **thankfulness** for having an opportunity and privilege to be a carrier of life. Seeing the results of one’s life activities, experiencing the direct impact one has on all others, one develops a feeling of deep **appreciation, gratitude** and **thankfulness** for being who one is and existing in the mode of life one exists in.”

“This situation has a two-way direction. One not only feels one’s own gratitude, appreciation and thankfulness for this condition, but one also perceives, as feedback, that one is being appreciated, shown gratitude and being thanked for what one does and for what one is.”

“This situation also exists on the higher level of relationship between The Absolute Source of Life — The Lord Jesus Christ — and the relative carrier of life. One expresses one’s thankfulness, gratitude and appreciation to The Lord Jesus Christ for being entrusted with this precious unique life one carries and, at the same time, one is being thanked, shown gratitude and appreciation by The Lord Jesus Christ for being a faithful, loyal, devoted and reliable servant and carrier of His/Her Life.”

“A feedback of this nature functions as the greatest possible motivating factor for doing one’s best in carrying out one’s duties and obligations in the function as a carrier of this unique life.”

“In the dead life of the negative state, being of everything opposite to the positive state, the thankfulness is turned into demands, gratitude into a putdown and degradation, and appreciation into demotion and threat of punishment.”

“Human life is a mixture of both these phenomena but in a distorted, perverted or upside-down manner. In most instances, one is praised for doing something profitable to oneself and for others only if it enriches materially, of course, one’s own pocket, so-to-speak. In human wars, for example, that individual is decorated the most who kills the largest number of the so-called enemies. One is considered a fool and impractical if one spends too much time on some non-tangible, abstract or spiritual issues. How many humans read, for example, books

that deal with The New Revelation or similar issues?”

“On the other hand, although humans are capable of expressing their gratitude, thankfulness and appreciation and they very often do that, in most instances, inappropriately, or for the wrong reasons, they have no experiential direct perception of thankfulness, gratitude and appreciation for what they do or for what they are from any other mode, source or dimension of life. They are limited to and isolated within their own sphere of an unusually strange and impossible life.”

“The expression and impression of gratitude, thankfulness and appreciation requires full awareness of the self-awareness of ‘I am.’ For this reason, non-sentient life does not contain this experience although sentient entities can appreciate its beauty, usefulness and function, making it even more so.”

(22)

“In assessing the concept of life in general, certain important attributes of life need to be considered. From them, entirely different aspects of life can be discerned and conceptualized.”

“In the positive conceptualization of life, the most important attributes are **beauty** and **elegance**. Life is **beautiful** and **elegant**. The concept of beauty relates to the feminine principle of life. The concept of elegance relates to its masculine principle.”

“The perception of beauty and elegance of life evokes in its sentient carriers a feeling of **admiration** and **adoration** of The Absolute Creator of The Beautiful and Elegant Life — The Lord Jesus Christ — who generates this beauty and elegance, being Absolute Beauty and Elegance Himself/Herself.”

“There is a general sense of beauty and elegance of life and there is a specific one. The general sense relates to the perception that life in itself and by itself, as well as in its Absolute Source, by its very nature, is beautiful and elegant. The true life is always this way. It is to be admired, adored and lived in a beautiful and elegant manner.”

“In a specific sense, the beauty and elegance of life is manifested in the infinite varieties and ways of its impressions and expressions through and by the unique carriers of life. Each unique carrier of life impresses and expresses some different, non-repeatable and non-imitable aspect of life’s beauty and elegance. Because of this arrangement, the carriers of the true life are all very beautiful and elegant in their own unique, non-repeatable and non-imitable ways and manners.”

“As you know, each carrier of life and its beauty and elegance is an image and likeness of The Creator of Life — The Lord Jesus Christ. This implies the fact that The Lord Jesus Christ is the most beautiful and the most elegant Producer, Emanator and Giver of life in an Absolute sense. In particulars, love, good, affection and positive acts are always beautiful. Wisdom, truth, faith, logic and reason are always elegant. Therefore, the more loving and wise one is, the more beautiful and elegant one is.”

“Thus, as you see, the attributes of beauty and elegance are determined by the degree of one’s love and wisdom, good and truth and positive works and faith. The state of love and the process of wisdom, in turn, determine the interior processes and the external forms of life’s manifestation. The greater degree of love and wisdom, the greater beauty and elegance of the interior or mental processes and the external forms of life. In other words, the greater degree of love and wisdom, the greater beauty and elegance of one’s soul and body.”

“Because The Lord Jesus Christ is The Absolute Love and The Absolute Wisdom, He/She is Absolutely Beautiful and Absolutely Elegant. This is the nature of the true life.”

“In the dead life of the negative state, as always, everything is just the opposite. Beauty is turned into ugliness and elegance into messiness. The carriers of the dead life adore and admire everything ugly and messy. The greater the degree of evils and falsities, the uglier and messier one is. The state of evils and the process of falsities determine the interior processes and the external forms of the dead life’s manifestation. The greater the degree of evilness and falsification, the uglier and the messier one’s soul and body is.”

“In the negative state of the dead life there is always a congruency between one’s evilness and falsification and the way one expresses and impresses oneself and appears to others. Because one loves evils and falsities there, one adores and admires those who are capable of manifesting such ‘love’ to the greatest possible degree, at the same time, being ugly and messy to the greatest possible degree.”

“In human life, the situation is different. As you know, human life is the result of a forceful, unusual, unnatural and impossible mixture of the true life, deadly life and non-sentient life. Moreover, this mixture or artificial combination is further distorted, perverted and mutilated. This situation gives humans an unusual perception of what is beautiful and elegant. Not having any direct access to other dimensions and worlds, having predominantly closed doors to the inner and interior sphere of their own mind, humans are limited to the perception and definition of beauty and elegance from the position of external observation by the external sensory organs of their external mind. Thus, they assess beauty and elegance mostly by their external appearances and not by the true state of the inner and interior dispositions of one’s mind.”

“The distortions and perversions of the contradicting combination of which human life is comprised leads to a very peculiar condition, unheard of anywhere and *anywhen* else. Only in human life can you encounter tremendous discrepancies which exist between their internal dispositions and external appearances. Thus, humans can appear externally, in their body form, as very beautiful and elegant, while, at the same time, internally and mentally they are ugly and messy. And vice versa: Some people can appear ugly and messy externally but they are good humans, beautiful and elegant internally and interiorly. This situation stems from the fact that, as you know, only humans are capable of thinking and feeling one thing and, at the very same time, expressing and saying the total opposite of what they think and feel. In human life very little alignment exists between the inner state and the external expression of that state. Conditions of this nature do not exist anywhere and *anywhen* in Creation or the rest of the Zone of Displacement or the dead life of the negative state.”

“This specific human condition illustrates a lifestyle which is not only disconnected from the inner, spiritual source but discrepant to it, giving humans double standards and double binds in all aspects of their life — human life. Because of this condition, the human sense of beauty and elegance is totally distorted, giving humans very little sense of what real beauty and elegance are. The closest humans are able to come to this perception is through some of their artworks. This is particularly true about some of their so-called classical music. Works of Bach, Haydn, Mozart, Beethoven, Schubert, Dvořák, Brahms, Mendelssohn, Chopin and others can give one some remote impression what true beauty and elegance really are like. Of course, you should hear what these composers have been composing since their arrival in the spiritual world! In actuality, true beauty and elegance begin in the spiritual world of the positive state. The ultimate accomplishment for humans in this area is only the very first beginner’s step in the true life of the positive state.”

“The non-sentient life forms fully reflect the conditions of the sentient mind in this respect. In the positive state of the true life, you have beautiful and elegant appearances of various animals and plants, complementing their creators and pleasantly decorating their environment.”

“In the dead life of the negative state the non-sentient life forms reflect exactly the ugliness, messiness, cruelty and beastly nature of their masters.”

“In human life the non-sentient life forms reflect humans’ double standards, contradictions, distortions and perversions, giving life to the innumerable non-sentient life forms of all shades, degrees and mixtures of the positive and negative nature within the same specific forms. As humans contain within themselves mixed positive and negative traits in a distorted condition, so do their non-sentient life forms.”

(23)

“Another fundamentally important condition of life in general is its structural **lawfulness** and **orderliness**. This relates to beauty and elegance as beauty and elegance relate to femininity and masculinity, respectively. Thus, you can say, that **lawfulness** and **beauty** are of the feminine principle and **orderliness** and **elegance** are of the masculine principle. Or one is of love — **lawfulness**; and the other is of wisdom — **orderliness**. **Law** and **order** are a means by which life is arranged, organized and managed.”

“Inherent in the nature of life itself is the state of its lawfulness and process of its orderliness. Because life in general always stems from its Absolute Source — The Lord Jesus Christ — The Lord Jesus Christ is The Absolute State of all Laws and The Absolute Process of all Order of Life. You can correctly say that The Lord Jesus Christ is The Absolute Law and The Absolute Order in and by Himself/Herself. In the combination of these two conditions of life in The Lord Jesus Christ is vested His/Her Divine Providence. By and through this Divine Providence, He/She governs and rules the entire Creation in all its multiverse and the Zone of Displacement, as well as your planet.”

“Laws are principles by which life is permitted to be. Order is a principle by which life is allowed to exist. Being is lawful. Existence is orderly. Order is established by the logic of laws. Laws are conditions on which life is built. Some of these laws were defined in Chapter Ten of this book. Some of them are specifically related to the state of Creation and life itself and to The Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ. These latter ones cannot be defined or revealed in any human terms. The true life of the positive state is always lawful and orderly because it reflects the image and the likeness of its Creator. The carriers of this life also carry all life’s conditions, states, processes, factors and attributes. Therefore, their life is not only a reflection of its lawfulness and orderliness but they themselves are lawful and orderly. Law and order is ingrained into their minds and hearts, so-to-speak.”

“In the dead life of the negative state the principles are to oppose everything in the true life of the positive state. Thus, the dead life is ruled by the principle of lawlessness and disorderliness. Evils are unlawful. Falsities are disorderly. Disorder is established by illogical lawlessness. Lawlessness is the very condition on which the dead life is built. The principle of the negative state is to have no principles. It is a wild jungle of lawlessness and disorderliness. Since the time The Lord Jesus Christ took over the control of the entire dead life of the negative state from the pseudo-creators, some strict rules were established there which regulate their everyday living in order to protect them from their own destruction by their lawlessness and disorderliness.”

“Human life is different in all respects. It is ruled by specially designed and permitted principles that define for humans what is lawful and orderly. Being that humans have very little direct connectedness to anything lawful and orderly in the true life or dead life, they have no proper concepts of what real law and order, which govern Creation, are. Thus, they are necessarily ruled by an externally imposed set of guidelines, which they call laws and which are externally enforced by a specially developed law agency — police.”

“Because human nature is built on contradictions, distortions and perversions of everything available, human laws and order are contradictory, inconsistent, distorted and perverted, having no unifying elements, vastly differing from culture to culture, from country to country and from one religion to another. This situation only reinforces the principle of uncertainty and confusion on which human life is built.”

“The non-sentient life forms are ruled by codes and instincts imparted on their structure consistent with the structure of the sentient mind in each mode of life that allows their being and existence.”

(24)

“Other integral attributes of life are constancy and consistency. ***Life is a constant phenomenon.*** In fact, as defined at the beginning of this Chapter, life is the only reality that is and exists. Everything else derives from its reality. In this sense, ***any life’s constancy is a consistent phenomenon. In being constant, life is consistent.*** Because life derives from its Absolute Source — The Lord Jesus Christ — you can say for sure that The Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ is Absolutely Constant and Absolutely Consistent. Constancy is of the feminine principle and its love, goodness and positive works. The Love and Goodness of The Lord Jesus Christ is constant. Consistency is of the masculine principle and its wisdom, truth and faith. The Wisdom and Truth of The Lord Jesus Christ is consistent. The carriers of the true life, being the images and likenesses of their Absolute Source, reflect these attributes of life. In their own life they are constant and consistent. The principle of constancy, as an integral attribute of their life, gives them a sense of safety. They are safe in their life. The principle of consistency, as an integral attribute of their life, gives them a sense of security. They are secure in their life.”

“Constancy is a specific law of life which contributes to the lawfulness of life. Consistency is a specific order of life which contributes to the orderliness of life. Constancy is beautiful and consistency is elegant. Life loves its constancy and by that love shows consistency in its manifestation. Constancy assures stability of life. By the state of constancy, life is always stable. Consistency assures the flow of the balanced life. By the process of consistency, life is always balanced. Constancy assures that life always is. Consistency assures that it is the same life.”

“As you know, there is only one source of the true life — The Lord Jesus Christ. This is a constant phenomenon. The consistency is in the fact that life will always flow from the same source — The Lord Jesus Christ. Thus, it is the same life. In this the permanency of life can be discerned. No other source of life is conceivable. Any other source produces either dead life of the negative state or human life of uncertainty and confusion.”

“In this respect, the dead life of the negative state is continuously opposing the nature of the true life. Its purpose is to deny and reject the constancy and consistency of the true life. In doing just that, the dead life is being consistent and constant. Of course, this type of consistency and constancy is, in fact, transiency and inconsistency. Not having anything from the true source of life, that is, from The Lord Jesus Christ, being in a *constant and consistent* denial and rejection of the true life, the dead life of the negative state cannot have

permanency in its constancy. Therefore, it is transient and perishable. The consistency of its claims, stemming from its transiency and temporality, is only relative. In this sense, the dead life of the negative state is unsafe and insecure because it lacks true constancy and consistency. Constancy and consistency can be predicated only about something that always is and exists. No such predication can be made about the dead life of the negative state.”

“On the other hand, human life, being a life of contradiction and distortion, is the epitome of inconsistency and instability. A continuous threat of death of the human physical body, into which humans place so much meaning and purpose of their lives, makes it impossible for them to experience the constancy of life. This, in turn, makes all processes of their life inconsistent. Their sense of consistency and constancy is a distortion of their true reality. It gives them no experience of safety and security. Nothing is permanent about human life. This sense of non-permanency permeates all aspects of human life, being a cause of many human problems, as described in the preceding Chapter.”

“The non-sentient life forms, as usual, reflect these states of the true life, the dead life and the human life. Invariably, they are a correspondence of each respective mode of sentient life. The more constant and consistent the life of their originators is, the more constant and consistent the non-sentient life is.”

(25)

“In the totality of life’s state and process there are certain specific characteristics of life which give it character. Obviously, life has its own character. It stems from The Character of its Absolute Source — The Lord Jesus Christ. All carriers of the true life reflect this character in their own unique manner.”

“The major characteristics of life’s character are its **innocence, modesty, humbleness and humility**. In its basic structure this character is reflected in simplicity and parsimony. The complexity of life is expressed in the simple elements of life that form various unique and non-repeatable or non-imitable patterns. These patterns conjoin themselves together to form various clusters of life. In turn, these clusters of life relate to each other in forming the multiverse of life. The parsimony of life reflects this simple structure. It defines any situation of life from its simplest aspect without allowing any intricate, complex and confusing explanation of any structure or dynamics of life to enter.”

“Life cannot be more complex than its carriers. Otherwise, carriers could not carry it. Being this way, the true life exhibits itself in **modesty, humbleness, humility and innocence**. The more of these characteristics of life in its carriers, the more the carriers themselves are modest, humble and innocent. The realization that life of its carriers does not stem from them but from its Absolute Source — The Lord Jesus Christ — makes them more living and alive and more modest, humble and innocent.”

“Innocence of life is defined by the purity of its state and process which is not contaminated by any other source and which refers all source of life back to its originator — The Lord Jesus Christ — disclaiming that it created itself without any higher source.”

“In the dead life of the negative state this is all denied and rejected. The members of the dead life claim to be the source of their own life, ending in arrogance, boastfulness, showing off, false pride, grandiosity and inflated egos. These are the usual characteristics of the dead life of the negative state accompanied by tremendous complications, intricacies, obscurities, confusion, bureaucracy and convoluted explanations, false justifications and total imprudence.”

“Human life is characterized by stupidity, foolishness, ignorance, incompetence and a combination of distorted characteristics of innocence, modesty, humbleness and humility placed in a wrong source. Humans do not know where life is coming from. They believe that it is either an evolutionary process from the lowest non-sentient life forms, appearing from a dead cosmic stew, or it is created by some kind of Higher Power, called God, the nature of whom they distort so much by all the dogmas and doctrines of their ridiculous religions and philosophies that nothing of the true Nature of God remains in it. They either simplify life too much beyond any sense, or they complicate it so immensely that most humans give up on trying to figure out what human life is all about.”

“The character of non-sentient life fully reflects these three different approaches in its own specific way.”

(26)

“Other important characteristics of life relate to its dynamics. In all its dynamic aspects the true life has a character of **mobility, flexibility, adaptability, adjustability, fluidity, changeability, diversity and versatility**. As everything else, these characteristics of the dynamic aspects of life derive from The Absolute Source — The Lord Jesus Christ — Who is Absolutely Dynamic and Who is Absolutely Flexible, Diverse, Versatile, Mobile, etc. The important factor here is to realize again and again that the true life is not a stagnant condition. In actuality, the state of stagnancy is the killer of the true life. There is a constant dynamic flow in life manifested in the above-mentioned characteristics.”

“**Mobility** signifies the motion of life in various directions in its discrete and continuous modes. **Flexibility** denotes an ability of life to take many forms, states and conditions. **Adaptability** signifies life’s ability to take hold in any condition, state and process and incorporate *itself* into them. **Adjustability** means that life is able to tune itself into any situation and incorporate it *into its content*. **Fluidity** means that life’s character is not a stagnant, unmovable state but multidirectional flow. **Changeability** means life’s ability to transform any of its states, conditions and processes into totally new and different ones. **Diversity** denotes that life is able to manifest itself in infinite varieties of forms, states, conditions and processes. **Versatility** means that life has many uses and applications. Such is the life of the positive state.”

“Being that the dead life of the negative state opposes everything of the true life of the positive state, its characteristics are immobility, inflexibility, non-adaptability, non-adjustability, stagnation, rigidity, uniformity and limitation. These are the pseudo-dynamics of the dead life of the negative state which give it a typical dead character.”

“Human life is an unnatural and unhealthy mixture of the dead life’s characteristics and distorted and perverted characteristics of the true life. As a matter of fact, **one of the major structural characteristics of human life in particular is that it is not only combined from the contradictory elements of the dead life, nonsentient life and true life but, whatever it contains within itself from the true life is distorted, perverted or totally falsified**. In order to understand the nature of human life properly, this fact about human life must be kept in mind constantly. It gives an entirely different perspective to human life.”

“The non-sentient life forms are the mirror images of these characteristics within each sphere of the sentient life, reflecting in their character what the sentient mind imprints on them without any sense of self-awareness or ‘I am.’”

(27)

“From the standpoint of spiritual morality and ethical content of life, the true life can be

characterized as being always **objective, just, rightful, impartial** and **equal** in all its aspects.”

“**Objectivity** of life is reflected in its perception and discernment of everything the way it truly is without adding to or taking away anything from its content and nature.”

“**Justice** of life is manifested in its provision of exactly what is needed to every situation, condition or state that belongs to it. Rightfulness of life indicates that life does only what is right and proper.”

“**Impartiality** of life signifies that life does not take into consideration any other factors but only that which is from, by, of and with life itself.”

“**Equality** of life means that life does not show any preferences to one or another carrier of life but treats them equally. After all, they are carriers of the same life even though they are in infinite varieties, manners and ways of its manifestation. Do not forget that the ultimate source of life is only one — The Lord Jesus Christ. In The Lord Jesus Christ everyone is as equal, as important, as special, as valuable and as needed as everyone else. Thus, no preferential treatment in the true life is possible. It would violate the principle of sameness of life.”

“The dead life of the negative state is founded on subjectivity, injustice, wrongfulness, partiality and inequality. Everyone there considers oneself more important, more special, more needed, more valuable and more elevated than anyone else. Under these conditions no true justice, objectivity and impartiality can ever be executed because one approaches the other from the position of one’s assumed and supposed superiority, considering all others inferior to oneself.”

“Human life is a peculiar combination of both the above with a totally distorted, perverted and falsified conceptualization of the true life’s objectivity, justice, equality and impartiality. In this respect, human life is a form of extremes contained within the same system or even within the same individual who can show both extremes simultaneously. These kinds of extremes, appearing in the same system or an individual simultaneously, is an impossibility made possible by the artificial and forceful combination of the elements of dead life with the distorted, perverted and falsified elements of the true life.”

“The process of making such monstrous combinations reflects the most spiritually immoral and unethical act, culminating into a lack of any objectivity, justice, judgment, rightfulness, impartiality or equality. Because of this, in human life these characteristics are completely misunderstood, misinterpreted, misguided and mutilated. Therefore, they have little value in human life. They are pervertible, bendable, redefinable and reinterpretable as suited to any needed situations and circumstances. The courtrooms of human justice systems reflect this situation of human life the best. The conceptualization of these characteristics of true life requires a high level of self-awareness or awareness of self-awareness of ‘I am.’ Because non-sentient life does not possess such a quality, it is ruled by its structural genetic codes and instinctual drives defined for it by a respective sentient life.”

(28)

“Finally, as is obvious from point No. 17, knowledge, understanding and application of all these principles related to life in general determine one’s aliveness and living. Because all life, including the dead life and human life, depends on the being and existence of One Absolute Source of Life — The Lord Jesus Christ, who is The Absolute Spirit — the true conceptualization of life is always a spiritual one. For that reason, the knowledge,

understanding and application of the spiritual principles of life constitutes one's life and living."

"In this respect, everything derives from the spiritual principles. An attempt to derive anything from principles other than spiritual principles leads to the activation of the negative state and establishment of dead life and fabrication of human life."

"There is a spiritual law, defined and repeated many times before, and repeated here for emphasis of its importance, which requires that, in order for life to be properly and fully manifested, as outlined here, it must follow a certain direction. That direction is from the most within spiritual, through interior-mental to the most without-external, physical and natural."

"The dead life was founded on the principles which follow exactly the opposite direction. Human life was founded on violation of all laws and principles by their perversion, distortion, falsification and mutilation."

"The true life follows these spiritual principles of life and, by this important act, makes it possible that all other manifestations of life are and exist. If the true life were to fail to follow these laws, no life, including dead life and human life, could ever be and exist. That there is someone somewhere out there who follows this proper spiritual trend of life makes it possible for the entire multiverse, the entire Zone of Displacement and human life on your planet to continue in their life. Bear in mind, please, **life is not possible under any other condition.**"

"And because all spiritual principles enabling life to be and to exist derive from The Absolute Life of The Lord Jesus Christ, only the fact that The Lord Jesus Christ Absolutely Is and Exists makes any life possible to be and to exist. Thus, **life is not possible at all under any other condition but by, from, through, with and of The Lord Jesus Christ.** This is the very spiritual principle of life which regulates all in all. **This is The Absolute Truth of Life.**"

"He/she who has ears to hear, let him/her hear what The Lord Jesus Christ reveals in this Chapter."

CHAPTER THIRTEEN

HOW TO SURVIVE HUMAN LIFE

On March 8, 1988, at 5:15 in the morning, the word of The Lord Jesus Christ came to me, saying,

“The nature of human life, as it appears on planet Zero, is not what humans think it is. The preceding Chapter clearly indicated that human life is a peculiar, unnatural, abnormal, isolated and pathological phenomenon permitted to come to its fruition for certain very important spiritual reasons revealed elsewhere in the books of The New Revelation.”

“The revelation on the true nature of human life comes as an unpleasant surprise to most who are being informed about this important issue.”

“Humans on your planet have no knowledge and understanding of what human life is all about and what its true nature and origin is. They incorrectly assume that it is a natural, normal and appropriate occurrence. Therefore, whatever happens in the process of history of human life is for them a natural course of events which is an integral part of life in general.”

“The error in this approach is that humans consider human life as an integral part of life in general, very often considering it as the only form and manifestation of sentient life.”

“The mystery, origin and purpose of human life was hidden for a long time. In actuality, it was not fully revealed until the book Fundamentals of Human Spirituality was written. However, some important aspects of this mystery were not available in the first portion of The New Revelation. They are revealed in this book.”

“In order to better understand the content of this Chapter, it is necessary to briefly repeat certain issues regarding human life.”

“As you remember, the history of human life begins with the appearance of what your scientists call cavemen or, to be precise, with the successful fabrication of cavemen.”

“Up to that point, human life in its present form and manifestation had not existed and no one had known anything about such a strange phenomenon.”

“Prior to the appearance of human life on planet Zero, the sentient life forms that existed on this planet were not called humans. Spiritually, mentally and even physically, they did not look anything like the presently existing humans.”

“Of course, the definition of any life forms, from the spiritual standpoint, is not formulated from the physical, bodily or external appearance of these forms, but from their inner spiritual and interior-mental content and character. However, in the case of sentient entities who occupied your planet prior to the appearance of the present human life form, even their physical forms were structurally different.”

“First of all, as you remember, no physical, animalistic type of birth of the new sentient beings was taking place. They were produced by an entirely different method, described previously.”

“Second, they were brought into the fullness of all knowledge available at that time, with their mind being completely conscious. Thus, they did not have an experience of the state of ignorance or unconscious processes.”

“Third, they had full mental control, or mind over matter control, and a direct, mind-to-mind mode of communication by ideas and concepts rather than by the vocal cords through external verbalization.”

“Fourth, their physical structure, although fully humanoid in appearance, was entirely different, with a totally different structure and wiring of their brain and nervous system and sexual organs and other bodily organs. The structure of their bodies and the function of their bodily organs were such that they could survive in many different environments or emanate around themselves a transparent protective sphere which kept within itself their own environment while they were staying in some other environment inconsistent with their life-support system. And they had many other things which humans cannot even dream about.”

“Now, none of the above-mentioned major characteristics are contained within the nature and structure of human life.”

“In other words, human life, in all its aspects — spiritual, mental and physical — is like nothing else in being and existence. No comparison can be found to anyone or anything except that externally or bodily humans do resemble the general sentient forms — the forms of mankind. (The word ‘mankind’ is used here in both male and female connotation.)”

“As you remember, human life is the result of genetic engineering, in the process of which three major elements and their numerous components were used: 1. The elements of dead life (as defined in the previous Chapter); 2. the elements of non-sentient life; and 3. the elements of true life in a distorted, perverted, falsified and correspondentially (through a special type of manipulation and combination of spiritual laws of correspondences) altered condition. As a result of this purposeful, artificial, unnatural and abnormal combination of these contradictory elements, human life, with all its characteristics, contents, qualities, states and processes, came to its fruition.”

“Because there is nothing normal about human life, to survive it without destroying one’s spiritual inner integrity, hidden behind all those blocks and envelopes, fabricated from genetic material by the pseudo-creators, is a matter of the gravest importance.”

“Let’s face the reality of human life: It is not easy to survive the human life. By its very nature, human life is very poisonous to the true life and very susceptible to the dead life. Unfortunately, this was purposefully done in order for the negative state to take full hold of human life. Remember, even elements used from the true life in the process of fabrication of human life were not left intact in their pure, original content but they were butchered, so-to-speak, through a special combination and manipulation of spiritual correspondences.”

“No terms in human language can describe or comprehend what this manipulation of spiritual correspondences is or how it is done. Such knowledge was obliterated from everyone in the Zone of Displacement. Therefore, it cannot be described or revealed. The closest it can come to human comprehension is something remotely resembling what humans call magic (not in the sense of magical tricks by magicians but in a sense of sorcerers or magi) or magical means (in a sense of black magic) on which their fairytales are built. As you know, such tales contain elements of truth.”

“If the pseudo-creators were to have left the used elements of the true life intact, without any

drastic alteration, human life could have not come to its fruition.”

“The problem here is that even one element of the true life, if combined in its original, non-altered form with no matter how many elements of the dead life and non-sentient life, will unequivocally take over other elements and eventually transform them into true life.”

“In this condition, no chance exists for the negative state and its dead life to be activated; and no chance exists either for human life to appear, in order to illustrate all consequences, outcomes and results of the activated negative state. Hence, the necessity of mutilation, distortion, perversion and alteration of the true life’s elements. So, with this kind of unfavorable set, how do you survive human life?”

“Certain procedures and steps for this effort will be formulated in this Chapter. They are valid for all three major categories of humans: The agents of the positive state, the agents of the negative state and the slaves of the negative state — humans proper.”

(1)

“The very first step is recognition, knowledge and acceptance of the fact that human life is not what everyone thinks it is. Instead, from now on, one is to perceive human life in a manner as is revealed in this book. No change can take place and no steps which follow can work unless the facts revealed here about human life are recognized and accepted first. Denial and rejection of these facts gives one no need to do anything about one’s human life.”

“The facts revealed here about human life will not be easy to accept by anyone. After all, if you have thought otherwise all your life and all around you, and your entire planet is convinced that human life is a natural phenomenon, it is very difficult, if not impossible, to accept something that contradicts the so-called common sense of almost every single human on your planet.”

“But, remember, please, this situation was established exactly for this purpose — that humans firmly believe that their life is a natural, normal and godly phenomenon. How else could this life have had a chance to prove the point at hand? If humans were to know from the very beginning what human life is all about, no one would be willing to play the games of the negative state. Why do you think it was necessary to hide the secret of the human life’s origin for so long and to allow humans to be born in total ignorance about this, as well as any other matters?”

“No other way was available for giving to the negative state an opportunity to prove its point. As you know, permission was granted to proceed with the fabrication of humans because of a tremendously important spiritual learning for all beings and existences of Creation and its entire multiverse, for all times and non-times. In an ultimate sense, the benefit of this crucial, vital and fundamental learning far outweighs the consequences, outcomes and results of the activation of the negative state.”

“This is especially true in view of the revealed facts that the negative state will not be permitted to stay forever. Its active mode, as well as the typical human life, fabricated by it, will end in the very same moment the full learning of its entire nature will be successfully accomplished and recorded in all its minutest details in the Universality-Of-It-All or, in what some of your science-fiction writers call Guardian-Of-Forever.”

“However, the situation in the spiritual world and everywhere else is such that now it requires that this mystery about human life needs to be revealed to some degree and brought to the attention of those who are willing to listen, to hear, to understand and to act upon it.”

“The indication here is that the learning about the nature of the negative state entered its final phase. When this happens, The New Revelation is granted by The Lord Jesus Christ in order to prepare everyone (with or without their conscious awareness that The New Revelation exists) to enter this final phase. Of course, the duration of this last phase in human time elements cannot be revealed. It can take years, decades, centuries or millenniums. But it is the final phase, regardless.”

“Thus, as of now, the survival of human life will become contingent on the knowledge, recognition and acceptance of these facts about human life.”

“This knowledge, recognition and acceptance will put you in a condition of controlling your own life instead of being controlled by human life. To acquire such a control, you need to have as much true knowledge about it as is practically possible. Only the true knowledge, and acting on it, gives you the true power and control over human life in you. Thus, you will become a master of your life instead of a toy of its forces.”

“In the case of the slaves of the negative state, after learning the fact about their life and their position in human life, from their own free will, they must recognize their status and express a strong desire to be freed from their condition and join the lifestyle of the agents of the positive state. One of the major purposes of the agents of the positive state being on your planet is to provide an opportunity, through their living examples, for all others to free themselves from being controlled by human life of the negative state.”

“For the agents of the positive state, this realization will make it easier for them to control their life without expecting too much in any manner and way. When you learn not to expect anything (what can you expect from the human life of the negative state but misery?), you will not be hurt or disappointed when nothing is happening in accordance with your expectations.”

“For the agents of the negative state it is necessary for them to recognize who they are, what the purpose of their being on this planet is, and to express an honest desire, from their free will, to convert to the positive state. Once such a desire is expressed, they will be given the knowledge of The New Revelation and provided with an opportunity for conversion to and joining the agents of the positive state. This step applies also to everyone in the negative state elsewhere besides planet Zero, that is, in the rest of the Zone of Displacement and in all the Hells.”

(2)

“Once the proper knowledge about human life is acquired, the next most important step is the establishment of the proper relationship with the genuine source of the true life — The Lord Jesus Christ. This step requires relinquishing and totally giving up all previously held views, opinions, concepts, ideas, belief systems, philosophies, lifestyle and the type of worship one clings to or considers to be right and appropriate. In other words, you have to denounce any other gods or God that you believed in, in whatever form or under whatever name. Instead, you are to accept The New Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ, as revealed in this book, and to acknowledge by your own free will and choice that no other God existed, exists or will exist to eternity.”

“After accepting this fact, you are to invite The Lord Jesus Christ to enter your entire being and existence, asking Him/Her to become your Supreme Master and Lord, giving you strength, power, determination, vigor and energy to efficiently survive human life and to be in control of your life. This requires that you turn your entire life into the hands of The Lord

Jesus Christ who knows best what you need and what kinds of things are the best for you personally with regard to your effective survival of human life.”

“The reason why it is so important to relate to The New Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ is because only from the position of that Nature, being that The Lord Jesus Christ experienced human life personally, He/She can enter you and accomplish whatever work is needed in order to help you to survive human life. And not only to survive, but to feel protected, safe, secure and to enjoy His/Her presence and everything that will be provided by Him/Her.”

“This factor implies that certain things will not be provided for you even though you might ask for them; the reason being that from the standpoint of your eternal life, they would be harmful for you in the long run and they would enable human life to control you and make your life miserable and in slavery to the negative state.”

“This is the reason why the requirement here is to turn everything into the hands of The Lord Jesus Christ. Only He/She can determine, from the standpoint of His/Her Absolute knowledge of your situation and why and for what purpose you entered human life, what it is that you really need during your incarnation into human life on planet Zero.”

“It is necessary to emphasize again and again the tremendous importance in establishing a personal, private and intimate relationship with The Lord Jesus Christ in His/Her New Nature as was revealed in Chapter Two of this book. At this point, the approach of any other manifestation of God or Jesus or Christ or Jesus Christ or whatever name humans use, will no longer be effective, particularly after acquiring the knowledge regarding this fact.”

“In the case that humans lack the appropriate information and knowledge about the true New Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ, their situation will be evaluated on the basis of their potentials for acceptance of this fact. Only The Lord Jesus Christ knows all such potentials of humans and He/She will accommodate accordingly their situation, giving them an opportunity either to get in touch with the source of The New Revelation while in human life, or after their departure from it.”

“The response of The Lord Jesus Christ in this respect will be either to a direct acceptance of His/Her New Nature or from the position of potentiality of acceptance of that Nature (in those cases where no access to The New Revelation, which teaches these facts, will be available for some reason or other).”

“However, in view of the fact that the negative state must temporarily win on your planet to the fullest and completest extent, do not expect that too many humans will be given this opportunity during their manifestation in human life. By choice, they will have a very difficult time, if not always externally, materially, then internally and spiritually.”

“The conversion of the agents of the negative state to the positive state, as of now, will be possible only if they, from the bottom of their heart, by their free will and choice, express a desire and willingness to accept and to worship The Lord Jesus Christ in His/Her New Nature. Because The Lord Jesus Christ contains within His/Her New Nature the purified elements of the Zone of Displacement, He/She, on their invitation, can enter those agents anywhere, and initiate the process of their spiritual rebirth and transformation.”

“No other former manifestation of God can do this directly, personally, privately and intimately. The possibility of genuine conversion is based on an intimate, personal and private experience of God within one’s mind and heart. ***Because only The Lord Jesus Christ has the means to enter anyone in this manner, thanks to those elements, only***

evocation of this Lord Jesus Christ can accomplish such an important process. Thus, evocation of any other nature or form of God will no longer work.”

“As of now, the evocation of any other nature or form of God, under any other name, is considered negative. In fact, it became a new domain and a tool of the negative state to keep its slaves and agents from the acceptance of the true Lord Jesus Christ, knowing that such old evocations are safe because they bring the evocatees into a deeper bondage to the negative state.”

“This fact is being hereby proclaimed and heralded throughout the entire Zone of Displacement and all the Hells, as well as the multiverse of Creation with all its beings and existences.”

“The full acceptance of this step determines the success and usefulness of the application of all other following steps for survival of human life.”

(3)

“The acceptance of the above facts about the true Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ determines a lifestyle one should pursue while in the human life.”

“The most important aspect of this lifestyle is reflected in the mode of your thinking, conceptualizing, feeling, intending, willing and behaving. The issue here is to derive everything from the spiritual principles or to look upon issues and happenings of life, no matter what they are or might be, from the spiritual standpoint. One is to recognize that everything **in any life** has a spiritual origin, implication and connotation.”

“In this respect, you need to break a devastating habit of human life to disregard the spiritual principles at work and to consider everything from the external, non-spiritual aspect or direction. You are to train yourself in thinking, feeling, acting, behaving, willing and intending with the spiritual principles on your mind. They should always be uppermost on your mind, evaluating all occurrences of your mind and your life from their standpoint.”

“Whatever you do, before you do it, you are advised to consider spiritual implications of your doing and also whether the urge of doing something is coming from the right spiritual source and whether it is endorsed by the will of The Lord Jesus Christ.”

“Remember, the nature of human life is rooted, grounded and vested in a total disregard for this fact or in accepting a totally false, distorted or perverted conceptualization and practice of these spiritual principles. Therefore, in order to spiritually survive human life, you need to break out of this inherent factor of human life.”

“This is not an easy task to accomplish. You are going against everything which you were taught, brought up with, trained in and so far have experienced. You are singly going against a vast majority of humans. But, if you ask for help from and support of The Lord Jesus Christ for the sake of principle, you will definitely break out of this devastating habit.”

“The simple consideration of these spiritual principles is that everything proceeds from the most within spiritual level of life, through its interior or mental level and it ends in the external, most outward natural level; and that life can never originate from any external natural phenomena, but that nature and matter can only be vivified by The Spirit of Life when needed, where needed and if needed. And because The Absolute Spirit of The Absolute Life is The Lord Jesus Christ, **it is The Lord Jesus Christ who is to be considered in all your thoughts, feelings, attitudes, intentions, will, behaviors and understanding.**”

“This is the very spiritual principle of life — any life. By doing that, you will be able to effectively survive human life. This way is the only deterrent from falling into the trap of human life which, by its very structure, leads one into the dead life of the negative state.”

“Remember, human life was fabricated only for one purpose: To prove that life can originate from and thrive by non-spiritual principles or distorted, perverted and falsified spiritual principles or a combination of both; and to be a supplier of humans for the Hells of the dead life. No other purpose for human life existed at the time it was brought to its fruition.”

“Some spiritual leaders of humans believe that human life is a nursery for populating Heavens of the positive state. What a ‘nice’ place Heavens would be if they were populated by the human stock! You can be assured that having a typical human life in Heaven would turn it very fast into the Hells. You can be also assured that nothing of typical human life can enter Heavens or survive there for long.”

“Before humans are able to enter Heavens, they have to go through rather lengthy processes of restructuring, rebuilding, renewal, resurrection and genetic and spiritual transformation in order to remove from them that typical *humanness*. Only after this is accomplished are they able to do so. But by that time, nothing of typical human life remains in them.”

“The true spiritual reality of human life is that it was fabricated to become a nursery of the Hells and not The Heavens. As anyone else, humans can be saved from this dire destiny by the saving act of The Lord Jesus Christ. If human life were to be created for being a nursery for Heavens, no need would exist for The Lord Jesus Christ to incarnate into human life. One of the many reasons for The Lord Jesus Christ’s incarnation into human life was to give human life an opportunity to break out of the horrid destiny for which it was fabricated.”

“Let it be known now that, by following these procedures, you can considerably shorten your need to go through the lengthy process of transformation, once you are off your planet and out of your physical body. Therefore, it is to the greatest advantage of anyone to follow and to live these principles in order to avoid both the typical human destiny of going to the Hells and to accelerate one’s process of transformation and entrance into the true life of the positive state of the Heavens. For this very reason The Lord Jesus Christ formulated the procedures described here.”

(4)

“Continuous exploration of one’s intentions which motivate and are the driving force of all human activities. Intentions are very crucial for survival of human life. They are the only valid factors in determining to what extent one succumbs or gives in to the dead life of the negative state.”

“As you remember, from the spiritual standpoint, the quality of human life cannot be assessed from any other position. Human life is ruled by double standards, contradictions and double binds. Unfortunately, the results or fruits of humans’ activities are a very poor and unreliable indicator of the quality of their inner life. And, yet, it is the quality of the inner life, and not its external manifestation, that, in this case, determines the inclinations of any carrier of human life — toward the true life or toward the dead life. No one knows, sometimes even a carrier of human life consciously does not know, what the true intentional and motivational factors of the human activities are. In an ultimate sense, only The Lord Jesus Christ knows precisely what they are.”

“Humans are great masters of deception and contradiction. They think, believe, conceptualize and feel in one way but, at the very same time, they behave, act and do things in an entirely different, opposite way. One can be a great leader, benefiting the life of society in numerous ways, but his/her reasons for doing that or being that way may be totally wrong. Or one expresses, shows and manifests externally his/ her love and consideration toward others, but, at the same time, internally, one can be full of hate and contempt for, and despise the same humans or situations he/she expresses his/her love and consideration. This is the genuine nature of human life.”

“In order to avoid this dangerous trap, you have to learn to systematically explore your intentions and motivations and effectively avoid anything inappropriate or ulterior in them. This is not an easy task because you are required to learn how to go inward by the means and methods described in Chapter Five of this book and in the book *Who Are You and Why Are You Here?*.”

“Moreover, you have to be continuously aware that living in human life, it is inevitable that you all have some ulterior, selfish and unreasonable intentions and motivations for doing or wanting whatever you do and want. This is ingrained in your genes. Human life was purposefully structured that way. Therefore, it is impossible for you to be totally free from such a state integral to your human life. You have to be realistic about the possibilities and limitations of human life. What you can do however, is to actively dissociate yourself from these adverse states.”

“First, you have to acknowledge, to see and to recognize the fact that most of your activities are poisoned by inappropriate intent and motivation. Second, you have to express a strong desire to get rid of them or, at least, to control them without allowing them to influence your decisions and activities. Third, you have to ask The Lord Jesus Christ to help you to remove them from your life and replace them with positive attributes of the true life, doing things for the sake of principles and for no other reasons. Fourth, when you inadvertently catch yourself in doing something for the wrong reasons, with ulterior intent and motivation, you confess to The Lord Jesus Christ your problems in this respect and ask for mercy and forgiveness. Fifth, you eliminate any guilt that might accompany such an awareness of wrongdoing and forgive yourself, so that you do not continuously carry a burden of that guilt in your heart, wasting precious life energy for feeling guilty. Sixth, you purify and cleanse yourself from all such states by means and ways described in the book, *Who Are You and Why Are You Here?* And seventh, you ask The Lord Jesus Christ to protect you, as much as possible under the circumstances of human life, by all means, from backsliding into the same types of attitudes, feelings, thinking, intentions, motivations and behaviors.”

“Now, in order to avoid traps of human life, set up by the negative state, you are advised to do this or similar work ***on a daily basis***. Unless you do it on a daily basis, *preferably as many times a day as practically possible*, this trap is unavoidable.”

“Do not lull yourself into believing that everything is going fine and you do not need this work because you feel great. This is a trap that will result in grave consequences for you. In fact, since recently, this work needs to be done more often than ever before because of the dangerous spiritual situation that, at the present time, exists on your planet and will exist in a greater degree until the negative state takes it over completely. The only way you can be saved from this grave situation is by doing this type of work several times daily.”

“The importance of exploration of one’s intentions and motivations on a daily basis cannot be emphasized enough. If human life can be evaluated and judged only by internal intentions, it is obvious that such an exploration and work is the only assurance that one’s intentions will

be in accordance with the true spiritual principles. This will save one from the doom of the dead life of the negative state where human life is naturally headed. Unfortunately, at this time, there is no other way out of this predicament.”

“Taking into consideration the type of life you are in, it is inevitable for all of you, from time to time, to yield to the continuous, 24-hour-a-day demands, pressures and propaganda of the negative state and its human life.”

“Nowadays, the methods of the negative state in this respect have become much more convincing and sophisticated than ever before. No longer does it use the old means of ugly and nasty ways. These ways are for primitives only. Instead, various spiritual, religious, moral, ethical and righteous means were devised, accompanied by miraculous healings and works of love and compassion and all kinds of great signs and wonders (such as “A Course in Miracles,” for example), so as to deceive, if possible, even the elect (Matthew 24:24). It is not easy not to succumb to these kinds of calls, especially if you see some positive and immediate results of their work.”

“But, again, this is the point here: Human life cannot be judged by the immediate results of humans’ work. The long term results, particularly after their physical death, those count. But mainly, the inner intentions and the reasons why something is done are what truly counts.”

“Humans conveniently forgot what The Lord Jesus Christ said in the above paraphrased statement from The Gospel According to Matthew, Chapter 24, verse 24 and verse 25, which says, ‘See, I have told you beforehand.’ Obviously, one of the characteristics of human life is its very short memory and infatuation with all those ‘miraculous’ works performed by the agents of the negative state (wolves in sheep’s skin).”

“Be aware of these convincing traps! Unless you go inward several times a day, you are in danger of starting to listen to what is coming from the outside of you, shutting off the inner small voice in you. Gradually, it will become a daily habit — to listen to what is coming from without and not what your most within Spiritual Mind says. As a result, you forget to explore your intentions and motivations and soon find yourself in the slavery and bondage of the negative state. You can avoid this trap by following these procedures.”

(5)

“As a direct result of a daily exploration of one’s intentions, and knowing the fact that no one knows, except The Lord Jesus Christ, the true intentional and motivational factors of human behavior, at all costs you are to avoid judging others in any manner and way. The most common tendency of human life is to point a finger at others, to condemn them, to write them off and to judge them, doing all this from observation of their external behavior with very little, or no consideration for the inner or spiritual reasons why humans behave the way they do.”

“The important principle here is to acknowledge and to accept the fact that every human being has a right and privilege to behave or to be the way he/she chooses to behave or to be. Many important reasons exist for such choices. No one can know those reasons but each individual himself/herself (mostly unconsciously) and The Lord Jesus Christ. It is a matter of internal privacy of each individual. Unless such human behavior poses a very obvious danger to others, it needs to be accepted on face value without any attempt to judge or condemn it.”

“The proper spiritual attitude in this respect is to be considerate, understanding, accepting, appreciative, tolerant and respectful of humans the way they are without trying to impose on them anything contrary to their free will and choice (the exception is, of course, in the cases of outright habitual criminals whose purpose in life is to impose the negative state’s lifestyle

on everyone else. In such cases, it is your duty to defend yourself against such impositions).”

“To repeat again, this principle is valid as long as human behavior does not impose any danger to anyone or anything. In case it does so, it is the duty of your spiritual love to restrain such behavior by legal or other means available and acceptable in your community or country.”

“The fundamental principle here is to develop an attitude of love, kindness, gentleness and tenderness accompanied by discerning wisdom and intuition in the process of imparting these exquisite feelings to others and doing so for the sake of principle because this is the way it is supposed to be.”

“One is to petition The Lord Jesus Christ on a continuous basis for the ability to develop such an attitude and to consistently apply it in one’s life.”

“Again, this is not an easy task to achieve, taking into consideration the true nature of human life which is built on totally different premises. However, showing a strong desire, will and intention to be, to do and to relate this way makes it possible to establish a lifestyle in accordance with this principle.”

“Bear in mind, please, that if you are able to develop and firmly establish in your life all kinds of inappropriate habits, by the process of the same effort and energy, you are able not only to break those habits but to establish a behavior pattern which is totally opposite to some of your foolish and destructive habits.”

“And although it is much easier for humans to establish a negative and self-destructive habit — after all, human life by its nature is naturally inclined to go in that direction — nevertheless, this ability to do so has a positive connotation in itself. It can be used to break that habit and to develop a lifestyle in accordance with the positive spiritual principles. The energy for developing both alternatives is the same.”

“As you remember, even the dead life of the negative state exists only because of the true life of the positive state. The life energy that continuously emanates from its Absolute Source — The Lord Jesus Christ — in the case of the negative state, is being misused for maintenance of its dead life. Without this fact, no negative state could ever exist.”

“This is the reason it is said that the energy is the same for both alternatives. The difference is only in the direction of inclination. Human life was structurally fabricated in such a manner as to ‘naturally’ incline toward the dead life of the negative state. It predisposes humans toward easier development of bad and self-destructive habits than positive attitudes. In your professional position, Peter, you know very well that this is the case.”

“However, it does not mean that humans lack an ability to overcome this unfavorable situation. If this were the case, they would have no guilt or responsibility for their actions. Human life, by the necessity of its being and existence, is fully equipped with all kinds of abilities, of which the most important one is the ability to change. This ability permeates all forms of sentient life — the positive true life, the dead life of the negative state and human life.”

“You have to remember that the negative state and its human life was permitted to come to its fruition only under one condition — ability to change at any time, and retain free will and choice to do so. No other condition would be acceptable. Otherwise humans and creatures of the Hells would be locked forever in one condition or lifestyle. Such an impossible situation

would be contrary to the true Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ. If this were the case, no need for incarnation of The Lord Jesus Christ into the negative state would be necessary. And not only that, but with such an impossible situation, all work of The Lord Jesus Christ during His/Her stay on planet Zero and in all the Hells, would be futile, unproductive and leading nowhere.”

“What would be the purpose of such incarnation and entrance into the Hells if no one there would have the ability to change?”

“The continuous eternal salvation of The Lord Jesus Christ is possible only because everyone from the deepest Hells of the pseudo-creators to the humans on your planet retain this most vital and crucial gift of The Lord Jesus Christ — the ability to change or to be reborn. As your physical and spiritual brother Rev. Dr. Ivan D. Franklin likes to correctly say, Peter, ‘man inherits the necessity of rebirth.’”

“Thus, possessing and enjoying this ability, humans have no excuse to continue in their destructive and self-destructive lifestyle. They are fully changeable and able to break their habits in behaving this or that way.”

“For that reason, everyone can learn to become loving, wise, kind, gentle, considerate, understanding, tolerant, respectful, appreciative and accepting of others the way they are without judging anyone, condemning anyone, bad-mouthing anyone, writing off anyone and without pointing a finger at anyone. By learning to behave this way, you can easily survive human life.”

(6)

“As everyone in the true life of The Lord Jesus Christ’s Creation, a human being is not alone. He/she is constantly in the company of other human beings. This fact requires everyone in human life to establish a certain attitude toward and a relationship with others.”

“In the true spiritual connotation of this fact, the most proper and appropriate relationship is by the principle of a **common denominator**. What or who is the common denominator of all sentient entities, regardless of in what life they live? As is obvious from point five above, it is **the ability to choose and to change**. The ability to choose and to change is one of the most significant factors of all sentient life. It implies The Law of Freedom and Independence formulated before. Without a choice-making and change-making ability, no sentient life could sustain itself. After all, it is based on the principle of sharing, giving, receiving, reciprocating, etc., for the sake of principle. This principle requires that the life of all sentient entities be equipped with the ability to choose and to change.”

“The mystery of this situation is in the fact that the ability to choose and to change constitutes the very life of all sentient entities regardless of what type of life it is (true life, dead life or human life), and also non-sentient life which depends on this ability of sentient life.”

“This, one of the most important abilities, is a gift of life from The Lord Jesus Christ who is in Absolute State and Process of Absolute Choice and Change. This is His/Her Creative Principle. But this fact contains another great mystery. **The Lord Jesus Christ is present in everyone, regardless of how good or how evil one is, in this ability to choose and to change**. Because of this fundamental fact, **the common denominator of all sentient entities and humans is The Lord Jesus Christ**.”

“This factor establishes proper spiritual rules on which all human relationships, as well as relationships of all sentient entities, without any exception or exclusion, are to be built. The

principle of this relationship could be formulated by the following statement:"

"You relate from The Lord Jesus Christ in you to The Lord Jesus Christ in others. You love The Lord Jesus Christ in you and you love The Lord Jesus Christ in others. In such love is its true wisdom."

"This way you avoid loving and endorsing all that which is evil, false, wicked and perverted in humans. Because nothing of this adverse nature is in The Lord Jesus Christ, by loving Him/Her in you and in others, you reject the negative state with its evils and falsities."

"To love yourself and your neighbor, in fact, means nothing else but to love The Lord Jesus Christ in you and in your neighbor. By that love you endorse your true identity and the true identity of your neighbor. The true identity can come only from The Lord Jesus Christ. All other so-called identities, seen in dead life and human life, are artificially fabricated and superimposed on the true identity, imprisoning it and disabling its functions. Such false identities can be totally discarded."

"Thus, in establishing relationships with other humans, you are to consider the factor of choice and change which everyone contains and in which the presence of The Lord Jesus Christ is."

"Relating from any other position leads one into the dead life of the negative state. The negative state is built on relationships that do not stem from The Lord Jesus Christ in any position. Instead, they are built on a principle of relating 'from myself to myself in others.' 'To myself in others' means how any relationship can profit me. It also means that others are here for myself and I can use, manipulate and abuse them in any way I want to. No other considerations exist in the dead life of the negative state. This is one of the many reasons why it is dead. Others are used for one's own ulterior purposes. And because everyone is doing it to everyone, they are all dead. The only thing that gives them some semblance of living and being alive is their ability to choose and to change. In this specific ability the presence of The Lord Jesus Christ is in them. Of course, they deny and reject that presence. By doing so, they purposefully and foolishly excluded their presence in The Lord Jesus Christ, thus, making themselves dead. True aliveness and living is possible only in this reciprocal presence. One can be present in The Lord Jesus Christ, and thus alive, only if one acknowledges, confirms and accepts the fact that The Lord Jesus Christ is in him/her. No other way exists."

"Once you acknowledge His/Her presence in you, and your presence in Him/Her, you establish a common denominator for your relationships with others from The Lord Jesus Christ in you to The Lord Jesus Christ in others. By doing that you will be able to easily survive human life."

(7)

"Once you acquire full understanding of what human life is all about, as is being revealed in this book, and once you realize that all life is and exists by its choice and ability to change, you are to establish a proper attitude to yourself and to your personal and private life. This is an issue of self-treatment or self-relationship discussed extensively in the book Messages From Within."

"In connotation of this principle, the requirement is to recognize the fact that your life in human life has some kind of an important purpose. Even though you are unable to consciously know for sure what the purpose of your life in the human life is, nevertheless it has a very important purpose. Otherwise, you would not be alive and living in the condition,

situation and state you are in.”

“Since you are in the human life for a moment, your human life serves an important purpose. This awareness requires that you develop a proper and correct relationship to yourself if you are to successfully survive human life.”

“The most important aspect of this self-relation, from the standpoint of principle of choice and change, is taking full responsibility for your life and for everything that happens in it. You are on planet Zero and in human life by your own choice. Regardless of whether you consciously remember or not that this was your free choice, nevertheless, be it known to you through this New Revelation of The Lord Jesus Christ that it was your choice. Making such a free choice, you have to take responsibility for all consequences, outcomes and results of that choice. As you remember, your life cannot be validated without them.”

“Thus, in order to avoid the traps of the dead life of the negative state, you are never to blame anyone in any manner and way for anything happening in your life at any given time or at any given place, no matter how much it seems externally that someone else is a causative factor of the events of your life. Remember, by your conscious or unconscious (mostly unconscious) free choice, you put yourself in that situation or set yourself up to experience or to learn or to participate in anything happening to you. Therefore, only you are responsible for your life. No one can take that responsibility.”

“As you remember from the preceding Chapter, the dead life of the negative state is based on denial and rejection of any responsibility for anything and on blaming, accusing, implicating or setting up someone or something else for all its predicaments.”

“If you do not rightly take responsibility for all aspects of your own life, you are supporting the negative state. You will end up in its dead life.”

“As you remember, the nature of human life was fabricated in such a manner as to make it easier for its carriers to avoid responsibility and to always find some external excuse for their actions. The tendency here is to project or displace blame and responsibility on someone or something else. Projection and displacement are the natural concomitants of human life.”

“Having the ability to choose and to change, one can avoid this trap by taking full responsibility for one’s own life. This way, one can survive the human life without succumbing to its distorted, falsified and perverted nature.”

“The responsibility of this nature requires a responsible attitude, self-treatment and self-relation. First of all, one is to recognize and accept the fact of human life’s limitations, isolation and separation. Since one is a carrier of human life, one must be aware of one’s limited potentials, abilities and endowments. Second, one is to function fully within one’s potentials, abilities and limitations without either underestimating or overestimating oneself. Third, one is to be content and satisfied with what one is composed of and not to lust, crave and desire for what one does not contain within oneself. There is only so much that human life can offer. And even that much is distorted, perverted and falsified. Fourth, one is to treat oneself with respect and self-acceptance, knowing that one is a carrier of the common denominator of all — choice and change in which the presence of The Lord Jesus Christ is. And, fifth, one is to do all these things for no other reasons but for the sake of principles themselves because this is the right thing to do.”

“By doing it this way, you can successfully avoid the trap of the dead life of the negative state set within the human life. Thus, you can successfully survive human life.”

(8)

"The nature of human life is manifested in its being one-sided or lopsided, unbalanced, exaggerated and going from one extreme to another. Because of this nature, it is very important that you learn to avoid this trap by continuously balancing all aspects of your life. The process of doing this was extensively described in the book Understanding and Fulfillment of Our Earthly Life to which readers of this book are referred."

"In connotation of this point, it is necessary to establish the awareness of this fact regarding human life and to develop a tendency, a need and a desire to overcome this situation."

"In an ultimate sense, only The Lord Jesus Christ, from the position of His/Her Absolute Nature, can balance anyone's life. Therefore, you are advised to petition The Lord Jesus Christ in you (remember, He/She is present in your ability to choose and to change!) to help you to acquire a healthier attitude toward your own life. You have to learn to ask for it. The Lord Jesus Christ, respecting your freedom of choice and your own lifestyle, is prevented from doing anything for you unless you ask for it. Otherwise, He/She would be violating The Law of Freedom of Choice. A change of any situation can take place only if one chooses freely to change it."

"So, you have to petition The Lord Jesus Christ with the request, stating that you would like to live a more balanced and spiritually appropriate life."

"However, you are to be aware of the fact that, by the nature of human life itself, certain important limitations exist as far as this process of balancing is concerned."

"Full balance, as it is in the true life of the positive state, cannot ever be accomplished within human life for the simple reason that it was purposefully structured to be unbalanced. Otherwise, the negative state could not illustrate the consequences, results and outcomes of its true nature. No negative state is possible in the condition of balanceness."

"Being that you are in human life, you are in a state of imbalance itself. A choice to participate in the human life was the choice to participate in the life of imbalanceness. This situation cannot be totally transcended as long as you live in human life."

"However, it can be tempered, modified and considerably altered with tipping it toward the balanced spectrum. By paying equal attention to all aspects of your life, from the most within spiritual aspects, through intermediate mental aspects, to the most without external aspects, you will be able to overcome the devastating nature of the human life to be in a state of continuous one-sidedness or lopsidedness and imbalanceness."

"Unfortunately, the structure of human life on your planet is such that it makes one totally dependent on factors seemingly beyond one's control. You have to eat, to drink, to dress, to have a shelter, etc. All these factors require money. Money is the lifeblood of the negative state; it is false spirituality. In order to have money, you must engage in certain work activities. These activities and preoccupations with making a living, paying your bills (everything costs!), etc., rob you of most of your time and force you into a onesided, imbalanced living of your human life."

"This is a purposeful setup of the negative state for human life, to keep humans in its clutches. By the end of the day, your physical body is so tired that you drop on your bed and go to sleep or are able only to watch television, having no time or energy for taking care of any other aspects of your life. The next morning you get up and do exactly the same as you

did the previous day. And this goes on until you either drop dead, to use the expression of your language, or you retire. And you are lucky if you can retire and have enough years after that to do anything productive and balancing about your life.”

“Of course, the usual tendency after retirement is to fall into the opposite extreme. After all, human life is built on extremes. One engages oneself in all kinds of leisure activities and types of hobbies without considering any other aspect of one’s life.”

“In order to avoid this situation, at least to a certain extent, one is to train oneself in using spare time — during the lunch, mid-morning and mid-afternoon work breaks, and very early in the morning, as well as shortly after work, for going inward and exploring the needs of other aspects of one’s life in a manner described in the book *Understanding and Fulfillment of Our Earthly Life*.”

“This is the only way you can avoid the trap of the negative state ingrained into the human life. Of course, such practices in attempting to balance your life as much as possible under the circumstances and within the limitations of human life will have much greater value after your departure from human life. These practices are establishing a style of life congruent to the nature of the true life of the positive state, allowing one to enter it in the most accelerated manner without the need to linger for too long in the intermediate world of spirits. Thus, to do this for the sake of principles themselves has many advantages of an eternal nature and not only for the limited human life. This is one of the ways to survive human life.”

(9)

“In comparison with the true life, life in the human life is complicated and difficult. This situation stems from the fact that human life is restricted, isolated and separated from everything and everyone else in other manifestations of life. Humans are bound to a life which is barely suitable to survive on planet Zero. Only the atmospheric, ecological and biological-chemical conditions of its body are conducive to maintain human life alive and living. No other states and conditions are suitable for human life. Humans cannot leave their planet without their physical bodies being annihilated by the vacuum of space or by the existing conditions on the other planets, even of their own solar system. In order to survive under those conditions, they must wear very cumbersome devices which limit their movements and activities even more.”

“These, and many other difficulties and complications, are specific to the human life.”

“In order not to complicate and make it even more difficult, one is advised to do only as much as one is endowed to do without putting one’s efforts and energies into something that one has no endowment for. The purpose here is to concentrate all of one’s life energies on developing one’s potentials and endowments to the fullest of their capacity without expecting more than can be accomplished within the natural limitations of one’s life.”

“In the connotation of this point, the issue is twofold: First, to determine how, for what and for whom these endowments, abilities and life energies are spent. Are they serving any good purpose? Or are they utilized for perpetuation of the negative state? Are they actualized for the sake of principles with good and positive intent, for the right reasons and proper motivation? Or are they misused in the services of evils and falsities which lead one into the dead life of the negative state?”

“Secondly, does one perform one’s everyday duties and obligations, within one’s endowments, abilities and gifts, to the fullest of one’s potential, giving them undivided attention and performing them with delight and pleasure for the sake of principle? Or are they

a drag, a bore, a routine and a monotony of everyday living that one must perform in order to survive?”

“The proper spiritual approach, which undermines the negative aspects of human life, giving it some positive connotation, is to do one’s best in any situation, work, job, assignment, duty or whatever one has for the sake of principle because this is the right way and the way it is supposed to be. If one does that, one is successfully surviving human life and at the same time, one is building a good and solid foundation for the entrance into the true life after leaving the human life behind. In order to develop this style of life, one must carefully evaluate one’s life regarding this issue and see what can be done to improve one’s situation in this respect.”

“By performing faithfully one’s life duties and obligations for the sake of principles, one makes one’s life less difficult and less complicated. This makes it more survivable.”

(10)

“One of the major factors that keeps the dead life of the negative state alive is its rigidity and intolerance toward any new ideas, concepts and changes. The negative state likes to be the way it is. The only direction it tolerates is a direction of becoming more negative. To be more negative does not constitute any change or difference. Evil and falsity is evil and false no matter in what condition or degree. In other words, the nature of the negative state is to be close-minded.”

“Human life was structured in such a manner as to make it very difficult or very slow in bringing about any significant change, particularly and mainly within the human mind and in human attitudes, behaviors and belief systems, where the change really counts. The only change and progress the negative state and human life support and encourage is a technological and scientific one because it is of the external nature only and it serves the purpose of the negative state — to spread its sphere of influence as far and as deep as possible.”

“Because of this nature of human life, it is very difficult for humans to change their views, opinions, belief systems, religions, philosophies or whatever they have in this respect. They tend to cling very rigidly to their adopted system. By doing that, they become close-minded and, very often, hateful toward anything which is not part of their belief system. You can see this in the entire history of human life during which humans continuously kill each other for the expressing of, or believing in, some different ideas or religion or God or whatever they have. This is a very dangerous situation. By being this way, humans have little chance to get out of the clutches of the negative state and its dead life. In this manner humans appropriate to themselves the negative state’s lifestyle which will automatically condemn them to the Hells. In order to avoid this situation, you are advised to do two things:“

“First, always keep your mind open, being flexible and ready to change at any time there is a need. Second, never identify yourself rigidly with any views, opinions, religions and belief systems existing in human life which close you off from the possibility of spiritual progression and acquirement and understanding of the real truth.”

“As you remember, the reality of the true life is in a continuous process of change, modification, newness and overall progression. It does not stagnate as the negative state does. Rigid, unchangeable, dogmatic and doctrinal views, concepts and ideas are the life of the negative state. They never change in this respect. Therefore, they are stagnant and produced by the dead life of the negative state. They exclude the presence of The Lord Jesus Christ, particularly in His/Her revolutionary New Nature.”

“One of the major factors, which drives the negative state insane and furious, is the change in The Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ Himself/ Herself. It opposes, denies and rejects this change in a most vicious and violent manner because it undermines the very life of the negative state — its rigidity and stagnancy.”

“The acceptance of The New Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ signifies that you will have your mind open and ready to perceive, discern, understand and receive new aspects of The Absolute Truth of The Lord Jesus Christ as He/She reveals them in progressive steps.”

“This is the most effective, efficient and successful way of joyfully surviving human life and its spiritual, mental and genetic jungle.”

(11)

“As mentioned several times before, one of the major characteristics of human life is its double standards and contradictions on which it is built.”

“Only humans are able to think one thing and to say just the opposite; to feel one thing and to express the opposite; to know what is proper and right for them and yet to behave contrary to that knowledge; to know what is good and true and yet to continue to be evil and live the life of falsities. No other sentient entities anywhere have this abomination.”

“This is the most difficult issue for human life and its carriers. Humans are so used to this condition that no possibility of another mode of living is conceivable to them. When they come to the spiritual world after the physical death of their bodies, they are shocked out of their wits, so-to-speak, to discover that they no longer can hide their true nature and the way they think, feel and intend. Everything is open there.”

“Because they have no longer any possibility for concealment of their true intentions, thoughts and feelings, many of them become furious and rebel against such an arrangement. By doing that, they automatically choose to go to some of the Hells where creatures of similar nature form their own society, trying their worst to continue in a deceptive mode of their previous human life. This is one of the most stubborn stumbling blocks in human ability to spiritually progress.”

“The true life of the positive state does not tolerate double standards and contradictions. You cannot even come into close proximity to the true life with that typical human’s attitude.”

“And yet, this attitude is built directly into the structure of the human mind and all genes of its nervous system. Humans are constrained, wired or patterned that way from the very first moment of their conception. They know no other life. They have no experiential living under any other condition. From very early childhood, actually from the very first day of their physical birth, they are trained to conceal their true thoughts, feelings, emotions and intentions and to pretend that they are thinking, feeling and intending something else. They are conditioned, brainwashed or suggested to behave this way. ‘It is not nice to express your feelings! It is not proper for a man to cry! It is not nice to say things like that!’ Statements like these accompany human life from the cradle to the grave.”

“So, humans, in order to survive, learn to pretend and to be hypocritical. For them to be like that is as natural as breathing. At one point, they are so well-trained in this mode of life that they no longer notice the discrepancies, contradictions, pretensions and double standards of their lives.”

“Once it comes to this point, the situation for them becomes spiritually dangerous. It becomes a sure road into the dead life of the negative state.”

“In order to avoid this most vicious, cunning and effective trap, one must retrain oneself to align one’s feelings, thoughts, emotions and intentions with one’s behaviors, acts and attitudes. Now, this is the most difficult task of all. If you are obliged to express your true feelings and thoughts about your boss, for example, whom you cannot stand and who constantly gets on your nerves, you might lose your job and livelihood. You will not be able to survive like that.”

“This is the reason why you must retrain the mode of your thinking and feeling as indicated above. If you begin to think and to feel about other humans, including your boss, in positive and good terms, regardless of how evil and bad they are, regardless of how justified you are from the external consideration, there will be no need for you to pretend anything. The way to establish this kind of unification of all aspects of your mind and behavior is to relate to other humans in the manner described above in point Number Six. You love them and think positively about them for the sake of The Lord Jesus Christ in them — in their ability to choose and to change. Thus, all your attention will be redirected to The Lord Jesus Christ, instead of to their negative personalities and ugly behaviors.”

“Again, this is not easy to do and it requires a lot of effort. But, if you ask for help from The Lord Jesus Christ in you, you will succeed in this effort. However, as in everything else, the request must be made for no other reason but for the sake of principle itself because it is the right way and proper way and this is the way it is supposed to be. Otherwise, it will not work.”

“In this respect, it is advisable to ask The Lord Jesus Christ to help you to first establish a permanent attitude of doing things only for the sake of spiritual principles themselves. That way, you will avoid pitfalls of the negative state in asking for things for the sake of something else.”

“This point shows you how important it is to work on retraining yourself in the mode of your thinking, feeling, willing, intending and behaving in order to survive the human life and to avoid at all cost its contradictions, pretensions, double standards and hypocrisies.”

(12)

“Another trap of the dead life of the negative state for human life is human tendencies to build all kinds of traditions, customs, cultures, religions, institutions and organizations that become holy in themselves. Once such entities are established, they take over human life and influence it in all its aspects, dictating their rules, prohibitions, taboos and numerous restrictions that limit human life in its impressions and expressions to an extreme degree.”

“Because humans have no access to their spiritual mind or to the true life of the positive state, they are born into total ignorance and have to be taught from the outside. Thus, they have no access to the laws, regulations and principles which are ingrained into every positive entity from the very first moment of its conception. The positive sentient entities do not need anyone to tell them what to do because they know it from within themselves from the very moment of their personal breath of life.”

“It is not so for humans. They know consciously nothing unless first taught from without. This is an unusual, unnatural, abnormal, pathological, impossible and peculiar arrangement of the human life. As mentioned many times before, human life was structured to be exactly this way in order to illustrate the life of ignorance. With this kind of arrangement, it becomes very natural for humans to gather together and formally organize, developing rules and regulations

by which they are obliged to abide. If not, they are punished.”

“Thus, their monstrous systems become a trap for them, limiting them even more in all respects of the human life itself. It is not enough that humans are limited, separated and isolated in their being and existence, they have to get together and organize themselves in all kinds of entities and further limit, restrict and enslave themselves to those entities with all their ridiculous rules, bylaws, prescriptions, expressions, taboos and whatever they have. By doing that, humans entrap themselves even more in the dead life of the negative state. This is doubly or triply true about human religious organizations and churchianity that became a den of demons, devils, Satans and all the negative spirits and agents of the negative state.”

“In order to survive this kind of human life, you are advised to dissociate yourself as much as possible from all human institutions and organizations, particularly of a religious nature, and limit your membership only to those which are necessary for your survival and which are neutral or limited to your profession or occupation. In this respect you are to ask The Lord Jesus Christ in you to advise you regarding which organizations are safe for you to belong to, if any at all.”

“However, it is hereby proclaimed by The Lord Jesus Christ that, as of this date, belonging to any human religious organization or church, no matter what kind it is, may be dangerous to your spiritual health. None of them worship, support or teach about The True New Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ, the only one on which the true spiritual life can be built. This is particularly true for someone who reads this book. If anyone, even after reading this book, will still cling to the old human religious traditions, whatever they may be, it will become a dangerous spiritual trap for that individual.”

“For your own sake, for the sake of survival of the human life, and for the sake of your after-human life, you are advised to dissociate yourself completely from all traditional religions. Of course, the choice is yours. So are the consequences.”

(13)

“As you remember from before, one of the characteristics of human life is its uncertainty about anything. If you look hard at the human life, the only certainty in it is the inevitability of human death. This is a gloomy outlook because no one knows for sure what happens after death. Many humans believe that life begins and ends with their life on planet Zero. They reject or deny the notion of life after human life. On the other hand, those who do believe in such an afterlife have, as in everything else in typical human life, a very contradictory notion about it. Christians believe differently from Buddhists; Buddhists from Muslims; Muslims from Hindus; etc. Then, there are those numerous reports on life after death events by humans who were clinically dead and returned back to the human life, making all kinds of claims about their particular experiences. None of these claims or various scientific or religious beliefs can be validated or verified by any means available to humans.”

“Thus, this situation, instead of bringing some degree of certainty into this issue, brings even more uncertainty and confusion.”

“Because of that, even humans who firmly believe in life after human life do nothing or very little about their eternal future. Their only preoccupation is with their physical life on planet Zero. They live their human life as though they will never live again. This is a typical contradiction of human life — to verbally express something but to behave in a completely contradictory manner to that expression. They believe in after-human life but they behave and act as though nothing of that nature exists.”

“The uncertainty of human life in this, as well as in all its other aspects, was purposefully built into the very fabric of human life.”

“If humans were to be certain, particularly in the matter of what to expect after they leave behind their human life, they would pay more attention to their lives and would tend to balance more readily their human life. This would be a deadly situation for the negative state because not many humans would want to go along with a lifestyle leading to the dead life.”

“But having very little or no certainty that anything like this exists, humans naturally pay very little or no attention to what is to come after the death of their corporeal body. They do not concern themselves with that matter. And if they do, it is only on a temporary basis, around the time when someone close to them dies or when they get seriously ill. But as days go by, they gradually forget those thoughts and they are right back into the old habits of doing nothing constructive for their future life after human life. In this way, they are fully subservient to the desires of the negative state. In order to avoid this dangerous trap, you are advised to consider all factors of your life, including the factor of your future life after human life or after the death of your physical or corporeal body.”

“Humans fallaciously believe that thinking about their physical death is very unhealthy. From the position they look upon the phenomenon of death, of course, it is unhealthy. They look upon it from the standpoint of fear, anxiety, worries, thinking that it will be the end of everything with which they are so familiar and comfortable. So they carefully avoid this subject.”

“In considering the factor of life after human life, you are advised to look on it from a totally different perspective. First of all, you are to believe that there is a life after human life with a full preservation of your self-awareness, your ‘I am’ and all your thoughts, feelings, affections, attitudes, tendencies and inclinations. You lose nothing but gain everything. The only thing you lose is the limitation, isolation and separation of human life and all its uncertainties, contradictions and double standards, as well as all your worthless material possessions.”

“Second, looking on that life from this perspective, you begin to look forward to that moment when you will be freed from the human life. But, at the same time, you do everything to preserve your human life, if necessary, so that you fulfill the purpose of your human life from the standpoint of your own assignment. How well you did your best during your human life will determine your position at the entrance into the other life. Thus, you live your human life fully, in accordance with the principles outlined here, not that much for the sake of human life itself, which is transient and perishable, but for the sake of the eternal life. For the sake of the eternal life is based on doing things for the sake of principles.”

“For this reason, in order to avoid the trap of human life, and to effectively survive it, you are advised to do everything in your life from the standpoint of your eternal life. You are to consider carefully how your life, during the human life of its phase, will influence your future destiny after human life. And because that destiny is determined by the factor of how much or how little you do anything for the sake of principles, only if you strive and do your best to do everything for the sake of principles, for the sake of The Lord Jesus Christ and all others, you have nothing to be afraid of. You will survive human life without any complications.”

(14)

“From the spiritual standpoint, one of the most devastating tendencies of human life is manipulation, use, misuse and abuse of life resources and the spiritual principles of the true life for inappropriate purposes.”

“As you know, human life was the result of manipulation, use, misuse and abuse of the spiritual principles of the true life and the new life-making process. Because human life was fabricated by such an abnormal procedure, it carries within itself the same tendencies.”

“When you are built on certain procedures and processes, those procedures and processes become the nature and source of your life. Thus, you can say for certain that the source and nature of human life is a tendency to be manipulative, cunning and deviant, and to use, misuse and abuse everything and everyone possible that is in its reach. This pseudo-principle of human life can be called the number one ‘spiritual’ principle by which human life is alive and living.”

“It is reflected in all human activities without exception or exclusion. The most prominent and the most dangerous areas of the human life, in which this principle is consistently applied, are human religion and human sexuality.”

“Numerous religions with all their respective numerous sects and various cultist and spiritualistic trends are a good example of this tendency. They arrogantly and self-righteously manipulate, use, misuse and abuse various spiritual principles in a manner and way as to suit their own ulterior purposes. Of course, the main purpose of this tendency is to control and to have power over others. So, they interpret various spiritual principles in such a manner as to achieve their main goal in acquiring this control and establishing their power over all. They usually proclaim that all other religions, sects, cults, etc., are misleading and false and that only they have the proper understanding and application of truth. Of course, all others claim exactly the same. As a result, you have on your planet continuous bloody and doctrinal disputes, quarrels, struggles and ‘holy’ wars among all of them.”

“There is nothing more spiritually dangerous than to utilize spiritual principles for such negative purposes. To lust for control and power over others means to rob The Lord Jesus Christ of His/Her eternal rights and privileges. This robbery closes off the access to the true perception, understanding, acknowledgment, acceptance and proper application of The Divine Truth. If you do not have Divine Truth, you are spiritually blind and you become spiritually dead. Thus, you end up in the dead life of the negative state — the Hells.”

“The worst thing that can ever happen is to manipulate, use, abuse and misuse others, and to want to control and have power over them, in the name of God or The Lord Jesus Christ. This Name becomes a shield behind which such manipulations hide in order to pursue their atrocious goals.”

“The dead life of the negative state is built on a factor of control and power. Because the negative state denies and rejects the true power of The Lord Jesus Christ and His/Her Absolute control, which is based solely on freedom of choice, it usurps that power and control for itself, based solely on force, duress and imposition.”

“Whereas The Lord Jesus Christ never imposes His/Her control and power on anyone, respecting their freedom of choice, the negative state rules its subjects by exhibiting power and control over them through the means of imposition, force, duress, threats, manipulation, use, abuse, misuse, punishment and guilt. And, in human life, it does all these things mostly in the name of God, Allah, Buddha, Krishna, Jesus Christ or whatever names humans are using.”

“Now, the tendency to manipulate, use, misuse and abuse by force, cunning persuasions and similar means is not limited to the religious life only. You can detect it in all aspects of human life. Everything tends to be used for the purpose of control and power.”

“The most prevalent area, besides religions, in which this tendency is exhibited, is the area of human sexual relationships. In this respect, sexuality is used to manipulate others in order to dominate them, to control them and to have power over them. The spiritual danger of this situation lies in the fact that sexual relationships are the most private, intimate and personal experiences that penetrate all aspects of one’s mind. It is much easier to enslave someone spiritually and mentally through sexual tools than by some more external and less potent means.”

“Very often the tendency to use sexuality for this abominable purpose is of an unconscious nature. Frequently, humans do not realize that they approach each other sexually solely for this ulterior purpose.”

“The issue and concept of adultery and fornication does not relate to anything else but to use either spiritual principles, as churches do, or sexuality, as most humans do, for such purposes. Of course, all scholars and agents of the negative state convincingly interpret the issue of adultery and fornication in such a manner as to mislead humans into believing that any sexual intercourse other than in the marital bond and for the preservation of the species is adulterous and fornicatory. This way they can control, dominate and have power over others in a much more potent and effective manner.”

“But let it be known now by the true spiritual fact, as revealed in The New Revelation, that adultery and fornication have no other connotation than the practice of spiritual principles, or any principles for that matter, and sexuality, or any other factors for that matter, for the purpose of controlling, dominating, manipulating, using, abusing and misusing others and to have power over them for one’s own sake or for any ulterior reason or any reasons at all. This is true, regardless of in what condition and situation it happens — marriage or no marriage, religion or no religion, church or no church, legal laws or no legal laws, etc.”

“From the standpoint of this problem, the issue of self-exploration, as mentioned above, becomes even more urgent and important than ever.”

“In order to avoid this devastating trap of the human life, placed in it by the dead life of the negative state, one must carefully explore one’s intentions and motivations with which one approaches any relationship and situation. One particularly needs to question to what extent one established a tendency toward this type of negative, or if you want to call it, adulterous and fornicatory behavior, in whatever situation of one’s life — be it sexual relationships or any others.”

“Because these tendencies are woven into the very fabric or structure of human life, and because you are all momentary carriers of that life, you inevitably all have such tendencies for manipulation, use, abuse, misuse, control, domination and hunger for power. Some more than others. Therefore, you all need to be on constant guard against these tendencies so that you do not become their culprits and, ultimately, the slaves of the negative state.”

“First of all, being humans, you need to acknowledge that you have such tendencies whether you are or are not consciously aware of them. Remember, in many instances, these are unconscious tendencies. The negative state likes to operate secretly, from behind the scene, so as not to be exposed and subsequently rejected.”

“Second, you need to develop aversive feelings within yourself toward having such tendencies.”

“Third, you are advised to ask The Lord Jesus Christ within you to help you to acquire this realization and to develop such aversions and to overcome such tendencies or, at least, to be in full control of them instead of being controlled by them.”

“Fourth, you need to develop countermeasures against such tendencies. The very moment such tendencies are detected, you strongly, consciously and loudly disagree with them, telling yourself that they are not yours but that they are imposed on you by the negative state. Therefore, you are referring them back to their owners, because you do not want to have anything to do with these tendencies. After that, ask The Lord Jesus Christ to fill you with spiritually proper attitudes, feelings, thoughts, intentions, motivations and behaviors in relating to others from the position of unconditional love and wisdom for the sake of principles, for the sake of The Lord Jesus Christ and for the sake of others.”

“As you remember, to do it for this sake, also means to do it for your own sake. By doing it for the sake of The Lord Jesus Christ and others, you validate your true life, buried deeply within you, in the recesses of your most within Spiritual Mind, thus, becoming truly yourself and an integral part of that true life in the positive state of Creation. Therefore, you have done it also for your own sake. This validation becomes one of the best means for survival of the human life, being that human life is poisonous and dangerous to your true life.”

“In your sexual life, in order to avoid the trap of human life, from now on, you are to be sexually involved only with such individuals of the opposite sex who fully and completely accept into their heart The New Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ. No other sexual involvement will be productive. In fact, it will become spiritually dangerous for you. A woman or a man of The Lord Jesus Christ will never use sexuality for manipulation, use, abuse or misuse of others or for controlling them or having power over them. At the same time, he or she will have no need to get sexually involved with someone who does not accept The Lord Jesus Christ in His/Her true New Nature. By doing it this way, you will be able to survive human life without too many problems.”

(15)

“And, finally, please, be aware, that ***human life is a road compactly packed with stumbling blocks. Anyone traveling that road, no matter for what reason and purpose, no matter with what intent and motivation, will inevitably stumble and fall down not only once but many times over.***”

“It is impossible to completely and successfully avoid these stumbling blocks placed there so conveniently by the negative state and by the very nature of human life. No one knows this to be the truth better than The Lord Jesus Christ who personally experienced human life. He/She understands very well the predicaments of the human life and gladly forgives and overlooks the falls and stumbles of most of you.”

“However, in order to activate this forgiveness and to be overlooked by The Lord Jesus Christ, you need first to acknowledge that this is the case. Second, you need to straighten up when you stumble or get up when you fall. Unfortunately, most humans have a dangerous tendency to stay in the same position or to continue lying down where they fell. In this case, they succumb to the negative state and become comfortable with their grave and miserable situation. They have not survived human life.”

“Therefore, you are encouraged to be brave and persistent and not to be discouraged and feel bad when you stumble or fall down. Instead, straighten up or get up and continue on your journey through the perils of The Death Valley of human life. Do not allow human life to drag you down and to have the upper hand over you.”

“Whenever you stumble or fall down, immediately confess your predicaments to The Lord Jesus Christ and cry for help, asking Him/Her to help you to get up and continue on your road with courage, boldness and braveness, overcoming all stumbling blocks on your way to your true home, out of human life.”

“One of the aspects of the meaning of ‘bearing one’s cross’ is contained in this effort. To bear your cross also means to patiently continue straightening up and getting up each time you stumble or fall down and to proceed with your life for the sake of principles themselves. By doing that you will survive human life.”

Moreover, on March 10, 1988, the word of The Lord Jesus Christ came to me, saying:

“Some readers of the previous books of The New Revelation, transmitted through you, Peter, complained that the content of The New Revelation is a gloomy and depressing one, dealing only with negativity. Humans like that do not like to face the reality of the negative state. They would rather not hear about it, not talk about it and not see its presence around them and in them. Why should one be preoccupied with the negative state? ‘Let us go on with our lives without paying any attention to any negativity or whether it is somewhere out there posing danger for us. If we pay no attention to the beast, the beast will let us alone. We are safe.’ Now, all humans of this nature have these kinds of thoughts and feelings.”

“These are very dangerous thoughts and feelings. The negative state loves these kinds of thoughts and feelings. After all, it was the negative state that implanted them into their thinking and feelings. It never wants to come to human awareness so that it can rule, control and dominate their lives without any restrictions or hindrances. The truth about the negative state and the true origin and nature of human life has to come out if the negative state is ever to be eliminated.”

“But, in view of these revealed facts, is there anything positive at all about human life?”

“Basically, there are four elements in human life that have some positive connotation. However, you have to remember that even these elements are considerably distorted, perverted and falsified or, at least, kept so isolated, separated and enclosed from the rest of the content of human life, that their presence is almost non-detectable.”

“How can humans know what is positive in human life if they have no foundation on which they would be able to compare their positive to some other life forms’ positiveness? The only comparison they have is within human life itself. This is only a continuous mode of comparison. No discrete mode of comparison for humans is available. They can only compare the achievements and accomplishments of one human being against another one. This mode is a self-feeding loop that never comes out of its own circle.”

“In order to justify this condition, it is better to proclaim that no other life but human life exists. That way, human life itself is a value that can be compared against itself. No other criterion for such valuation exists.”

“This is circular logic. This is the way of rationalization and excuse of all human atrocities and abominations that humans have been committing in the process of their history since the cavehuman to the present time.”

“Thus, the only way some positive elements of human life, even though distorted, perverted and falsified, can be properly detected is by a direct revelation from The Lord Jesus Christ,

who knows exactly what human life is all about.”

“The first positive element of human life is that every human carries within himself/herself a Spiritual Mind, a seat of his/her ‘I am’ and the presence of The Lord Jesus Christ. From it every human lives and is alive (remember, to be alive is to have life — this is a state of life; to live is being in the process of living — this is the process of life. The terms ‘to live’ and ‘to be alive,’ in this connotation, are not interchangeable as the grammatical rules of the English language would require).”

“This is the most positive aspect of human life, as well as of any sentient life at all. However, in the connotation of human life, this element, stemming from the genes of the original people on your planet, is so isolated, restricted, separated and trapped within the human system that the vast majority of humans never function from the position of this element. Most of them do not even know that they have this element within themselves. The only thing available to them from this element is an obscure awareness of their individual ‘I am.’ But what that ‘I am’ is, what its structure and dynamic is, how it feels, functions and lives, they have no idea whatsoever. Many of them do not even bother to ask themselves these questions.”

“The second positive element of human life, which it has in common with any type of sentient life, is that humans have an inherent ability and gift to freely choose and to change. As mentioned before, this equipment is required for any life to come into its being and existence.”

“However, by the nature of human life itself, this ability in humans is restricted and limited by their choice to be ignorant and to have unconscious processes. What kind of a choice can you make if you are ignorant of all available alternatives for choice-making and if you restrict your freedom of choice in order to make it very difficult for you to change? This is exactly what human life is all about. Thus, the choice was to have very little choice and very limited opportunities to change that choice. Because of this choice, every human must live out his/her human life in order to illustrate a unique lifestyle congruent to that choice.”

“However, internally, buried in the human most within Spiritual Mind, the ability to choose and to change itself is fully preserved. This is a very crucial state of the human condition which was, is and will be utilized by The Lord Jesus Christ to save humans from the human life.”

“The third positive element of human life stems from the most within Spiritual Mind. It occasionally breaks through and takes a form of human intuition for perception, sense and understanding of the real truth. Swedenborg called this ability of humans to be rational. This is the only obvious ability that differentiates humans from non-sentient life forms. However, this ability is blocked by all those endless preoccupations and identities of humans with conventions, customs, traditions, expectations, looking outward, wanting to please and to be accepted and similar things, to such an extent that most humans disregard the voice of their intuition and rationality and go against that voice. Again, this ability is used by The Lord Jesus Christ to save humans from themselves.”

“The fourth positive element of human life is human’s ability to love, to care, to feel compassion and to have empathy. This ability continuously radiates from the presence of The Lord Jesus Christ in humans. Thus, it is not specifically theirs but The Lord Jesus Christ’s.”

“In actuality, all four positive elements of human life are not of human life itself, but are placed in it by The Lord Jesus Christ in order to moderate, temper, control and check the suicidal and homicidal tendencies of human life.”

"In this connotation, being that these major four positive elements and all their derivatives are not inherently and typically human, but added to the human life for purely spiritual reasons, nothing truly positive and good can be found in human life in itself and by itself. After all, human life was fabricated for an entirely different purpose than to show off these four positive elements. Every sentient entity contains them, knows them, experiences them and lives them. Nothing new can be learned from such elements because they are an integral part of any sentient life."

"You have to understand, and this is repeated again and again, that human life was produced for the purpose of illustrating vividly, experientially and concretely what life would be like if it were to derive from a totally different source, different from that of The Lord Jesus Christ and His/Her true spiritual principles or from distorted, falsified and perverted spiritual principles and their false god. No other purpose for human life existed, exists or will ever exist."

"Once you realize and accept this, the entire human life will appear to you in an entirely different perspective."

"It is the negative state that tries to ascribe to the human life conditions, states, attributes and characteristics that are not human or of the human life. How else can it justify, excuse and rationalize its being and existence? The negative state uses these four positive elements, which come from The Lord Jesus Christ, in order to prove how good, virtuous and positive it is."

"This is the propaganda of the negative state to keep humans right where they are — under the control, domination and power of the negative state. If you can be so good, so loving, so rational, so logical, so intuitive, so aware of yourself during your human life, why change? Things are just fine the way they are. Do not spoil this condition by trying to change it."

"As you see, the favorite pastime of the negative state is to ascribe to itself characteristics, traits, attributes, attitudes and behaviors it does not have. This way it can cheat humans into believing that human life contains these elements either by its very nature (you see, we made it that way!) or by a 'gracious' endowment of some kind of false god — the negative state — considered to be a real God since he is giving you such nice elements."

"This is a very dangerous trap. It robs humans from wanting to use their abilities to choose something else and to change. After all, why choose something else if you have everything that you need in human life itself?"

"This attitude denies and rejects the fact that the source of these four positive elements is The Lord Jesus Christ. Thus, it closes the way for contact, interaction and proper relationship with Him/Her. This is one of the many effective ways the negative state keeps humans away from true spirituality and from the acceptance of The True New Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ."

"Do not fall into this trap. Look at the human life in its proper perspective, as revealed in this book, and turn yourself toward the true source of those four elements — The Lord Jesus Christ — acknowledging His/Her presence, admitting to Him/Her that you fully recognize Him/Her to be the source of everything positive, rational and good in you and accept Him/Her into your heart as your personal, private and intimate parent, friend and God Lord The Most High."

"By doing that you will avoid all traps and blocks of the negative state ingrained into the

human life, and you will successfully survive the human life, coming out of it as a winner and a master of your life.”

“He/She who has ears to hear, let him/her hear what The Lord Jesus Christ reveals in this Chapter.”

CHAPTER FOURTEEN

THE IMPACT OF THE NEW NATURE OF THE LORD JESUS CHRIST ON CREATION, THE ZONE OF DISPLACEMENT AND HUMAN LIFE

On March 12, 1988, during the morning hours, the word of The Lord Jesus Christ came to me, saying,

“It is only logical to assume that, if any life at all is sustained by The Absolute Life of The Absolute Being and Absolute Existence of Creation, any change in Its Absolute Nature will have an inevitably tremendous impact on everything alive and living in any form, condition, state, process, location, time and place. Some aspects of this impact were mentioned before.”

“It was indicated that The New Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ — The Creator — requires a different approach in relating to Him/Her by sentient entities. It was pointed out that you cannot very well relate to something entirely new from the old position. The old ways of relating are not capable of making proper contact with something that needs an entirely different quality of that contact.”

“In order to rectify this situation, The Lord Jesus Christ, from the position of His/Her New Nature, initiated a process of change and transformation of all who are willing to accept these facts. This process is manifold and multilevel. It entails restructuring of all aspects of the sentient mind in order to bring it into an alignment with The New Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ.”

“As mentioned previously, this process follows the multiversal law of all directions and occurrences — from within to without. Thus, the changes and transformations are initiated in the most within state of Creation — the spiritual world of heaven first.”

“After the successful completion of this task in the most within state, from that position, the process of change and transformation is initiated in the intermediate state of Creation — the world of spirits.”

“The structure of Creation does not allow bypassing the levels or directly implementing any change on any other level before such a change takes place on the most within level. The very life of all other levels of being and existence depends totally on what is going on in the most within level. Therefore, if no ideas of change and transformation are produced on the innermost level and if no subsequent change takes place on that level, neither can it happen on any other level.”

“The reason for this important spiritual fact is that none of the other levels, by their very structure and nature, can produce or initiate such ideas and subsequent changes, relevant to them, in themselves and by themselves. It is not their function.”

“Thus, in order to generate any change and transformation on other levels, such change and transformation must take place first on the innermost level. From the ideas of that change and transformation, subsequent change and transformation of all other levels can take

place.”

“Of course, the same is true about the changes and transformation of the external level of Creation. Nothing can be initiated on that level until the process on the intermediate level is completed first. The functions, behaviors and actions of the external level totally depend on the mental processes of the intermediate level which motivate their occurrences.”

“And, although a certain degree of synchronicity exists among all these occurrences on all levels, the process, nevertheless, is discretely sequential. This is the way things happen in the positive state of Creation.”

“As you know, the dead life of the negative state depends on fallout and waste expelled from the positive state. Because of this dependence factor, there is a discretely sequential synchronicity of the impact these changes and transformations will have on the inhabitants of the Zone of Displacement.”

“Thus, the initiation of ideas of the positive change and transformation in the most within state of Creation triggers the initiation of the ideas of rejection and denial of this process in the most low level of The Zone of Displacement.”

“However, the necessity to countermand these new ideas requires the change and transmogrification of all in the most low of the Hells. They are furious about it because their old ideas, concepts and tools are totally impotent against the new ideas of the most within in the positive state. So, they must come up with some new ideas, concepts and tools that match in a negative sense the new ideas of the most within of the positive state. In the process of acquiring such ideas, they inadvertently change and transmogrify themselves into something different — usually more ugly, mean, evil and false conditions. This process in them subsequently initiates the changes and transformation of their own intermediate level and from that level of their own external level. As you see, there is a direct correspondence between the structure of the true Creation and the Zone of Displacement, this Zone being the exact opposite of the true Creation in a sense of antipodes — where the head should be, there are the feet of the negative state; and the feet take the position of its head. Thus, a point of contact between them is at their heels and soles of the feet.”

“In human life on planet Zero, the impact of this nature is materialized last.”

“After all changes and transformations in the positive state and after all changes and transmogrifications in the negative state take place and are successfully completed, their consequences, results and outcomes are then manifested, illustrated and concretized in the human life on planet Zero. As you remember, human life was fabricated exactly for that purpose. Therefore, nothing in human life can ever be initiated in itself and by itself. ***Human life is a reflection of, a response and a reaction to all actions taking place elsewhere.***”

“Because human life is basically a neutral zone, both the agents of the positive state (in minority) and the agents of the negative state (in majority) are present there. The changes and transformations that take place in the positive state are reflected in, responded and reacted to in the life of the agents of the positive state. The similar process in the negative state is reflected in, responded and reacted to in the life of the agents of the negative state. By illustrating these changes, the agents of the respective states provide all others with opportunities to make a choice in either direction.”

“Remember, humans need such illustrations because they are born into ignorance and unconsciousness and, by their very nature, they must learn from the outside by concrete,

illustrative examples. Those examples are provided by the mentioned agents. The more choices are made toward the negative state, as is the case with humans on your planet, the lesser number of the agents of the positive state and the greater number of the agents of the negative state. Once the final choice is made for the negative state entirely, the agents of the positive state will be withdrawn from your planet so that the full illustration of the nature of the negative state in its consequences, outcomes and results can be realized.”

“Now, this is the reason why in human life any response to any changes anywhere is delayed sometimes for thousands or even millions of years in your time, until these changes are fully completed elsewhere.”

“In general, this is how the process of change runs its course. Of course, this description talks about ‘how’ the process runs from the observation standpoint but not ‘why’ and ‘what.’ Why do the changes have to take place and when they do take place, what is being changed? The answer to the question of ‘why’ can be found in The Law of Spiritual Progression and Change defined in Chapter Ten of this book. In reality, the need for a change is structurally ingrained in the nature of life itself. This is how life sustains its living.”

“As you remember, The Absolute Source of Life — The Lord Jesus Christ — releases life into its relative state and condition in gradual steps. Each step represents a new change requiring an accommodation, transformation, adjustment and modification of the old or previous step. These changes are, of course, reflected in the lifestyle of the carriers of various steps of the life’s manifestation. The changes in the negative state are inadvertently triggered by the changes in the positive state due to the above-mentioned dependence factor. The changes in human life are reflections of either.”

“The answer to the question of ‘what is being changed,’ is more complex. It entirely depends on the quality and content of the idea for the next step, which is to succeed the previous one, released from The Absolute Life of The Lord Jesus Christ.”

“What can be fundamentally more impactful than an idea, released to Creation, about the structural change of The Very Nature of The Lord God Most High into the fullness of The Lord Jesus Christ? You have to remember, we are dealing here with the Nature of The Absolute Change. Because The Most High was Absolute, His/Her change cannot be relative. It must be absolute. A change of this proportion requires a change of all levels, spheres, degrees, states, processes, conditions, places, times and whatever you have of everyone and everything in being and existence. No one and nothing is excluded or exempt from this impact; the only difference being in time and place of this change.”

“Thus, for example, all beings and existences that are time-space bound will require thousands of eons to experience and to reflect the full impact of that change on their own structure and condition.”

“Thus, in this respect, the answer to the question of what is being changed is very simple: All aspects of the structure and dynamics of the sentient mind and its nature are in the process of change and transformation. And because the multiverse of Creation depends in its being and existence on the sentient mind, it will change its structure and nature accordingly.”

“But there is another factor to this type of change. Very few humans and other people realize what that factor is. When we speak about changes, we speak about everyone and everything that is and exists. However, The Absolute Change in The Absolute Nature of The Most High Who became the fullness of The Lord Jesus Christ requires a different arrangement. It cannot be limited only to what is and exists. Any change in that Nature, by its own principle,

requires a new creation. Since such nature previously did not exist, neither could a condition, reflecting this New Nature, also exist.”

“As you see, we have here two factors of this change: 1. The change of everyone and everything that already is and exists, and 2. creating something new that has so far not been in being and existence until this change took place or was completed.”

“The Lord Jesus Christ is hereby revealing that He/She has just completed creating an entirely new, interuniversal, interdimensional and multimodal universe, with entirely new sentient entities and their respective environments and nonsentient life forms that reflect fully this New Likeness and Image of The Lord Jesus Christ.”

“The impact of this new creation, as well as the impact of The New Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ, from which this new universe was created, will be of incalculable proportions. Again, to repeat, it will rock the foundation of the entire multiverse of Creation for eons to come.”

“Now, you have to understand that The Lord Jesus Christ, being apart from time and space and, at the same time, in time and space, creates from a non-temporal and non-spacial condition. Thus, the few months of human conceptualization of time on planet Zero, since the time of The Absolute Change of The Most High into The Lord Jesus Christ, can equal or correspond in non-temporal and non-spacial condition to many billions or even trillions of years.”

“You have to try to look at what is being revealed here from an entirely different perspective than what you are used to. Try to transcend human conceptualization of ideas from the standpoint of a linear mode of thinking. Otherwise, what is being revealed here will make no sense for you who are conditioned to think in a linear mode. Although it is not easy for humans to do so, they do have a capacity to transcend this mode or, at least, to intuit what is being conveyed here. The prerequisite and prototype for the creation of this new universe was the formation of The New Heavenly Society and The New School for spiritual relearning, restructuring, renewal, rebirth and transformation described in the book Messages From Within.”

“It was in preparation for this crucial and fundamental step that they were formed shortly before the completion of The Absolute Change of The Absolute Nature of The Most High into The Lord Jesus Christ.”

“The members of The New Heavenly Society and the staff at The New School, being that they represent the most within of the most within of this region of Creation, were among the first who underwent the above-mentioned changes and transformation. As of now, they are fully aligned with The New Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ.”

“After the process of their spiritual transformation was completed, they assisted The Lord Jesus Christ, together with other similar members of the rest of Creation, in creation of a ***new interuniversal, interdimensional and multimodal universe.***”

“There is another important reason, not revealed so far, why The Most High underwent this Absolute Change and Transformation in His/Her Absolute Nature, becoming the fullness of The Lord Jesus Christ. The fusion and hybridization of the human body of Jesus Christ into this Nature has a tremendous ***preventative value.*** This was done also for the sake of ***future prevention*** of the negative state and its dead life from being activated again — once it is removed, deactivated and completely eliminated.”

“As you remember, all experiences of the negative state, from the very moment of its activation to the very last moment of its deactivation, will be stored to eternity in that part of Multiversal Consciousness which the Holy Bible calls the Lake of Fire and Brimstone. Should the question of what life is like if it is derived from any other source other than The Lord Jesus Christ ever arise again, it would be immediately answered by the experiences and examples stored in that Lake.”

“That Lake can be conceptualized like a multiversal archive of the most technologically advanced design that enables any inquirer to reexperience the answer in the most vivid, illustrative and concrete manner as if he/she were a part of that life. This participation resembles very remotely the holographic principle — no better term exists for its description — although in a much more advanced form than what will be available in the future for humans.”

“Now, the problem with the entrance into the Lake of Fire — Archive is that without a special type of protection, the inquirer could not survive that experience.”

“Being that The New Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ allows everyone to experience Him/Her within oneself in the most private, intimate and personal manner, the inquirer will always be accompanied into that Lake by The Lord Jesus Christ as a shield and a protection.”

“However, if The Lord Jesus Christ were not to have this New Nature, which incorporates the human body fabricated from the elements of the negative state, the Lake of Fire — Archive could not stand His/ Her presence and would burn into ashes within a fraction of a second. In an unusual sense, the Archive is a living entity. All so costly and valuable experiences and exemplifications of the negative state’s lifestyle would disappear forever and for good. Nothing would remain of them. In that case, as a result of that question, the negative state would have to be activated again and again. That would be a futile waste of precious life energies.”

“However, having that body within His/Her Nature, The Lord Jesus Christ can safely enter that Lake and through that body can safely protect both the Archive and the inquirer from destruction and death.”

“In this important sense, The New Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ has a tremendous ***preventive significance.***”

“As you see, the more you experience the impact of this fact about The Lord Jesus Christ, the more you can understand The Absolute necessity for the original Most High to acquire this nature through His/Her incarnation in the form of Jesus Christ on your planet and for His/Her entrance into the Hells.”

“In the process of change, modification and transformation of all those who already are and exist, a total restructuring of their mode of perception, understanding, thinking, willing, feeling, intending, behaving, acting and relating is occurring.”

“First, their spiritual minds are restructured in order to receive, to integrate and to absorb the idea of The New Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ. Once this is done, the shape, the content and the mode of the spiritual mind, the most within of every spirit, is changed, reflecting the new structure of The Lord Jesus Christ.”

“All new ideas in the spiritual mind are being generated from the position of integration and synthesis of all elements of the spiritual state. Before this time, they were produced and

perceived from the position of analysis and classification. Also, no direct experience of the elements from the outside of Creation was available. The unifying principle of all was assumed potentially and theoretically but not directly and experientially. The new ideas were generated from the position of within apart from without and then projected to the without. At this time, they are being generated from within together with without as an integral totality of all. Thus, now the without becomes also a participant of the process of creating and not only a receiver of its results.”

“Once the restructuring of the spiritual mind is completed, the intermediate mind goes through the same process from the standpoint of its own structure. The process of its mentation responds fully to the restructured spiritual mind and develops a mode of thinking, reasoning, feeling, intending, willing, etc., that reflects this new position. The same happens to the exterior mind and subsequent styles of behavior, actions, attitudes and life in general.”

“The difference between sentient entities who had been in being and existence prior to this fundamental change and those who have been just created is in the fact that the previous ones retain fully the memories and experiences of their previous condition. And, although they can say for sure that they are not the same way they used to be and nothing of the old remains in them, nevertheless, they know how it was before the change. They are always able to compare their current state with the previous one.”

“On the other hand, the new sentient entities of the newly created universe are of a totally new nature. This new nature reflects something that has never been in being and existence before. Otherwise it would not be new.”

“In order that spiritual progression of this magnitude could be assured, The Lord Jesus Christ, congruently with the needs for change and transformation of the old or previous state, created a totally new state that does not contain within itself anything from the previous beings and existences. It cannot contain within itself anything old because the progressing existing sentient entities to the next, higher level of spiritual awareness already have the experience of that old, by, through and within their own life. Reexperiencing the old would be a wasteful repetition, not giving them any new learning and thus, depriving them of the process of spiritual progression.”

“In order to avoid such a stagnation, and eventual spiritual death, The Lord Jesus Christ created something entirely new that has never been experienced, conceived or perceived before.”

“This newly-created state becomes a foundation on which the next step of everyone’s spiritual progression can take place.”

“Now, when you have such a fundamental change as The Absolute Change of The Absolute Nature of The Most High into the totality of The Lord Jesus Christ, you cannot even remotely imagine the impact it has on the entire Creation and its multiverse and what kind of a structure of the new universe results as a consequence of that Absolute Change.”

“The necessity to create such a new universe stems from the fact that the rest of the already existing Creation needs to experience a full reflection of The New Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ — something that has never been in existence before — in a concrete relative condition.”

“Remember, please, The Lord Jesus Christ is Absolute. The change in His/Her Nature is therefore also absolute. But all others are relative to that Absolute. Because of their

relativeness, they cannot directly experience The Absolute State. And yet, they need to experience it in order to maintain their change and transformation.“

“The only way this can be done is by creating a universe which would fully reflect in its totality this New Absolute Nature. Because this universe is created from The Absolute New State of The Lord Jesus Christ, it becomes relative to that Absolutely New Nature. Therefore, in that new universe the rest of the multiverse of Creation can have a concrete experiential illustration of The Absolute Change of The Absolute Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ. It becomes an exemplification of that Nature in a condition which is aligned to the receptive, perceptive and comprehensive abilities of all already existing entities.”

“This is a major reason for creating new things, besides for the sake of principles, as described in Chapter Twelve of this book.”

“There are certain aspects of this new universe that can be revealed in a limited sense:”

(1)

“As you noticed, this universe was called ***interuniversal, interdimensional and multimodal***. This is not by a coincidence. As described before, Creation consists of a multiverse. The multiverse consists of infinite varieties of universes with their respective galaxies, solar systems, planets and various celestial bodies. Each separate universe, in turn, consists of its own spiritual dimension or world, intermediate dimension or world and natural or physical dimension or world.”

“All universes of the multiverse are discrete to one another. They do not mix. So are the dimensions within each universe itself. They do not mix either. The only connection that exists among them is through white holes or black holes, respectively (in the Zone of Displacement), that warp time and space. The communication among them is accomplished by the means of correspondences, symbolism and representations. Each universe has its own unique mode of being and existence. Each dimension within a universe, in turn, has its own specific mode of being and existence. There is nothing in common between or among them except that they correspond with one another.”

“Within the separate universe, its spiritual dimension or world constitutes the most within of that universe; the intermediate dimension or world constitutes its mentality or soul; and the natural or physical dimension or world constitutes its form of manifestation or body. This is the structure of Creation that has been in being and existence up to this point.”

“The Absolute New Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ requires a shift in this structure. The newly created universe represents this shift. The fact that it is ***interuniversal*** denotes the position it occupies in relationship to all other universes of the multiverse of Creation. By its special, unique and unusual position, the new universe is ***directly*** connected to all other universes. This is a direct, immediate access that has not been in being and existence before. Thus, this universe reflects The New Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ who has a personal, physical, intimate and immediate access to all modes of being and existence including the entire Zone of Displacement with all its Hells.”

“The reason why the new universe was put in such proximity to all others was that, from that proximity, it can illustrate and exemplify firsthand to all The New Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ. After all, it was created exactly for that purpose. In this respect, the communication with and connectedness to the other universes is not limited to correspondences, symbolism and representations only, but it is also a direct, face to face, interaction. As you remember, the time of such a mode of communication (through correspondences, symbolism and

representations) within the true life of Creation has passed. At this point, temporarily, it is retained only in relationship to the Zone of Displacement and planet Zero.”

“The fact that the new universe is called **interdimensional** reflects its own structure that differs from all other structures. Within itself, this universe does contain the three dimensions or worlds — spiritual, intermediate and physical, but in a different condition. These worlds are hybridized and fused in unity, oneness and harmony of all their inclusive functions as The New Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ is a hybridization and fusion of all Absolute Elements of Life including the human body and the elements of the Zone of Displacement which, for that purpose, were made divine.”

“Thus, the three worlds or dimensions of the new universe do not appear separate from and discrete to each other as is the case in all other universes. Instead, they appear as one unified dimension in its three aspects of function. This situation reflects the fact that The Most High became The Lord Jesus Christ — One Absolute Entity in its three Absolute Aspects: The Lord, formerly called the Father or God, Jehovah or The Absolute Spiritual Mind; Jesus, formerly called the Son of God, or Absolute Intermediate Mind or Absolute Soul; and Christ, formerly called the Son of Man, or the bearer of truth, or The Absolute Exterior Mind.”

“Now such separation of aspects in The Absolute State is no longer tenable because the process of their hybridization and fusion with the physical body of Jesus Christ has been completed recently, as revealed in Chapter Two of this book. This is another reason why The Lord Jesus Christ has to be called by His/Her full name — The Lord Jesus Christ — without separating any of its elements or components. One can relate to Him/Her only from the totality of His/Her Absolute Nature and not from its separate components and elements. By calling Him/ Her The Lord Jesus Christ, and not simply ‘the Lord,’ or ‘the Lord Jesus’ or ‘Jesus Christ’ or ‘Christ,’ one evokes this unity and endorses the presence of the true and only One God Lord Most High — The Lord Jesus Christ. At the same time, by doing that, one is establishing a favorable condition within oneself for acquiring the similar state of unification of all aspects and components of one’s own sentient mind.”

“Now, the new universe, by exemplifying and illustrating this situation concretely and experientially, makes it possible for everyone who is in contact with it to accomplish a similar state of interdimensionality and unification.”

“The fact that the new universe is called **multimodal** reflects the style of its being and existence. It is not any specific style but an interaction, incorporation and manifestation of all styles in a totally new mode that has not been in being and existence before.”

“This situation reflects the incorporation and fusion into the totality of The New Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ the elements of the Zone of Displacement and planet Zero, which were purified from all evil and false content and instead, filled with good and truth. By that act, The Absolute Style of Being and Existence of The Lord Jesus Christ incorporates all their modes. Up to that point, the original mode of His/Her Absolute Style did not contain anything human and of the Zone of Displacement. Thus, something important was lacking in that Nature, being there only potentially through the promise made to the entire Creation that the potentiality of this situation would be actualized and realized at the right time, under the right condition when it would be most feasible, suitable and beneficial to all. This happened at the time of The First Coming of The Lord Jesus Christ.”

“Once the process of fusion and hybridization was completed within The Lord Jesus Christ, the new universe could be created, reflecting this multimodal condition.”

(2)

“The new universe, by its nature and content, performs the role of a unifying principle of all other universes in the multiverse of Creation.”

“The changes and transformations of the rest of Creation are to be compared against the new universe. The accomplishments of these changes and transformations are to be evaluated, assessed and validated by the states and processes of that new universe. Functioning as an illustration and an example of how to be in relation to The New Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ, the new universe becomes a link through which everyone can communicate with everyone in the multiverse.”

“As you remember, The New Heavenly Society had this function in a limited sense. It was linking the heavens comprised of former humans to the rest of their own universe. However, at that time, it was not yet proper to reveal the true nature and position of the human life within all other manifestations and forms of life. The first step in this respect, as the process of hybridization and fusion was going on within The Absolute Nature of The Most High, was to link the human heavens with the rest of the universe, corresponding to them. Such a link was missing. Once that link was established and the New School was opened, the next step could be prepared and then commence.”

“However, the next important step could not have commenced until the process of hybridization and fusion of the human body of Jesus Christ into the totality of The Most High was completed.”

“This is the reason why The New Heavenly Society was called a prototype and a predecessor of this new universe. It was to prepare everyone to receive into its vast multiversal family the new universe that would have a similar function as The New Heavenly Society only in a much broader scale — the linkage of the multiverse, all dimensions and all modes of life of all beings and existences.”

“The creation of such a vast entity, as this type of universe with all its worlds and sentient and non-sentient life forms and their respective environments, must be preceded by creation of its prototype. Because the missing components within The Nature of The Most High were the human components, fabricated from the elements of the Zone of Displacement, the fact of which would not allow the creation of the new universe with its specific type of nature, the prototype of the new creation had to be developed from the same components. After all, they were the ones who made it impossible for Creation to experience the state and condition they fully enjoy now.”

“This is the reason why it was mentioned that the members of The New Heavenly Society were assisting The Lord Jesus Christ in creation of this new universe.”

“Because the new universe represents this unifying principle, all changes and transformations, directed toward unification of the sentient entities and their respective universes, must be gauged by the states and processes of this new universe.”

(3)

“The new universe by its structure and dynamics introduces into the multiverse of Creation a new type of spirituality reflected in the manner its members relate to and worship The Lord Jesus Christ.”

“If a human being were to encounter a new sentient entity from that universe, and were to ask him/her what kind of a church he/she attends and goes to, the answer would be ‘I go to

the church of The Lord Jesus Christ.' And if he/she were to be asked where that church is located, he/she would answer, 'In my heart.'"

"This indicates that their relationship to and worship of The Lord Jesus Christ is of a very private, intimate and personal nature which involves all aspects of their personality simultaneously — from within to without. And because it involves equally the without, the experience of that private, intimate and personal interaction and worship is available for sharing and reciprocating with everyone who expresses a desire to do so."

"In this worship and relatedness a totally new component has been introduced. As an integral part of their unified one sentient mind is their spiritual-mental-natural-physical sexuality. If you are to relate to the totality of The New Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ from the position of the totality of your unified mind, you must include into it an all inclusive tool of sharing — sexuality."

"Up to this point, the rest of Creation did relate to The Most High sexually but through mediation and not personally, privately and intimately. You relate to Him/Her sexually through your sexual partner and your sexual partner through you. In a female sexual partner, from the standpoint of a male, sexual intercourse was always with The Feminine Principle of The Most High. In a male sexual partner, from the standpoint of a female, the sexual intercourse was always with The Masculine Principle of The Most High."

"As mentioned before, no sexual relationship exists from male to male or from female to female because it involves the same principle. This type of homosexual relationship is possible only in human life to reflect a distorted, perverted, mutilated and falsified lifestyle of that life. In other words, such a sexuality is permitted for the purpose of illustration and exemplification of how not to relate sexually or how not to make love."

"However, in the new universe, a totally new component was added to the above sexual relation to The Lord Jesus Christ. Besides a mediative experience, they can now relate sexually directly to The Lord Jesus Christ — males to Her Absolute Feminine Aspect; and females to His Absolute Masculine Aspect."

"The New Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ makes such an unusual relationship possible. Of course, it is unusual only from the human standpoint. In the true life of the positive state this is the most welcomed natural situation that existed only potentially and through mediation."

"However, having the human body in the totality of His/Her Nature, The Lord Jesus Christ now is able to relate to everyone everywhere in a most private, personal and intimate manner. And what is more private, intimate and personal than true lovemaking?"

"Of course, the mode of sexual intercourse and lovemaking in the true life of the positive state and in the new universe has absolutely nothing in common with that mode in humans. Human sexuality and lovemaking is a putrid, animalistic caricature and a total perversion, distortion and mutilation of the true sexuality of the positive state."

"Thus, the new universe introduces this totally different component of a direct involvement, fulfilling the promise of the original Lord God Most High to His/Her Creation that this would be the case. The promise was fulfilled in The Lord Jesus Christ and in creating this new universe which reflects such a relationship."

"There is nothing more inspiring, pleasurable, elating, uplifting, joyous and fulfilling than to relate to The Lord Jesus Christ also in a sexual manner. The fullness of The Divine Love and

The Divine Wisdom can be experienced only in the fullness of such an exquisite relationship with The Lord Jesus Christ. The new universe is an illustrative and exemplifying state and process of such an all-inclusive relationship.”

“The true meaning of spirituality and worship of The Lord Jesus Christ is contained in this type of relationship. Going to church means going to The Lord Jesus Christ and experiencing His/Her presence in every particle of one’s spirit, soul and body, making love to Him/Her and by that process, acquiring greater knowledge and understanding of Him/ Her, others and oneself and a greater degree of love toward Him/Her, others and oneself. This is what true spirituality and worship is all about.”

“The new universe is an embodiment of this type of spirituality and worship. This establishes a multimodal relationship to The Lord Jesus Christ in a direct sense: To The Lord Jesus Christ as the only Creator; to The Lord Jesus Christ as the only Parent; to The Lord Jesus Christ as a Friend, Brother and Sister; to The Lord Jesus Christ in a form of the most beautiful woman for lovemaking with a male; or as a most handsome male for lovemaking with a female; and in many other modes of relationship exemplified in the new universe.”

(4)

“Because the new universe is multimodal, interuniversal and interdimensional, the sentient entities created for its occupancy are equipped with a very special and unique mind and body.”

“As you know, the majority of the external forms of sentient entities’ life expression is produced from their external environment (whatever its nature is). Thus, during their stay in that environment, they are bound by it. It is a very specific environment that tolerates only those life conditions for which it was created by the sentient mind. No one else can survive in that environment without a special accommodation, adjustment and preparation.”

“On the other hand, the physical form of the new sentient entities in the new universe does not have this limitation. Because of the nature, structure, purpose, goal and position of that new universe, it requires that its inhabitants be equipped with the forms that can easily and comfortably survive and fully function without any hindrances and obstacles in any environment in being and existence, including all environments of the Zone of Displacement with all its Hells (including the Hells of the pseudo-creators) and including the environment of humans on planet Zero.”

“This miraculous condition reflects fully The New Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ Who, thanks to this newly acquired revolutionary nature, can appear, be present and function at any place, at any time, at any state, at any condition, at any process and in any environment without exception or exclusion and without any danger to anyone.”

“What is even more miraculous is that sentient entities from **all** other environments, places, times, conditions, states, processes, etc., including humans and all inhabitants of the Hells and the entire Zone of Displacement, can easily and comfortably survive and fully function in the environment of the new universe without any necessity of a prolonged preparation, adjustment and accommodation. Everyone who enters that universe feels as though he/she entered his/her own environment, only on some kind of totally alien planet which has the same components of life-support system as his/her native planet.”

“This is an absolutely necessary condition of the sentient life form of the new universe if it is to fulfill its purpose, goal and function of illustration, exemplification, realization, actualization and manifestation of The New Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ from the standpoint of the

relative perception of His/Her Absolute Change.”

“How can you illustrate and exemplify anything at all if you are isolated from and inaccessible to any other sentient entities, coming from their infinitely diverse respective life environments?”

“Sentient entities of this entirely new nature have never existed before. No one of that nature could exist in such fullness as they do before The New Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ came to its exquisite fruition.”

“This is a more advanced creation. It allows everyone from anywhere and anywhen in the true Creation to enter this universe and by means of that universe, to communicate with and relate to anyone from anywhere and anywhen without the necessity of a special, lengthy and cumbersome preparation, adjustment or accommodation.”

“From now on, should anyone have a need or a desire to communicate with or relate to anyone, anywhere or anywhen in the positive state of Creation, all one has to do is to express such an idea and enter that universe and accomplish this goal there. Thanks to the special means of the new universe, this becomes an almost instantaneous occurrence.”

“Again, this ability reflects the fact that The Lord Jesus Christ is present simultaneously, discretely and continuously everywhere and everywhen without any exception or exclusion. His/Her direct presence includes also the entire dead life of the negative state and the human life on planet Zero.”

(5)

“The position of the new universe within the multiverse of Creation is also an unusual and peculiar one. It simultaneously occupies non-space and non-time, discrete state and continuous process, as well as a space and time bound continuum, in a specially warped condition which gives it a direct, clear-cut access not only to all other universes of the multiverse of Creation, but also to the Zone of Displacement, all its Hells and planet Zero.”

“One of the many purposes for which the new universe was created was to trigger the full process of elimination of the negative state.”

“As you know, this process begins with the exposure of and bringing to the surface the true face and nature of the negative state. The fact of this exposure and bringing to the surface, unfortunately for humans and all others in the Zone of Displacement, means a greater degree of intensification of evilness and falsification and of ugly and miserable consequences, outcomes and results of such an intensification. The new universe, by its very existence, triggers this situation. As you remember, you cannot eliminate the negative state before its true nature is fully exposed and brought to the surface and to the full awareness of everyone.”

“What happens here is that creation of the new universe of this monumental nature forces all leading members of all the Hells to come up with new countermeans which will oppose, undermine, block, hinder and make it impossible for the functions of that universe to influence the negative state. By the necessity of doing that, the nature of the negative state is being exposed because its members must exert a greater degree of evilness and falsification in order to be able to counterbalance everything new and positive coming from that universe.”

“However, bear in mind that you are dealing here with an entire universe. This is not just any type of universe but an ***interuniversal, interdimensional and multimodal universe***.”

“What it means for the negative state is that the members of the new universe can freely enter any hells, including the Hells of the pseudocreators and planet Zero, and do any work they want to in the safest possible manner for them. And no one in the Hells can do absolutely anything about it. So far, this is the most dangerous situation for the negative state.”

“But, of course, this only reflects the ability of The Lord Jesus Christ to do the same through His/Her New Nature. This is the most single dangerous situation for the negative state’s being and existence in its dead life. This is the situation that can and will trigger the full, complete and ultimate exposure of the full, complete and total true nature of the negative state and all forms, conditions, states and processes of its manifestation, leading to the end of its dead life.”

“No wonder this situation mobilizes all members of the Hells. Now, they need to fabricate their own pseudo-universe comparable in power, potency and position of the new true universe. Such a fabrication would allow them the same privileges within the Zone of Displacement and on planet Zero that the new universe has within the multiverse of Creation as described in point number four.”

“The only problem is that no one in the Hells has the necessary capacity and knowledge of how to fabricate such an anti- or pseudo-universe. And, yet, for the full exposure of the negative state and its final elimination, such a fabrication is an absolute necessity. So, in order to do just that, it is necessary to permit the opening of the pseudocreators’ Hells, remove their confinement, limit them to the sphere of the Zone of Displacement (for the time being) and allow them to proceed with such a fabrication. Only the pseudo-creators have the necessary knowledge and ability to fabricate such an anti-universe comparable to the new universe.”

“Let it be known now, that, as of today, at this very moment, the pseudo-creators were released to the pseudo-innermost level of the Hells, from which position they will fabricate this new anti-universe with its new pseudo-life forms that will pseudo-unify all pseudo-creation of the Zone of Displacement. Once they finish the fabrication of this anti-universe, the pseudo-creators will be able to gradually take over again the entire Zone of Displacement. From that position, after they accomplish this takeover, they will execute their second coming on planet Zero which, as you remember, precedes the final phase of The Second Coming of The Lord Jesus Christ.”

“How long it will take for the pseudo-creators to accomplish the pseudo-creation of this new anti-universe and, with its help, to take over the entire Zone of Displacement, cannot be revealed in human terms of linear time. It will take as long as necessary.”

“In the meantime, the impact on human life of all these revealed factors will be slow in coming. Such is the nature of human life and its position. You will note a gradual and continuous deterioration and erosion of stability in all aspects of human life; more and more turmoils of all kinds and nature; greater and greater degree of evilness and falsification; more and more of fake spirituality and transmission of pseudo-new revelations through the numerous so-called channelers, false prophets and false christs and gurus of all shades and dispositions. You will also note more and more technological advances, mostly of a destructive nature with their marginal application in human services, such as, for example, medicine and space travel.”

“And, of course, in a positive sense, there is also the availability of this true and genuine New

Revelation of The Lord Jesus Christ as the only source of spiritual, celestial, cosmic, universal and multiversal truth for this time of turmoils, upheavals and spiritual revolutions.”

“The survival and salvation of human life and the dead life of the negative state (in actuality, of all participants in the dead life and human life) is made possible by the availability of this New Revelation of The Lord Jesus Christ. ***There is a mystery in this statement!***”

“He/she who wants to survive and be saved from the human life and the dead life of the negative state, let him/her use the ears that she/he has in order to hear, to accept and to apply what The Lord Jesus Christ reveals in this Chapter and the entire book.”

CHAPTER FIFTEEN

THE MYSTERY OF THE NEW REVELATION

On March 16, 1988, very early in the morning, the word of The Lord Jesus Christ came to me, saying,

“At the very end of the previous chapter, a hint about the mystery of The New Revelation was given. It was tied into the survival and salvation of all members of the dead life of the negative state and human life. Some elaboration about this issue is in order.”

“The New Revelation contains certain information that has never been revealed or considered directly during the history of humankind on your planet. Although this information has been available in some books of The Holy Bible, it is disguised in one of their inner, spiritual senses. This particular sense has never been properly discovered or interpreted by anyone. Some aspects of a different spiritual sense of those books in The Holy Bible were correctly interpreted by and through Swedenborg. However, the sense related to this particular issue has never been revealed until this portion of The New Revelation.”

“Any new revelation coming directly from The Lord Jesus Christ is basically given for two purposes: One purpose is for evaluating, explaining and updating everything that has been happening and available until the moment of transmission of The New Revelation.”

“This is a necessary part of The New Revelation because one needs to acquire a full understanding of the events that preceded The New Revelation. The proper understanding of these events is possible only from the position of The New Revelation, which is not an integral part of the previous step’s content.”

“It is impossible to acquire a correct understanding from the perspective of the previous step because it is biased toward itself. Each step, being discrete to any other step, and continuous only within itself, has a tendency to sustain its mode of being and existence. Because of that, it does not perceive the need for a change. It evaluates itself from the position of being needed, sufficient and continuously useful. With this kind of attitude, a dangerous trend of stagnation would ensue and the proper flow of spiritual progression would be interrupted.”

“Therefore, once the usefulness of any step and its spiritual content is exhausted, it becomes a subject for re-evaluation. The reevaluation is performed not from the perspective of the content of that step, but from the position and content of the succeeding step. This reevaluation concentrates on all ideas, concepts, perceptions, knowledges, understandings and lifestyles that ruled the outgoing step. It focuses on the issue of to what extent, if at all, the content of that step, from this perspective, is usable in the incoming succeeding step. Are there any ideas, concepts, knowledges, perceptions, understandings, etc., that would be useful to retain? And if they are, in what form and condition? To what extent do they need modification, change, reformulation, readjustment, etc., in order to fit in the new step? Or, should they all be discarded as having no longer any use at all? What kind of purpose did they serve in the previous step and why could they no longer be retained?”

“The New Revelation serves as a tool of The Last Judgment in the hands of The Lord Jesus Christ. It extracts, purifies and cleanses any grains of universal truths contained in the old, outgoing step.”

“You have to understand that each step, in order to take hold, contains within itself some aspects of the multiversal truths which are valid for all times and for all steps. Besides these aspects, it predominantly contains relative truths valid only within its own sphere of influence and function.”

“The multiversal truths contained in that step must be removed from it and freed from the influence of the relative truths of that step. Once they are removed, the relative truths of that step lose their life and become obsolete. The life of any step is sustained by the presence in it of the universal or multiversal truths. If you remove these truths, nothing remains to give life to the continuation of that step.”

“The Last Judgment of people who participated in that step is not for the purpose of trial, sentence, execution and condemnation, as many humans on your planet believe. Instead, its purpose is illumination, enlightenment and bringing into a focus all aspects of their lifestyle. This is done by separating the multiversal truths from the relative truths and showing them what purpose they exactly served; and to what extent the usefulness of this particular combination of the multiversal truths and the relative truths within that step has been fulfilled.”

“Once the separation occurs, the participants in that step are given a choice to move on to the next step, after undergoing a necessary spiritual transformation. In the process of their spiritual transformation, they are freed from the influence of the relative truths and given a new set of proper spiritual ideas which will dominate their life in the next step.”

“The choice-making process in this respect, with a free assumption of all consequences of such a choice, is the process of their Last Judgment. The proper words that should be used in this respect are ***The Last Self-Judgment.***”

“The mystery of this situation is in the fact that no one is allowed to judge anyone. Even The Lord Jesus Christ does not judge anyone. The reason why He/She is called Judge is because He/She is present in everyone’s ability to freely make a choice and to change. The Lord Jesus Christ functions in this process as an Advisor, Counselor and Supporter in whatever choice the individual is going to make. Also His/ Her presence functions as a motivating and intentional factor in the process of separation of all multiversal truths from the relative truths that each individual contains within himself/herself. As you know, The Lord Jesus Christ is The Multiversal Truth in and by Himself/Herself. The process of separation of this Truth seems like The Lord Jesus Christ judges the respective individual because it looks like stepping out of that individual and from a distance to illustrate the differences between the two. The illustration of the differences appears as though one is being judged, while, in fact, it is the individual who judges himself/herself by his/her attitude toward The Multiversal Truth — The Lord Jesus Christ.”

“Once all aspects of the multiversal truths are extracted from the outgoing step, and the usefulness which that step served is being understood and acknowledged, the second purpose of The New Revelation is activated. This purpose is for formulating new ideas, concepts, perceptions, understanding, knowledge and lifestyle which will become the content of the incoming or succeeding step. Without this Revelation, the new step cannot come to its fruition.”

“The mystery of the second purpose of The New Revelation is in the fact that it reveals those aspects of the multiversal truths and their relative application which have never been available up to this point.”

“By doing that, together with the first purpose, described above, The New Revelation makes anything completely obsolete that has been previously revealed or conveyed to the participants in the previous step. Thus, acceptance of the new ideas of The New Revelation becomes a matter of spiritual survival for all participants in the previous step. This is true regardless of whether one is in the true life, the dead life or the human life. Rejection or denial of the new ideas of The New Revelation turns the true life into a dead life, makes the dead life deadlier and the human life ends in the dead life of the negative state.”

“Of course, no one in the true life of the positive state has ever denied or rejected any ideas of The New Revelation. As you know, it is one thing to reject or deny something and another thing to have a potential of doing so. In this case, the potentiality for rejection and denial is rejected and denied. As it falls out into the Zone of Displacement, it is captured there and used as a base for its members’ own choice — to reject and to deny or to accept and to change.”

“The life of the dead life of the negative state derives from the potentiality of everyone in the true life of the positive state to reject and deny the positive state. As that potentiality is being rejected and denied to be actualized and realized, it falls out into the Zone of Displacement. The participants in the Zone of Displacement accept the idea of rejection and denial and make it their actualized and realized lifestyle. This is the mystery of their life-support system.”

“In formulating the mystery of The New Revelation, the following points need to be considered:”

(1)

“The major mystery of The New Revelation is its source. No one can grant The New Revelation but The Lord Jesus Christ. This is The Absolute Truth. If The Lord Jesus Christ is The Multiversal and Absolute Truth in, of and by Himself/Herself, it is only logical to assume that a true New Revelation can come only from this Absolute Source. Thus, the true Author of The New Revelation has to be The Lord Jesus Christ. Any other source of revealed ‘truth’ could not be absolute and therefore, it could not contain within itself the proper knowledge of the real truth and the timeliness of its revelation.”

“All such revelations, coming in the name of The Lord Jesus Christ or in any other names, are of relative or false nature, given for the purpose of sidetracking humans and all others from the true New Revelation. Any angel, spirit or entity who claims to be either the source or transmitter of The New Revelation to anyone on your planet or in the Zone of Displacement is a deceiving spirit or entity. The claim of such a spirit or angel that he/she is speaking by the authority of The Lord Jesus Christ is no longer true.”

“One of the major reasons why The Lord Jesus Christ became in His/ Her Nature what He/She is now, by the fusion of the human body into Himself/Herself, was to eliminate the necessity of mediation through angels or positive spirits and to be able to communicate directly with anyone He/She wants to. The problem of mediation is that the mediator is relative and not absolute. In the process of mediation, the mediator functions from his/her relative position. He/she cannot function from The Absolute position. Otherwise he/she would be God.”

“To function from the relative position, which mediates a revelation, means to perceive it in the relative terms. By that perception, certain authenticity of the original content of the revelation is lost.”

“Now, in that form, a relative being conveys that revelation to even more relative beings, let

us say, to someone on your planet. Thus, you have here a double relative condition that endangers proper perception, understanding and application of the revealed truth.”

“In order to avoid a possible profanation of the revealed truth by their inappropriate interpretation and application, the condition of mediator required that such a revelation be transmitted in symbols, correspondences and representations or parables and not in a direct language.”

“As you know, this was the exact situation with all Old Revelations. Even The Revelation of Jesus Christ through John was by mediation, as you can see from the very first verse of Chapter One:”

“And He sent and signified it by His angel to His servant John.”

“Whenever you use a mediator, you are limited by the mediators’s relative condition. An angel is not absolute but only relative to The Absolute. Neither is John absolute. In this case, he was relative to the relative angel through whom The Lord Jesus Christ mediated that revelation. Such a complexity of this situation, in order to avoid distortions, requires that revealed truth be conveyed in a disguised language.”

“The Most High, having a language which was of absolute nature, could not speak in the language of the relative nature. Therefore, He/ She had to use a language which was common to all states and conditions. This is the language of correspondences. However, the problem with this language is that it is never properly understood by anyone in the Zone of Displacement (except by the pseudo-creators) and on your planet. So, it is a subject of distortions, misinterpretations, literalizations and externalizations.”

“This is exactly what humans do to this kind of mediating revelation. But because, in most instances, they do not know what kind of real truth is contained within those correspondences, all they can distort, pervert and misinterpret is the external shell of the container of that truth and not the truth itself which is hidden in that container.”

“The problem with humans is, as you know, that they consider the container of the truth to be the real truth instead of the content of that container. This way they cannot profane anything. This situation cannot continue forever if gradual elimination of the negative state is to take place. The promise was made by The Most High that, at one time, this situation would be rectified and The New Revelation would be granted which would come directly from Him/Her in the plain language of externals without any mediation through an angel or a spirit.”

“In order to fulfill this promise, The Most High needed to acquire a special condition and change His/Her Nature in such a manner as to be able to directly communicate with everyone in the negative state and on your planet with whom He/She chooses to do so.”

“For this reason, The Most High incarnated on your planet in the form of Jesus Christ and acquired a human body. This body served as a catalyst of profound change of The Nature of The Most High. As you know now, it was hybridized with and fused into The Absolute Totality of The Nature of The Most High and The Most High became to eternity The Lord Jesus Christ.”

“By having this nature, The Lord Jesus Christ can communicate directly, in plain language, understandable to everyone, whatever He/She needs to communicate. One of the many reasons why The Revelation of Jesus Christ through John, in The Holy Bible, was still written

in the language of correspondences and symbolism was that, at that time, the process of that hybridization and fusion was far from being completed. Thus, the first mystery of The New Revelation is that it is the very first revelation which is given without any mediation through any spirits or angels and is spoken directly by The Lord Jesus Christ without any use of symbolism or correspondences.”

“From the position of His/Her New Nature, The Lord Jesus Christ can convey anything that needs to be conveyed at any given time by words that have ***no hidden meaning***, as was not the case with all previous revelations.”

“The revelation given through Swedenborg had the same connotation because he was continually surrounded by multitudes of all kinds of spirits, angels and positive and negative entities. To reflect the transition from the old modes of revelation to the new one, reflected in The New Revelation, The Lord Jesus Christ appeared to Swedenborg personally. However, on his journeys through the spiritual realm and in recording of that revelation, he was accompanied and prodded by angels assigned to him for that purpose.”

“Thus, even that revelation was by mediation, although it had, for the first time, elements of directness. As mentioned previously, the revelation given through Swedenborg was a forerunner of The New Revelation. Therefore, it contained some new elements. The new elements of that revelation were in the fact that it gave an explanation in a common language to some mysteries of correspondences. This had been in preparation for what was to come.”

“As you know, at the time of Swedenborg, the hybridization with and fusion of the human body of Jesus Christ into The Absolute Nature of The Most High had not been fully completed. Thus, the full directness of that Revelation could not come to its fruition.”

“The mystery of The New Revelation is that, while it is being revealed directly by The Lord Jesus Christ in words containing no hidden meaning, the transmitter of it is not influenced by any spirit, angel or entity of either kind (positive or negative). In fact, no one else is allowed to put any ideas in his mind or convey any message to him until The Lord Jesus Christ finishes saying or revealing what He/She wants to say or to reveal.”

“This is done for the purpose of avoidance of any contamination of the meaning of that which is being conveyed. You have to understand that, being relative, all others, by the necessity of their nature, would see or interpret that meaning from their own subjective perspective. The subjective perception of each individual, be it an angel or a spirit or anyone else, is different from other entities’ perception. Therefore, a confusion in and subsequent inappropriate transmission of the ideas of The New Revelation could occur. Such a situation would be immediately utilized by the agents and spirits of the negative state who would successfully distort, pervert and falsify its true meaning.”

“The Lord Jesus Christ permits many sentient entities (as a matter of fact, the entire Creation) to carefully listen to what He/She conveys to the transmitter of The New Revelation. But in no way are they allowed to interfere or to put anything in of their own until the transmission is completed. Afterwards, their comments are welcomed if necessary and useful. But such comments are never included in the text of The New Revelation. Only those words and ideas are included in its text which are given to this transmitter by The Lord Jesus Christ personally and directly.”

(2)

“The second mystery of The New Revelation is in the fact that The Lord Jesus Christ reveals it from the level of His/Her Absolute Spiritual Mind, through His/Her Absolute Interior Mind

and by means of His/ Her Absolute External Mind in the state and condition of His/Her human body which was made Divine.”

“This is an entirely new situation that has not been in being and existence until this time. In the old times, the process of any revelation was through the spiritual mind of the mediator, bypassing all other levels of the sentient mind.”

“The spiritual mind of the mediator, being a seat of The Lord Jesus Christ (at that time of The Most High), was utilized for planting the necessary ideas of revelation into it; then they were subsequently transmitted into the spiritual mind of the transmitter on your planet. Because only the spiritual minds were involved, the language that was used for transmission was the language of correspondences and symbolism. This is the language of spiritual minds.”

“However, no interpretation of its true meaning accompanied that revelation. Usually, during the reception of that revelation, the prophets reported that they were in a deep sleep or having a vision (they were in a deep hypnotic trance) and that they did not always know what their visions were all about. Thus, all other levels of their mind were either totally uninvolved or involved only marginally for the purpose of recording what they heard or saw.”

“Even The Lord Jesus Christ, during His/Her life on your planet, was limited by an existing, at that time, spiritual situation which would not allow Him/Her to speak in any other language but the language of parables, symbolism and correspondences; the reason being that, at that time, The Most High did not contain in His/Her Nature anything of the so-called natural degree or of the Zone of Displacement. Speaking from The Most Within, without having any mode of without, means speaking from the position of The Absolute State. Nothing from that condition can be directly conveyed to anything other than that condition. Hence, the need for mediation and representative language.”

“However, with The New Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ, which incorporates both the most without and the most without of that most without (the most without is the natural degree and the most without of the most without is the Zone of Displacement), everything totally changed with this situation. Now He/She can speak simultaneously from all levels of His/Her Absolute Mind to all levels of the relative mind in their own respective languages. The Lord Jesus Christ became The Interpreter of His/Her own language in terms and ideas which are comprehensible to anyone at any level.”

“Thus, when He/She speaks, His/Her speech sounds in the minds of all who listen as their own language and at the level of their understanding without any confusion or wonder about the hidden meaning. The Lord Jesus Christ transmits His/Her Ideas and Thoughts into the minds of sentient entities, accommodating them to the perceptual abilities of each mind in particular.”

“This is a necessary condition for The New Revelation. As you remember, one of the mysteries of The New Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ is that, by and through it, He/She can relate to everyone in the most private, personal and intimate manner. Such a relationship requires clear-cut communication and understanding without use of any symbolism and correspondences. Otherwise, no relationship of this nature could be established. The language of correspondences and symbolism is still being used, and will always be used, but with an immediate understanding of what its real meaning is at each level of its manifestation. Thus, any possible misunderstanding and misinterpretation will be avoided.”

“The New Revelation, reflecting this condition, therefore is given from the totality of all levels of spiritual facts as contained in the true Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ. The words it is

using are the words of their own meaning. No other interpretation but what they mean literally, with few exceptions, should be given to them. They no longer contain any multiple meanings (except for The Lord Jesus Christ's New Prayer. See Chapters Twenty Six and Twenty Seven of this book.)"

"Because of The New Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ, no need for the multiple meanings exists."

"Whenever The Lord Jesus Christ speaks from His/Her New Nature and Position, the words used by Him/Her are of such a mysterious nature that they are able to convey His/Her ideas to all levels of the multiverse of Creation, the Zone of Displacement and planet Zero, in each level's literal meaning."

"As you know, each level has its own literal meaning. That meaning differs from one level to another. In the past, in order to breach the differences among them, the spiritual language of correspondences was used. No other means existed."

"However, The New Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ transcends this situation and gives every level its own literal meaning, at the same time connecting them through His/Her New Nature and retaining the spiritual language of correspondences. Thus, no one needs to be concerned as to whether there is any hidden meaning in The New Revelation anymore. There is none."

"This is a mystery of The New Revelation. And should such a meaning occur (as in the above-mentioned exception with The Lord Jesus Christ's New Prayer), it is immediately pointed out and properly interpreted. No other Revelation in the past was as direct, as immediate and as relevant to the concrete situation as The New Revelation."

(3)

"The third mystery of The New Revelation is contained in the fact that on its availability, the salvation of all participants in the negative state, as well as the elimination of the negative state itself, depends. The Old Revelation in itself and by itself is not sufficient to fulfill this important purpose. The problem with The Old Revelation is that its literal or external sense does not contain any real truths but only seeming truths. The real truths are contained in the spiritual or internal sense of its literal content. Thus, no one can know the real truth from the literal sense of The Old Revelation. And, yet, all Christian churches and sects, with a limited exception of the followers of Swedenborg's teachings, derive their doctrines and principles of salvation from the literal sense."

"This is true about any religion on your planet. Because of this fact, none of the religions and churches presently existing on your planet and in the rest of the Zone of Displacement contain any real truths in their respective doctrines and teachings. This is one of the major reasons why you have so many different religions and sects claiming to have the knowledge of the real truth."

"From the position of this spiritual situation, no one can be saved from the clutches of the negative state. Neither can the negative state be eliminated based on such conditions and hateful intolerance. After all, as you know, the nature of the negative state is built on contradictions and hateful intolerance! How can you save anyone from this position of the negative state?"

"For this reason, a New Revelation is granted by The Lord Jesus Christ which supersedes the literal sense of The Old Revelation. In The New Revelation, the real truths about the

nature of the negative state and the process of salvation are revealed and made available to anyone who wants to hear and to listen.”

“The important spiritual issue here is that, in order to save anyone from the negative state, you must disclose to them the concealed real truths and remove from their perception and their lives the seeming truths. The salvation is possible only from the position of the real truths. No other foundation for such a process is possible.”

“Because the literal sense of The Holy Bible does not contain any real truths, at one time, when the spiritual situation is favorable, it must be replaced with another literal sense which will contain nothing but the real truth. The Lord Jesus Christ is hereby proclaiming that the time is now and that the current New Revelation, as recorded in this book, is a proper replacement for the literal sense of The Old Revelation.”

“Another important point in this respect is that true salvation cannot be accomplished at all unless the real truth appears simultaneously at all levels of all beings and existences of the multiverse of Creation and, at the same time, in the entire Zone of Displacement and on planet Zero. Up to this point, such truth was not available in the Zone of Displacement and on your planet. As you know, it was substituted by the seeming truth. (An example of the seeming truth and the real truth can be found in the ways humans talk and the way they feel. They can say one thing, which seems to be the truth, but they feel something entirely different, which is the real truth. Or they say ‘sunset and sunrise’ which is only the seeming truth because the real truth is that it is their planet that does so.)”

“The need for the simultaneous appearance of the real truth is derived from the fact that inhabitants of the Zone of Displacement and your planet do not have any direct access to the other realities of Creation where the real truth is always available. Therefore, they cannot participate in the knowledge of truth of those worlds. If they did, they would pervert, falsify and destroy it. By that act, they would prevent themselves from being eventually saved by The Lord Jesus Christ.”

“The reason why they would pervert, falsify and destroy that truth is because they would not perceive it from the position of the positive state (after all, they are in the negative state). To perceive truth in the positive state from the position of the negative state is an utter impossibility.”

“Moreover, the truth in the positive state is not in its literal sense. It is in the sense relevant to the special nature of each level of the true reality.”

“However, the negative state can perceive and comprehend truth only in its literal sense. But because the truth is that The Lord Jesus Christ is The Absolute Truth, in order to make it possible for the truth to become literal, it was necessary for Him/Her to acquire a physical body and its literal language so that He/She could convey that truth in the language understood by all.”

“Before completion of this, one of the most important acts of salvation by The Lord Jesus Christ, it was necessary to speak in seeming truths because nothing else was available.”

“If The Lord Jesus Christ is the real truth Himself/Herself and if His/ Her Nature were not to contain the possibility of conveyance of the real truth in the literal terms, He/She could never save anyone from the negative state.”

“This is one of the many reasons why The Lord Jesus Christ had to incarnate on your planet,

enter the Hells and all regions of the Zone of Displacement and acquire all necessary means by which He/She eventually will make it possible to replace the seeming truths of the literal sense with the real truths.”

“Once this is successfully accomplished, the process of gradual salvation of all in the negative state and the process of gradual elimination of the negative state itself can begin.”

“The first important step in this process is to make The New Revelation gradually available to all. The New Revelation replaces the seeming and contradictory truths of the literal sense of The Old Revelation, contained in The Holy Bible, with the real literal truths. On its foundation, the process of salvation of all and then elimination of the negative state can be successfully accomplished (when the time comes). This function of The New Revelation is one of the most mysterious ones.”

(4)

“The statement that The New Revelation is **made available** to all implies that not everyone in the Zone of Displacement and on your planet will know that The New Revelation even exists.”

“The mystery of The New Revelation lies in the fact that **it is available**. Its availability, at one point, will make it possible for a tremendous spiritual shift to occur within the sphere of the negative state’s domain. That shift will open an access to everyone’s most within Spiritual Mind (where the presence of The Lord Jesus Christ is) in the state of their ability to freely choose and to change. Once the access is open, they will experience a personal presence of The Lord Jesus Christ, who will direct them to the source of The New Revelation — Himself/Herself — and to the real truth contained in The New Revelation itself.”

“In order for this crucial and vital shift to take place, only a certain number of humans and creatures in the Hells, in the Zone of Displacement and on your planet need to be familiar with the content of The New Revelation. The issue is in the quality and not the quantity.”

“Once the sufficient number of humans and creatures know, or at least, are aware of The New Revelation and what it contains, it will be possible for that shift to occur.”

“Of course, only The Lord Jesus Christ can know how many humans and creatures are needed for accomplishing this act and when this number is fulfilled. **The full measure of the nature of the entire negative state has not yet been exposed and illustrated. As long as this is the case, that number will not be filled.** This is something that you need not be concerned with.”

“Your purpose, Peter, and the purpose of all your spiritual children on planet Zero, is to make The New Revelation available to all levels of being and existence, to the Zone of Displacement and on your planet by properly transmitting and eventually publishing it. The rest is in the hands of The Lord Jesus Christ. He/She knows best how, when and by what means to accomplish His/Her plans of salvation and elimination of the negative state in the most effective manner.”

“This mystery of The New Revelation is in the fact that its **sole availability** prepares everyone in the negative state for their eventual salvation. How this will be accomplished cannot be known at this time for security reasons. Once it happens, it will become very obvious to everyone how The Lord Jesus Christ utilized **that sole availability** of The New Revelation.”

(5)

“Up to this point, most humans, and some others, assumed that The Word of God is limited to the books contained in The Holy Bible. As you know, the majority of Christians believe that all books of The Holy Bible are equally The Word of God. As was already revealed through Emanuel Swedenborg, and in the last chapter of the book Reality, Myths & Illusions by this transmitter, not all books in The Holy Bible were inspired by God or contain the inner, spiritual sense. To say this, for many Christians, will mean blasphemy. It will be seemingly even more blasphemous to claim that The Word of God is no longer limited to what is written in the inspired thirty-five books of The Holy Bible.”

“This attitude of most Christians is amazingly rigid, stifling, narrow-minded and totally false. By this attitude, Christians try to limit The Lord Jesus Christ by spiritual issues stated two thousand years ago as if He/She is impotent and does not need to, or is incapable of continuing to issue statements of important spiritual significance; as if The Lord Jesus Christ became mute and no longer can speak.”

“The mystery of The New Revelation in this respect can be seen in its two purposes: One, it breaks out of this abominable limitation, proclaiming that The Lord Jesus Christ continuously shares with all His/Her words as needed, when needed and where needed and through whom He/She chooses to speak. It is not by coincidence that each Chapter of this book begins with the statement that ‘The word of The Lord Jesus Christ came to me, saying.’ This is to emphasize that The Word of God, Who is The Lord Jesus Christ, is continuously coming and is being written in order to reflect the spiritual changes and the consequent spiritual needs of all sentient entities in whatever mode of life they are at the moment. Thus, it is hereby proclaimed by The Lord Jesus Christ that The New Revelation is The True Word of God — The Lord Jesus Christ. As mentioned in the previous points, it supersedes and replaces the literal sense of The Old Revelation — The Word of God in its internal, spiritual sense.”

“The problem with The Old Revelation is that it is The Word of God, not by its literal sense, which does not have any sense, but by its inner, spiritual sense. Unfortunately, not too many humans and creatures on your planet and in the Zone of Displacement are aware of or are willing to recognize this fact. Because they cling only to the literal sense of The Holy Bible, which they consider to be The Word of God, they have no Word of God. They live in an illusion and self-deception of having The Word of God.”

“And this brings us to the second purpose of The New Revelation: Two, The New Revelation in its totality, for the first time, can be considered The True Word of God — The Lord Jesus Christ — in its literal sense. As long as The Most High was without the human body of Jesus Christ fused into His/Her Absolute Nature, He/She could not speak from **that position**. He/She spoke only from His/Her Absolute **spiritual condition**. After all, at that time, God was Pure Absolute Spirit. A spirit speaks only from that which it has — from the spirit to the spirit. No other mode of communication was available at that time. Thus, the literal sense of The Holy Bible is only a clothing for that spirit but not the spirit itself. Therefore, its literal sense is not The Word of God but only a container of The Word of God. Whoever clings to that container, disregarding its inner, spiritual content, has no Word of God. However, this situation revolutionarily changed. The Absolute Nature of The Most High changed absolutely by hybridizing Itself with the human body of Jesus Christ and becoming the fullness of The Lord Jesus Christ.”

“Once this process of fusion and hybridization was successfully completed, the definition of God being a Spirit **only** is no longer tenable. Yes, God, as The Lord Jesus Christ, is still and will always be the only Absolute Spirit to eternity. But He/She is no longer limited by that

state. Now He/She is also a Natural Body made Divine and fused into that Spirit. For this reason, the definition of God is hereby being modified in the following manner:

“GOD IS THE LORD JESUS CHRIST WHO IS ABSOLUTE SPIRIT, SOUL AND BODY, IN UNITY, ONENESS AND HARMONY OF THEIR FUNCTIONS, AND WHO INCORPORATES WITHIN HIS/HER ABSOLUTE NATURE THE FULLNESS OF SPIRITUAL, MENTAL, NATURAL, PHYSICAL, HUMAN AND THE ZONE OF DISPLACEMENT’S STATES, CONDITIONS AND PROCESSES IN A TOTALLY DIVINIZED FORM AND CONTENT.”

“Before their incorporation, the human and the Zone of Displacement’s parts were purified and freed completely from all evils and falsities that they contained within themselves. The process of this purification, cleansing and freeing was a long process from the standpoint of your planet’s time. As you know, it was not completed until recently. Therefore, until now, no attempt to modify the definition of God was made.”

“The completion of this process makes it now possible to pronounce The New Revelation as The True Word of God — The Lord Jesus Christ. From the position of the totality of His/Her Nature, The Lord Jesus Christ speaks simultaneously from His/Her Spirit, Soul, Nature, Body, Human and the Zone of Displacement. Nothing is lacking any longer. The human and the Zone of Displacement part in His/Her Nature makes it possible for Him/Her to speak also in the language of humans and the Zone of Displacement and, ***at the very same time***, in all other languages understood elsewhere. This makes the literal meaning of the words used in The New Revelation authentic, genuine and expressing the real truth, void of any seeming truths, as the case was and is with the literal sense of The Old Revelation recorded in The Holy Bible. In this fact is the greatest mystery of The New Revelation, now unfolding. The above new definition of God requires modification in the manner of how God — The Lord Jesus Christ — is related to and worshiped. This topic will be covered in the next Chapter.”

“He/She who has ears to hear, let him/her hear what The Lord Jesus Christ reveals in this Chapter.”

CHAPTER SIXTEEN

PRACTICE OF THE NEW REVELATION

On March 19, 1988, early in the morning, the word of The Lord Jesus Christ came to me, saying:

“The knowledge and understanding of the truths (plural), contained in The New Revelation is not sufficient for life of The New Revelation. If one knows and understands truth, but does not apply or practice what one knows and understands, that truth is dead for that one. No good results from such knowledge and understanding. As you know, the life of truth is its good. Its good is established by living the truth. The practice of truth is a motivating factor for good’s realization and actualization.”

“This principle is true also about The New Revelation. In order for it to be alive and living, it must be consistently practiced by those to whom it was revealed.”

“The requirement of this nature is determined by The Law of Validation and Intent, formulated in Chapter Ten of this book. That spiritual law requires that any idea, concept, thought or whatever must be validated by its consequences, outcomes and results. The consequences, outcomes and results can be manifested only in the lives of sentient entities. Unless they acknowledge, accept and apply in their lives the precepts of The New Revelation, The New Revelation is useless. It has not been validated.”

“For this important reason, in this chapter, a brief outline for the practice of The New Revelation will be given in the following points. In each point, two levels of practice will be considered: one for those who are in the positive state of Creation and one for those who are on your planet and in the negative state of the Zone of Displacement in general.”

(1)

“The first point in the practice of The New Revelation is the manner in which The Lord Jesus Christ is worshiped and related to by all sentient entities and humans. As you remember from before, The New Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ considerably changed this manner.”

“The prior ways of worshiping and relating to The Lord Jesus Christ were determined by purely spiritual factors for the sentient entities in the positive state and by ritualistic factors for humans and entities in the rest of the Zone of Displacement. Thus, you have here two opposite extremes: One is the most internal way of worship and relatedness; the other is the most external. In addition, the external mode rarely has been reflected in the everyday behavior of those who worshiped that way. Instead, it was limited to observation and practice of certain external procedures, at certain physical places of worship, called churches, by certain prescribed dogmas and prescriptions which one was/is to follow.”

“On the other hand, the internal or spiritual way of worship derived from the old definition of God, formulated by Jesus Christ during His/Her incarnation on your planet as recorded in The Gospel According to John, Chapter 4, verse 24:”

““God is Spirit, and those who worship Him must worship in spirit and truth.””

"This type of worship excludes any formal, ritualized, external, dogmatized and procedural approach. Instead, it emphasizes the inner acceptance of God in one's heart from which position one's lifestyle is derived and determined. In this respect, to worship and to relate to God means to lead a certain lifestyle consistent with the spiritual principles as defined by God within."

"This was the only acceptable way of worshiping God up to this point. No other revelation about this matter was given in order to change or modify this mode of relatedness to and worship of God."

"However, the major idea of this portion of The New Revelation brings to everyone's awareness that this situation changed completely, as well as the definition of God has changed completely. The new definition of God was formulated at the end of the previous Chapter. The change in that definition requires the change of the manner in which people and humans relate to and worship God."

"First of all, the only acceptable manner, as of now, is the evocation of The Name of The Lord Jesus Christ. In the positive state of Creation this means that any other names, under which God was worshiped and related to, are no longer acceptable. God, with all His/Her Names and non-names, became fully and completely The Lord Jesus Christ. Now the concept of The Lord Jesus Christ incorporates all aspects of God in all their totality."

"Up to this point, there has been a tendency to give various aspects of God different names and non-names (non-names signifies the acknowledgment of those aspects of The Nature of God which could not be named because no corresponding conceptualization of their nature existed in the relative sentient mind. The only thing that that mind had known was that such aspects do exist.) And, although for the members of the positive state this situation did not signify separation, split or disunion of The One Nature of God, unfortunately, it has been very successfully utilized by the forces of the negative state and humans to produce a tremendous amount of confusion among all, as well as to fabricate numerous religions with the most contradictory spiritual notions, with use of the various names of God in separation and split to prove the rightness of their manner of worship."

"One of the many important reasons why The Most High acquired The New Nature was to eliminate the differences in conceptualization of various aspects of One God under different names."

"The need for inclusion in His/Her Nature of the human elements and the elements of the Zone of Displacement stems from the fact that it is much easier for anyone to relate to anyone from their own position and nature. Up to that point, God, for humans, other beings, and creatures in the Zone of Displacement was either an abstract concept to whom no meaningful relationship could be established (after all, how do you relate to an abstract concept?) or He/She was assumed to be someone familiar and visible."

"The latter situation gave an impetus for many emperors and kings on your planet and for many creatures in the Hells to proclaim themselves to be gods. At least, they could be visible and approachable in their concrete physical state. Of course, this situation was and is spiritually very dangerous because it makes humans and all other creatures worship false gods who never were, never are, and, never will be gods. The consequences of such proclamations and worships are not pleasant ones."

"For this reason, The Most High, in order to fulfill His/Her promise, assumed also human nature and, after making it Divine, incorporated it in His/Her totality, making it one with all

other aspects of His/Her Absolute Being and Absolute Existence, becoming The Lord Jesus Christ. By this act, the abstract concept of God was eliminated and replaced with a concept of The Lord Jesus Christ who is knowable, understandable, touchable, lovable, huggable, perceptible and can be felt.”

“Because all aspects of that which is called God, under whatever names, were fully absorbed into this New Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ, it is only logical that, in the very first step of the practice of The New Revelation, one is to evoke The Name of The Lord Jesus Christ. This rule applies for both the members of the positive state and of the negative state and humans, respectively.”

“From now on, one is to approach only The Lord Jesus Christ. One is to call upon The Name of The Lord Jesus Christ. For those who will read these words, and for all members of the positive state, as well as for all in the Hells who hear these words, as they are being revealed and transmitted, no other acceptable manner of approach to God will be possible.”

“For those who, for some reason or other, will not be aware of this fact, particularly the vast majority of humans on your planet, evocation of God under other names will be temporarily acceptable until they learn about this important spiritual fact, provided that they evoke the Name of God with positive and good intent, for the right reasons and for the sake of principle.”

“Anyone who will reject evoking The Name of The Lord Jesus Christ, after learning about this fact, will have to bear the consequences of his/her rejection — he/she will not be heard or responded to. After all, if you evoke some other God of different nature and name than The Lord Jesus Christ, you will be evoking nothing. From nothing, nothing will come. Nothing cannot give you any response.”

“Thus, to repeat, the very first step in properly worshiping and relating to God is to call upon or evoke The Name of The Lord Jesus Christ.”

(2)

“Evocation or calling upon The Name of The Lord Jesus Christ for any reasons at all must be initiated by a prospective caller from the position of his/her own freedom of choice, for the single principle that it is the right and proper thing to do.”

“In the practice of The New Revelation no other approach can or may elicit any response because everyone’s life depends on his/her ability to freely choose and to change. Thus, trying to evoke or call upon The Name of The Lord Jesus Christ by force, imposition, duress or as a result of witnessing any miracles or unusual signs or from fear of punishment or guilt or any other unfree situation, will no longer work, unless, of course, prior to this condition, one already fully accepted into one’s heart The New Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ and had been evoking His/Her Name before.”

“The Lord Jesus Christ cannot respond in any other manner and way, unless being called upon or asked for it. If He/She could, He/She would be violating the fundamental spiritual principle of life — freedom and independency. Responding without being asked or called upon would be an imposition, a state of inevitability that gives one no choice in the matter. This would be a negative state. The negative state functions on this principle. Thus, the only relationship to and worship of The Lord Jesus Christ is possible only on the basis of mutuality, reciprocity, freedom and independency. If something is imposed on you, it is a one-sided factor. It is not of mutual and reciprocal consent. Your freedom and independence are grossly violated.”

“The Lord Jesus Christ, being Absolute Freedom and Independence Himself/Herself, can never violate this principle.”

“Thus, in this step of the practice of The New Revelation, two requirements are postulated: One, you have to relate to, worship and approach The Lord Jesus Christ from the position of your freedom and independency, by your own free will and choice, without any outside imposition. Two, you must initiate that step yourself. It cannot come from The Lord Jesus Christ.”

“The reason for the second requirement is in the fact that ***The Lord Jesus Christ is in the state and process of continuous answering or responding, giving and sharing.*** This is His/Her very Nature. Everything is always there.”

“But, in order to see it, to hear it, to take it and to use it, one must turn one’s attention to this fact and actively initiate the act of seeking, hearing, taking and using it. This is the principle of mutuality and reciprocity. One is not a passive, automated receiver of something. One is an active, free and unique participant in this process. As a free sentient entity, one has to make an effort, to show good will, indicating that one desires freely to partake in this process of receiving and utilizing that which is constantly and consistently available anyway.”

“No other way exists to appropriate to oneself all things being given to you by The Lord Jesus Christ.”

“If, by any chance, you feel too feeble to initiate any effort on your own in this respect, the advice is to ask The Lord Jesus Christ to endow you with the fullness of such an ability. As mentioned many times before, one gets nothing unless one asks for it.”

“This step is equally valid for everyone regardless of in what type of life they are — the true life of the positive state, the dead life of the negative state or the human life.”

(3)

“During evocation of or calling on The Name of The Lord Jesus Christ, it is no longer appropriate to acknowledge The Lord Jesus Christ under any other form, aspect or condition but His/Her New Nature.”

“The importance of acceptance of the fact that God became flesh in the person of Jesus Christ was already emphasized by the Apostles of Jesus Christ. However, in their conceptualization, Jesus Christ, although truly Divine, was still seen as a separate Entity from His Father — The Lord God Most High — who was perceived by them as primarily a Male Figure. But they did acknowledge the fact that all power and glory and the entire Creation was given to Jesus Christ by His Father.”

“To give power, glory and everything else to Jesus Christ signifies relinquishing the former Nature of God, as it was before The First Coming of Jesus Christ, and to acquire an entirely new one which will have all the authority and much more than the first one. However, at that time, the true meaning of this statement eluded most of the Apostles.”

“Emanuel Swedenborg elaborated on this issue much further. First of all, he recognized the fact that The Lord Jesus Christ was the only true God. Secondly, he recognized, as the most vital fact, that for proper relatedness to and worshiping of The Lord Jesus Christ the acceptance of the fact that The Most High made His/Her Divine human and subsequently His/Her Human Divine, reuniting it to His/Her Father, is an absolute must.”

“However, up to that point, no one knew what happened exactly to the physical body that Jesus Christ took with Himself/Herself after His/Her resurrection and departure from your planet.”

“Making His/Her Divine human and His/Her Human Divine can also be conceived in purely spiritual, mental or psychological terms. It does not incorporate the proverbial human flesh.”

“Yet, this aspect, the aspect of the human flesh, was one of the most important factors in changing The Nature of The Most High into The Lord Jesus Christ.”

“The fact about the human body-flesh of Jesus Christ has not been known until this portion of The New Revelation was made available to all who want to read or to listen. To repeat again: For what purpose did Jesus Christ take His/Her body-flesh with Him/Her to the spiritual world into His/Her personal domain? For decoration? To occasionally look on it hidden somewhere in a closet specially designed for that purpose and to admire or to reminisce on His/Her escapades during His/Her life on planet Zero and in the Hells? God does not do anything without a special purpose of The Absolute nature.”

“But, up to this point, it has never been revealed what did happen to that body-flesh. Thus, in order to get a proper response, one has to evoke this kind of The Lord Jesus Christ and no other because there is no other any longer.”

“Why is it so important for the practice of The New Revelation, or anything else to that matter, to relate to this particular New Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ which was recently fused and hybridized with His/Her human body-flesh? Because no one can relate properly and directly from the position of one’s relative state to someone Who is Absolute. Particularly, no one can relate from the position of the negative state to someone who does not contain within himself/herself anything from that position. A relationship of this nature requires a medium or a mediator.”

“As you know, the traditional Christian teachings perceive and conceive Jesus Christ as mediator of all sinners, and everyone else, to God Most High. They correctly recognize the fact that no one can approach and relate to The Absolute God directly.”

“Their problem, however, is that they separated the mediator from that to which it mediates, making God two, and eventually, three persons — God-the Father, who needs to be appeased and mediated to; Son of God-Jesus Christ who is the second person in one Godhead and who is a true Mediator to God-the Father; and The Holy Spirit — the third person of the Godhead who is the transformer, inspirer and a teacher of all sinners and everyone else about proper spiritual issues.”

“What Christians, as well as all others, failed to recognize was that Jesus Christ took His/Her body-flesh with Him/Her for a very special important purpose (as indicated above). Obviously, it was not taken with Him/Her for decoration or to be displayed in some kind of eternal mausoleum where all Creation could come, bow down in front of it, worship the flesh and give adoration to God in the ‘Ah’s,’ ‘Oh’s,’ ‘Uh’s’ or whatever expressions they use on such occasions and in such situations. This is an utterly foolish notion. Such a notion could come only into the human mind, as you can see from all those mausoleums which they built for their own pseudo-gods, such as pharaohs, kings, emperors, martyrs and for their own glory.”

“The human body-flesh of Jesus Christ had a very special mission — to become an integral part of the totality of The Absolute Nature of The Most High, The Most High becoming The

Lord Jesus Christ and His/Her own Medium or Mediator to and for all sentient entities, humans and creatures everywhere. Thus, ***His/Her human bodyflesh, fused into and hybridized with The Absolute Nature of The Most High, functions, as of now, as the only mediator to eternity between Him/Her, or to be precise, between His/Her Absolute State and Condition or Absolute Godhood, and everyone in His/Her Creation, on your planet, in all the Hells and the entire Zone of Displacement.*** No other source of mediation exists any longer.”

“For this reason, to evoke any other mediator, such as Son of God, Mary or any other saints, after reading these words, will be considered a spiritual abomination and adultery. Fortunately, for those who do that, they do not get a response from the assumed mediators anyway.”

“Unfortunately for them, when they evoke them, they may very well succeed in evoking evil and negative spirits who pretend to be the persons being evoked or called upon, and mislead their evocators into believing them to be the true mediators to God. They go even so far as to set up various events in the life of their worshipers so that they are able to successfully intervene on their behalf and save or heal them from the condition which they caused them to have in the first place; or predict the future and then to influence the events in such a manner so as to make the prediction valid and fulfilled.”

“This, of course, reinforces their roles as mediators to God in the eyes of those who believe in such mediators.”

“By claiming to have such a role, and attached-to-it spiritual powers, they, and humans who evoke them, rob The Lord Jesus Christ of the power to be His/Her own source of mediation between His/Her Absolute Divinity, through the relative human body, incorporated into that Absolute Divinity, and everyone else. This is a very dangerous spiritual condition.”

“The practitioner of The New Revelation will evoke and call upon only The True Lord Jesus Christ in His/Her Human Form as the only source of any possible mediation to eternity.”

“This step is valid and applicable to everyone, no matter in what form and condition of life they are at any given moment. It has multiversal validity and is a required spiritual principle in the practice of The New Revelation.”

(4)

“In the process of evocation of or calling upon The Lord Jesus Christ one is to be aware of the purpose with which one approaches The Lord Jesus Christ.”

“First of all, the purpose is to acknowledge the presence of The Lord Jesus Christ and give thanks to Him/Her for everything that was, is and will be, no matter what it was, is and will be.”

“Second, one approaches The Lord Jesus Christ daily, several times a day, because it is the right, proper, correct and good thing to do.”

“Third, one does so for the sake of principle itself because it is a multiversal spiritual law to relate to and communicate with The Lord Jesus Christ as a source of one’s life.”

“Fourth, one approaches The Lord Jesus Christ for the sake of common good, mutual benefit and usefulness of all. Everyone in Creation and everywhere else can benefit immensely from the fact of such communication and relatedness taking place, regardless of whether one is or

is not consciously aware of such benefit and use.”

“Let it be known now to everyone that this mode of communication with and relatedness to The Lord Jesus Christ, for the sake of principle, because it is the right thing to do, brings a tremendous benefit and use to all others. Remember, please, every communication of this nature is a unique and non-repeatable occurrence. Your communication with and relatedness to The Lord Jesus Christ is unique and different from that of anyone else. Others cannot experience The Lord Jesus Christ in your manner and way of experiencing Him/Her unless your communication takes place. By your unique communication with and relatedness to The Lord Jesus Christ and of The Lord Jesus Christ’s to you, you are contributing to the greater knowledge of His/Her Nature, of others and yourself to all. It enhances and enriches everyone else’s life.”

“This is the reason why a practitioner of The New Revelation will relate to and communicate with The Lord Jesus Christ on a daily basis for the sake of all and not only for his/her own sake. Most importantly, he/she will communicate with The Lord Jesus Christ for the sake of The Lord Jesus Christ to give The Lord Jesus Christ an opportunity to reveal Himself/Herself to His/Her Creation through him/her in a manner and way He/She cannot do through anyone else. After all, no one is like him/her.”

“This is one of the most important reasons why the practitioner of The New Revelation will approach The Lord Jesus Christ on a daily basis.”

“Fifth, one approaches The Lord Jesus Christ with a positive and good intent, for the sake of becoming a better, more spiritual, more loving, more wise, more knowledgeable, more useful, more modest, more humble, more honest and more and more truly oneself’s being and one’s own identity. Only The Lord Jesus Christ, from the position of His/Her Absolute State, can make you this way continuously.”

“Sixth, one relates to The Lord Jesus Christ for the sake of keeping unity, oneness and harmony of one’s mind functions. Only from, by, through and with The Lord Jesus Christ can one act, behave, relate and function from the totality of one’s mind in a unique and an integrated manner. The Lord Jesus Christ is the only true unifying and integrating principle of one’s sentient mind.”

“Seventh, one communicates with The Lord Jesus Christ for the sake of protection and safeguard from succumbing to the propaganda and influence of the negative state. This is applicable for humans who live on planet Zero and those who are in the Zone of Displacement. For the people in the positive state, the communication is also for the sake of a successful repudiation of the idea to reject and to deny The Lord Jesus Christ.”

“Only upon such a request and for this purpose can The Lord Jesus Christ protect and safeguard anyone in this respect. Because all power belongs to The Lord Jesus Christ, only by His/Her power can one overcome the negative state. No other power can accomplish this goal. From one’s own relative position, one is not able to successfully face the forceful imposition of the negative state. But in combination of one’s true choice and decision to do so with the support of The Absolute Power of The Lord Jesus Christ, one can effectively succeed.”

(5)

“The need for communication with and relatedness to The Lord Jesus Christ also stems from the fact that only The Lord Jesus Christ knows exactly, in an Absolute Sense, what is best for you.”

“Therefore, the practitioner of The New Revelation approaches this communication for the purpose of learning the will of The Lord Jesus Christ regarding his/her own life. Because no one knows properly what is best for him/her, no one but The Lord Jesus Christ can determine it.”

“Another aspect of this situation is that, because one does not really know what it is one should ask for, one is advised to approach The Lord Jesus Christ and ask Him/Her to give you an indication of what it is that you need to ask for. In other words, if you do not know what to ask for, ask The Lord Jesus Christ to tell you what you are to ask for so that your asking, from the position of ignorance, does not interfere with the will of The Lord Jesus Christ to be done in your life.”

“A higher purpose of this step is to approach The Lord Jesus Christ and ask that His/Her will be your will; His/Her choice for you be your choice for yourself; His/Her desire, wish and want for you be your desire, wish and want for yourself, etc. An even higher purpose is in the fact of requesting from The Lord Jesus Christ that, from now on, whatever is going to happen in your life, no matter what it is, will be happening only by the will of The Lord Jesus Christ and not by the imposition of the negative state or as a consequence of your own foolish choices of the past or for any other reasons.”

“The importance of doing the will of The Lord Jesus Christ stems from the fact that humans and creatures in the negative state have very little or no access to the true reality of their identities. They function from the position of their ‘ego’ which is considered to be their identity.”

“However, the ego is built from the elements of pure evils and falsities and as a barrier or block to the knowledge of true self. Because the ego is built from the elements of the negative state, its nature is to oppose everything of the truly positive content and source. The problem with the ego is that ***what it considers good and proper for itself is always bad and improper for the true self. And vice versa: What it considers to be bad and improper for itself, usually is good and proper for the true self.*** For this reason, the will of the ego is always in opposition to the will of The Lord Jesus Christ.”

“Therefore, for humans on planet Zero and all the creatures in the Zone of Displacement, it is very advantageous to bypass their egos’ demands and surrender their ego to The Lord Jesus Christ, requesting Him/Her to replace it with His/Her will for your life.”

“The request of this nature allows the activation of the true self which is buried in the most within Spiritual Mind. This is a path of self-discovery and learning to do everything from the position of the true self — the most within where the presence of The Lord Jesus Christ is.”

“Thus, the contact with The Lord Jesus Christ is possible to establish only from the position of this most within by a request of removal of one’s false ego and replacing it with the will of The Lord Jesus Christ. This brings about the true self from which one begins a proper communication with and relatedness to The Lord Jesus Christ. From that position, one can learn how to arrange one’s life in such a manner as to do everything from within to without and not from without to the false within as one’s ego demands. By doing everything from the true within to without, one aligns oneself with the multiversal order of Creation and becomes a member of the positive state.”

“This step is applicable for those who are trapped in the negative state and everyone on planet Zero.”

“For the members of the positive state the requirement of this step in the practice of The New Revelation is in their willing and free everyday reaffirmation to do always only the will of The Lord Jesus Christ.”

“This daily reaffirmation to do so is a necessary element of everyone’s free will and choice. As you know, every day, every state and every condition and process, from the position of its own content, requires a different choice. In order for a proper choice to be made, one needs to reaffirm two things: 1. One is a servant and follower of The Lord Jesus Christ; and 2. one wants to do only the will of The Lord Jesus Christ. Therefore, the choice always is whatever The Lord Jesus Christ chooses. If you do it this way, you can never go wrong. Especially if you do it for the sake of principle itself because this is the right thing to do.”

“Inherent in the life of all members of the positive state is a continuous desire to do the will of The Lord Jesus Christ. However, they also have their own comparable ‘ego’ built from the idea that they may at any time reject to do the will of The Lord Jesus Christ and to deny it. This is the only sensitive point that keeps them potentially in the negative state. As you know, and as they know, acceptance of that idea would make them negative and they would fall out into the Zone of Displacement.”

“In order not to succumb to the forceful imposition of that idea, they need a daily reaffirmation in the spirit of the above-mentioned statement.”

“The New Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ makes it much easier for them to do so because it sets a living example for everyone as to how to overcome any temptation of the negative state.”

“As you remember, this situation will continue until the final phase of The Last Judgment as described in Chapter Eight of this book.”

“Thus, according to this point, the practice of The New Revelation is in an active rejection, by one’s free will and choice, to be negative and, instead, to always do the will of The Lord Jesus Christ for the sake of principle.”

“This rule applies multiversally to everyone everywhere, including the Zone of Displacement, all the Hells and planet Zero.”

(6)

“The choice to do the will of The Lord Jesus Christ determines the lifestyle in accordance with the precepts of The New Revelation.”

“One of the very first things required of the practitioner of The New Revelation is the acceptance of who he/she is and what his/her destiny and assignment is. There is a mystery in this statement. As you know, every single sentient entity or human, whether of the positive or negative nature, came to his/her being and existence for some important purpose. Even the creatures and agents of the negative state, fabricated by the pseudo-creators, were permitted by The Lord Jesus Christ to come into their own life for some important reason and purpose.”

“In order to initiate any change in anyone’s condition, one must recognize the fact of who he/she is and what his/her destiny and assignment is. For the negative entities this is a crucial requirement if they are to show any desire for liberation from the negative state and conversion to the positive state.”

“A prerequisite for this liberation and conversion is acknowledgment of who one is and what one’s mission and destiny is. No proper and successful change can be initiated from any other position. To learn this important information, one is given a means to go inward by the procedures described in Chapter Five of this book.”

“For the members of the positive state this requirement is of an equal importance because it determines to what extent they really do the will of The Lord Jesus Christ. And what is the will of The Lord Jesus Christ in this particular respect? To be yourself and to perform all duties and obligations of the mission and assignment accepted by you no matter what it is. Failure to do so defies the purpose of your life. If you were to do something else, you would not be created into the position you are in at this point of your life.”

“Do you think that The Lord Jesus Christ would forcefully make you accept this or that position without your prior voluntary agreement to do so? It would be in violation of His/Her very Nature.”

“For the agents of the positive state, who are on an assignment on planet Zero, this situation is considerably complicated by the fact that they have no conscious memories of such an agreement or acceptance of the mission. Again, this was an agreed upon arrangement. If they are in a certain role or a position on planet Zero, obviously they are to be there until their assignment is finished. It can be a temporary one (when one has several sequential assignments. Meaning, any assignment does not start until the preceding one is fully completed first) or a permanent one until the end of their human life on planet Zero (meaning, one has one assignment that lasts the entire human life of that individual).”

“As you know, Peter, many clients who underwent with you or with your students the process of the so-called spiritual transformation, assumed that, as a result of that process, they had to relinquish their job, work, marriage or whatever they had and had been engaged in up to that point, in order to do something unusual and revolutionary, trying to change the world in which they live. Unless there are some other cogent reasons for breaking these relationships and positions, the successful transformation process should never end with such a result. If it does end this way, its outcome was completely contaminated by false spiritual advisors and the entire negative state. The forces of the negative state used the so-called spiritual transformation to get the individual in question into an even deeper trap of and slavery to the negative state.”

“The outcome of any work of this nature is in the profound change of attitude and perspective with which one approaches one’s life. In fact, unless specifically and cogently indicated, with ironclad proof otherwise, you are to continue in your work, job, marriage or whatever you have in the same manner and way, but with a totally different attitude and from a totally different perspective. You do everything for the sake of spiritual principles, from the position of within, for the sake of common good, mutual benefit, use to all; for the sake of The Lord Jesus Christ, others, yourself and your own mission. You do all this with as much delight, pleasure and joy as possible under any given circumstances.”

“Whenever you encounter any difficulties, temptations, obstacles and all kinds of problems, you face them with courage and determination to continue doing your best in accordance with the degree of your abilities and endowments, bearing your cross patiently and enduringly, knowing that whatever you do and experience serves some important spiritual purpose. With this kind of attitude, you establish an example of how it is to be, to feel, to respond and to behave in accordance with the precepts of The New Revelation.”

“For the members of the positive state, who know who they are and what their missions and assignments are, the purpose is to do their best in all their endeavors and to derive everything from The New Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ.”

“As you know, humans and creatures in the negative state and on planet Zero, in most instances, do not know who they are and what their mission and assignment is. For them the spiritual principle is to accept their role and position in which they find themselves at each point of their life with this new attitude and perspective, as described above and in all other points. Their knowledge in this respect has to be, very often, limited for serious security reasons. By going inward, they can learn some general aspects of their missions and roles but never all details until they serve their purpose.”

“For the agents of the negative state, the need for concealment of who they are is obvious. No one is to know that they came from the Hells. Otherwise, humans would not accept them. But there is another part to this. As you know, many of these agents do not know that they came to planet Zero from the Hells. This situation makes it possible for them to be exposed to the agents of the positive state and, as a result of that exposure, they may choose to convert to the positive state. If they were to know exactly who they are and that they volunteered with great delight and pleasure for their negative mission, they would never even think of converting to the positive state. Once, and if, they convert to the positive state, they are to continue in their work, job or whatever, but with a new perspective and different attitude, as suggested by The New Revelation.”

“As you see from this, everything serves some kind of good purpose.”

“Thus, a practitioner of The New Revelation will be recognized by the type of attitude he/she has toward himself/herself and his/her life, position and role, and from what perspective he/she looks upon all the events and happenings of human life and life in general.”

“The above described points of the practice of The New Revelation determine the type of worship of The Lord Jesus Christ one is to perform.”

(7)

“As is obvious from the above definition of God, the new type of worship is worship in spirit, soul and body and in truth and good.”

“To worship in spirit means to acknowledge the fact that everyone contains within his/her most within Spiritual Mind a personal, private and intimate unique presence of The Lord Jesus Christ, and to relate to The Lord Jesus Christ from that position in a most personal, private, intimate and unique manner. It also means to recognize and to accept the fact that one lives, breathes, functions and does everything by virtue of that presence so that, without the presence of The Lord Jesus Christ, one is absolutely nothing.”

“By continuously reaffirming this fact, one becomes more and more oneself. By becoming more and more oneself, one becomes a more and more unique extension and process of The Lord Jesus Christ. To worship The Lord Jesus Christ this way means to worship in wisdom. This is wisdom. Relating to The Lord Jesus Christ in a personal, private, intimate and unique manner is very loving. This is true love that contributes to all.”

“To worship The Lord Jesus Christ in soul means to think, to feel, to will, to intent, to reason and to mentate in general from, by, with, through and of The Lord Jesus Christ and from the position of all His/Her true Spiritual Principles; to derive and build everything only on proper spirituality rooted in The New Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ. This is the truth of such a

worship. To worship this way is good. And to recognize and accept the fact that one's mentality or the interior mind-soul is the transformed spiritual idea of the presence of The Lord Jesus Christ in one's most within Spiritual Mind."

"To worship The Lord Jesus Christ in body signifies here to worship also from the position of the external conscious mind. This means to behave, to act, to relate and to do everything in the external from within, from the presence of The Lord Jesus Christ in all aspects of one's mind."

"It also means to perform one's duties, obligations, assignments, work, everyday living, etc., responsibly and competently in accordance with one's best abilities without any ulterior reasons, always keeping in mind the Spiritual Principles of life — The Lord Jesus Christ as the only source of life, enabling one to be what one is. Also, it means to accept oneself the way one is in his/her spirit, soul and body, recognizing the fact that one is a carrier of the unique presence of The Lord Jesus Christ."

"Thus, to make one's spirit, soul and body a holy place, a sanctuary, a temple, a home and estate of The Lord Jesus Christ; and to share oneself with everyone who expresses a desire to share and reciprocate without imposing oneself or anything on anyone but also without 'throwing pearls before the swine and giving what is holy to the dogs,' meaning, to the negative state of evils (swine) and falsities (dogs). Now, these kinds of worshipers The Lord Jesus Christ seeks for Himself/Herself. No other form of worshiping is acceptable any longer by The Lord Jesus Christ."

"The existing formal, external, ritualized and dogmatized worship on planet Zero and in some other regions of the Zone of Displacement at certain places, called churches, is being abolished."

"In fact, the majority of these churches became dens of spiritual robbers and thieves who deprive all worshipers of the truth and good and who block them from knowing how to worship properly, thus, blocking them from the possibility of establishing a proper relationship with The Lord Jesus Christ. Unless these churches begin to teach the principles of The New Revelation and to worship The New Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ, they will no longer have any traces of anything positive or good or of anything true and wise."

"Let it be known and repeated now again that all or most presently existing churches on planet Zero and other regions of the Zone of Displacement became the major strongholds of the Hells and the source of spreading falsities, distortions, perversions and all kinds of evils in the name of God, Allah, Buddha, Krishna or Jesus Christ or whatever name they are using."

"The type of worship which is sought by The Lord Jesus Christ indicates that any attempt to organize in the future, any new religious movement or a sect or a church or whatever organization based on The New Revelation and its principles will be false and will not be authorized by The Lord Jesus Christ. It will be, in fact, an attempt by the negative state to take control of The New Revelation and bastardize, pollute, poison and adulterate it by its usual favorite means — in The Name of The Lord Jesus Christ. Such an endeavor will never be a true worship of The Lord Jesus Christ."

"The only proper external form of this worship is occasional informal gatherings of two or three or more followers and practitioners of The New Revelation for the sole purpose of sharing their own experiences, ideas, concepts, feelings and thoughts related to the issues of The New Revelation and their life in accordance with these principles. In the process of such a gathering and sharing, they are to have fun, delight, pleasure, laughter, sharing spiritually,

mentally and physically (in terms of good food, music, stories, etc.)”

“Nothing more than this is proper and consistent with the true worship of The Lord Jesus Christ as required by the principles of The New Revelation.”

“This form of worship is applicable multiversally as well as on planet Zero and the entire Zone of Displacement (for the agents of the positive state and all those of the negative state who express a desire to convert to the positive state.)”

(8)

“The establishment of a private, personal and intimate relationship within one’s mind with The Lord Jesus Christ indicates how important it becomes for any practitioner of The New Revelation to approach The Lord Jesus Christ in modesty, humbleness, humility and innocence for the purpose of verification, check and endorsement of all one’s activities. The proper spiritual principle here is to consult, relate, share and ask for advice from The Lord Jesus Christ in all matters of one’s life.”

“If it is true that only The Lord Jesus Christ knows what is the best for you in an Absolute Sense, it is only logical to assume that every single activity which is being undertaken, or any planning to do this or that, prior to its actualization, its appropriateness should be checked, consulted and verified with The Lord Jesus Christ.”

“You are always to ask The Lord Jesus Christ personally for advice as to whether such plans or activities are consistent with your life assignment and if they are in accordance with The Will of The Lord Jesus Christ.”

“You have always to bear in mind that many ideas can be by impositions of the negative state for the purpose of temptation and misleading you into its clutches. Such ideas may sound very reasonable, beneficial, desirable and useful. But, unless they are confirmed and endorsed by The Lord Jesus Christ, from the position of His/Her unique presence in your spirit, soul and body, they are to be discarded as dangerous and inappropriate.”

“This principle of practice requires that you do not hesitate to ask for advice from The Lord Jesus Christ on any matter or issue of your own personal and private life, no matter how trivial, simple or unimportant it seems to you. The negative state is a master in concocting all kinds of trivial, seemingly unimportant issues by and through which it gets into you.”

“Some foolish humans on your planet believe that it is not proper to bother The Lord Jesus Christ with such trivialities but only with very important decisions which are a matter of life and death. They foolishly believe that The Lord Jesus Christ is too busy in solving the issues of multiversal significance and therefore, has no time for their trivia.”

“Beware, this is the negative state speaking. Remember, The Lord Jesus Christ is present in you and with you and it gives Him/Her the greatest possible pleasure to answer all your questions, to give you advice on all issues of your life. Nothing is trivial or unimportant for Him/Her. In His/Her view, from His/Her Absolute State, every particle, every notion, every grain of sand is as important, as significant, as needed, as crucial and as vital as everything else. It plays a certain important role that has usefulness for all. Whatever is useful for all is very important to The Lord Jesus Christ. Only from the position of the negative state are some things, or most things, considered unimportant, trivial and insignificant. As a matter of fact, the whole positive state and its lifestyle seems to the negative state to be that way (trivial and unimportant). Do not be taken in by this attitude. Instead, you are advised to freely and openly, without any hesitation, doubts, shame or embarrassment, approach The Lord

Jesus Christ in you with anything at all. In fact, this is an important requirement of the practice of The New Revelation in order to avoid the traps of the negative state.”

“In the positive state of Creation this principle is an integral part of its lifestyle and no one does anything at all without consulting The Lord Jesus Christ first.”

“In the negative state, as always, the exact opposite is true. No one, or very few creatures do so. And those who do that, do it, very often, in an inappropriate way, for wrong reasons and inconsistently, only when they are in some kinds of trouble.”

“This point implies that one needs to learn how to properly communicate with The Lord Jesus Christ. The means and conditions for this communication were described in the book *Who Are You And Why Are You Here?* and in Chapter Five of this book.”

(9)

“The New Revelation is not going to be preached by the preachers from the pulpits in churches, on radio, television or in places of social gatherings. One is to learn to rely on the inputs from one’s own within in all matters of truth, from the presence of The Lord Jesus Christ in one’s overall true mind. Preachers do not know the truth. Only The Lord Jesus Christ knows the truth, being The Absolute Truth Himself/Herself.”

“Therefore, it is vital and crucial for everyone to accept the fact of The New Revelation that no truth can be discovered in or from any other source but one’s own spiritual within or the source of The New Revelation which is The Lord Jesus Christ.”

“The principle here is to learn to verify everything in life from within with The Lord Jesus Christ — as pointed out just above. This is particularly true regarding the principles of The New Revelation. Everyone is urged and encouraged to go within, into one’s most within Spiritual Mind, and from the position of integration of all aspects of one mind, from the presence of The Lord Jesus Christ in that integration, make an inquiry about the true source of The New Revelation.”

“However, this approach will work only if there is a solemn desire to learn the truth and to know the truth for the sake of truth, for the sake of principle itself, without any ulterior reasons or preconceived notions: Not for the sake of proving one’s own belief system, whatever it may be, and disapproving The New Revelation, not for the sake of proving the verity of The New Revelation and disapproving any other concepts, ideas, views, religions or philosophies, but solely in order to learn and to practice the truth.”

“If one approaches the issue of verification of anything, and not only the truthfulness of The New Revelation, from this proper standpoint, one will never be misled or rejected the true answer.”

“This principle requires that, although The New Revelation, at each given point in time, can be transmitted only through one person, assigned for that purpose by The Lord Jesus Christ, its verification and validation must come from the true within of many individuals who desire, thirst and yearn for the truth for the sake of truth and for the sake of living and practicing that truth.”

“In the positive state of Creation, as all these words are being uttered by The Lord Jesus Christ and written by their transmitter, Peter, they are instantaneously put to the test of verification and validation by The Lord Jesus Christ from the position of its members’ private, personal and intimate relationship with Him/Her in their most within Spiritual Mind, in their

intermediate mind and their exterior mind. As soon as the truth of The New Revelation is verified and the fact that it is The True Word of The Lord Jesus Christ is confirmed, it is immediately put into their practice and they modify their lifestyle accordingly.”

“In the negative state and on your planet the situation is different. Particularly on your planet very few humans will know for some time to come that there is such a thing as The New Revelation. All those who know about it already have to overcome first the ‘natural’ tendency to reject it as inconsistent with what they thought was true before.”

“Thus, before acceptance of The New Revelation, they must willingly, by their own free will and choice, express a string of desires to be free from all attachments to all beliefs, views, opinions and lifestyles they previously held. Once such a desire is expressed sincerely, they are to request liberation, purification and cleansing from all of them and replacement with the truth of The New Revelation as ***The New Word of The Lord Jesus Christ***. Only then can they be imputed all its principles and influenced by it in their everyday living.”

“You can be assured that those humans on your planet who sincerely and honestly desire to know and to practice the real spiritual truth for the sake of principle will be given all opportunities to encounter The New Revelation, if not during their life on planet Zero, then, immediately after their arrival into the intermediate world of spirits. Those in the Hells and other regions of the Zone of Displacement who express such a desire will be taken to the special area between the Hells and the intermediate world where, in full objectivity and neutrality, they will be exposed to The New Revelation and given opportunity to convert by its means to the positive state.”

“As of today, as these words are being written and read, no one can convert to the positive state by any other means but by means of the principles of The New Revelation”.

“The access to The New Revelation in all the Hells and other regions of the Zone of Displacement is fully available as it is being transmitted. Only planet Zero is limited in this respect. As revealed previously, on your planet the negative state must win first fully before The New Revelation can be accepted in its fullness and in a widespread manner. As you see, the real practice of The New Revelation is possible only from the position of desire to know the truth in order to practice it or live it for the sake of principle.”

“This is a reflection of The Lord Jesus Christ’s attitude. The Lord Jesus Christ relates to everyone, loves everyone, wants the best for everyone, etc., for no other reason or merit but for the sake of principle because it is the right thing to do. Nothing is attached to this attitude. No demands, no conditions, no rewards and no expectations are part of this attitude. And, although the fact of reciprocating all The Lord Jesus Christ’s offers and His/Her attitudes bears all kinds of positive and good outcomes, rewards and feelings, and many other felicities, one does so, not for their sake, but for the sake of principle, for the sake of love of truth.”

“This spiritual law, repeated many times, can be considered a central theme of the practice of The New Revelation at any level of Creation, the Zone of Displacement and planet Zero. No exceptions or exclusions exist to this law.”

(10)

“The major three spiritual laws of unconditional love with wisdom toward The Lord Jesus Christ, toward others and toward oneself can be validated, actualized and realized only by the style of life one prefers and pursues. Because there is only one God and that God is The

Lord Jesus Christ in His/Her New Nature, all love is to be directed to Him/Her. To love any other imaginary god, that in reality does not exist, is to love no one. It is to love one's own imagination and desires of one's own foolish heart, which means to love oneself for the sake of oneself. Such love is, in fact, hate in disguise to everyone and everything else."

"The difficulties in acceptance of these facts about The Lord Jesus Christ and of the requirements to love only Him/Her for the sake of principle, as of now, will be an indicator that one in reality loves only oneself. If one desires to love the true God for the sake of principle, one is naturally equipped with special spiritual sensors that enable one to detect immediately the real truth and accept it with great elation and gratitude. Such an individual will never have any difficulties in accepting the truth of The New Revelation as a true New Word of The Lord Jesus Christ and to fall in an eternal unconditional love with The Lord Jesus Christ in His/Her New Nature."

"Many humans will consider this statement as a condemnation of all those who will have difficulties in accepting, or who outrightly reject, The New Revelation and The New Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ."

"Let it be known now that everyone, without any exception or exclusion, at one time or another, will be given an opportunity to know the truth of The New Revelation and The New Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ experientially and personally. No one will be denied any access to these facts. But it is a matter of free choice to accept or to reject this experience. No one can be forcefully made to believe in anything. It is a matter of chosen personal predisposition to accept or to deny and reject this or that without any compulsion."

"In the fact of this choice is its consequence. It is not the truth of The New Revelation that condemns one but one's chosen attitude toward it and to The New Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ that does so."

"The New Word of The Lord Jesus Christ — The New Revelation — is given for no other purpose but to offer everyone salvation (as far as people in the negative state are concerned) or a new opportunity for growth, betterment and spiritual progression (as far as people in the positive state are concerned). The Lord Jesus Christ comes always with something progressively new in order to accomplish this purpose. No sense of condemnation is conceivable in such an effort."

"However, the logical consequences of any choice must be clearly formulated so as to illustrate to all what not to choose. If, nevertheless, sentient entities choose it, it is their responsibility and their self-condemnation. No one can be blamed for anyone else's choices."

"This is the way the nature of life in general is. This fact is applicable multiversally."

(11)

"As you already know, any type of life in which one finds oneself at any given moment and place or state serves some important purpose. To make that life consistent with the principles of The New Revelation, one is to use and to live that life in accordance with the principle of moderation. Any extreme, no matter what it is, is of the negative nature."

"As long as one learns to properly moderate one's life, one is permitted to do, to experience and to participate in anything one desires. No restrictions or limitations are applicable in any respect. The life in accordance with The New Revelation is not the life in monasteries, seclusions, on the desert or high physical mountains, in some external rituals and sacrifices of one's needs, whatever they may be, but in normal everyday activities with all other

individuals, going about one's own business and providing for oneself with all necessities of sustenance of that life in any mode, form and condition. Because one accepted this particular life by one's free choice, one also accepted the need to take care of that life."

"In other words, as already was formulated in Chapter Twelve of this book, one is fully responsible for one's life and its support no matter where one is and what type of life one lives. Taking proper care and responsibility for one's life, in all its aspects equally, has a redeeming quality for those who are in the negative state and on planet Zero."

"As you know, the negative state is a destroyer of life in any of its forms and conditions. Therefore, to appreciate, to moderate, to take care of and to be responsible for one's life is to undermine the negative state's effort in this respect. This is its redeeming quality."

"For the practitioners of The New Revelation, while they live in the places or states where the negative state rules, to do just that signifies one of the many ways of overcoming and controlling the negative state. This is a very potent weapon in combatting the dead life of the negative state and human life."

"By taking full responsibility for one's life and properly moderating and controlling it, one takes away the control of the negative state and the human mode of life, asserting one's own position as the true master of that life."

"This step is particularly successful if one, asserting one's control over one's life, subsequently surrenders it to The Lord Jesus Christ so that He/She becomes the ultimate Absolute Master of one's life. By doing that, one acquires a true life of the positive state which is structured and patterned in accordance with The Principles of The New Revelation."

"In the positive state of Creation the responsibility for and moderation of everyone's life is an integral part of their lives which is being now modified in accordance with The New Word of The Lord Jesus Christ — The New Revelation."

(12)

"The practice of The New Revelation can also be found in the manner of one's attitude toward everyone and everything else. At all costs you are to preserve your spiritual freedom and independency, committing yourself only to the cause of The Lord Jesus Christ and the positive state."

"Under no circumstances are you to limit yourself by any type of attachment to any temporary, transient and valueless ideas, concepts, philosophies, politics, religions, material possessions or whatever is offered to you in such an abundance in the negative state. If possible at all, avoid any relationships which are restricting, limiting, binding and imprisoning but also avoid your own impositions, restrictions, limitations, etc., on others."

"Respecting your own freedom and independence requires that you respect everyone else's freedom and independence. Only in this manner are you reaffirming that you are free and independent. If you feel or exhibit a need to give up these precious spiritual commodities to anyone or anything else, for whatever cause or reason, or if you have a need to control and manipulate other people's freedom and independency, making them dependent on you, you are a slave of such needs. You lost your freedom and independence."

"In order to avoid this possibility, the advice for practitioners of The New Revelation is to relinquish their freedom and independency to The Lord Jesus Christ. Paradoxically, by such an act one becomes truly free and independent. No true freedom and independence exist

without The Lord Jesus Christ because He/She is the very Absolute Source of them. Relative sentient entities or humans of any kind can have only relative freedom and independence. Any relative condition does not contain the fullness of its state. That can come only from The Absolute State. Thus, left to themselves, sentient entities can never be truly free and independent in an Absolute Sense. Only in this absolute sense can true freedom and independency be experienced.”

“In order to accomplish this, it is necessary to give up one’s relative freedom and independency to The Lord Jesus Christ, who is in The Absolute State of The Absolute Freedom and The Absolute Independency, and to become truly free and independent from that position. No other source of this kind of freedom and independency exists.”

“Once this is done, you ask The Lord Jesus Christ to protect you from getting involved in situations or relationships of any kind which would deprive you of your freedom and independency and rob you of your most important proper relationship with The Lord Jesus Christ. As you know, nothing can replace or substitute a relationship with The Lord Jesus Christ. Only from the position of that relationship can you safely relate to everyone and everything else. From that position, you, in fact, relate from The Lord Jesus Christ in you to The Lord Jesus Christ in others. Such a relationship is a relationship from freedom and independency to freedom and independency. No danger of mutual enslavement and loss of that freedom and independency exists.”

“This step of the practice of The New Revelation is applicable multiversally.”

(13)

“This point is an extension of point 12. It deals with the issues of attachments. The most dangerous aspect of any attachment is unwillingness and reluctance, or even inability, to give up something or someone that exhausted its or her/his usefulness. Humans develop a dangerous tendency to cling desperately to their attachments in whatever form and shape.”

“Most spiritually damaging attachments are to one’s belief systems, religions or lifestyles. They prevent one from progressing, growing and moving to the next level of spiritual awareness. Attachments to only one form of life, such as, for example, human life, makes one a subject of its suffering, misery and acceptance of its negative aspects which are conveniently considered to be good and positive as though no other type of life exists. Attachments to external trinkets, pets, places or material possessions rob one of precious energies which are spent on useless maintenance of those attachments instead of on higher spiritual values.”

“The proper procedure in this respect is to be always open to experience and to enjoy everything available and to use it for good and positive purposes without getting attached to it.”

“In order to avoid the traps of such attachments, one is advised to give them all up to The Lord Jesus Christ, asking Him/Her to become the only center and meaning of one’s life. Subsequently, from that position, one can have anything one needs or wants without any danger of being needlessly attached to it.”

“Another aspect of this step is to ask The Lord Jesus Christ to free you from all needs, wants and desires which are inconsistent with the Will of The Lord Jesus Christ regarding your specific life. That way your mind will not be polluted by anything that can become a danger to your life. Only The Lord Jesus Christ knows what your real needs are. Let those needs be your needs.”

“Although this step is applicable multiversally, it has a tremendous significance for humans on planet Zero and all others in the Zone of Displacement.”

“Avoidance of these kinds of attachments defies the rule and control of the negative state. This is how the practitioner of The New Revelation, among other things, can be in control of his/her life and the negative state instead of being controlled by them.”

(14)

“And, finally, you are to remember that all things will pass. No one condition, state, process, place or whatever, is permanent and locked in within itself to eternity. Everything is changeable, modifiable and replaceable.”

“The only thing which is eternally permanent is your relationship with The Lord Jesus Christ. After all, He/She is The Source of your life. This is the only fact that can never be changed. Even the creatures and humans fabricated by the pseudo-creators, in their own type of life, depend on that Source, as was already pointed out several times throughout this book.”

“Because of this unchangeable factor, nothing is more important in the multiverse than your relationship with The Lord Jesus Christ and His/Her New Nature and how it influences your life and its mode of living. On this factor depends your destiny and placement in being and existence.”

“The closer and better your relationship with The Lord Jesus Christ is, the better and happier your life is. And, of course, vice versa.”

“If the only source of all happiness, joy, delight, pleasure, love, goodness, wisdom, truth and true knowledge is The Lord Jesus Christ, it is only logical that the better your relationship with Him/Her is, the more you participate in and acquire these exquisite attributes. The worse that relationship is, the less you participate in such attributes and positive experiences.”

“This situation is a natural consequence of life’s being and existence in itself. Since no other source of life is and exists, it is only natural to assume that disregard for that source will bring about everything **that is not** contained in that life.”

“Fortunately, although the fact about the only true source of the true life can never be changed to eternity — **this is The Absolute Truth** — one’s relationship to that Source can change at any time one expresses a desire for such a change.”

“In this respect, you have to distinguish between the state of this relationship and the process of this relationship. The state of this relationship is never changeable. The life, or its Source, requires that you relate to it. This is a state and condition of your being alive.”

“In other words, because you live and are alive, the only reason you are is because of your relationship to that life. Now, the source of the true life is The Lord Jesus Christ. Inherent in the fact of your being alive and living is a need to establish a relationship with The Lord Jesus Christ.”

“Even if you, for some reason or other, reject or deny The Lord Jesus Christ as the only Source of life, you still relate to Him/Her by the mode of rejection or denial. This is a relationship. This is a state which is not changeable. However, the process of that relationship is always changeable. You can change your mode of relationship with and to The Lord Jesus Christ at any time at your own discretion in any manner and way you wish.”

“This is a prerogative given by The Lord Jesus Christ to everyone as an eternal, irrevocable and non-retractable gift. You can do with that gift whatever you want.”

“But the way you use that gift determines your position and placement in being and existence, stemming from the choice you are making on a daily basis about how you want to relate to The Lord Jesus Christ as the only source of the true life.”

“Again, nothing is more important in any life. This step can be considered as one of the most important factors in practicing the life of The New Revelation. It is valid for all beings and existences everywhere and everywhen without any exception or exclusion.”

“If anyone has ears to hear, let him/her hear what The Lord Jesus Christ reveals in this Chapter.”

CHAPTER SEVENTEEN

THE PLACEMENT OF PLANET ZERO, HUMANS AND HUMANKIND IN RELATIONSHIP TO ALL ELSE

On March 26, 1988, at 4:20 a.m., the word of The Lord Jesus Christ came to me, saying,

“Taking into consideration the peculiarity, unusualness and virtual impossibility of human life, humankind and existence of planet Zero, the question is how do they fit in all else in the multiverse of Creation?”

“Now, the proper spiritual principle, as revealed and repeated numerous times throughout this and other books of The New Revelation, is to evaluate everyone’s and everything’s position and placement in the hierarchy of the spiritual organization in The Lord Jesus Christ’s Creation by their position toward, attitude toward and relationship with The Lord Jesus Christ and His/Her spiritual principles.”

“This principle determines not only the position of all sentient entities and humans but also their respective environments, planets, solar systems, galaxies and universes which they occupy at each given moment.”

“As you remember, the being and existence, as well as the quality and position of the multiverse with all its universes, galaxies, solar systems and planets, is determined and maintained by the sentient mind and its quality and content.”

“In view of this fact, what kind of position, attitude toward and relationship with The Lord Jesus Christ and His/Her spiritual principles do humans and humankind have? The answer to this question will also determine the placement of planet Zero in the multiversal system.”

“Being that human life is a very unusual, peculiar and an impossible phenomenon, human attitude, position and relationship toward The Lord Jesus Christ and His/Her spiritual principles must be also unusual, peculiar and impossible. As you remember, nowhere else in Creation does such a situation exist.”

“As you are aware from this New Revelation, the content of human life consists of contradictions, distortions, uncertainties, falsifications and perversions of every kind. This content determines and defines the response to the above question.”

“Human attitude, position and relationship toward The Lord Jesus Christ and His/Her spiritual principles and laws are full of contradictions, distortions, uncertainties, doubts, rejection, denial, falsification and perversion. Humankind is irreconcilably divided into many different races with each race having its own contradictory conceptualization of The Creator or The Lord Jesus Christ.”

“Just look at your planet. Its population can be counted in ten figures. Out of these ten figures the vast majority of humans do not confess and worship The Lord Jesus Christ. Instead, they serve different ‘gods’ such as, for example, Buddha, Krishna, Allah, Jehovah, Manitou, etc. Each of these ‘gods’ is conceptualized differently with a different requirement for its worship. The rest of humankind either call themselves Christians or agnostics, atheists or unbelievers.

The total inadequacy of Christian conceptualization of The Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ was already explained in the third chapter of this book.”

“So, how many humans on your planet really have a proper attitude, position and relationship with The Lord Jesus Christ? As you know, this is determined by having proper knowledge, understanding and conceptualization of His/Her true Nature first before proper attitude, position and relationship toward Him/Her can be established. The number of humans on your planet who have this proper stance barely exceeds three figures.”

“From the quantitative standpoint, in comparison with the other figure, this figure is nothing. Fortunately, in assessing any spiritual state, the quality counts more than quantity.”

“However, you have to understand that a cumulative sum of all negative qualities existing on your planet regarding this issue engulfs the entire planet Zero, flooding its atmosphere completely with negative, inappropriate and adverse thoughts, feelings, behaviors, attitudes and relationships and, subsequently, poisons and contaminates everyone and everything.”

“Having such an adverse atmosphere, planet Zero cannot be situated in any known dimension of the multiverse of Creation. But neither can it be situated exactly within the known regions of the Zone of Displacement.”

“If human life is some kind of unusual, peculiar, impossible, perverted and distorted phenomenon, it is only logical to assume that the position of its environment, that is, its planet, will also be unusual, peculiar, impossible and out of alignment with the rest of Creation and the Zone of Displacement.”

“The newly revealed information about your planet is the statement that it does not occupy any known position within the Zone of Displacement either. Up to this point, it was permitted for you to think that planet Zero was within the Zone of Displacement proper. But, as already pointed out in the first chapter of this book, to be in the Zone of Displacement is to be in the minus position. The minus position is totally negative. No positive connotation can be conceived within its sphere of influence.”

“On the other hand, planet Zero, for the time being, has some positive elements for the purpose of comparison and illustration of life of both the positive and the negative state, respectively. But being predominantly of the negative nature, planet Zero is much closer in its proximity to the Zone of Displacement than to any other position of the multiverse of Creation. This is the reason why it was permitted, and even necessary at the time, for you to think that your planet is within the realm of the Zone of Displacement proper. For all practical purposes, in the proportion of good and evil, being predominantly in evilness and falsifications of the nature of its inhabitants, it might as well be in the Zone of Displacement.”

“However, it is not quite there yet. Then the question ensues, where exactly is planet Zero positioned relative to all else in Creation and the Zone of Displacement?”

“The answer to this question will not be easy to understand.”

“As you remember, the pseudo-creators moved planet Earth from its original position in some other galaxy and solar system through the so-called eighth dimension to its present position. Its current position and coordinates were carefully planned by the pseudo-creators in order to make the impossible — human life — possible.”

“As you know, the possibility of human life, in all its manifestation, required a special kind of

condition that had never existed anywhere and anywhen before.”

“Saying that the pseudo-creators moved the entire physical planet from one dimension to some other unusual position, does not exactly reflect the reality of that process.”

“What will be very difficult for you to understand, as you are trying very hard to find proper words in English or any other human language to express what is being conveyed to you, is that each planet, solar system, galaxy and universe has its own one genuine physical compaction in some space, time and dimension. This one genuine spatial-temporal-dimensional compaction generates numerous images and replicas of itself, occupying the same space, and sometimes even the same time, but different dimensions and, very often, different times as well.”

“Each image and replica of the considered one genuine planet is inhabited with the same type of sentient entities but not with their doubles or doppelgangers. They are all the same sentient forms but not necessarily in the connotation of being the exact replica of each other. You cannot say, for example, that each image or replica of the original planet has its own Peter in exactly the same appearance as Peter of the original planet. Some obvious similarities exist but nothing of repetitious nature, for nothing is repetitious in The Lord Jesus Christ’s Creation.”

“Moreover, the image or replica of the genuine original planet is not the same as its original. There are always differences. The original cannot be replaced by anything.”

“In the case of the original and genuine planet Earth, one of its images, the most outward and remote from its original, and therefore the least reflecting the original structure of its original, was separated from its position and its original.”

“After separation, it was moved by the pseudo-creators to its present position making it planet Zero. Now, here is another, newly-revealed reason why your planet is called Zero.”

“Besides what was revealed about it in the first chapter (and, as you remember, it was indicated there that more will be revealed about it later), the zero position indicated that your planet is lacking any reality, being separated from its original, and that it does not have its own reflection, image or replica. Instead, it stands completely and totally alone without any direct connectedness to anything else and particularly to its source of reflection.”

“In other words, it has zero amount of images and reflections of itself, being that it is not an original itself. Only an original planet itself is capable by its very nature to generate its own images, reflections and replicas. The image, reflection and replica cannot produce its own secondary image, reflection and replica.”

“The travel backward in time by the pseudo-creators to that original planet Earth was undertaken for the purpose of finding a suitable most remote image of a planet that would not yet be inhabited by sentient entities.”

“The reason why the planet Earth was their choice was because, first of all, they were the ones who occupied its original core, and, second, because planet Earth, at that time, occupied the most outward degree of the natural multiverse of Creation.”

“As you know, only in the most outward degree of Creation is the experimentation with the negative state feasible and possible. No other position is conducive to the activation of the negative state. But, of course, it was not sufficient to activate the negative state itself. The

purpose was to produce life forms from the principles of the negative state and establish them in a proper environment in order to illustrate and demonstrate all consequences, outcomes and results of 'life' produced by such adverse means."

"Now, the only condition in which such a 'life' could take hold was the most outward and remote image, reflection and replica of the planet that occupied the most outward position in the natural or external degree of Creation. Thus, you have here a multiple outwardness: It happens in the external degree of Creation — the first externalization! Within that degree, it happens in the universe that occupies the external position of the multiverse — the second externalization! Within that external universe, it happens in the galaxy that occupies the most external position of that most external universe — the third externalization! Within that galaxy, it happens in the solar system that occupies the most external position of that galaxy — the fourth externalization! Within that solar system, it happens on the planet which represents the most external of all externals — the fifth externalization! And, finally, the newly fabricated life forms from the elements of the negative state are placed on the most outward, most remote and most external replica, image or reflection of the most external planet — the sixth externalization! (In actuality the mystery of number six relates to the apocalyptic number of the beast — 666. This is the true significance of that number in a spiritual sense.)"

"However, as long as this particular image is connected to its original source-planet, the lifestyle of the newly produced life forms — humans — has little chance to take hold in the manner planned by the pseudo-creators. Connection to the original source, which has all information and knowledge of all and everything, cannot successfully produce ignorance and unconscious processes conducive to the planned proof of the possibility of life derived from a source other than the positive state of The Lord Jesus Christ."

"Therefore, it was necessary to remove that particular image or reflection or replica from its source and place it elsewhere in a condition of total isolation and separation from everywhere and everything."

"And, yet, at the same time, the purpose of its separation required its placement into a position that would be one-sidedly accessible to everyone and everything from elsewhere in a manner not perceptible by humans (from the position of their conscious awareness)."

"The reason why it is a one-sided access is because this access is only to planet Zero but not from planet Zero. Planet Zero and humans on it are positioned in such a peculiar place and condition that they have no direct, experiential access to anyone or anywhere/anywhen outside of their own planet and its immediate vicinity and solar system, as well as outside of their own time."

"However, everyone else from everywhere and everywhen may have access to planet Zero by two, very specific and particular, modes: 1. By projection of their thoughts, ideas, concepts, feelings, desires, wishes, wants, etc., into the human mind; and 2. by incarnation on planet Zero by the established unusual, unnatural, abnormal, unhealthy and impossible (made possible) so-called physical birth (one of the most unpleasant experiences one can choose). A direct appearance of people from other regions of the multiverse and the Zone of Displacement, in their original and genuine form, is not possible on planet Zero (before this time and at this time) because they could not survive its unusual condition and position. They can do so only in dreams, during a plenary state of inwardness and visions of the mind."

"On the other hand, humans are not allowed outside their sphere of influence which is limited and restricted to their planet."

“Because of this situation, planet Zero cannot be situated within any known space and time of the multiverse or the Zone of Displacement. If it were, it would have access to either the other regions of the multiverse or to the other regions of the Zone of Displacement. Either situation would make the illustration, exemplification and manifestation of the consequences, outcomes and results of the negative state impossible.”

“In the first case, the connection would be with the positive state which would nullify any such effect. In the second case, the connection would be with the negative state which would block the ability to sustain the state of ignorance and unconscious processes.”

“In this latter case, humans would know immediately the source of their problems, states and conditions. Being of the rebellious nature (this is the way they were fabricated), they would immediately rebel against their fabrication and refuse to go along with the original plan.”

“In that case, the whole issue about answering the question of life originated by the negative state could never be resolved and answered. The entire Creation would suffer the lack of important knowledge. The consequences of such a lack would be incalculable.”

“So, then, where is planet Zero situated or located? What are its coordinates?”

“Paradoxically speaking, the position of planet Zero is in a position of zero. That is to say, it is in neither dimension, nor in any region of the Zone of Displacement, but relative to all of them without any direct connectedness to any of them.”

“This is very difficult to explain. There is a state in the multiverse which is no state and a place which is no place and time which is no time. But it is not limbo, which is outside even this state of no state. You can conceptualize it as a state existing between limbo and everything else, in the closest proximity to the Zone of Displacement. It can reflect all states, conditions and places but not as their original copies or duplicates. Its non-dimensional condition and spatial-temporal warp receives everything in a totally distorted manner.”

“Thus, all perceptions of inhabitants of planet Zero, regarding anything, by their very nature, are never congruent to any reality of anything, including the ‘reality’ of the Hells.”

“The peculiarity of this condition is further complicated by the fact that, by their very nature, humans and their planet are always on a distorted receiving end. This means that all thoughts, feelings, ideas, concepts, creative endeavors, behaviors, attitudes or whatever you have in human life, and all conditions, states and processes of their planet, are never original, produced from their own mind or by their planet’s condition, independent of anyone or anything else. Instead they are all, without any exception or exclusion, by the influx of someone or something else outside the sphere of their position.”

“As these spiritual, mental, physical and Zone of Displacement’s processes are coming into the human sphere, they have to go through certain dimensional blocks and warps which are inherent in the nature of their position and which utterly distort the original version of the sent material — whatever it might be.”

“One of the reasons why the pseudo-creators situated planet Zero in the zero position, and in its peculiar state, was because, by its very nature, that position is not capable of reflecting or receiving anything in its original condition, content and form. It distorts everything.”

“This was an assurance for them that humans would never be able to learn or to properly understand the truth about their situation or about anything else for that matter.”

"Now, in this kind of condition, the full illustration, demonstration and manifestation of all consequences, outcomes and results of the activated negative state can take place the best. Human life, with its planet, suits this purpose in the most vivid and learnable manner."

"No other condition, outside of human life, is as suitable for this process as the human life. After all, it was fabricated exactly for this purpose."

"But the special condition of human life required also a very special cosmic position. Because nothing original exists in human life, humans could not have been placed on a planet of the original state. Only in the most remote state of reflection of the real planet could such life take hold."

"Looking on human life and planet Zero from this perspective, two things become obvious: First, the physical world of humans and their life is only a transient weak input of someone else's perverted idea for the purpose of proving the point that life can originate from the non-spiritual source; second, the nature of human life requires a total dependency on influx from someone and somewhere else; in this case, primarily on the dead life of the negative state that feeds incentives to human life."

"Both points indicate that the reality of human life and its planet is very tenuous and illusory, lacking any proper foundation and permanency."

"But, in order to give humans any semblance of reality of their being and existence, it was necessary to disconnect them from any awareness of their true state, place and origin."

"Thus, humans have no other notion than that they are independent and free creatures and that their thoughts, feelings, concepts, ideas, behaviors, attitudes, endeavors or whatever they have are their own productions, originated in their own mind-brain. Only with this kind of arrangement is it possible to accomplish whatever is needed to be accomplished with human life. Any endeavor in any respect must be founded on the awareness of the sentient mind that it is its own independent production and not of some kind of outside force which uses the sentient entity as its medium or tool for that endeavor."

"It is not by coincidence that The Lord Jesus Christ had to incarnate on planet Zero, into the human life. First of all, as mentioned before, it gave Him/Her a body which was produced from the elements of the negative state and by means of which He/She could enter all the Hells. But, most importantly, it put Him/Her in an impossible position to perceive 'reality' the way humans do. From that position, The Lord Jesus Christ could initiate the process of conversion and change of the mode of the humans' perception, once they leave planet Zero."

"An even more important reason was that, by having experienced human life and its distorted and distorting position, He/She could implant into it a different perspective which will eventually lead to the possibility of establishing a state in humans conducive to the learning of all these facts about themselves and the negative state without distortion. What happened here is that, after the fusion of the physical body of Jesus Christ into the totality of The Absolute Nature of The Most High, The Lord Jesus Christ, in His/Her New Nature, became the only possible link to any true reality for humans."

"Thus, while before that time no possibility existed for humans to receive or perceive anything in its true condition, state, content and nature, but only in a falsified, distorted and perverted manner, after this process with The Lord Jesus Christ was completed, humans, for the first time, will be able to know and to understand the truth in its original, literal state, condition and

content by and through The Lord Jesus Christ; of course, as always, only if they choose to do so by their free will and choice.”

“The distorted and distorting condition of the human position and the position of their planet was also the reason why any real, genuine spiritual truth could not be written or revealed, up to this point, in any other language but the language of correspondences, symbolism and representations. This language cannot be distorted. Having no conscious knowledge that such is the case, humans are not capable of distorting the inner spiritual sense of real truth. They had no capacity to understand or even perceive this truth. But The New Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ makes this perception, understanding and application possible.”

“For that reason, the fullness of this New Revelation, as it is revealed in this book, about these important issues, could not have come until the process of fusion and hybridization, described in Chapter Two and throughout this book, was completed.”

“Whatever was revealed before that time was either distorted or given in pure symbolism and correspondences so as not to be distorted. That way only its literal meaning could be distorted. Being that literal meaning has no meaning, its distortion has no meaning.”

“This is the reason why the revelation that came through Swedenborg still contained major distortions, and why the first portion of The New Revelation, contained in the other nine books by this transmitter, could not have been completed or fully explained. However, once the link between the true reality and human life was established by this act of The Lord Jesus Christ, this current revelation could be fully granted.”

“What you have to realize here is that this link does not function that much for humans while they are still living on planet Zero. For the time being, nothing much can be done about the situation of planet Zero. Before this link was established, humans’ behavior, after their arrival into the intermediate world of spirits, was very peculiar.”

“What do you think of humans’ behavior even now? Instead of looking around, listening and learning, the first thing they do is to try to establish their own lifestyle, believing that they are superior to everyone else and that their religion, or whatever belief system they have, is the only acceptable truth. Therefore, they immediately try to convert everyone they encounter to their belief system.”

“Unfortunately, being fanatical about their belief system, in their utmost boastful human arrogance and intolerance, they are trying to forcefully impose themselves and their beliefs on others, denying them any freedom of choice. This is particularly true about Mormons, Jehovah Witnesses and the so-called born-again Christians.”

“This type of behavior is typically human. No other sentient entities have such inclinations. In fact, to behave in this manner is for all but humans a horrid and shocking act.”

“Because of the original lack of the above-mentioned link, this behavior was permitted and tolerated for a long time and humans, in the intermediate world of spirits, were allowed to form themselves into societies, states and organizations in accordance with their preferred mode of life and religion, believing themselves to be in Heaven.”

“This situation continued for almost two thousand years in your time. But, recently, it was completely abolished and is no longer tolerated.”

“At the moment they arrive into that world, humans are introduced into the reality of their

situation and The Lord Jesus Christ personally reveals Himself/Herself to them, giving them an opportunity to experience the truth in its original, non-distorted state and content.”

“Through this personal experience, humans have a clear choice in the matter. Therefore, they no longer need to gather into societies and organizations of their own kinds, but instead, either they are sent to The New School for restructuring, relearning and transformation, or they join similar minded humans in some regions of the Hells.”

“In assessing humans and their position, you have to be aware of their very fragile, unstable and infested condition. Being that they are on the receiving end, humans are very vulnerable to all kinds of spiritual, mental and physical infections, illnesses, diseases, complications and aging processes.”

“As you remember, they were structured in all respects in such a manner as to naturally incline toward the negative state rather than being positive in accordance with the structure and dynamics of the positive state. Their proclivity to be evil, cunning, deceitful, utterly selfish, self-centered, immature, one-sided, rigid, inflexible and habit-forming is genetically ingrained or encoded in all aspects of their spirit, soul and body.”

“This condition makes it difficult for them to perceive, understand, acquire and sustain a truly positive and spiritual lifestyle which requires openness, flexibility, humility, honesty, decency, modesty, innocence, truthfulness, selflessness, lovingness and changeability.”

“In their outward, physical appearance, humans resemble most of the known sentient entities in that that they walk on two feet, have two hands, two eyes, two ears, etc. However, this resemblance ends with this external appearance. And, although they contain within their bodies organs similar to those of many sentient entities, the positioning of those organs, as well as their structural composure and function, differ very much”

“This is particularly true about the structure and function of the human brain, nervous system and sexual organs. The structure and function of their brain and of the entire nervous system was completely changed and rewired in such a manner as to make it impossible for humans to sensorially perceive reality the way it really is.”

“This restructuring was a necessary step in order to make it possible for humans to survive on planet Zero, which is positioned in the most isolated, separated and unusual place outside of the multiverse, outside of the Zone of Displacement and outside of limbo.”

“To sustain any form of life in such a cosmic condition is an extremely difficult task. This is the reason why the human body is so vulnerable to all kinds of breakdowns and wears out so rapidly. As you are aware, the average life span of that body is no more than 75 years. And although medical science somewhat improved this condition, humans rarely live over 95 years.”

“If you compare this life span with other races in the multiverse, it is so short in comparison to them it is as though it does not exist at all. If humans were not genetically conditioned to procreate in such an intense and frequent manner, their race would perish very fast without any traces.”

“In this respect human sexual organs were structured purposefully in such a manner as to make them, for most of them, very fertile and easily impregnated so that they could sustain and maintain their race alive. They have a very strong sexual drive and need for mothering and fathering. This is purposefully conditioned and reinforced by all kinds of religious

doctrines and dogmas, and other social expectations, in order to assure the continuous aliveness of the human race.”

“From the position of total isolation and separation from and inaccessibility of humans to anyone and anything else in the multiverse and in the Zone of Displacement, from being totally alone, and from having no direct experience of any other sentient entities, humans developed a kind of superiority complex and boastful arrogance. They seriously consider the possibility that they are the most unique and the only sentient life form in being and existence and that, therefore, they are very precious and valuable and no one and nothing can compare to them.”

“At the same time, because they do not see and experience any other condition for the development of sentient life, they consider human life in its bodily manifestation and external, outward combination and environment as the only feasible and scientifically possible life.”

“Thus, in most instances, human science does not derive life from its ultimate spiritual source but from the unusual combination of the external cosmic particles or stew which by sheer chance produced what is called life.”

“Not knowing anything directly about the possibility of any other state, condition and process of life but their own human life, humans developed an unusual attitude toward their type of life. They desperately cling to this life as though with their physical death they cease to exist completely.”

“The nature, structure and content of human life, being that it is an impossible phenomenon, made possible by a very peculiar combination and force, in comparison with all other manifestations and carriers of life, places human life in a position of being a cancerous, infectious, incurable and dangerous cell that, in reality, has a tendency to devour anything truly alive. It is a parasite that lives off its host by devouring it and destroying itself in the process.”

“In a true sense of this word, humans do not live but vegetate. They have no idea what the true life is all about.”

“In order to illustrate the type of life that did not originate from the positive state, that is, from The Lord Jesus Christ and His/Her spiritual principles, human life was permitted to come to its fruition.”

“The lesson here is very obvious. Unless life truly derives from The Absolute Source of Life — The Lord Jesus Christ — and His/Her true spiritual principles it cannot attain any other condition, form and style but what human life in reality is.”

“In vividly illustrating, exemplifying and conveying this lesson, human life has its value. No other value can be ascribed to the human life. After all, to repeat again, it was fabricated and permitted to come into its impossible being and existence exactly for this purpose.”

“This is the reason why human life, humankind and planet Zero are positioned cosmically, spiritually, mentally and physically in such an unusually impossible condition. In reality, as mentioned many times before, nothing is possible about human life. It is an ugly monstrosity, tolerated only for the purpose of a valuable spiritual learning. And, yet, The Lord Jesus Christ did not hesitate to incarnate into the human life, into the worst possible condition, and even incorporate the human body-flesh, after its Divinization, into the totality of His/Her Absolute Nature.”

“Besides what was already revealed about this incarnation, two other reasons for this act will be emphasized here:”

(1)

“The salvation of all from the influence of the negative state (particularly humans and creatures fabricated in the Hells) is not possible from any other condition but from the position of the product of the negative state itself. The product has to include all aspects of the negative state at all levels of its manifestation. As you know, humans were fabricated from the three contradictory impossible elements — distorted and perverted elements of the true life, direct elements of the dead life and several combined elements of various non-sentient life. From bringing about this peculiar life form, the consequences, outcomes and results of the activated negative state could be manifested.”

“The salvation of the entire Creation from the negative state is possible only from the end results of the activities of the negative state. That is to say, in order to enter the negative state, without annihilating it, it was necessary for The Lord Jesus Christ to enter the end product of the negative state first, acquire proper means and with these means enter the dead life of the negative state itself.”

“No other life forms except humans were of the most suitable means for accomplishing this goal because humans are the end product of the negative state.”

“In another sense, the need to start with the human life is in the fact that, if any other means for entrance into the negative state were available but human (which there was not), humans would be excluded from being eventually transformed and saved from the negative state and the human life. In that case, though, the negative state could not be eliminated because its end product — humans — would be either continuously producing the negative state in a human form, content and condition or, losing the support system from their parents — the Hells — they would eternally perish or cease to exist. Such an outcome in itself would be very negative. Therefore, by the fact of this outcome, the negative state would continue in its dead life in some other form and condition.”

(2)

“And here comes the second reason why The Lord Jesus Christ entered the negative state via the human life. As you know, inherent in His/Her Nature is Absolute Love and Absolute Wisdom. Simply stated, The Absolute Love is Absolute and All-encompassing. It cannot exclude humans from its sphere. Otherwise it would not be Absolute. The Absolute Wisdom of this Absolute Love requires from Him/Her to love in an Absolute Sense adjusted to the level and needs of each carrier of any life.”

“Thus, it would be in violation of The Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ and all His/Her spiritual principles if He/She were to bypass humans and let them be to their own self-destructive destiny. After all, humans perform for the entire Creation and its multiverse an invaluable service by being what they are and the way they are.”

“In this respect the question is, after the human type of life exhausts its usefulness and all spiritual lessons are learned, after the elimination of the negative state, what is going to happen to humans, humankind and planet Zero?”

“The fact that humans, by their unusual mode of life, provide an invaluable service to the entire multiverse of Creation has a redeeming quality. Moreover, as revealed previously, any life, including an impossible human life, contains within itself the ability to freely choose and

to change. This ability is utilized by The Lord Jesus Christ in the process of spiritual, mental and physical transformation of humans, after they leave their planet and physical body in which their life was trapped.”

“You have to understand that human life is integrally connected to the type of humans’ physical body and planetary condition in which they live. Only in human life, and nowhere else, the environment of their planet and their physical body predominantly rule their mode of life. Human life depends on these two external factors. Humans have very little mind control and conscious regulations of their bodily functions and their physical environment. Whatever mind control they exhibit in this respect, in comparison with other sentient entities who have full control, is so infinitesimally small that it does not count.”

“Their boastful arrogant claims about some humans’ ability to control with their mind the processes and functions of their bodies and their physical planetary environment through engineering, is nothing more than boastful arrogance. It is of such limited proportions that it does not give them any true control. At the end, they still succumb to the rule of their body and their planetary physical environment. And although some selected individuals can accomplish, through the use of a special trancelike condition, relatively much, they are only a meager exception to this rule.”

“So, when humans leave behind their physical bodies and planetary environment, they leave the two most potent stimulators and conditioners of human life. What they take with themselves instead, is the mode of human living or their human lifestyle.”

“In reality however, not being continuously reinforced in the mode of human life by their physical body and planetary environment, it is not as difficult for humans to relinquish their human lifestyle as it seems at first glance.”

“All they need to do is to honestly express their desire to The Lord Jesus Christ to be freed from their vicious, rigid, stubborn and arrogant habits, inherent in their human life.”

“Of course, another problem with humans is that their life is specifically bound only to a certain condition. Without having this condition, reflected in their physical body and planetary position, they cannot function.”

“So, when they come to the intermediate world of spirits, after all their conditions and situations have been explained to them, they are given a choice to transform either into positive entities or negative ones. Either choice requires extensive work on changing the entire structure and function of their mind so as to comfortably accommodate them to their newly chosen life.”

“Thus, in either case, after this extensive spiritual, mental, genetic and physical transformation is completed, they retain nothing specifically human within themselves or in their outward form.”

“A choice to be transformed into a positive entity brings humans into a special division of The New School where they undergo the abovementioned process and subsequently join the ranks of angels and positive spirits relevant to their newly chosen destiny.”

“A choice to be transformed into a negative entity is much easier and does not require such an extensive accommodation because, by their very nature, the way they were fabricated, humans have a natural inclination to be negative anyway. Only few adjustments are necessary in this case in order to align them with the atmosphere of the respective Hell they

choose to enter and to settle. In the process, these humans join the ranks of devils, Satans, demons or evil spirits suitable to their own chosen lifestyle.”

“As already mentioned in the books Fundamentals of Human Spirituality, Messages From Within and Major Ideas of The New Revelation, this typical human era was entirely eliminated from the intermediate world of spirits.”

“To remind the reader again, humans, until not long ago, were allowed for some important spiritual reasons to establish themselves in the intermediate world of spirits, where for many centuries they perpetuated typical human life as they had it on planet Zero. They were given an illusion of being in their formal physical bodies and on their former physical planet.”

“Only with such an illusion could the typical human life have been maintained, being that it is specifically bound by these two conditions.”

“But this is no longer the case. The only place where human life is still vegetating (Humans do not truly live. Instead, they vegetate!) is on planet Zero. No other places exist where humans can be found any longer.”

“Eventually, after the services which humans perform for all are no longer required, human life, in its present form and condition, will be eliminated entirely on planet Zero also.”

“Planet Zero itself, after its purification and cleansing from all pollution, poisons and contamination by human life, will be returned to its original place in the sphere of the original planet Earth. Or it will succumb to self-destructive nuclear, or any other type of holocaust (its sun can go supernova, for example) and its image and reflection will disappear from the multiverse.”

“Of course, all experiences of humans, from the moment of their fabrication to the moment of their very end, will be eternally preserved in the Multiversality-Of-It-All (Lake of Fire and Brimstone) for the eternal learning of all sentient entities of what never to choose.”

“And, by this act, the history of humankind, in all its entirety, will end forever.”

“ If anyone has ears to hear and to listen, let him/her hear and listen to what The Lord Jesus Christ reveals in this Chapter.”

CHAPTER EIGHTEEN

THE NEW LIFE OF THE POSITIVE STATE

On March 27, 1988, on Sunday morning, the word of The Lord Jesus Christ came to me again, saying,

“The end of the specific human life, the life of impossibility, contradiction, deceitfulness, cunningness, double standards, double binds, uncertainty, instability, illnesses, weaknesses, doubts, indecisions, murderousness, destructiveness and all other numerous infestations of the negative state, with which human life is endowed so abundantly, does not mean the end of its carriers — humans. As indicated in the previous chapter, they will be transformed either into positive or negative entities, respectively.”

“But eventually, the negative state will be eliminated. The final elimination of the specific human life on planet Zero will fully coincide with the final elimination of the negative state. The two are inseparably connected by a special umbilical cord. Human life depends on being fed by the negative state. The negative state needs humans for projecting and actualizing all their evil, false, generally and specifically negative ideas.”

“So, if you cut that cord, neither can survive for too long. The negative state could survive without humans for some time. But eventually, it would succumb to the lack of feedback of its efforts and to the lack of supply of the new souls of humans. This would result in its gradual dying out.”

“Of course, this will not happen until both humans and the negative state exhaust their usefulness for which they exist. And because their usefulness is mutually connected, their eventual elimination will happen at the same time and during the same time (this is a gradual and slow process).”

“Once this most desirable task is successfully completed, and no specific human life or dead life remains, the only available life will be the true life of the positive state in its infinite varieties of manifestations and their corresponding infinite varieties of the positive non-sentient life forms.”

“Is life without human life and dead life of the negative state possible? And if it is, what kind of life would it be?”

“As you remember, in Chapter Five of the book *Reality, Myths & Illusions*, it was clearly revealed that all efforts of the negative state are to prove that the negative state will be here forever because the positive state needs for its survival the negative state. The pseudo-logic of this propaganda drumbeat is in the fact that if the negative state is needed for survival of the positive state, then the negative state is also good and godly and it would be therefore ungodly and bad to fight or to eliminate it. In this fallacious conceptualization, the negative state is conceived as equal to the positive state because without the negative state, no freedom of choice is possible.”

“It is true that the negative state was permitted to come to its fruition because of freedom of choice. However, in actuality, the negative state was activated in order to answer the most important question posed by Creation about the mode of life or life in general which would

derive from a source other than The Lord Jesus Christ and His/Her spiritual principles. It was also permitted for illustration of what not to choose. In this sense only, the existence of the negative state contributes to the freedom of choice.”

“But, once the negative state answers that question fully, and the final choice is made, as described in Chapter Eight of this book, what would be the purpose of its continuous existence? After that, it would serve no purpose and use.”

“As you remember, The Spiritual Law of Use and Validation permits anyone’s and anything’s being and existence only if they serve some kind of use by which they can validate and justify their existence. No other reasons exist for anyone’s or anything’s continuation beyond that point.”

“As you know from the above-mentioned Chapter in the book Reality, Myths & Illusions, the true life of the positive state, by virtue of its nature, does not need anything for its being and existence except its Absolute Source — The Lord Jesus Christ. But The Lord Jesus Christ is the very Absolute Life Himself/Herself. The secret of the true life’s being and existence is that it is and exists for the sake of principle itself because it is the right thing to have. The wisdom of love of life is in the fact that The Lord Jesus Christ generates life for the sake of principle because it is the very right thing to do. No other outside reason, and particularly, no negative state is needed for validation, justification and continuation of life’s being and existence.”

“However, there is a secret and a mystery here. So far, it has not been revealed. Let it be revealed now that ***the true life of the positive state, up to this point and as long as the negative state is permitted to be and to exist, has been and will be tainted by the presence of the activated negative state within the current cycle of time.*** Regarding this mystery, you can distinguish three qualities of life in the positive state:”

- “1. One that existed before this cycle of time, during which the negative state was dormant and in a state of potentiality;
2. the second which exists now, during which the negative state is fully activated and co-exists with the positive state, under its very nose, so-to-speak;
3. and the third that will come after this cycle of time, during which the negative state and human life will have no being and existence in any mode, form or condition.”

“Each of the above-mentioned three situations requires a different mode and quality of life.”

“The worst situation is, of course, with the present cycle of time because of the active mode of the negative state’s being and existence.”

“When The Lord Jesus Christ urged everyone to bear their cross patiently and enduringly, He/She was speaking not only to humans, but, most importantly, to all other sentient entities in the entire Creation and its multiverse. ***The being and existence of the negative state is a burden and a cross to everyone everywhere and everywhen. Directly and indirectly, it adversely influences the life of everyone regardless of the mode of life in which one is and exists.***”

“Remember, the choice always has to be made for or against the negative state. This is the burden that you all agreed to carry for the sake of important spiritual learning. These words here are being spoken now to all everywhere and everywhen, no matter where and when

they are situated at each given moment of time within this cycle of time.”

“The problem with this situation is that the full nature of the negative state cannot be exposed in its totality at one given time. No one anywhere and anywhen could survive such an exposure for even a fraction of a second. Therefore, the nature of the negative state must be exposed gradually, step-by-little-step, in small increments. At each moment of its new exposure, a new choice must be made for it or against it by everyone everywhere and everywhen without any exception or exclusion.”

“As you know, the final phase of The Last Judgment cannot commence until the entire full nature of the negative state is finally exposed. Then and only then, the last final choice in this respect will be made and the entire Creation will be finally freed for good and forever from this awful burden. When this happens, then and only then, by one final choice, the true life of the positive state in its fullness can commence.”

“A great mystery and secret is being revealed here. Creation was created by The Lord Jesus Christ for the purpose of the true life in the positive state. However, the fullness of that life cannot be initiated until all choices, and the very final choice, for it or against it are made. In order that such a choice could be made freely and independently, by comparison and living examples, the negative state needed to be activated first and allowed to expose its own lifestyle and human life mode so that Creation could never ever be burdened again by the question of the possibility of any other life but the true life of the positive state.”

“Before the fullness of the true life of the positive state can come to its fruition, all other non-true lives, such as human life and dead life, must be given a chance to prove their validity and necessity as a choice against anything else. Otherwise, Creation would be plagued to eternity by uncertainty of the unanswered question about any other life. Being plagued by uncertainty of anything cannot give life a full proper possibility for its expression and impression. Too much precious life energy is spent on coping with this uncertainty.”

“On the other hand, within this cycle of time, during the active mode of the negative state, too much precious energy is spent on coping and dealing with the negative state in the form of choice-making and otherwise to allow the full actualization, realization and manifestation of the true life of the positive state. You see, it is limited by the being and existence of the dead life of the negative state and by human life.”

“The situation was somewhat different, but not too much better, in the previous cycles of time, during which the negative state was dormant. Again, too much precious energy of life was spent on keeping the negative state dormant to allow full utilization of that energy for exhibiting the fullness of the true life of the positive state. Thus, even all previous cycles of time were considerably limited by potentiality of the negative state in this respect.”

“The mystery of this situation lies in the fact that ***all previous cycles of time, as well as this cycle of time, and thus, all life's being and existence to the very end of this cycle of time, have been and will be a preparatory stage for the real true life of the positive state to be fully activated, once all proper choices are made by every single individual everywhere and everywhen without exception or exclusion.***”

“Thus, only in the next cycle of time and life, when the negative state and human life are no more, will the fullness of expression and impression of the true life of the positive state, the way it has been intended to be by The Lord Jesus Christ from eternity to eternity and from the moment Creation was created, be able to come to its fruition”.

“The present cycle of time, during which the negative state exists in an activated mode, can be considered a turning point of all cycles of time because it is the last and the only one that is dealing with the negative state directly. This cycle of time is preparing the way for the final and decisive choice to be made, after which no need for being and existence of the negative state in any mode will be necessary. You can consider this cycle of time as a dividing line between two crucial epochs of Creation and its multiverses: One, the preparatory stage for the true life of the positive state; and the other, the stage of the real full true life of the positive state.”

“This tremendously important news, hidden up to this point, is being received by everyone in the multiverse of Creation with the most staggering shout of joy, delight, pleasure, thankfulness, appreciation and gratitude. It gives all of them great hope and incentive to bear their crosses for a while longer ***until all things regarding the negative state and human life are fulfilled.***”

“On the other hand, this great news brings a tremendous uproar and upheaval of hate, anger and murderous drive to all active members of the negative state in their respective Hells.”

“Once all these things are accomplished, and Creation is permanently freed from the burden of the dead life of the negative state and the human life, the spent precious life energy, with all its other energies, will be fully devoted to the development, expression and impression of the true life of the positive state without any hindrances and obstacles.”

“What kind of life is it going to be? No experiential illustration exists for such life because, as you see from the revealed mystery, life of the positive state has been so far only a preparatory stage of choice for that life. In no way can you begin that kind of life until all choices for all other types of life are rejected and eliminated. Once they are all rejected and eliminated, only then can it establish its fullness and become its own illustration.”

“Thus, it is impossible to fully foresee what kind of life it will be because it will evolve in certain progressive steps, as all its participants will devote all their creative efforts to shape that life in accordance with the proper spiritual ideas of life released by The Lord Jesus Christ as they become ready. However, some general principles of that life will be discussed with the full understanding that they *are in no way obligatory, final, binding, imposed or permanent. They can always be modified, changed, adjusted and/or rejected, if necessary.*”

(1)

“The quality of life in the positive state, the way it will be structured after the negative state and human life are no more in any form and condition, is described in the internal spiritual sense of some books in The Holy Bible.”

“For example, the entire Chapter 60 of Prophet Isaiah describes the process of liberation of Creation from the presence of the negative state and establishment of a totally different lifestyle hitherto unknown. Most humans assume that Isaiah writes about the future destiny of the children of Israel, a literal nation of Jews existing on planet Zero. But, as already mentioned before, Israel corresponds to various states and conditions of either the positive state or the negative state or both, depending on the context in which the word ‘Israel’ occurs.”

“In the context of Isaiah’s Chapter 60, ‘Israel’ signifies the entire Creation which is being liberated from the influence of all cycles of time that contained or incorporated within themselves the negative state either in a dormant or activated condition, respectively. At the

same time, it describes the mode of life which will be permanently established, once the process of this liberation is completed.”

“In The Prophet Ezekiel, Chapters 40 through 48, all eight Chapters, in their internal spiritual sense, describe the structure of the cycle of time which will succeed the current one. The primary emphasis in Ezekiel is on the new mode of worship of and relatedness to The Lord Jesus Christ at that time. At the same time, Ezekiel formulates all spiritual principles by which life in the positive state of that time will be regulated.”

“Now, Ezekiel’s use of words, which describe all this, seem narrowly related to various external rituals and building of a city and a temple within the midst of that city. But the spiritual meaning of those words has no relevance whatsoever to anything ritualistic or external. A good example of this meaning can be found in the manner he describes the arrangements of sacrifices of various animals on the altar. The literal implication of that text in Ezekiel is that such sacrifices will continue forever. If you are to take this implication literally, as most readers of those Chapters on your planet do, it makes Ezekiel or, to be precise, God, who tells him all these things, a liar. After all, animal sacrifices ceased a long time ago! So, how come that, in contradiction to all present reality, the claim here is that sacrifices of animals to God on the altar, in the form of burnt offerings, will continue forever? As you see very clearly from this situation, the literal sense of these Chapters, as well as all other texts of The Holy Bible, has no sense at all. Not only does it have no sense, but it makes God and His prophets liars.”

“However, the spiritual sense of all sayings and descriptions of those Chapters in Ezekiel is an entirely different matter. In this connotation, the city, outlined in Ezekiel, signifies the structure of The New Revelation and the quality of its spiritual principles. Sacrifice of animals means ascribing all goodness and truth, love and wisdom, positiveness and source of life, as well as all positive affections, feelings and thoughts, where they belong — to The Lord Jesus Christ.”

“You have to understand clearly that the negative state, which will exist up to that point, refuses to recognize and to acknowledge that The Lord Jesus Christ is the ultimate source of all the above-mentioned categories. Instead, it considers itself to be their producer and giver. In the new cycle of time, no one ever again will be ascribing anything positive, particularly any life, to anyone but its true ultimate source — The Lord Jesus Christ. After all, the activation of the negative state was made possible by the denial of this fact about The Lord Jesus Christ as being the only true Absolute Source of life and all its felicities.”

“The above-described meaning of sacrifices in Ezekiel has no other connotation than that. It clearly reflects the fact that, in the new cycle of time, nothing of the negative state, in any of its forms or conditions, will have any place to eternity.”

“In Revelation of Jesus Christ in The Holy Bible, the life of the positive state, after elimination of the negative state, is described in Chapter 7, verses 15-17; in the entire Chapter 21 and Chapter 22, verses 1-5.”

“Here we are dealing with creation of a new heaven and a new earth and New Jerusalem and the lifestyle which will be established in them. Two connotations are hidden in this description. One relates to the structure and dynamics of the newly transformed sentient mind and its personal, private and intimate relationship with The Lord Jesus Christ; the other deals with the quality, content and mode of life in the positive state within the next cycle of time.”

“In the first connotation, ‘a new heaven’ means the transformed most within Spiritual Mind of all sentient entities aligned to The New Absolute Most Within Spiritual Mind of The Lord Jesus Christ — called ‘The Lord.’ ‘A new earth’ signifies the newly transformed interior mind of all sentient entities brought into alignment with The New Absolute Interior Mind of The Lord Jesus Christ — called ‘Jesus.’ ‘New Jerusalem’ denotes the newly transformed exterior or external mind of all sentient entities put into alignment with The Absolute Exterior Mind of The Lord Jesus Christ — called ‘Christ.’ ‘New Jerusalem,’ particularly its formal structural arrangement, describes spiritual principles by which this new sentient mind will operate and how it will relate to The Lord Jesus Christ, as well as how The Lord Jesus Christ will relate to each individual.”

“In the second connotation, ‘a new heaven’ means a new spiritual world which will be established in the next cycle of time; ‘a new earth’ denotes a new intermediate world; and ‘New Jerusalem’ signifies its new external or physical world. ‘New Jerusalem,’ in description of its structure, also denotes new spiritual principles, or what Swedenborg called ‘new spiritual doctrine’ or ‘New Church,’ which will rule and regulate new life of the positive state in the next cycle of time, free from all and any influence of the negative state.”

“The fundamental premises of all the above-indicated texts in The Holy Bible are that the next cycle of time and its spiritual, mental and physical state and condition will have no room whatsoever for anything negative in any form or manifestation. They also indicate that the major idea of choice to reject and deny The Lord Jesus Christ and His/Her spiritual principles as the only source of true life will no longer plague the sentient mind, forcing it to deal with that idea on a daily and continuous basis.”

“Not having any longer that idea and the need to deal with it, by either rejecting or accepting it, the sentient entities will have a totally different approach to life and to themselves. For the first time, life will be experienced the way it should always be experienced — purely and only in the positive connotation.”

“As long as that idea exists, as long as one needs to deal with it on a daily basis, one is always aware of the negative connotation of life. However, the negative connotation of life is a dead life of the negative state. Its presence, no matter where or in what state, has a contaminating effect on everything even in the positive state. After all, even in the positive state everyone needs to deal with the negative idea, spending precious energy on rejecting it on a daily basis. With such waste, the purity, the fullness and the completeness of life in the positive state cannot come to its fruition until the choice is made by everyone to permanently and eternally eliminate that idea by choosing the positive state in the purity of its content. For this reason, as long as the negative state exists, it is impossible to activate life in its purity and in its positive connotation only. In this respect, such life has never been experienced before.”

“As mentioned in the beginning of this Chapter, the fullness of the true life of the positive state must be activated by a free choice of everyone in Creation. However, in order to make such a choice feasible and valid, all other choices, and manifestation of their consequences, outcomes and results, must be present and available first. Thus, various modes of life and lifestyles must be illustrated concretely and vividly in comparison with a choice for the true life in the positive state.”

“In a true sense of this situation, the illustration of the results of all other choices but the positive one, must, to a certain extent, precede the full and complete activation of the true life of the positive state.”

“The logic of this situation tells you clearly that, as long as other types of life exist, the fullness and completeness of the true life of the positive state is impossible. You see, the words ‘fullness and completeness’ denote all in all and everything in everything. This situation does not give room to anything else or to any other mode of life. Otherwise, such words would not be used.”

“Thus, the question, ‘Do you really want anything else or any other mode of life but the fullness and completeness of the true life of the positive state?’ must be answered first before such a life can take its full hold in Creation.”

“So, how do you answer that question? You answer it by illustrating all other modes of life first so that you know what not to choose.”

“As mentioned many times before, the negative state and all its life forms and human life on planet Zero serve this purpose exactly. In these invaluable services is their redeeming quality. The Lord Jesus Christ will eventually reward them for these services by saving them from their ‘life,’ giving them a new option for life in the positive state. This is like saying, ‘Now you fully experienced everything in your type of life. It is time for you to experience something different. You know how it is to be negative. You can and may also know how it feels and how it is to be positive.’ Of course, once a negative entity is given an opportunity to experience the true life of the positive state, even in its present incomplete form and condition, it will never want to return to its own life in the negative state.”

“So, the very first definition of life in the positive state, based on the above-mentioned texts in The Holy Bible, can be formulated as follows:”

“Life in the positive state will be completely and totally free from any influence, contamination by and ideas of the negative state in any form, state, manifestation and condition forever, to eternity.”

“For the first time, since Creation was created, life will be experienced as it is supposed to be — only in its positive connotation.”

“As you know, by definition, life is nothing but positiveness. What you experience as life on your planet and elsewhere in the Zone of Displacement and all its Hells is, in fact, not life but something else (it was described in Chapter Twelve of this book). Without a need to deal with these kinds of non-lives any longer, the true life in its fullness will be established.”

(2)

“The existence of the negative state in any form requires that certain hidden and unavailable important knowledge and operation of The Divine Providence of The Lord Jesus Christ is maintained for security reasons, as already mentioned before.”

“Thus, even in the positive state, in its present form and content, some degree of limitation is put on its members, as far as how much and to what extent they may know and be aware of certain important and vital issues. On the other hand, as you know, members of the negative state, and particularly humans, are ruled by the principle of ignorance and by unconscious processes. In their case, they have very little, if any at all, true knowledge about anything. As long as the negative state exists, this situation must continue for the sake of the possibility of saving everyone trapped in it.”

“The members of the positive state, being ruled by the principle of love, compassion and wisdom, gladly volunteered to be restricted in their full knowledge and understanding of many

things for the sake of this act of salvation by The Lord Jesus Christ. They gave up that privilege, knowing that The Lord Jesus Christ has very good and tangible reasons why this situation of secrecy, disguise and hiddenness must be permitted within this cycle of time, as well as in all preceding cycles of time.”

“However, once the negative state is no more, the very first thing which will be permanently removed from being and existence are these burdensome limitations, ignorance and unconscious states and processes. No need for any security will exist at that time.”

“The fullness and completeness of the true life of the positive state cannot be manifested as long as these limitations and secrecy are required. Lack of any degree of knowledge means some degree of ignorance. The word ‘lack’ excludes the possibility of fullness. How can you have any state of fullness and completeness if you lack anything at all? These two conditions are mutually exclusive.”

“For that reason, before anything else can happen in the next cycle of time, all restrictions, limitations, secrecy, hiddenness, ignorance, unconsciousness, and whatever you have in this respect, must be removed first.”

“This step is reflected in the statement made in Revelation of Jesus Christ in The Holy Bible, Chapter 21, verse 1:”

““And I saw a new heaven and a new earth, for the first heaven and the first earth had passed away. Also there was no more sea.””

“‘And I saw a new heaven and a new earth’ means experience of a different spiritual state in Creation that succeeds all previous ones. ‘For the first heaven and the first earth had passed away’ signifies that all cycles of time that preceded this new state have fulfilled their usefulness and are no longer necessary or needed.”

“‘Also there was no more sea’ denotes that the new cycle of time does not need to be kept in any type of ignorance, limitations, restrictions and unconsciousness about anything at all. ‘Sea’ in general means everything hidden, secret, unconscious and inaccessible. Because these terms are applicable in their fullness to the negative state, ‘sea’ also means the negative state in particular.”

“Thus, from this understanding you can conclude that the true life of the positive state, after the elimination of the negative state, will be a life of full knowledge, understanding, openness about and accessibility to everything in being and existence.”

“Only under these conditions can the true life of the positive state be fully activated and flourish without any restrictions.”

“That this will be the case is also confirmed in verse 25, Chapter 21 of The Revelation of Jesus Christ,”

““Its gates shall not be shut at all by day (there shall be no night there).””

“‘Shut gates’ means all kinds of restrictions and limitations in order to protect the positive state from being run over by the forces of the negative state. ‘By day’ signifies full openness, clarity and understanding of all and everything without any obscurity.”

“‘There shall be no night there’ clearly means that the next cycle of time of Creation will not contain anything of and from the negative state in any form, condition or shape. ‘Night’ is the dead life of the negative state and its ignorance.”

“This is even more obvious from the content of verse 4, Chapter 21 of The Revelation of Jesus Christ:”

“‘And God will wipe away every tear from their eyes; **there shall be no more death**, nor sorrow, nor crying; and there shall be no more pain, for the former things have passed away!’”

“This verse describes the major attributes of the negative state and its dead life. The added emphasis is on the words ‘there shall be no more death.’ ‘Death’ means the negative state in the condition of its full activation and dominance. ‘For the former things have passed away’ denotes elimination of the negative state and all other states co-existing with it in any form and mode.”

“It is not sufficient to put the negative state in its previous condition — deactivation and dormancy. Even in that condition the negative state poses a tremendous burden for the positive state. The idea of the negative state would still be plaguing the sentient mind, making it continuously choose to reject that idea. To do that is limiting and restricting the positive life energies in their expressions and impressions solely for the benefit of the true life of the positive state.”

“In the previous portion of The New Revelation, preceding this book, the impression was that the only thing which could be done about the negative state was to deactivate it and put it in a state of dormancy. It was assumed that, in this dormant condition, the negative state would have to stay to eternity as an alternative choice to the positive state.”

“When that portion of The New Revelation was transmitted, the process of hybridization and fusion of the human physical body-flesh into the totality of The Absolute Nature of The Most High was not fully completed.”

“And not only that, but, at that time, no one in Creation or anywhere else knew that such a process had been going on since the time of Jesus Christ’s resurrection and departure from planet Zero. As long as that situation with the body-flesh of Jesus Christ existed, the impression had to remain that the negative state would remain as a choice to eternity, albeit in a dormant, tamed condition.”

“The reason for this impression at that time was that, in the connotation of a continuous separation of all Absolute Elements of The Most High from the elements of the Zone of Displacement and human life, represented by the physical body-flesh of Jesus Christ, no other perception could exist. As long as something is separated, it has its own independent life. In this case, the negative state **appears** to have its independent life.”

“After all, in His/Her former condition as The Most High, The Lord Jesus Christ could not enter the negative state without completely annihilating it. From this situation stems the **appearance** as though the negative state has its own life.”

“As long as this appearance, or ‘as though’ or ‘as if,’ exists, the negative state must continue as an independent factor to represent a different choice. This gives the negative state the

impression that it will continue forever in whatever form or condition.“

“However, once the state of separation was eliminated and unification and inclusion of all elements into The Absolute Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ was completed, the situation completely changed.”

“From this new position of unification, a choice can be made by everyone not to have, any longer, the negative state in any form and condition as an alternative choice. Thus, to repeat, the choice is not to have this particular choice. Instead, the choice is to have only the positive state and its life as the only true reality.”

“But, in order to save everyone in the negative state and in human life, it was necessary to undergo the process of fusion and hybridization of the human body-flesh of Jesus Christ of which, freed from evils and falsities, purified elements of the negative state could be included in the true source of ***the true life.***”

“Here is a great mystery! To preserve life of all in the negative state required from The Most High to include within Himself/Herself the life of the negative state, after purifying it from all content of the negativity.”

“Remember, please, life of the negative state, in its original condition, was stolen from the true life of the positive state, stemming from The Most High at that time. Thus, it was His/Her life which was stolen and misused and turned into the dead life of the negative state. After all, there is no other source of life but The Lord Jesus Christ who, at that time, was The Most High God.”

“Such life, in whatever condition, cannot be destroyed. Instead, it is saved from its present condition and returned to its original rightful source by the process of salvation, which was described before. As you see, in reality, no other life existed, exists or will exist.”

“At the time of transmission of the previous portion of The New Revelation, it was correctly perceived that the life of the negative state could not be destroyed. However, because no one knew about the process of inclusion of the elements of the Zone of Displacement and planet Zero into The Absolute Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ, it was erroneously assumed that the negative state itself must continue forever, albeit in an inactive, dormant condition.“

“At that time, it was impossible to distinguish between life of the negative state and the negative state itself. Life of the negative state is a stolen factor that needs to be returned to its original source. The negative state in itself is a forcefully added content into that life, making it the dead life, which does not belong there. That life can be saved by the process of resurrection from its dead condition (The Lord Jesus Christ makes that resurrection possible by the factor of His/Her own resurrection from the dead life of the negative state).”

“However, the negative state itself cannot be saved because it does not have any roots that can be utilized in any positive sense. The simple reason is that the negative state has no sense. Whatever has no sense, cannot be saved.”

“What Jesus Christ did in the process of His/Her First Coming was to take the life of the negative state, but not the negative state itself, and include it in the rest of His/Her Absolute Life. Remember, before He/She did that, He/She first removed the negative state from those elements which He/She took from the negative state. In other words, The Lord Jesus Christ removed the deadliness from those elements and returned them to the true life.”

“In the process of The Second Coming of The Lord Jesus Christ, the return of the rest of the stolen life to its original source will be accomplished. In that process, the negative state will be completely separated from that life. Once it is void of that life, the negative state will be no more.”

“Thus, what is being preserved here is not the negative state but the stolen life from the positive state by which the negative state lived and was alive turning it into the dead life. The paradox here is obvious: The negative state can live and be alive only if it turns the stolen true life into the dead life. But it is still life that originally belonged to the positive state. It must be returned where it belongs after going through the process of resurrection and transformation.”

“The Lord Jesus Christ clearly showed by His/Her example that that life can be preserved and saved without any need for the negative state itself to be parasitically attached to it.”

“This revelation gives a clear indication that the true life of the positive state does not need the negative state in any form and condition. Instead, it will be able to begin to live its life fully and completely only after the elimination of the negative state to eternity.”

“Preservation of all experiences of the life in the negative state to eternity in the Multiversality-Of-It-All does not denote the preservation of the negative state itself. Whatever was learned and experienced in this respect will always have value as knowledge but not as a state itself. To know something or about something does not mean to be that something. In other words, to know the negative state or about the negative state does not mean to be in the negative state. Thus, one can have knowledge of experiences of the negative state’s being and existence (pseudo-being and pseudo-existence) without ever needing the negative state itself to be in being and existence.”

“For this reason, the future life of the positive state will be completely and totally free from the presence of the negative state in any form, condition or manifestation.”

“To repeat, the fullness of life can be experienced and evolve only without the presence of the negative state and human life. Thus, not only is it possible to have life without the negative state or human life, but, in actuality, the true life, in its fullness, is possible only without them.”

(3)

“As mentioned many times before, the most important determinator of any mode of life and its style is the manner in which people relate to and worship The Lord Jesus Christ. This has always been the case and it will always be the case to eternity. Therefore, the quality of the new cycle of time is also determined by this most important factor.”

“The manner of people’s relatedness to and worship of The Lord Jesus Christ in fullness of the true life of the positive state, after elimination of the negative state and human life, is reflected in verse 22, Chapter 21 of The Revelation of Jesus Christ in The Holy Bible. It states:”

“‘But I saw no temple in it, for The Lord God Almighty and the Lamb are its temple!’”

“‘Temple,’ in the connotation of this text, signifies any type of external, ritualistic, ceremonial, organizational and formal worship, as seen in churches on your planet. It also signifies all their doctrines and dogmas. So the words ‘but I saw no temple in it’ means that such a mode

of relatedness to and worship of The Lord Jesus Christ will have no place or room in the new true life of the positive state.”

“The major problem with this type of worship and relatedness, as seen on your planet, is that no direct or indirect presence of The Lord Jesus Christ during that worship exists. Humans assume that such a presence is among or within them, claiming being inspired by The Holy Spirit of The Lord or God or whatever name they use.”

“However, this is a deceiving assumption. After completion of The First Coming of The Lord Jesus Christ, no such presence exists in anything ritualistic, ceremonial, external, organizational, institutional, etc. Nowadays, what humans worship is an empty notion. They do not see, hear, sense, perceive or ascertain any direct presence of The Lord Jesus Christ among them or within them.”

“The reason why this is so is because humans do not worship The True Lord Jesus Christ but some kind of substitute or imposter or their own notion of God or Lord or Jesus or Christ or Jesus Christ or whatever name they use. In actuality, they worship god fabricated in an imagination of their own heart. Of course, such a god does not exist. Therefore, such a god cannot be present with them or in them. The only ones who are present are negative entities who assume the role of these kinds of ‘gods’ in order to keep humans in bondage of imagination of their own foolish heart. With total elimination of the negative state and human life, no such worship of and relatedness to The Lord Jesus Christ will be possible, feasible or desirable in any manner and mode.”

“‘For The Lord God Almighty and the Lamb are its temple’ signifies the direct, perceptible, tangible, concrete, experiential and immediate presence of The Lord Jesus Christ with everyone and within everyone. ‘The Lord God Almighty’ here signifies the most within and the most interior state of the Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ. ‘The Lamb’ means the most exterior state of The Lord Jesus Christ and His/Her Human-flesh which was Divinized and made Divine and which constitutes the medium of worshiping and relating to God. But this combination (the Lamb and The Lord God Almighty) also signifies something much more important. The Lord Jesus Christ will relate to all and all will relate to Him/Her in a totally new way. This will be a very private, personal and intimate way, taking place simultaneously at all levels of everyone’s most within Spiritual Mind, interior mind and external mind and at the same time, a most public, social and common way at various social gatherings, feasts and meetings for the purpose of sharing and conducting business of a common interest.”

“‘The Lamb’ part of The Lord Jesus Christ (the fused human bodyflesh into Him/Her) makes such a relationship and worship possible. The Lord Jesus Christ will personally respond to any request directed to Him/Her in an immediate fashion, appearing to everyone who makes such a query.”

“Thus, worship of and relatedness to The Lord Jesus Christ in the new cycle of time of the sole positive state will be defined by everyone’s approach to Him/Her at all levels of one’s mind simultaneously, experiencing His/Her presence by all perceptual modes in being and existence, and consulting Him/Her on all matters of one’s life. In doing that, everyone will experience a continuous, uninterrupted and direct presence of The Lord Jesus Christ in all one’s activities and relationships.”

“Such a presence constitutes the most important mark of the true life of the positive state. It will give that life an entirely different perspective that has never been experienced up to this point. The most desirable aspect of that life is to have a direct and immediate access to The Lord Jesus Christ in all matters of life. This is what the true worship of and relatedness to The

Lord Jesus Christ is all about. No other form of worship will be required or needed.”

“That this will be the case was also foretold by The Prophet Jeremiah, in Chapter 31, verses 33-34:”

“But this is the covenant that I will make with the house of Israel: After those days, says The Lord, I will put My law in their minds, and write it on their hearts; and I will be their God, and they shall be My people. No more shall every man teach his neighbor, and every man his brother, saying, ‘Know The Lord,’ for they all shall know Me, from the least of them to the greatest of them,” says The Lord. “For I will forgive their iniquity, and their sin I will remember no more.”“

(4)

“The sentient minds of all people in the multiverse of Creation will no longer contain the idea of right to reject or deny the true spiritual source of their lives. No daily efforts will need to be made to repudiate that idea.”

“This situation will free the process of their minds from spending a considerable portion of their energy on avoidance of undesirable mentation, and being preoccupied with the modes and manners of the best possible ways to stay free from the needs to put that idea into practice.”

“Thus, for the first time the full potentials of the sentient mind will be able to be actualized and realized.”

“Up to that point, having to spend so much effort and time on something else, not directly related to the true life, the sentient mind did not have any feasible opportunity to fully and completely actualize itself within the framework of the pure positive state.”

“For that reason, at the present time, while the negative state is in the active mode, the sentient mind of the members of the positive state is not in its proper mode of function. No one has ever had yet any experience of what it is like to have the full potential of the sentient mind for actualization and realization.”

“Because of this situation and because of the necessity of existing limitations, secrecy and hiddenness, the full knowledge of all potentials of the sentient mind cannot be grasped or manifest itself.”

“This situation leads to a peculiar condition of considerable limitation also in one’s self-knowledge. If you do not have full knowledge of all potentials of your mind, you cannot have full knowledge of self or your own ‘I am’ either.”

“As long as the negative state exists in any form and condition, this condition is applicable multiversally. The farther away from the positive state, the less such knowledge is available.”

“Because, for example, human life was the result of impossible combinations of all kinds of non-spiritual principles with distorted, perverted and falsified spiritual principles, humans have no knowledge of who they are and what the human life is all about.”

“But once these limitations and restrictions are removed, the full potentials of the sentient mind will be developed and the full knowledge of self will be established.”

“Thus, in the true life of the positive state everyone will know who they are, what the purpose of their life is and how their ‘I am’ is structured. The knowledge of self, besides knowledge and understanding of the true nature of The Lord Jesus Christ, is one of the most important knowledges (plural!) of all. It is a foundation on which any meaningful relationship can be built.”

(5)

“Having acquired full knowledge of The True New Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ and themselves, the true positive relationship among all members of the positive state can develop. This requires that a third most important component of the full knowledge is available.”

“The first component is the proper knowledge and understanding of The Lord Jesus Christ. The second component is the knowledge and understanding of oneself, one’s ‘I am.’ The third component is the knowledge and understanding of others.”

“Up to that point, the knowledge and understanding of others has been and will be limited by the general limitations and restrictions that everyone has been and will be experiencing due to existence of the negative state. If you do not have full knowledge and understanding of yourself, you cannot reveal yourself to others and others cannot reveal themselves to you in the fullest possible extent.”

“This situation puts certain limitations and incompleteness on relationships that exist among all at the present time. There is always something lacking or missing in those relationships. Thus, at this time, no one can truly experience what it is like to relate to others on the basis of full knowledge of oneself and others. In some respects, one remains an enigma to oneself and to others and others remain enigmas to that one. How can one form any satisfying and fully meaningful relationship with others under these enigmatic conditions?”

“However, in the true life of the positive state, which will commence after this cycle of time, all enigmas, secrets, limitations and restrictions will be removed in all respects. For the first time this will allow one to experience any relationship from the position of full knowledge of oneself and others. The profundity, meaningfulness, joyfulness, ecstasy, inspiration and all feelings of such relationships cannot be described in any available words. They need to be experienced first, before they can be described in any manner and way. They cannot be experienced in this manner as long as the negative state and human life exist.”

(6)

“One of the most unusual aspects of the true life of the positive state at that time will be the fact that its content, style and mode will be determined by the will of all its participants. This fact makes it very difficult, if not impossible, to predict the specific aspects of that life, the reason being that every single individual will be very actively participating in the building, developing and establishing of that life, as well as on the proper definition or determination of its nature.”

“Thus, all members of the positive state will partake with The Lord Jesus Christ in creating this very new, very unusual and very positive life. Everyone will contribute their creative abilities to this great effort.”

“For this reason, the new life of the positive state is not something predetermined and given once and for all, without consulting and utilizing the ideas of future participants in the new life of the positive state.”

“As you know, in the initial phase of Creation, when Creation was created for the first time, when time and space were introduced, the Creator created His/Her Creation from and by Himself/Herself alone, without any outside assistance.”

“But, one of the purposes of Creation is to create sentient entities in the creative likeness and image of their Creator so that their creative effort can be fully utilized in any subsequent creative acts.”

“Thus, at that time, The Lord Jesus Christ, being The Absolute Creator, and being personally and intimately present in everyone’s creative effort, will create the new cycle of time with the assistance of all sentient entities and beings.”

“Because the abilities of sentient entities to be creative stem from The Absolute Creativity of their Maker, He/She is the only Creator. However, now The Maker and Creator makes and creates not only by and from Himself/Herself but also through, from and with all others.”

“After all, this is the reason why The Creator created them. Up to that point, the full participation of all sentient entities in this creative effort has been and will be limited and not of an all-inclusive nature. First of all, all sentient entities lack full information and knowledge about many things. Such lack limits and puts restriction on the full creativity and its expression, impression and sharing.”

“Secondly, you have a vast number of sentient entities in the negative state of the Hells, in the entire Zone of Displacement and on your planet who not only do not participate in this creative process at all but, instead, they go against it, trying to eliminate and destroy it. This undesirable division in being and existence — positive versus negative or creative versus destructive — makes it impossible for the full, unified creative effort to be put into practice. As long as the negative state exists in any form and condition, its very being and existence has an inhibiting, hampering effect on the process of any creative effort anywhere.”

“First of all, it takes a tremendous amount of precious energy and effort to keep the negative state out of the positive state. This precious energy is not available for utilization in the creative effort to its fullest potentials. Secondly, there is that sense of separation from the billions and billions of sentient entities who trapped themselves in the negative state and use their life for destruction of life. The output of their energies is totally unproductive. But, also, that energy is lacking from the rest of Creation in the positive state; it was supposed to be utilized in a different, positive and truly creative way. However, as you remember, it was stolen from the true Creation by the activators of the negative state.”

“The word ‘stolen’ means that something very important was taken away from Creation and is being utilized elsewhere — outside of Creation — for an entirely different, unproductive purpose. But the word ‘stolen’ also means that whatever was stolen must be returned to its rightful place in order to be utilized for its originally intended purpose.”

“It also means that this situation — the stolen condition — is a temporary one. The loss for Creation from this theft was tremendous. It deprived Creation of something that rightfully belonged to it. And not only that, but the act of theft and robbery split the being and existence into three parts — the true and real Creation, and the Zone of Displacement and human life on planet Zero which are outside of Creation.”

“As long as this condition exists, as long as an important integral part is missing from Creation, and is being utilized contrary to the creative effort of Creation, no one in the true life

of the positive state can be fully creative, productive, constructive and properly useful.”

“Also, as long as a substantial number of sentient entities are missing from Creation, no proper unification, oneness and harmony of the creative effort of all can be fully actualized and realized.”

“One of the many reasons why The Lord Jesus Christ assumed The New Nature and Condition was to unify His/Her Creation the way it was supposed to be. The disunion and split were tolerated for the sake of learning and making proper and right choices, choosing the true and full life of the positive state. The Lord Jesus Christ needed to enter the negative state in order to establish there a favorable condition for returning the stolen ‘property’ to its rightful owner — the positive state. Thus, He/She entered there for the purpose of eventual elimination of this intolerable split in being and existence.”

“Once this split and disunion are removed and the stolen ‘property’ is returned to where it belongs, then and only then the building of the true and full life of the positive state can begin with a complete and total participation of and input from all sentient entities everywhere. As long as even one individual is missing from this process, the fullness of the creative effort cannot be accomplished. Thus, it requires the full participation of all without any exception or exclusion. Only then can the creative effort be complete.”

“After elimination of the negative state in all its forms and conditions, after The Last Judgment of this cycle of time is finished (‘It is done!’— Revelation 21:6), a period of consultations and development of building plans with all will be instituted. All members of Creation, to the very last individual, will be asked to submit their own ideas of how the true life of the positive state should be built and in what manner it should evolve. All submitted ideas will be utilized by The Lord Jesus Christ, with His/Her own Absolute Ideas, in establishing and instituting such life.”

“From these facts, you can see clearly why it is impossible to exactly foresee what kind of life it will be. The only thing that can be foreseen with one hundred percent certainty is that it will be the most positive, the most creative, the most happy, the most joyous, the most fruitful, the most useful and the most peaceful life. And that it will be the life **without** the negative state. But the specific, infinite varieties and manifestations of that life will depend on all inputs and ideas coming from every single sentient entity in being and existence. The Lord Jesus Christ will personally, privately and intimately inspire and evoke full unique potentials of every individual in Creation to make these exciting contributions for this most important purpose.”

(7)

“The full, undivided creative effort of each individual of Creation will determine the quality of sexual relationships that will exist in Creation at that time.”

“As you remember from the above points, the full expression and impression of oneself is limited by the restrictions imposed by the existence of the negative state. Thus, the full exchange and sharing of oneself by the means of sexual intercourse is not entirely possible. After all, if you do not know fully and completely who you are and what your nature is, in the process of that exchange, a certain degree of this not knowing is conveyed to your sexual partner. The state of this not knowing, regardless of how great or how little, makes it impossible to have an experience of the totality of exchange of one ‘I am’ with the other ‘I am.’ And not only that but, most importantly, such a sexual intercourse produces the birth of ideas which carry within themselves the inherent degree of not knowing something.”

“Thus, you have here a continuous birth of people who are born with some degree of not fully

knowing about many things.”

“This is a limiting situation on any process of life, but particularly on the expression and impression of the creative process.”

“Again, this situation has been tolerated for the sake of having the knowledge and experience of how it feels not to have the full knowledge and the full experience of something, someone and oneself. A complete appreciation of the full knowledge and experience is possible only from experiencing the state of lacking the fullness of such an experience and knowledge. Moreover, it gives everyone a clear choice of never choosing any kind of life that would induce such a limiting and restricting state.”

“But once this limitation and restriction is removed, everyone will have access to acquire a full knowledge and experience of oneself, others, one’s Creator and everything else.”

“This new experience will determine the mode and the outcome of sexual relationships. First of all, no restrictions or limitations will be put on anyone’s sexual life in any manner or way. After all, any restrictions and limitations are limiting and restricting. This would not be life in the positive state. In the positive state, they are tolerated only because of the being and existence of the negative state. Therefore, once the negative state is eliminated, so are all its restrictions and limitations. The positive state will no longer be hampered by the negative state in any manner or way.”

“Secondly, and most importantly, the results of any unlimited and unrestricted sexual intercourse, the intercourse which will have no lack of knowledge of The Lord Jesus Christ, others and oneself, for the first time, will give birth to the ideas of full knowledge and experience.”

“This will result in the production of a totally new, hitherto unknown and unavailable sentient race that will far surpass anything so far in being and existence. To use your expression, these will be supermen and superwomen of the most unusual intelligence, beauty, creativity, love, wisdom and knowledge that will have no comparison to anything thus far in Creation.”

“The generation of these new people will be the one which in actuality will be able to establish, under auspices, guidance, presiding and leadership of The Lord Jesus Christ, the new life of the positive state. Be it known now, that the entire Creation eagerly waits for these people to come. They will be the closest to the image and likeness of The Lord Jesus Christ that anyone has been and will be up to that point. They will set an example for everyone else of how to be and who to be.”

“There is a mystery in this statement! As you know, by that time, everyone will have established a very personal, private and intimate relationship with The Lord Jesus Christ — females to His masculinity and males to Her femininity. In the process of sexual intercourse, from the position of the full knowledge of The Lord Jesus Christ, oneself and one’s sexual partner, a new sexual experience will be encountered. The Lord Jesus Christ Himself/Herself will be participating in this process, bringing the sexual partners to an unusual, indescribably delightful orgasm, during which a certain element will be imparted by The Lord Jesus Christ into the ideas, born out of such sexual intercourse.”

“Those ideas, born in such an unusual way (unusual from the standpoint of this time but normal and regular from the standpoint of that future time), will be subsequently endowed with life directly stemming from The Absolute Most Within of The Lord Jesus Christ. Because of this unusual setup, a superpeople will be born in the manner briefly described above.”

“Again, a great and new mystery is being revealed here! Not many humans who will read these words will be able to accept this new mystery. It will seem to them as blasphemy! The mystery is in the fact that The Lord Jesus Christ will be sexually involved in the process of sexual intercourse of any two sexual partners. For foolish and limited humans it seems to be such a violation of privacy and such a perverted manner of sex!”

“But, again, let it be known now, that the full experience of true positive sexual intercourse, with all its positive outcomes, cannot happen between only two — male and female partners — without full participation of the third, most important sexual partner — The Lord Jesus Christ. Do please, remember, that The Lord Jesus Christ comprises The Absolute Sexuality. Therefore, it is only logical to assume that real, genuine and true experience of sexuality, in its fullest and the most complete expression and impression, with all its most exquisite felicities, is possible only if The Lord Jesus Christ is an active participant in this act.”

“Why do you think sexual intercourse of two people, without this most important spiritual component, is so unfulfilling, limiting and short in duration? Or why sexuality of humans is so abnormal, unnatural, perverted, sick and guilt ridden? Because it has not been allowing the most important third sexual partner to enter their act — The Lord Jesus Christ and His/Her feminine to male and masculine to female spiritual principles. Without Him/Her, it lacks any spirituality. The spirituality of any situation is constituted by the presence and participation of The Lord Jesus Christ as a source of any spirituality and, in this case, of sexuality.”

“If you remove the source of the true experience of life from any of its modes, in this case, from sexuality, you end up with exactly the type of experience the human life and its perverted and unnatural sexuality so vividly illustrates.”

“Bear in mind, please, that, in this respect, any type of human sexuality, including that which is considered normal and healthy by human standards, is abnormal, perverted and unnatural.”

“From the standpoint of the true life of the positive state and all spiritual principles, there is absolutely nothing normal and natural about human sexuality. But then there is nothing normal and natural about human life in all its aspects. How much more this would be true about something which is integrally ingrained in life itself — sexuality!”

“Fortunately, by that time, no specific human life and its type of sexuality will exist. Everyone will experience sexuality in its true spiritual, mental and physical essence and substance in the trinity of its union — a male individual, a female individual and The Lord Jesus Christ. Each sexual act of this union will be experienced in an infinitely different manner from any previous acts.”

“Each couple, in conjunction with The Lord Jesus Christ, will have their own unique sexual experience, non-repeatable by any other couple in their conjunction with The Lord Jesus Christ. No two similar or the same type of experiences will exist in this respect. There will always be something new and excitingly different. This new and exciting difference will be a continuous source of their creative effort and its actualization to eternity.”

“As you see, you do not need the negative state and human life to keep you eternally busy, creative and happy. Just the opposite is true: The existence of the negative state and human life makes it impossible for anyone to have the fullness of experience of the true happiness, creativity and proper type of business.”

(8)

"The above-described issues of the new sexuality are also connected to the issue of marriages, which are so important to humans. As you know, human life evolves around marital life and family life, as the most desirable and holy engagement."

"However, the human marriage is a phenomenon as abnormal, unnatural, restricting and limiting as is the entire human life. In fact, it is very specific to only the human life. Nowhere in Creation, even at the present time, do such relationships exist."

"Human marriages can be characterized as a state of bondage, enslavement, dependency, exclusivity, possessiveness and a closed, selfish and self-centered loop that has no reality in the positive state. By the fact of this definition, human marriages are of the negative origin."

"It is inconceivable for anyone in the positive state to limit the spending of one's entire life to eternity in an exclusive relationship with one single person *without any possibility* of involvement with anyone else. The simple logic of the sickness of such a relationship stems from the fact that no one individual or entity is absolute. You are all relative to The Absolute State. Relativity of your condition determines the nature of your relationships."

"If you relate from the position of your relativity (and this is the only position which is available to you) to a person who is also relative, your relationship can be nothing but relative. It cannot have absolute permanency. In order for such a relationship to continue indefinitely, it must be supplemented by many other similar relationships. These other relationships make it possible to fulfill the needs of having a permanent relationship with one other person, by providing the variety of experiences of different unique relationships."

"Even if your relationship with a person of the opposite sex, particularly in the process of sexual intercourse, is always unique and different, it is limited to one unique experience with the same person. This is limiting and unproductive. What about other unique experiences, with other unique persons of the opposite sex?"

"An absolute, continuous, permanent and inexhaustible relationship can be established only between two equally Absolute Beings. But two such beings do not exist. Only One Lord Jesus Christ is Absolute. Why do you think He/She created an infinite number of sentient entities?"

"Among other things, He/She created them in order to compensate for the lack of another absolute being. In the totality and cumulative sum of all sentient entities in being and existence, there is a possibility to have an inexhaustible variety of experiences which approximate the relationship of one Absolute State to another Absolute State. Thus, in a sense, the human type of marriage is a deprivation of the true experience of any relationship even between the marital couple, the reason being that they exclude from that relationship the most important requirement for its permanent condition — The Absolute State — manifested in an infinite variety of relative states of other sentient entities. In reality, the only permanent, inexhaustible and continuous relationship, which never wears out, can be established from the relative state to The Absolute State."

"Thus, only in relationship to and with The Lord Jesus Christ, who is The Absolute State in and by Himself/Herself, can any eternal permanency be acquired. The Lord Jesus Christ, from His/Her Absolute State, can supply an inexhaustible source for maintenance of such a relationship. He/She does it in three ways: One is through the already mentioned personal, private and intimate direct communication between Him/Her and you individually. The other is by His/Her participation during your sexual intercourse with your partner of the opposite sex."

And the third way is by providing you with as many varieties of sexual and other experiences as possible, during which The Lord Jesus Christ is present and participates in a uniquely different way than with any other experiences. In the totality and cumulative sum of such continuous infinite varieties of experiences, you will be able to experience the closest possible proximity of relationship between one Absolute Entity and another Absolute Entity without violating The Oneness of The Absolute State.”

“Only humans on your planet, by their adopted marital rules, want to be excluded from these kinds of relationships. As you remember, one of the many reasons why humans choose to go to Hell so easily is because they refuse to accept this concept of sexuality and marital life. The consideration of sanctity and holiness of matrimony with humans is to such an extent that nothing can persuade them that the opposite is true — that human marital life was fabricated in the Hells for the purpose of perpetuation of the negative state ad infinitum.”

“Unfortunately, humans believe that their marriages are sanctioned by God. After all, this is what the church teaches and this is what they read in the literal sense of The Holy Bible. Of course, under existing conditions on planet Zero and in human life, no other sexual or marital relationships are possible, or even advisable, because humans are not equipped either spiritually or mentally or physically or sexually to have such experiences. If they were, they would not be humans.”

“After all, humans were fabricated for the purpose of illustrating sexuality, marital relationships, as well as many other things, that are impossible, inconceivable, abnormal, unnatural and have very little, if anything at all, in common with the practice and experience of the true positive state.”

“Since you are in human life, you have to bear your cross of being humans and accept the fact that, as long as you are in the human life, you are limited and restricted only to the human experiential mode of life in all its areas and manifestations. Nothing else will be available to you until you leave your body and planet Zero.”

“With the existence of the negative state and human life, certain limitations and restrictions exist in this respect even in the positive state. This is the reason why the life of the positive state has not been yet fully activated. In the new life of the positive state such restrictions and limitations will no longer be tolerable or tenable. Thus, no human type of relationships or marriages will exist.”

“Instead of formal marriages, they will have a form of specific conjunctions and unions suitable to everyone’s unique needs. These unions and conjunctions will be built on the basis of complete freedom and independency, without any binding, possessiveness, demands or exclusivity. The sharing of each other, and each other with all other each others, will have unlimited proportions. This is a very necessary condition for the purpose of full actualization, realization and manifestation of all one’s creative efforts.”

“If you are limited to and by any relationship, except for The Absolute One Relationship with The Lord Jesus Christ, the fullness of impression and expression of your creative efforts will become also limited. Soon you wear out and lose any motivation to continue in your creative effort. Having only limited feedback, in this case from one or two persons only, you stop responding to the same type of motivating source which becomes no longer motivating. To end up in this kind of condition means to end up in death. This is possible only in the negative state.”

“It is difficult to describe what kinds of unions and conjunctions will be formed in the new life

of the positive state, the reason being that they will be determined by all members of Creation in consultations with The Lord Jesus Christ. At that time, it will be clear what they will be. However, you can be assured of one thing: no restrictions, limitations, or any similar negative things will ever enter again into any aspect of the new life. To repeat again, the new life will be built upon the foundation of freedom, independency, love, wisdom, continuous progression, change and mutual benefit, common good, creativity and unlimited sharing. After all, The Lord Jesus Christ gives life exactly for this noble purpose.”

(9)

“The unlimited potentials of everyone’s unique expressions and impressions will determine the usefulness of one’s endeavor in pursuing the type of work, occupation and profession in which one will want to be engaged. The usefulness of anyone’s life is determined by one’s contributions of his/her uniqueness as an individual and by one’s unique talents, gifts and abilities.”

“Having no longer any restrictions, limitations and ignorance of any kind, people of that time will be able to actualize, realize and manifest all their gifts, abilities and talents in the most productive, constructive and creative manner.”

“The principle on which any useful activity will be built will be the quality of appreciation and needs. Each individual is unique and different. Each has unique and different gifts, talents and abilities. They are expressions of The Absolute State of The Lord Jesus Christ who endowed these gifts, talents and abilities into each individual. This was done by Him/Her for a very specific purpose — to be shared with others and to contribute to all others’ well-being.”

“Because each individual has such an immense utility and fulfillment of everyone’s needs for sharing, no matter what those gifts, talents and abilities are, each one is equally needed and equally appreciated. Thus, no superiority or inferiority complex, as humans and all other creatures of the negative state experience, will ever enter the new life of the positive state.”

“At the same time, because no two individuals are alike, no duplication of any activities will ever take place in that life. Duplications are a waste of precious energies and creative efforts. The Lord Jesus Christ never creates two or several gifts, talents and abilities that duplicate each other in their activities. Only in the negative state and human life of restrictions and limitations are such unproductive duplications possible.”

“It is only logical to assume that, if you are restricted and limited in any manner or way, you soon run out of new ideas and then you end up duplicating yourself. This is a typical lifestyle of the negative state. Everything there and on your planet is duplicated over and over again. Look at the waste, garbage, trash and rubbish that human life produces! Whole complex facilities need to be built to deal with that waste.”

“In fact, human life evolves around bathrooms, feces, urine, and disposal of garbage and refuse. It tells you very distinctly that the negative state is capable of producing nothing but waste, garbage, trash, rubbish and refuse in general. These are the ‘delights’ of the negative state which are being continuously fed into human life. The present situation of the members of the positive state, for the sake of freedom of choice, is such that even they need to continuously purify and cleanse themselves from the ideas that prod them to reject and deny The Lord Jesus Christ and the life of the positive state. Such ideas can be considered their refuse which needs to be expelled.”

“As you know, this expelled refuse falls out into the Zone of Displacement, is captured there and is utilized as the source of its members’ garbage life. Subsequently, it is multiply

duplicated and conveyed to human life on your planet. In this respect human life is fed by refuse regurgitated by the negative state, expelled from the positive state and used for the dead life of the negative state.”

“In actuality, human life appears to be a refuse of a refuse of a refuse. This is a process of duplication, triplication and multiplication of the negative state.”

“Such a condition, of course, will no longer be tolerated in the new life of the positive state. The members of the positive state, once they are freed from the need of expulsion of the above mentioned ideas, will have an opportunity finally to do what they were created to do — unrestricted, unlimited, uninhibited and non-hindered actualization, realization and manifestation of all their potentials, gifts, talents and abilities for the benefit of and sharing with all.”

(10)

“In the new life of the positive state the concept of leisure and fun life will have a totally different connotation. As you noticed, the sleep life was not mentioned here. This is not by coincidence. The need for sleep stems from the need to keep certain knowledge and information secret and hidden. Also, it stems from the existence of ignorance and the unconscious processes. This, in turn, refers to the sleep life as originating in the negative state. It is because of the negative state that certain knowledge and information needs to be hidden even from the members of the positive state.”

“It is because of the negative state that ignorance and unconscious processes exist. The more knowledge and information needs to be withheld from any sentient entity and the more ignorance and unconscious processes are in force, the longer are the periods of sleep needed.”

“Thus, even the members of the positive state, at the present time, need to have periodic sleep. On the other hand, humans, being an epitome of ignorance and unconsciousness, need to sleep the longest periods of time. Almost half of their human life is spent in sleep or some form of rest.”

“The situation of ignorance and concealment determines also the length of any phase of life. The more ignorance and concealment, the shorter is that phase or life span. Thus, again, it is the phase of human life, being in the state of the greatest ignorance and concealment of true spiritual and other facts, which lasts the shortest period of time. No other phase of life anywhere and anywhen is of such a short duration.”

“Therefore, once the need for concealment and secrecy is eliminated, once the human life of ignorance and unconscious processes is no longer in existence, once the negative state is no more, no need for sleep will exist.”

“Thus, in the new life of the positive state, sleep will have no place. It will be replaced with longer periods of work, learning, fun, entertainment, feasts and various other leisure activities.”

“The content and quality of leisure and fun activities will be determined at the time the new life of the positive state will be developed and established. You can be assured that it will be something that has never been experienced before anywhere and anywhen in any life.”

“One of the favorite activities devoted to time which is now being spent on necessary sleep will be in learning new ways of impressions, expressions and relatedness. People will travel

extensively throughout the entire multiverse of Creation to learn about other sentient life forms and their lifestyles and creative efforts and what the quality of their relationships with The Lord Jesus Christ is. Such learning will be for the purpose of continuous enhancement and enrichment of everyone to eternity. Because new sentient life forms will always be coming into being and existence, there will always be something new and exciting to learn.”

(11)

“As you know, the multiverse of Creation is an orderly and lawful occurrence ruled by certain spiritual principles of The Divine Providence of The Lord Jesus Christ. This requires that a certain type of spiritual organization exist in order to implement these multiversal laws.”

“One of the fundamental differences of the new life of the positive state will be that every individual in Creation, without exception or exclusion, will have ingrained these laws in his/her heart by his/her free will and choice. Thus, everyone will be governed by these laws from within and not from without.”

“For this reason, no external type of government of political or any other nature will exist at that time. Remember, The Lord Jesus Christ will have intimate, private and personal relationships with everyone.”

“Thus, it is The Lord Jesus Christ who can be the only ruler of any governing body or individual life. If you talk with and relate to The Lord Jesus Christ on a daily basis, what other authority do you need? The Lord Jesus Christ and your ‘I am,’ which contains all governing laws of the multiverse, are your absolute rulers. And because the laws in ‘I am’ are from The Lord Jesus Christ in you, in an ultimate sense, only The Lord Jesus Christ singularly is your Absolute Ruler. Having Him/Her for The true Absolute Ruler and Authority means to be completely free from and independent of any external authorities and their impositions.”

“Only an unofficial type of government will exist at that time, limited to the business of coordination of activities and maintenance of diplomatic relationships with other sentient life forms throughout the multiverse. Each particular sentient life form will usually be clustered around one state or area in time and space. These clusters will give a semblance of existence of countries that contain the same sentient life forms. However, they will have no political or other powers over anyone except for coordination of activities. As you know, all power will belong to The Lord Jesus Christ.”

“The extent, content, quality and form of any such government will be determined by a specific choice to manifest the new life of the positive state in this or that manner at that time. Because of this, nothing more can be revealed about this issue.”

“If anyone has ears to hear, let him/her hear what The Lord Jesus Christ reveals in this Chapter.”

CHAPTER NINETEEN

LIFE AFTER HUMAN LIFE

On April 9, 1988, at 6:00 in the morning, the word of The Lord Jesus Christ came to me, saying,

“In view of the revealed facts about human life, it is obvious that, to repeat again, human life is not what humans think it is. Of course, being typically human, humans have never been able to come up with any unifying and unified theory about their own life. The numerous contradictory and irreconcilable theories about the origin and nature of the human life existing side-by-side on your planet are a good example of this situation. But none of these theories come even close to the truth of this matter.”

“The topic of this Chapter is twofold: One is the revelation about the destiny or fate of humans immediately after they leave their planet or, what they call it, after they die. The other is the answer to the question of what is going to happen to human life or, to be precise, to humans who were specifically fabricated to be humans, after the negative state and human life are eliminated.”

“As you remember from the books Messages From Within and Who Are You and Why Are You Here? not all humans on planet Zero are actually humans. Many present on your planet assumed human life and human form for certain important spiritual purposes. On the other hand, many humans, in fact, the majority of them, were fabricated for the sole purpose to be nothing else but typically and specifically humans.”

“In the case of non-humans, who assumed human life and its form on a temporary basis for the purpose of their mission on planet Zero, the situation is simplified. After they complete their mission, whatever it might be, and leave planet Zero, they return to the place, state or condition from which they incarnated on your planet. This return, after the death of their human body, is not instantaneous. Before joining their home base, they need to go through a period of, what you would call, quarantine. They undergo a special type of spiritual ‘fumigation,’ during which all pollutions, poisons and contaminations of the typical and specific human life are removed from them and they are thoroughly cleansed and purified from everything of the human nature. Subsequently, they join their own society and people.”

“The process of fumigation, purification and cleansing is true for those who come from and go back to the positive state, be it in the spiritual world or intermediate world. Those who came from the physical universe of the positive state do not return to their physical planet but to the intermediate or the spiritual world, respectively, which corresponds to their physical world.”

“The situation is different for those non-humans who assumed human life and its form on the mission from various Hells and other regions of the Zone of Displacement. They do not go through the process of fumigation, purification and cleansing. Instead, the acquired human nature is being incorporated into their after-human life in such a manner as to become an integral part of their former nature in a transmogrified condition. The word ‘transmogrified’ in this connotation means removal of any positive elements that were acquired during their life on planet Zero, and extracting everything negative and very specifically human (in the negative connotation) and combining it with their own original nature. This is a type of reversed ‘fumigation,’ ‘purification’ and ‘cleansing.’ As a result of this combination, a more

evil, more ugly and more vicious demonic nature is acquired which is subsequently utilized in the spiritual war against the positive state.”

“One of the many reasons why the negative entities from the Hells and other regions of the Zone of Displacement incarnate on planet Zero is to acquire some elements of human nature in order to become more evil and more efficient in opposing The Lord Jesus Christ and everyone in the positive state.”

“Of course, incarnation on planet Zero constitutes for the negative entities a certain amount of risk. After all, many positive entities have been incarnating on your planet until recently (as of this very moment, no one will be allowed to incarnate on planet Zero from any regions of the positive state. Whoever is being born on your planet, as of this date, the date of transcribing, which is July First, 1988, at 3:08 p.m. or 15:08, is born either as a typical human or as an incarnation of some evil entity from some regions of the Hells and the Zone of Displacement).“

“Thus, these demons in human form are exposed directly to the agents of the positive state in human form and run a risk of being lost from the negative state forever by converting to the positive state with the help of the agents of the positive state. This is the risk that is worth taking because, in case they succeed in their mission, after they return, they acquire unusual evil powers and abilities which were not available to them up to that point.”

“However, the agents of the positive state are exposed to the same risk. They are also in danger of being corrupted by the negative state and human nature and very often, they do lose their original true spiritual perspective and temporarily succumb to the temptation and promises of the negative state.”

“In either situation, whether conversion of the negative entities in human form to the positive state or the positive entities in human form to the negative state, this process is not as difficult as it seems. You have to remember that none of them have any conscious knowledge or memories of who they are, from where they came or what their purpose of being on planet Zero is.”

“As you know, this condition is the only way to enter human life and to experience what it is like to be a typical human. Any other way would not be a human way. So, being in full ignorance about these facts, either of these non-humans in human form can be easily swayed one way or the other. After all, they all have freedom of choice and the ability to change fully preserved in them. As you remember, these two abilities constitute the foundation of any life, no matter what kind it is. To repeat, life in any form or condition, be it positive or negative or human life, is utterly impossible at all without these two building blocks of life.”

“However, the majority of humans on planet Zero are humans proper. They were originated for only one purpose — to be humans and to exemplify a typical and specific human nature, as described in Chapter Twelve and throughout this book. These humans have never experienced any other life but human life. Their life in that special intermediate world, before entrance into the physical womb of their human mother, was within the human parameters.”

“Therefore, the question is what happens to humans after they leave planet Zero or, to use your expression, after they die? The situation with humans after the physical death of their bodies is much more complex than with anyone else. Do not forget that they have within them a typical human spirit and a typical human mentality. All they lack is their external physical body.”

“As you remember, externally, the human body, in its outward appearance, does not differ too much from any other bodies of the majority of sentient entities anywhere within this particular universe of the multiverse. However, the human physical body contains some organs that exist in no other type of bodies (for example, organs of elimination). The position of the organs of that body also differs, particularly the structure of its brain, the wiring of its nervous system, the sexual organs and the vocal cords. This was a very crucial change in the human body in order to accommodate it into the typical and specific human spirit and its human mentality. Once this human body ceases to function, the human spirit and its human mentality is released from it and continues in its life.”

“However, here comes the problem. Human life in its spirit and mentality is not suitable to live in any other sphere or atmosphere of life but its own. It cannot survive anywhere else.”

“On the other hand, it cannot be destroyed either. Any sentient life, no matter of what state, form and condition, is indestructible. Life can change its form of manifestation, it can transform from one state to another, but it can never be destroyed. Because human life is a perverted form of sentient life, regardless of its perverted condition, it cannot be destroyed. However, having the ability to freely choose and change, it can be transformed or, in the negative connotation, it can be transmogrified.”

“The process of transformation or transmogrification is not a simple one. It takes a lot of effort and time (the word ‘time’ is used here as a correspondence of certain spiritual states needed for this process to take place. In this connotation, it is not used as time measurement in your conceptualization of time). In the meantime, the human spirit and its mentality has to be somewhere.”

“In the intermediate world of spirits there is a very special holding area (no better term in the human language exists to describe this area), accommodated specifically to the conditions of survival of the human spirit and its mentality until the process of transformation or transmogrification is completed. It is to this special holding area that all true humans come first, after they die or leave planet Zero. Needless to say, this holding area is well isolated and separated from the rest of the inhabitants of that world. Communication with them is accomplished by special, indescribable protective means.”

“At the present time, the situation with humans after their physical death is considerably different than it used to be. The change in this situation was brought about by the completion of hybridization and fusion of the human body-flesh into The Absolute Nature of The Most High Who became the totality of The Lord Jesus Christ.”

“Before completion of this process of fusion and hybridization, a certain degree of separation of some human elements from The Most High were present. The Most High used the human body of Jesus Christ to appear to humans, when needed and necessary, but it was still separated from His/Her Absolute Essence and Substance. As long as this separation existed, the fate of humans was different than it is now.”

“In a state of separation, no substantial change in the human spirit and its mentality could take place. Under those conditions of separation, the only thing that was possible was to suppress or make typical human nature dormant or tamed. But the human beast remained, albeit asleep. However, it could be awakened or recalled or brought to one’s attention at any time. It could not be eliminated or transformed into something positive. For this reason, until recently, three different states existed with humans after their physical death.”

“The first was within the frame of the positive state. Those humans who recognized the negativity, evilness and falsification of typical human life and did their best to dissociate themselves from behaving, acting, thinking, willing, intending and feeling in a typical negative human manner, and who, with good and positive intent, turned themselves to God, were allowed to form their own human heavens within the positive spiritual world, situated in this particular universe of the overall multiverse.”

“These human heavens were distinctly different from all other Heavens. Even though of the positive nature, because of continuous separation of human elements from The Most High, they were separated and isolated from the rest of Creation.”

“Communication with other regions of Creation, as well as with other heavens within this universe, was accomplished by mediators, specially appointed by The Lord Jesus Christ, who were trained, equipped and endowed with specific abilities to survive the human atmosphere and sphere. If any human from his/her human heaven had a desire or needed to visit some other sphere, other than the human heavens, he/she was required to undergo a special process of preparation and adjustment. This process allowed him/her, on a temporary basis, to enter that sphere and survive in it, as long as the purpose of that visit continued. However, in the moment the purpose of that visit was accomplished, both the visiting humans and their host would begin to experience anguish, indicating to them that it was time to depart each other’s companies.”

“For this reason, in the majority of cases, humans in heavens were limited in their communication and relationships within and among their own heavens.”

“To repeat again, this situation with human heavens reflected the state of continuous separation of human elements from the totality of The Absolute Nature of The Most High who is now The Lord Jesus Christ.”

“The second state with humans, after their physical death, was within the frame of the intermediate world of spirits. In actuality, humans had their own intermediate world of spirits, separated and isolated from any other intermediate worlds, where they were allowed to form themselves in societies, countries, states and organizations exactly in the same manner as they did while they lived on planet Zero, even preserving the names of their countries, cities, villages and planet. They called their intermediate world planet Earth and, for all practical purposes, it appeared exactly as the planet from which they came (planet Zero, called by them, Earth). Most of them firmly believed that they were on their original physical planet and not in some other world.”

“The type of humans who would settle in that world, for what they thought was on a permanent basis, were those humans who contained within themselves equally strong tendencies and inclinations both toward the negative state and the positive state. Or, whose decision to join one or the other side had not been clearly identified or made.”

“The lifestyle of these humans and their outcome was properly described in Swedenborg’s writings.”

“Any human, be he/she of the positive nature or the negative or undecided nature, respectively, after his/her physical death, entered this human intermediate world first. The length of his/her stay in that world was determined by the factor of identity with either state. The more identity with the positive state, the less time in that world and the sooner he/she joined one of the human true heavens. The more identity with the negative state, the less time spent in the intermediate world and the faster his/her departure to one of the human

hells. The less identity with either state, the longer he/she stayed in the intermediate world until the choice and decision was made and the true nature of that particular human was exposed and manifested. Until Swedenborg's time, the stay in that intermediate world of humans was possible for centuries. After Swedenborg's time and until the recent abolishment of the human intermediate world, the stay could not exceed more than thirty years (using human time measurement)."

"The third state with humans, after their physical death, was within the frame of the negative state. Humans who showed overwhelming preference for the negative state, after their brief stay in the human intermediate world, joined humans of similar disposition in some of the human Hells. Also in the Hells, humans formed into their own societies and countries relatively separated and isolated from the other Hells."

"Thus, as you see, no matter in what state humans settled after their physical death, they were always separated and isolated; as pointed out above, the reason being that it is in the very nature of being a human to be isolated and separated. In actuality, being of immense prejudice, superstition and bias, humans had little desire to associate with anyone but their own kind (with the exception of the so-called missionaries who always tried to visit other societies in order to convert them to human religious faiths)."

"It has been extremely difficult for humans to accept the fact that they are not a preferred, special and superior species. Thinking and considering themselves as being preferred, special and superior, they reject anyone else or look upon others as inferior to their own kind."

"In the positive state of the human heavens, such an attitude was tamed but it always lurked from the suppressed and dormant condition. It took a lot of effort and work for human angels and angelic spirits to keep this negative tendency in check."

"Of course, being of this nature, humans have an inordinate ability, with their boastful arrogance, to turn everyone else off. So, no one in Creation, or in the Zone of Displacement either, was too eager to associate with humans in any manner and way. As you remember, it was mentioned previously that the very first thing humans tried to do, whenever they met someone else in life after human life, was to convert that one to their own human mode, style and belief system. If that entity failed to convert, which was always the case, humans condemned him/her to the Hells, even though they themselves were in the Hells (they thought that they had this power of condemnation). Everyone avoided humans exhibiting such behavior as much as possible."

"Now, this situation with humans existed until recently. Once the state of separation and isolation of the human elements from The Absolute Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ was eliminated, and these elements were fused into the totality of His/Her Absolute Nature, the process of either transformation or transmogrification could be started."

"The spiritual principle requires that any process of this nature must be taken from the position of unification and oneness. It is only logical to assume that it is utterly impossible to deal with the state of separation and isolation from the state of separation and isolation. As long as this state existed, no truly transformative action could occur. The state of separation and isolation cannot transform an isolated and separated state. The only thing it can do is to maintain the state of that separation and isolation indefinitely. For this reason, as long as that state existed, humans were allowed to stay humans, separated and isolated from the rest, in all their states, conditions and situations."

“Of course, this situation cannot be tolerated forever. As long as the state of separation and isolation exists, the negative state exists. It is a life of the negative state.”

“The first step in the process of elimination of the negative state is removal of the human isolation and separation by transforming and endowing humans with the type of life which is conducive to unification and oneness. The now unified elements in The Absolute Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ make this process possible.”

“As you know, only The Lord Jesus Christ can undertake such an enormous and unusual process. However, nothing is too usual about human life either. But, as long as human elements continued to be separated from The Lord Jesus Christ, no action could be taken in this respect. Any attempt to do so, under those separated conditions, would, in actuality, annihilate humans. The reason for this is in the fact that, without the human elements in The Lord Jesus Christ’s Absolute Nature, no human could survive The Pure Divine Sphere for a fraction of a second. Remember, human life is not conducive to any other form of life. Any other form and manifestation of life is deadly and poisonous to the human life.”

“The purified and divinized human elements within The Lord Jesus Christ allow Him/Her to approach humans at any time, condition, state or place, without any danger for humans, and to initiate the process of their complete transformation and endowment with a different life.”

“The first phase of the process of this transformation and endowment began in the human heavens of the spiritual world. It was completed today, as of this date. All humans in those heavens, by their free will and choice, were transformed and freed from the typical human nature and integrated into the totality of the rest of Creation. They are no longer separated and isolated from anyone in Creation. With this new life, their heavens received a new type of atmosphere and sphere which is conducive to anyone and with which they can enter any other places, states and conditions without need for preparation or mediation.”

“The second phase begins right now in the intermediate world of spirits where humans are being given a choice either to enter The New School, where they can undergo the process of this transformation and endowment, or they can enter any human Hell of their choosing. In response to these tremendous revolutionary changes with humans and others, the Hells are now also allowed to proceed with their own efforts in this respect.”

“As of now, all humans in their respective Hells were completely transmogrified and turned into the proper creatures of the Hells, and their Hells are no longer off limits to anyone. The process of transmogrification of humans in the Hells is a necessary step in bringing the negative state’s nature to full and total exposure.”

“As you remember, a few weeks ago it was revealed that the Hells of the pseudo-creators were opened and they could come out and join others in the other Hells. Their very first deed after their release was to transmogrify humans in their respective Hells so that all Hells could achieve their own pseudo-unification. Only the pseudo-creators had the knowledge of how to accomplish the process of transmogrification and pseudo-unification.”

“The Hells need to achieve their own pseudo-unification in response to the tremendous changes that have been occurring in the positive state. In order to effectively continue in their combat against the positive state and all its fundamental changes, they need this temporary unification.”

“Under the presently existing conditions, once any human dies and leaves planet Zero, he/she is placed into the holding area of the intermediate world. The duration of that stay for

anyone in that area cannot exceed more than three years, counting in human time elements. Within those three years, every human is given a choice to convert to the positive state by entering a special division of The New School which specializes in human affairs.”

“In The New School the process of their transformation and endowment begins by The Lord Jesus Christ and His/Her assistants. No time limit exists for staying in The New School. One stays there as long as it takes for this process to be completed effectively, successfully and permanently. Different humans have a different degree of identification with the typical human life. The greater the degree of that identification, the longer the stay, whereby more elaborate and complex work is done. And vice versa: The less identification, the easier and the faster the process is.”

“Refusal to convert to the positive state and to enter The New School means a choice to enter one of the Hells where any human is transmogrified into a creature of the Hells.”

“Thus, as of this moment, no one of the human stock from planet Zero, after departure from that planet, is allowed to remain typically human for longer than, what corresponds to human planetary time, three years. This situation is a very crucial step forward in the process of total and complete elimination of the negative state and the dead life of all its Hells and their fabrication — human life.”

“In view of these facts, briefly revealed in this Chapter, it is obvious that human life is a temporary and transient occurrence. Once the negative state is eliminated, nothing will be available to feed the continuation of human life. After all, to repeat again, humans and their life are the product of the negative state.”

“All humans who will still be present on planet Zero at the time of the final elimination of the negative state (if life in any form or condition will be in appearance at all on your planet at that time!) and anywhere and anywhen else (within the allotted three years), will be participating in The Last Judgment. At that time, they will be given a final choice either to convert to the positive state and relinquish their typical human life or cease to be and to exist to eternity.”

“If any humans, by any chance, will refuse even then to convert to the positive state, the elements of the true life which originally came from the stolen life of the positive state will be removed from them and, in a purified, cleansed and fumigated condition, returned to their original rightful Source and Owner — The Lord Jesus Christ. By the act of this removal, such humans, or anyone else for that matter, automatically turn into absolute nothingness.”

“As you remember, life in any form and condition is alive and living only because of the elements of life that came originally from The Lord Jesus Christ. No other life is possible, regardless of how much such elements are perverted, falsified, distorted or mutilated.”

“By this last act, the typical, unusual, impossible and specific human life will end its history permanently to eternity.”

“Of course, all experiences of human life, from the moment of its fabrication to the moment of its elimination, will be preserved to eternity in the Multiversality-Of-It-All, called the Lake of Fire and Brimstone. The preservation of these experiences will be needed for eternal learning to all who will be created subsequently to this cycle of time. Because the creation of new sentient entities and their various life forms is continuous to eternity, the need to preserve these experiences to eternity for their learning is very obvious.”

“If any one has ears to hear, let him/her hear what The Lord Jesus Christ reveals in this

CHAPTER TWENTY

THE MYSTERY OF SEXUALITY IN GENERAL AND HUMAN SEXUALITY IN PARTICULAR

On April 30, 1988, early in the morning, the word of The Lord Jesus Christ came to me, saying:

“The topic of this Chapter causes you great concern, Peter. Recently, you have been very reluctant to continue in transmission of anything related to sexuality in general and human sexuality in particular.”

“As expected, the teachings of The New Revelation about sexuality caused considerable furor, condemnation, dissension, accusation and rejection by many who read what has been revealed about this matter so far. Some readers of The New Revelation originally were accepting its ideas with eagerness, until they came to those ideas which explained the issue of sexuality. This issue became a stumbling block for many.”

“You were accused, Peter, even by your closest ‘friends’ at that time, that the reason the topic of sexuality was conveyed and explained in the manner as it was presented within the frame of The New Revelation was that you needed, under the umbrella of Divine Revelation, to justify your own sexual problems and possible sexual involvement with women other than your spouse. These individuals blamed you, Peter, that you were trying to hoodwink them into believing your perverted ideas about sexuality as being the ideas of The Lord Jesus Christ. Because of this, some persons, claiming to be your closest friends and followers, dissociated themselves from you and from the teachings of The New Revelation. This rejection and false accusation caused you a lot of pain and suffering and you became somewhat bitter about this matter. Your ego-pride played a considerable role.”

“Unfortunately, the outcome of this whole affair caused you severe doubts about the verity and purity of not only the ideas on sexuality, as explained within the frame of The New Revelation, but also on the entire content of The New Revelation. You were questioning (and still are!) whether you really were/are transmitting the words of The True Lord Jesus Christ or your own fantasies, or whether you are being misled by some kind of demons or demonic spirits claiming to be The Lord Jesus Christ.”

“Of course, these doubts were immediately capitalized upon by the negative state and used for its severe attacks, blocks and spiritual regression in your case. Because of this unfortunate situation, you promised yourself that you would never again transmit anything about sexual issues. You have been hoping that this topic will not surface again as a separate entity and, instead, will be confined to brief explanations within the course of revelation of the new spiritual ideas not directly related to sexuality, as the case has been in the previous chapters of this book.”

“Notice, please, that transmission of this portion of The New Revelation was interrupted for several weeks. One of the reasons, although not the sole one, was your reluctance and unwillingness to proceed with this transmission in fear and anguish that you would be requested to elaborate more on sexual issues from the standpoint of The New Nature of The

Lord Jesus Christ and everything that relates to that Nature.”

“Your reluctance and anguish, as well as the rejection of The New Revelation by its many former readers because of the teaching on sexuality, is understandable in view of the fact that almost from the very first moment of conception to the last moment of your physical breath, you have all been taught, as far as sexuality is concerned, and many other issues, just the exact opposite of what is being taught about it in The New Revelation. You were fed those ideas with your mother’s milk, so-to-speak.”

“It is even more understandable if you are presented these traditional teachings on and practices of sexuality as The Law of God; as a commandment of The Absolute Spiritual Authority; as a demand of civil, moral and legal (criminal) laws of human societies; as expectations of all those who are close to you, whom you love and respect and who love and respect you.”

“As you know, Peter, from your own experience, it is extremely difficult to turn around and outrightly reject all these accepted standards, claiming just the opposite of what they teach, demand and expect. Your reputation is put on the line. You expose yourself to all kinds of persecutions, blames and accusations. You are considered to be mentally ill or deranged. You are suspected of having all kinds of sexual deviations, being a person of what your legal laws call moral turpitude; your professional standing among other professionals is shattered and you end up in total misery, loneliness and isolation.”

“Ending like this, you start to doubt your own sanity and question the need for The New Revelation to be given to anyone, or whether it is really a New Revelation, coming from The Lord Jesus Christ, or your own fantasy, as some of your former ‘friends’ accused you. And you tell yourself, ‘Maybe, just maybe, they are right and I am wrong! Who am I to tell people anything about anything? If it is so painful and misleading, I must be wrong and everyone else is right!’ and similar negative thoughts enter your mind.”

“Now, if you, or, to be precise, the new ideas that are being conveyed through you, are wrong and coming from your fantasy or directly from the negative state of the Hells, do you not think that the negative state would do everything in its power to make them widespread and acceptable as it does with so many other transmissions from the spiritual world? You can be assured that, if this were the case, you would be on national television and radio talk shows, your books would be on the list of best sellers and by now you would be a multimillionaire. Would not just the opposite be true, that, if the negative state makes it so difficult, so impossible and so offensive to accept The New Revelation, that its new ideas are right on the target and that they are really coming from The very Divine Source — The Lord Jesus Christ?”

“Therefore, you are being asked, Peter, by The Lord Jesus Christ, in all humbleness and humility, to resume your transmission and to include in this portion of The New Revelation the ideas which will be revealed in this chapter about sexuality in general and human sexuality in particular. If humans and perhaps even some of your present friends, who will read this chapter, will be turned off by it and will condemn and reject you, Peter, let it be so and do not concern yourself with it. Do they really reject and condemn you or your ideas? Do they not condemn and reject The Lord Jesus Christ and His/Her New Ideas?”

“Remember what the old philosopher Plato said? That truth must be respected more than human opinions about you or anything else for that matter. Whoever is able, ready and willing to accept it will do so. Others have their own chance and choice. Let them bear the rightful consequences of their own choice. You are hurting for some humans, among

Swedenborgians, for example, who, as your brother Ivan indicated, originally were very supportive of you and The New Revelation until they read its ideas on sexuality. From that moment on, they turned against you and rejected all else related to The New Revelation. Again, Peter, it is not you or your words they rejected but The Lord Jesus Christ and His/Her Words, not being able to see the real truth, preferring their own traditional and comfortably stagnant ways that keep them in bondage to the negative state.”

“Let it be known now by The Word of The Lord Jesus Christ that whatever was revealed about sexuality in the previous books of The New Revelation and what has been mentioned about it in some previous chapters of this book so far, as well as about all other ideas, is true and valid, conveyed directly by The Lord Jesus Christ. Nothing in it came from anyone else or from its transmitter.”

“Whoever chooses to accept it, let him/her accept it. Whoever chooses to reject it, let him/her reject it. It is not imposed on anyone to believe that this New Revelation is coming from The Lord Jesus Christ. But let the facts of human life and practice of human sexuality and its dire problems, as they have been since the time of fabrication of humans, speak for themselves.”

“So far, the revealed truths about sexuality in general and human sexuality in particular, although being correct and valid, have not offered the full and exhaustive understanding of its nature, content and practice.”

“A great and deep mystery about sexuality in general and human sexuality in particular exists that has not been conveyed or explained to you in acceptable and understandable terms. Nothing could be revealed in this respect until The New Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ was fully established and became eternally functional. As you see, there is a direct relevance of this mystery to The New Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ. On the other hand, your reluctance, Peter, to deal with this issue and fear of being rejected by your physical friends somewhat delayed this transmission. But now is the time to overcome these negative feelings, and with an open heart and mind, to transmit what follows.”

“As you remember from the previously revealed ideas about sexuality, sexuality was conceived as an all-inclusive tool of sharing; as a motivating factor of creativity; as a means for acquirement of greater and better knowledge of one’s Creator, others and oneself; as a driving force of life; and as a medium of mutual delight, joy and pleasure. In conceptualization of human sexuality, sexuality has also been forcefully used as the only possible manner of procreation and keeping humankind alive, by supplying it with its new, numerous members.”

“What upset most readers and some of your former ‘friends,’ Peter, about the new conceptualization of sexuality was not the above description or definition of sexuality, but the way its practice was suggested.”

“In the new conceptualization of the practice of sexuality, it was indicated that the true practice of sexuality, from the standpoint of its spiritual principles, cannot be limited to an all-exclusive, limiting and restricting sexual involvement within marital bonds. In other words, many readers of The New Revelation assumed that Dr. Peter Francuch teaches and condones adultery, fornication and promiscuity (the way these readers define and understand adultery, fornication and promiscuity).”

“The only thing these readers conveniently failed to notice was that it was stated that humans, under presently existing conditions, are not even physically equipped to practice such a mode of sexuality. At the same time, it was emphasized that, should anyone get involved in a sexual relationship with anyone of the opposite sex, while either married or not,

one should not rush into labeling such an individual as an adulterer or as a fornicator. Such an individual may or may not be adulterous or fornicative, depending on the nature, the content and the quality of his/her intent with which he/she approaches such an involvement. At the same time, the concept of adultery and fornication was redefined and put in a more appropriate perspective.”

“As you are aware, human conceptualization of adultery and fornication is limited primarily to the physical sexual involvement. Its unjust limitation relates to any sexual involvement outside the marital bonds, regardless of intention, motivation or reason for such an involvement.”

“In other words, anyone who is sexually involved, either while single or while married, with a person other than his/her spouse, regardless of why such involvement is pursued, is indiscriminately considered to be an adulterer or fornicator, respectively. No, or very few, other considerations are given to the concepts of adultery or fornication. In order to clarify this situation more, let us, once more, consider these concepts.”

“In The Holy Bible, being that it always deals with the spiritual issues, the concept of adultery and fornication deals mainly with one’s relationship to God. But, in describing this relationship, The Holy Bible uses human external language. It uses examples of human external relationships to convey internally the spiritual facts about how humans relate to their true Creator. But, humans, being in externals, assumed that The Holy Bible concerns itself literally with physical sexual habits and practices of humans. This false assumption led Apostle Paul toward a development of the most restricting philosophy of human sexuality that has ever been conceived. In the fact of the betrayal of Christianity, Paul’s teachings in this matter were unconditionally accepted and imposed on the majority of membership of Christian churches. They were reinforced by all kinds of social, civil, criminal and moral laws fabricated for that purpose.”

“From the viewpoint of The New Revelation, several levels of adultery and fornication exist:

1. Spiritual adultery and fornication;
2. Mental adultery and fornication;
3. Physical adultery and fornication;
4. Sexual adultery and fornication;
5. Social and legal adultery and fornication;
6. Moral adultery and fornication; and
7. Environmental adultery and fornication.”

“The definition and content of any of these adulteries and fornications is never determined by the process of the act itself, as humans define it, but by the quality, content and nature of intent, motivation and reason with which such an act is committed.”

“Spiritually, one is never judged by the process of the act itself, but by determining factors for which such an act is undertaken. No proper, just judgment can be rendered to anyone by the process of the act itself without any regard for precipitating intentional and motivational factors. With this principle and rule in mind, let us briefly look at the various levels or aspects of adultery and fornication.”

“In the concept of this position of The New Revelation, spiritual adultery signifies initial acceptance of The New Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ, with a subsequent turning away from Him/Her, giving preference to any other spiritual or religious movements existing on your planet. Of course, this definition is applicable everywhere and everywhen and not only

on your planet. Spiritual fornication in this connotation means an outright rejection to accept The New Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ and, instead, to give preference to any other existing spiritual and/or religious movement.“

“Mental adultery means an initial acceptance of the positive thoughts, feelings, ideas, concepts, will, intention, motivation, behavior and attitude regarding anyone or anything and then turning away from them and giving preference to their negative counterparts, as defined by the non-spiritual negative state. Mental fornication signifies a denial that any other but the negative state’s mental processes exist or are needed to be assumed and practiced.”

“Physical adultery means an acceptance of one’s external body and mind as a spiritual correspondence of the most within Spiritual Mind’s ideas and then turning away from these ideas and putting all values and meaning of life into the most external aspects of one’s life. But it also means use, misuse and abuse of one’s physical body and one’s external mind, not taking proper care of them and not keeping them in balance with all other aspects of one’s mind, after the initial commitment of doing it and in fact, doing it for a while. Physical fornication denotes refusal to accept any other source of life but the physical one and denial that any other but the natural level of Creation exists. It also means rejection of the need to balance one’s life in all its aspects.”

“Sexual adultery signifies an initial acceptance of the fact that sexuality is a spiritual all-inclusive tool of sharing, mutual benefit, common good, delight, pleasure and joy and a source of acquirement of greater knowledge of The Lord Jesus Christ, others and oneself, but, in a subsequent application of this fact, to use sexuality for totally selfish reasons and manipulation, use, abuse and misuse of others. This is one of the worst forms of adultery. Sexual fornication signifies denial that any other aspects of sexuality exist but the physical one and to have no consideration for the sexual needs of others but only one’s own physical pleasure, physical satisfaction and physical fulfillment.”

“As you see, in this conceptualization of sexual adultery and fornication, this act is not limited to the relationships with others other than one’s own marital partner, but the relationship between spouses can also be adulterous and fornicative if approached with adverse intents, motivations and reasons.”

“Social adultery means pretending to live, to breathe and to do all kinds of acts, jobs, performances for the sake of all (and knowing that such is the case), but, in fact, to do so for one’s own sake, using society as a means for one’s own selfish goals, instead of serving it as a goal of the well-being for all. Social fornication signifies to consider society a servant to one’s own needs without any regard for the needs of the members of the society.”

“Moral adultery is to think, to feel and to believe one thing and at the same time, to say, to express and to behave in the exact opposite way, knowing that this is wrong, but, nevertheless, doing it anyway. Moral fornication signifies an acceptance of this kind of mode of life as the only possible and feasible, pursuing it with all vehemence without considering any other possibilities.”

“Environmental adultery is an initial consideration of one’s environment as a reflection of the sentient mind and, from that position, taking proper care of one’s environment in accordance with the principle of balancing and ecology, but, at the same time, using one’s environment in a destructive, inconsiderate and selfish manner, knowing that it is wrong to do so. Environmental fornication means rejection of any other consideration of one’s environment but as an indiscriminate source for one’s use, abuse, misuse and service without any regard for its ecology or balancing needs.”

"In a deeper sense of all these aspects of adultery, to be adulterous means to know that something is right and true, and even support it externally, but to lust and do purposefully what is the opposite of that knowledge and truth. On the other hand, in a deeper sense of all these aspects of fornication, to be fornicative means to do things purposefully for one's own sake without any considerations for anyone else or for any other levels of reality but what one thinks reality is. The key word here is 'purposefully.' To do something purposefully, whether with positive or negative intent, determines the degree of adultery and fornication in any singular or multiple acts."

"One of the mysteries of sexuality in general is its direct relatedness to the driving force of life and being a tool for making life forms. Because of this mystery, sexuality is a direct participant on the conveyance to these life forms their content, meaning, purpose, manifestation, actualization and realization. This role of sexuality makes it one of the most potent tools of influence on the formation of various lifestyles and modes of relationships that exist in Creation, in the Zone of Displacement and on planet Zero."

"Due to this most crucial role, it is not by coincidence that sexuality was used by the pseudo-creators as a target of their greatest genetic alteration, mutilation, perversion and falsification of its meaning, purpose, application and practice. It took them the longest to come up with the type of sexuality that would not only be the most remote from anything considered to be true sexuality in the positive state of Creation, but as sanctioned by God as the only possible mode of its practice in being and existence."

"Thus, the pseudo-creators succeeded in fabricating typical human sexuality which has nothing, or very little, in common with how sexuality is conceived, perceived, understood, conveyed, practiced and manifested anywhere else in Creation and its multiverse. In this respect, you can say that human sexuality is an epitome of unnaturalness, abnormality, perversion, mutilation, impossibility and mixture of elements of the most opposing and irreconcilable qualities."

"To repeat, human sexuality is something which is utterly impossible, made possible by unnatural, forcefully combined various elements, that have nothing in common, kept in their formation by a special type of spiritual, correspondential, magical and genetic binding, impossible for your human mind to even remotely comprehend!"

"You have to understand that one of the mysteries of sexuality can be found in the fact that sexuality is a gate through which the true life enters into its forms or carriers. Whoever has the key to that gate becomes the most potent influence on how life within that form or carrier will be carried on. If the pseudo-creators were to leave the sexual structure of the positive state intact, they would totally fail in their endeavor, the reason being that sexuality is a conductor of life energies and their total content in the most mysterious and enigmatic manner. It will conduct into its carriers anything that is being put into it."

"The positive connotation of sexuality, coming from The Lord Jesus Christ, conducts all proper ideas of life and their true spiritual source which makes that life true, proper and alive. For this reason, nothing can be done to alter such life unless its conductor is totally restructured and connected to some source other than The Lord Jesus Christ and His/Her true spiritual principles."

"Thus, the pseudo-creators undertook extensive experimentation with sexuality, which lasted many millions of years, until they came up with the most favorable combination, reflected in what you know as human sexuality. Until that time, nothing of this nature had ever existed or

had been conceived.“

“The major purpose of fabricating human sexuality was to disconnect it from its true spiritual source — The Lord Jesus Christ — thus, preventing it from conducting the true life, and to connect it to a non-spiritual source, from which it would conduct the most unnatural, perverted, distorted, falsified and impossible life — human life.”

“This was the most difficult task to accomplish and many failures accompanied the pseudo-creators’ experimentation in this respect. The problem here is that sexuality is integrally connected to the true life and its aliveness. Any attempt to disconnect it from that source ends almost instantaneously in death.”

“What needed to be done was to come up with some unusual combination of the opposing forces, binding them together in such a manner as to fake being truly alive and living and, in an almost instantaneous manner, to connect it to sexuality while, at the same time, disconnecting sexuality from the true source of life. The fake life had to be almost identical with the original in order to force sexuality to conduct this new form of unusual and impossible ‘life.’”

“In actuality, what was done here was that the true sexuality, as conceived and practiced in the positive state by all people, was replaced or closed off with a fake one, fabricated from the various elements taken out from the true sentient life. This fake sexuality or pseudo-sexuality became a conductor of human life, as concocted from the ideas emanating from the negative state of the Hells.”

“Total removal of true sexuality from any life, including human life, is not possible because, being a conductor of true life, sexuality functions as an electric wire that conducts electricity — in this case, the true life. Thus, without that wire, no electricity of life would be forthcoming. (There is a corresponding mystery here between this role of sexuality and the physical phenomena of electric and magnetic forces.”

“As a matter of fact, the physical phenomena of electric and magnetic forces are a most direct correspondence of this role of sexuality in any sense. In reality, no such physical phenomena would be able to exist or to be manifested in nature unless this spiritual reality of sexuality and its role were in being and existence.)”

“However, one can insulate, isolate and conceal that wire and restructure it in such a manner as to allow it to conduct only a very limited amount of that life, sufficient enough to maintain a semblance of life in any form of life. At the same time, it is possible to use the rest of potentials of that wire by connecting it to some other source of fake life, making it conduct, in this unusual and impossible mixture, whatever you put into it.”

“This is how human sexuality was fabricated. The process and means of that fabrication are so complex and intricate that the human mind has no corresponding ideas, concepts, images or words which would be able to comprehend and apprehend how all this was done. It would be futile to try to bring it to your understanding even remotely.”

“At the same time, in the process of this fabrication, an inborn idea was planted in the human mind, claiming that human sexuality and the way it is understood, practiced and mandated by various spiritual, religious, moral, social and legal laws is the only possible way, the right way and the godly way.”

“Because this is a genetically ingrained idea in the human mind and the human body, it is

almost impossible for any human to conceive of sexuality in any other way. No wonder so many humans and your former 'friends,' Peter, were turned off by The New Revelation's revolutionary teachings about sexuality."

"What was accomplished by the pseudo-creators in this respect was that they built into the human life system elaborate feelings of guilt, shame, embarrassment, disgust and aversion to any other mode of sexual life. Thus, for most humans, to think or to desire any other mode of sexual life triggers within them these adverse feelings, causing them numerous sexual and other spiritual, mental and physical problems, leading to nothing but sexual perversions, venereal diseases, acquired immune deficiency syndrome (AIDS), suffering and all kind of misery."

"Unfortunately, this miserable outcome only reinforces the traditional human conceptualization of sexuality, telling you that, if you were to live your sexual life as mandated by all human laws and social expectations and traditions, you would not end up in this misery, whatever form or manifestation it takes. So, basically, humans have little choice, while living the human life, but to practice their sexuality the way it is mandated by their various laws."

"Yet, as mentioned above, nothing truly normal, healthy, natural, proper, moral, spiritual, legal, or whatever, is in the structure, content, concept and practice of human sexuality, the major reason being that it is connected, in over 95 percent of its total capacity, to the wrong source. Only less than five percent of it is connected to the true source."

"However, to make sure that the minimal connection of human sexuality to the right source does not influence its human orientation in a positive sense, the conceptualization and understanding of that source was tremendously perverted, falsified, distorted and mutilated to such an extent that it does not resemble in any manner its true original identity. In this manner, the thriving of human sexuality, the way it is, was securely assured indefinitely."

"As you are writing these words, Peter, you are experiencing a slight undertone of annoying, aversive and disgusting feelings which are trying to tell you that what you have just written is total nonsense, a fabrication of your own imagination or some strange imposition of some kind of negative spirit or demon."

"This experience of yours, Peter, only proves the point of what is being conveyed here about human sexuality. Being endowed with typical human sexuality, you are also endowed with genetically encoded feelings of disgust, guilt and aversion to anything that opposes the human conceptualization of sexuality."

"But, please, tune yourself into the less than five percent of the connectedness of human sexuality to The Giver of Life. Your spiritual intuition from that region tells you something entirely different. There is a tremendous affinity to and inner certainty about what is being conveyed here. Listen to that inner intuition, 'a still small voice within,' and disregard all those imposed negative feelings about this issue."

"In view of these facts, what then are the fundamental differences between sexuality in general and human sexuality in particular? Some of these differences can be formulated and pointed out. Others are too difficult to be comprehended by the limited human mind."

"One of the major differences can be found in the above-mentioned fact that human sexuality, in more than 95 percent of its content, is connected to the wrong source of life. Therefore, in an overwhelming majority of situations, it conducts and conveys to the human

mind wrong ideas, perceptions, understandings and experiences of life in all its aspects. Thus, it blocks from human awareness the true reality of being and existence of all its levels.“

“Because of this situation, humans have no idea what life and sexuality are all about. Being isolated and separated from everyone else in Creation and the Zone of Displacement, they have no experiential comparison between their understanding, conceptualization and practice of life and sexuality and all others.”

“Having no knowledge of anyone or anything else in being and existence, humans tend to conclude that no other conceptualization, understanding and practice of sexuality is possible.”

“On the other hand, in the true reality of sexual life of all sentient entities of the positive state, their sexuality is connected to the true source of real life — The Lord Jesus Christ and all His/Her spiritual principles. Because of this connectedness, their sexuality conducts and conveys to them only the right and genuine ideas about life and all matters of living and practicing their sexuality for the purpose it was established and shared by The Lord Jesus Christ.”

“Another major fundamental difference is that human sexuality is totally and completely externalized and physicalized. It has very little spiritual connotation and only very obscure mental connotation in the form of vague feelings of fulfillment and satisfaction. Because of this position of human sexuality, during sexual intercourse no true, all-inclusive sharing between the male and female can even occur. In fact, humans are locked in their own experiential mode, impossible to convey in any other manner but by external observation or vocal sounds which accompany such an intercourse.”

“However, the interpretation of these vocal sounds and external observation are very poor factors of sharing the internal experiences of this process because words and physical expression can be either faked or are unable to convey the true state and process of that experience.”

“So, humans can never know for sure what their sexual partner really experiences in the process of sexual intercourse. And not only that, but, very often, they are confused and unclear about their own personal or private experiences, ending frequently with feelings of emptiness, letdown and slight depression.”

“As a clinical psychologist, Peter, you know only too well how many human females are deprived of experiencing even their own orgasm. And what about human males who are frustrated with the possibility of impotence and premature ejaculation? And many other such problems plague humans, not allowing them to experience human sexuality even within its own tremendous limits. This is the result of externalization and physicalization of human sexuality.”

“The structure of human sexuality is closely related to its anatomical structure. Human sexual organs were purposefully placed in the most awkward and uncomfortable position, making it an art to maintain sexual intercourse for long without muscular cramps or physical soreness or some other uncomfortable physical symptoms which complicate the experience of true joy of sexual intercourse. One has to be very inventive in acquiring and establishing various novel sexual positions and manners of intercourse in order to fully utilize human potentials of one's sexuality.”

“In the human male, the ability to engage in sexual intercourse depends solely on achieving

and then maintaining a sufficiently long erection of his penis. Because of all kinds of prejudices, biases, superstitions and various other spiritual, mental and physical problems, this feat is not always possible. Too many external and internal factors can adversely influence this ability. Thus, one is dependent on too many other factors, which are seemingly beyond the control of any human male. And if and when the erection is achieved and properly maintained for a sufficient amount of time, how many human males are capable of achieving another erection immediately after their ejaculation?"

"The sexual cycle of the human male and human female is never properly aligned. Males reach orgasm more quickly than females. It is not easy for them to achieve a simultaneous orgasm of equal intensity during the process of sexual intercourse. Some human females are able to experience multiple orgasms, some none. How many human males are able to experience multiple orgasms? Not too many, if at all."

"The most frustrating factor of human sexuality is that even though it is the most intimate means available to humans for experiencing others, their mutual sexual experience never allows them to penetrate their sexual partner's thoughts, feelings, emotions, states and processes in the unique configuration of their partner's personality. Even with such intimate sharing, albeit primarily physical, they still remain an enigma to each other. No matter how often they engage in sexual intercourse, no matter how long they have known each other, there is always something important about them that remains hidden from each other."

"The reason for this situation with human sexuality is that it is disconnected from its proper spiritual and mental source. The lack of this crucial and vital connectedness is ever present in the process of, and after, sexual intercourse, even though most humans cannot put their fingers on what it is they are missing so sorely. No one, or very few humans, know that this disconnectedness is the major cause of all tragedies of human sexuality."

"By a peculiar anatomical structure and by a peculiarity of the spiritual, mental and physical alteration, human sexuality was made a tool of the negative state to keep humans in blindness and in an inability to experience an all-inclusive sharing with anyone. An all-inclusive sharing would allow them to discover the nature of the positive state, rooted in such sharing, and turn their back on the negative state. This is the reason why human sexuality was structured the way it is."

"Another gross limitation of the human body, related to its sexuality, is that the perceptive and sensory abilities of humans are extremely narrow in their scope and frequency. By their physical sensory organs, humans are able to perceive and sense an extremely limited range, being deprived of any perception of any frequencies which are beyond or above that range. And not only that, but their physical sensory organs do not reflect correctly the reality of that which is perceived by them."

"Thus, you have here two limiting factors: First, many rich experiences are eluded by humans because of their inability to perceive and to experience things outside the range and frequency available to them; second, that which is within their range and frequency of perception and experience does not reflect the true reality of the perceived phenomena. In other words, what they perceive as reality is not the true reality but it is either a distorted reality or a totally false one."

"For that reason, whatever is being experienced by humans during their sexual intercourse, as well as during anything else, is either distorted or false or is outside the range and frequency of their sensory perceptive abilities."

“A good example of this situation is that every sentient entity, as well as every living thing, including humans, animals, plants, etc., continuously emanate a very unique sphere, specific to their nature, in the form of waves, energies, colors, lights, smell or whatever. This sphere is a reflection and content of all categories, attributes, traits and patterns of the unique structure and dynamics of each individual and individualized life form.”

“None of the humans, or only very few, in an extremely limited manner, can perceive these spheres, incorrectly called by them auras. But those who are able to somewhat perceive these so-called auras are unable to deduce any particulars about the nature of their emanators except in very general and imprecise terms. As you see from this, human perceptual and sensory abilities are enormously limited and one-sided, giving them, in most instances, incorrect or false perceptions of reality and of each other.”

“Taking into consideration all these factors, what kind of sexual relationships, or any relationships for that matter, are humans able to achieve? Very limited, distorted, unfulfilled, unsatisfied and mostly empty and void of any true meaning. Having no other experiential comparison, but their own, humans, in fact, have no experience of true sexuality, or any other experience. Their relationships are totally off, unreal (you, Peter, would say, ‘they stink’).”

“On the other hand, the spiritual, mental, physical and anatomical structure of sexuality in the positive state is totally different as compared to human sexuality. Sexuality, in its true connotation, is experienced, conveyed and shared simultaneously and synchronously by spirit, soul and body in unity, harmony and oneness of their function. Internal, interior and exterior aspects of sexuality are impressed and expressed as one, unseparated experience.”

“The sexual organs of sentient entities of the positive state are structured and positioned in such a manner as to convey the fullness of the content and quality of uniqueness of each individual’s spirituality, mentality and physicality. Thus, true sexual intercourse is never limited to the external experience of a vagina having in it a penis and a penis being in a vagina.”

“And although sentient entities in the positive state have sexual organs in their physical components, corresponding to human sexual organs, their structure, function, purpose and integration within the entire sentient system is totally different. First of all, these organs are always in readiness to share under any conditions. Their function and potency is controlled totally by the sentient conscious mind (they do not have an unconscious mind!) Both males and females are equally able to experience multiple orgasms.”

“The process of sexual intercourse in the positive state can be conceptualized as follows:”

“Each sentient entity emanates a very unique visible sphere in which unique qualities of the spiritual, mental and physical nature of his/her personality are fully contained and reflected. This sphere is fully charged with sexual energy which conducts these unique qualities to anyone who is in proximity to that individual and opens oneself for sharing.”

“There are two different aspects, emanating from this sphere. One is the sexual aspect, open to and perceived by a person of the opposite sex only — male to female and female to male. The other one is a general aspect, open to and perceived by anyone. These two aspects have a different function, but they are both used for sharing of one’s unique characteristics on a different level of life.”

“The sexual aspect is the most unique one, being no duplication of the same structure and content. Within itself, it carries a very special trait, imparted into it by The Lord Jesus Christ

for the purpose of having a private, intimate and personal relation to Him/Her and to femininity and masculinity in general.”

“Prior to sexual intercourse, a perceptible signal is sent out to a prospective sexual partner. If that signal finds a favorable response, it returns to the sender, charged with a unique and unusually attractive and arousing scent and with an unusual spiritual, mental and physical disposition.”

“In the case of an unfavorable response, the signal returns to the sender, conveying a sense of gratitude and appreciation for giving one a choice to participate in a unique experience for which the recipient was not ready at the moment. Both males and females are equal in being on the sending or receiving end.”

“In the process of sexual intercourse, the unique sexual sphere, containing all unique characteristics of one’s masculinity or femininity, respectively, as well as all unique qualities of one’s personality from all its spiritual, mental and physical aspects, in an equalized and balanced manner, is sent out and engulfs the receiver. In turn, the receiver becomes simultaneously a sender and engulfs the sender, who becomes also a receiver, with his or her own unique sexual sphere.”

“In the process of this engulfment and total penetration, they merge into one another, and equally exchange the total content of their personalities, all their unique sexual characteristics, as well as their spiritual, mental and physical states. In the process of that exchange, several things happen:”

- “1. Each participant acquires a unique experience of how the other person is and functions. Remember, please, each person is infinitely and eternally different. No two same experiences are possible even with the same person, if you engage with him/her in sexual intercourse. There is always something new and different to experience.
2. One person is experiencing the other person within oneself and at the same time, within that person.
3. One person is experiencing oneself within the other person and at the same time, within oneself with an unusual intensity and clarity.
4. One person is experiencing how the other person is experiencing him or her within himself or herself. 5. The unique experience of each other in a state of merger (nothing like that has ever existed before).
6. The unusual experience of the unique presence of The Lord Jesus Christ within that person and within oneself and the exchange and merger of that experience.
7. A totally new and unique experience of an aspect of life which has never been in an experiential mode before.”

“In the process of this multiple unique experiential mode, when all aspects of that mode are exchanged and merged, the spiritual, mental and physical presence of The Lord Jesus Christ takes place, bringing in that mode a totally new, most delightful, most blissful and most unusual experience that is culminated in a tremendous spiritual, mental and physical orgasm.”

“In the process of that orgasm two important things happen:”

“1. A totally new, hitherto unknown aspect of The Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ, of the nature of the sender and of the nature of the receiver, and vice versa, is revealed and experienced (now you know why in the previous portion of The New Revelation sexuality was conceived as one of the most important tools for acquirement of greater, deeper and more profound knowledge, understanding and love of The Lord Jesus Christ, others and yourself).”

“2. A totally new, hitherto unavailable and inconceivable idea is born, which is immediately endowed by The Lord Jesus Christ with a new individual sentient life that becomes, in its own right, a new, unique, free and independent sentient entity.”

“Because this is a unique experience, in order to acquire an infinite variety of such unique experiences for the purpose of enrichment and enhancement of one’s life and for the purpose of joy, delight, pleasure and exchange, and acquirement of greater knowledge, understanding and love of The Lord Jesus Christ, others and oneself, such an experience can never be limited to one other person only.”

“However, this situation does not exclude, by one’s choice, being spiritually married to one person to eternity. But such spiritual marriage does not contain any notion of exclusivity, possessiveness, jealousy or other negative characteristics, seen so vividly in human marriages. The true spiritual marriage, for the sake of its own growth, progression and betterment, is not only supportive of such infinite varieties of sexual experiences with other individuals of the opposite sex, but requires them as an integral need for the sustenance of such marriage.”

“This is the statement about sexuality and spiritual marriages that many readers of this book, as well as previous books by this transmitter, have so much difficulty in accepting, to the point of its rejection and turning away from The New Revelation. And yet, in view of the above-stated facts, it is only logical to assume that this is the only possible case.”

“However, inherent and genetically ingrained in humans is a reluctance or aversion toward this conceptualization of sexuality, which makes it almost impossible for them to see this beautiful logic.”

“To repeat here again, everyone who is reading this chapter has a God-given right and privilege to accept or to reject what is being revealed here about this matter. No one is forced into believing anything. If one cannot see the logic of this situation and arrangement, one will not be able to be convinced by any other means.”

“But there are some other mysteries about sexuality that need to be revealed. They will be revealed in the following points:”

(1)

“If you take into consideration the fact that the major general role of sexuality is to conduct life from its genuine source to its various forms — thus, to convey all proper, correct and true ideas of life, then for eternal survival of all sentient entities, who are the most important carriers of life, the most crucial factor in this respect is to have a full, explicit and implicit understanding, comprehension and application of the nature of sexuality.”

“Being the conductor or transmitter of life into its carriers, sexuality reflects the structure of true life. In its original structure, sexuality has three major aspects that correspond to the

three major aspects of the sentient mind. Thus, sexuality consists of the most within spiritual aspect, intermediate or mental aspect and external or physical aspect.”

“These aspects of sexuality are discrete in relationship to each other and continuous within each other. In the totality of their structure, they function as one integrated factor.”

“The function of the most within spiritual aspect of sexuality is to continuously conduct proper spiritual ideas of life into its carriers. As you know, these ideas constitute aliveness of any carrier of life. One lives and is alive by having continuously supplied to him/her proper spiritual ideas of life. This is a central position of sexuality to the central position of the most within Spiritual Mind which uses sexuality as a means of emanation of the life-support system to all other aspects of any sentient mind.”

“The function of the intermediate or mental aspect of sexuality is to conduct a proper notion of transformation of all spiritual ideas of life into mental processes or mentation of any sentient mind. Thus, this aspect of sexuality provides a proper and correct atmosphere and foundation on which healthy, congruent to the spiritual state, mentality is formed and subsequently manifested in such processes as thinking, feeling, willing, as well as all other mental processes. The interior sentient mind uses sexuality as a means of emanating to all other aspects of any sentient mind the processes of its mentation. Without conducting these processes, the sentient mind would be disconnected from perception of its own mentation.”

“The function of the external or physical aspect of sexuality is to continuously conduct proper and correct ideas of forms for actions, behaviors, attitudes, motivation and the external appearance of any sentient mind. This aspect of sexuality gives the sentient mind a sense of becoming what one really is in one’s own outward, external manifestation and concrete experience of life through the mode of behavior, relatedness and ability to perceive and appreciate the natural aspects of life’s manifestation.”

“In the totality of these aspects, sexuality functions as a conductor of proper ideas of unifying principles of all levels, degrees and spheres of life and the sentient mind. This role of sexuality constitutes one of the greatest mysteries of its function.”

“From this role of sexuality, you can now see why it was the major target of genetic alteration by the pseudo-creators. Unless they were able to sidetrack sexuality from conducting proper ideas of life in all its three aspects, the pseudo-creators would never succeed in the activation of the negative state. You can say, for sure, that most of their experimentation in this respect evolved around the alteration of sexuality.”

“While fabricating humans and human life, the pseudo-creators first built a pseudo-inner mind to which they connected the most within spiritual aspect of sexuality. Second, after building the pseudo-interior mind, they connected to it the intermediate or mental aspect of sexuality. And third, the external or physical aspect of sexuality they connected to the pseudo-external mind which they built for that purpose.”

“In order to provide a life-support system into sexuality, the pseudocreators built from a special spiritual, mental and physical genetic material, a sideline, by which they connected sexuality to that infinitesimally small opening, existing from the most within Spiritual Mind, from the true interior mind and from the true external mind. This sideline was carefully structured in such a manner as to feed into sexuality only a limited amount of life energies, giving it life-support system, but nothing else. It cannot conduct any proper and correct ideas of spirituality, mentality or physicality and thus, of the true life.”

“Not having any direct connectedness to and experience of the true life at any of its levels, human life and human sexuality is void of any perception, understanding and conceptualization of what life and sexuality are all about. Instead, humans are continuously fed, through their sexuality, wrong, distorted and falsified ideas generated in the pseudo-inner mind, pseudo-interior mind and pseudo-external mind and subsequently conducted to all levels of their own life.”

“At the same time, through the means of wrongly connected sexuality, humans are continuously fed one special idea that tells them by all modes of perception, reception, impression and expression that their life and the way they conceive and practice their sexuality is a correct one and the only possible one, and that any other mode or way of living and practicing their life and sexuality is inconsistent with any life. To this idea, a feeling of guilt, shame and embarrassment is added, should anyone want, desire, wish or practice his/her life and sexuality in any other way, inconsistent with the mandated practice. By this devastating arrangement, the continuation of human life and its sexuality, exactly the way it is, is assured indefinitely.”

(2)

“From the above conceptualization of sexuality, another mystery about it can be deduced.”

“It is obvious that the function and role of sexuality is not limited to what humans call making love. Making love or being engaged in sexual intercourse is an expressive and impressive mode of sexuality on all its three levels.”

“In this respect, it is necessary to distinguish between two factors: 1. Sexuality as such; and 2. sexual intercourse. These two factors, although interconnected and interdependent, have distinctly different functions. In general, sexuality is a conductor of all aspects of life from its genuine source — The Lord Jesus Christ — to its various carriers.”

“The process of reception of life by any carrier of life by the means of its sexual conductor is experienced as a pleasurable event. Through it and by it one is directly connected to one’s Source — The Lord Jesus Christ. Through it and by it one establishes the most intimate, private and personal relationship with The Lord Jesus Christ. Through it and by it one lives and is alive.”

“These factors enable one to experience oneself as a unique, living, functioning, active and independent sentient entity. Such an experience constitutes the most delightful and pleasurable state one can achieve. It is the greatest thing of all to live and to be alive. Feelings of this nature stir within every sentient entity a state of orgasmic excitement, joy and happiness, experienced at all levels of his/her mind — spiritual, mental and physical.”

“Now, this is what sexuality is all about. This is how true sexuality is defined.”

“On the other hand, sexual intercourse is a process of sharing of all those delightful, joyous, exciting and happy feelings of life from the position of one’s unique masculine aspects for a male and feminine aspects for a female through which a male can experience how life is perceived, conceived, carried and experienced by a female and a female can experience how life is perceived, conceived, carried and experienced by a male.”

“The purpose of this kind of sexual intercourse is to achieve a unification and exchange of all masculine principles of life with all feminine principles of life and all feminine principles of life with all masculine principles of life. The result of such unification and exchange is the birth of

a totally new idea which is endowed by The Lord Jesus Christ with a unique sentient life. Thus, sexual intercourse can be conceived as a more specific aspect of sexual life through which and by which one shares what one has with all those who are of different structural characteristics from the standpoint of distinction of feminine and masculine principles, respectively.”

“In the conceptualization of human sexuality, this distinction is lost. Human sexuality was reduced to what human scientists call coitus of two humans for the purpose of physical and biological satisfaction and pleasure and for the purpose of procreation. No, or very little, other connotation of sexuality is available for humans. This was a necessary arrangement in order to illustrate, for the purpose of spiritual learning, what life is like without proper conceptualization, understanding and practice of true sexuality. In other words, the purpose of human sexuality, from the standpoint of multiversal spiritual learning, is to illustrate by living examples how sexuality should never be conceived, perceived and practiced. Or what kind of sexual life and mode of lovemaking one should never choose.”

(3)

“From the above definition of sexuality stems its greatest mystery of all. This mystery relates to The True New Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ.”

“If true sexuality is a conductor of all ideas of life, stemming from their source — The Lord Jesus Christ — then The Lord Jesus Christ in His/Her Absolute Essence and His/Her Absolute Substance is The Absolute Sexual Being. This is a necessary logical conclusion: If He/ She created and creates sentient entities for the purpose of sharing His/Her Absolute Life with as many as possible and if the conductor of that sharing is sexuality, then sexuality is an Absolute Integral Part of The Lord Jesus Christ’s Nature. It conducts the most essential and substantial elements of life — Divine Love and Divine Wisdom — or The Lord Jesus Christ.”

“In the relative condition, the condition of all sentient entities, sexuality is a conductor of love of one another and of wisdom of that love. It is a base and a foundation on which all relationships are built.”

“This is particularly true if you take in consideration the fact that the concept of sexuality is not limited to lovemaking but has a much broader connotation, as indicated in point two above.”

“Thus, all relationships between The Lord Jesus Christ and sentient entities, as well as all relationships among sentient entities, always have a sexual connotation in a general term of its understanding (and not only as a lovemaking process). Without sexual mediation and conduction of the various ideas of these relationships, no true relationships could ever be established.”

“But there is another aspect of this mystery related to The Lord Jesus Christ, human sexuality, the negative state and the process of salvation.”

“As you remember, one of the many important reasons why The Most High incarnated on planet Zero in the form and manifestation of Jesus Christ was to acquire a human body-flesh and its sexuality. Notice, please, that no one on your planet ever speaks of or considers the sexual life of Jesus Christ. And yet, an integral part of human nature and its form of manifestation — human body — is human sexuality.”

“It is impossible to produce a properly functional and usable human body without endowing it with that which makes its life possible, by conducting to it that life — human sexuality. Not

only that, but The Absolute necessity to integrate human sexuality into that body stems from the fact that human sexuality is a conductor of all ideas of evils, falsities, distortions, perversions and falsifications of the negative state for the purpose of illustrating all consequences, outcomes and results of the activated and dominant negative state. Human sexuality plays, in fact, the most important role in this illustration.”

“As you remember, one of the many purposes of The Lord Jesus Christ’s being on your planet was to experience directly, first hand, all atrocities and abominations of the negative state for the purpose of conquering it, subjugating it and putting it in order. Because human sexuality provides this experience in the most direct, pronounced and intense manner, and is the most vital conductor and mediator of its true nature, it was necessary to fully integrate human sexuality into the physical body of Jesus Christ.”

“Now, most Christians erroneously assumed that Jesus Christ, being the Son of God, could never have any sexual desires or sexual involvement with human females. For them to even think about such a possibility is the worst possible profanation of The Holiness of The Lord Jesus Christ (as they define the concept of holiness).”

“In their understanding, how could Jesus Christ have any sexual intercourse if He was single and had never been married? After all, according to them, positive sexual involvement can take place only within legal marital bonds. Any other type of sexual involvement would be a great sin. Jesus Christ had no sin — the only Being in Creation without sin. Therefore, according to Christian logic, Jesus Christ could never have sex.”

“This logic is particularly conclusive if you take into consideration some literal statements of Jesus Christ about marriages and sexuality. The most commonly quoted statement is recorded in The Gospel According to Matthew, Chapter 5, verse 28,”

“‘But I say to you that whoever looks at a woman to lust for her has already committed adultery with her in his heart.’”

“What all, or most, Christians assumed is that this statement is all inclusive and covers any sexual desire for a woman or a woman for a man, from any position and with any intent. Most literal interpreters of this statement assumed that the word ‘lust’ has only one connotation — any desire for sexual intercourse outside of marital bonds.”

“However, Jesus Christ did not specify in His words the issue of sexual intercourse other than lusting for someone else. First of all, to lust does not mean only a desire to have sexual intercourse. It means many other things. Because Jesus Christ used the words ‘lust for woman,’ everyone automatically assumed that He meant sexual lust. Secondly, to have sexual lust for someone does not necessarily mean that all and any desires to have sexual intercourse with someone else but your marital partner are always of a lustful nature.”

“As you noticed, Jesus Christ put emphasis on words ‘to lust’ in order to carefully distinguish between a lustful desire and a normal and natural desire. To lust for a woman or to lust for a man by a woman, in the literal sense, means to desire her or him solely for selfish, hurtful and harmful reasons and with a wrong, self-loving intent. Anything that is not for **mutual** benefit, common good, sharing and mutual delight, pleasure and joy, is lustful and therefore, evil or adulterous. This is what Jesus Christ meant in the literal sense of that text.”

“But, of course, as you know, Jesus Christ never spoke literally but spiritually and correspondentially. Thus, in this connotation, He did not speak about physical human sexual relationships at all, but about spiritual matters as conceived by the role of sexuality, serving

as a conductor of any wrong ideas, attitudes and behaviors, stemming from the negative state, instead of using that conductor for mediating and conducting the proper, correct and right ideas of the positive state. Whoever looks upon the negative state in any of its manifestations, and not only in a sexual one, in order to appropriate to oneself its nature, commits adultery. To look upon the negative state, here represented by the term 'woman,' with such an intent is lustful and therefore, adulterous. The reason why Jesus Christ used the word 'woman' in this designation was for emphasis of the principle of separation on which the negative state is built. It is the nature of the negative state to be in separation from the positive state. Woman is separated from man."

"The act of separation was an evil act which activated and put into dominance the negative state. Therefore, in this connotation, 'woman' does not signify a female or feminine principles in general, but, an act of separation for the purpose of activating the negative state. For that reason, the term 'woman' in this case, means the entire negative state which is totally separated and isolated from the positive state. The positive state is designated here by the word 'man.' 'Man,' in this connotation, does not mean male or masculine principles in general, but the principle of unification and oneness of all aspects of spiritual ideas and femininity and masculinity which are the nature of the positive state."

"Thus, whoever from the positive state — 'man' — looks with lust upon the negative state — 'woman' — to have it for himself/herself, commits adultery in one's heart because he/she wants to enter the state of separation and isolation, betraying the unity, oneness and harmony of the nature of the positive state."

"Of course, no one in the positive state has such an inclination. But they do have that idea of freedom of choice to reject the true source of life. In this sense, what Jesus Christ is saying to them is not to look at that idea with an intent of its acceptance into their personal lives. Of course, this connotation of the quoted verse in Matthew eluded the majority, if not all, of Christians. Because they equate any sexual desire to the word 'lust,' Jesus Christ, in their conceptualization, could never have any sexual desire in human, or any other, terms. And yet, the great mystery of this fact is that Jesus Christ could not have accomplished the act of salvation of anyone without having **human type** of experiences also in the area of human sexuality."

"As you remember from previous statements, in order to eliminate the negative state, one needs to have full firsthand experience and knowledge of its nature. No other way of salvation and elimination is possible. Because human sexuality, at all its three levels, was and is the major conductor and mediator of all evils, falsities and distortions of the negative state, thus, of the negative state itself, the only way Jesus Christ could come in direct contact with the full nature of the negative state was through direct experience and practice of human sexuality."

"Let it be known now for the first time, that salvation of humankind, and anyone else, could have never been accomplished if Jesus Christ, during His life on your planet, were to avoid direct sexual experiences with human females. On this vital experience the salvation of all everywhere in being and existence, on your planet and in the entire Zone of Displacement, as well as eventual total elimination of the negative state, completely depends."

"This statement contains the greatest mystery of all. Among many readers of these words, this statement may cause a furor. How can anyone come to such a devastating, wicked and sinful conclusion? Many will think and believe that, finally, Dr. Peter D. Francuch lost his mind completely and became insane."

“But, before drawing such foolish conclusions, consider this logic:”

“In order to eliminate the negative state in its totality (and elimination is elimination only if it is total), one needs to experience all aspects of the negative state. To experience one of its aspects but to avoid experiencing any of its other aspects, would make it impossible to eliminate it in any of its aspects. Even if you were to disagree with the above conceptualization of sexuality, as the only conductor and mediator of life, in this case of the human life, you would have to agree that human sexuality plays a significant role in human life and all human problems. If you want to save humans from their problems, you cannot exclude from your experiential mode such a significant aspect of human life.”

“How much more important is it to experience human sexuality, if you agree with the above definition of sexuality in general!”

“So, because of these facts, it was extremely vital for Jesus Christ, during His life on your planet, to have sexual intercourse with human females in order to fully experience the total nature of the negative state for the ultimate purpose of salvation and eventual elimination of the negative state.”

“In the process of that experience, Jesus Christ, by means incomprehensible to any human understanding, little by little, step by little step, gradually repudiated from His body all evil, false, lustful, distorted, nasty and negative connotations of human sexuality, disconnecting it from its wrong source and reconnecting it to its original, rightful source — to The Most High God (as God was called at that time).”

“By this crucial and mysterious act, The Lord Jesus Christ paved a way for all humans, and all creatures of the negative state, to be saved from the bondage and slavery to the negative, giving them means, through Him/Her, to disconnect their sexuality from the negative state and to reconnect it to Him/Her (where it belongs!)”

“In this manner, their sexuality will be able to resume its proper role of conducting all right and true ideas of the true life of the positive state to all those in the negative state and human life who accept what is being revealed here.”

“Thus, human sexuality has now a chance to be saved from its negative connotation.”

“Another objection by most, if not all, Christians about this issue, can be expected from the standpoint of their consideration and understanding of the concept of virginity. As you know, virginity in the literal sense of The Holy Bible is equated with the holiness. According to them and the literal sense, virginity is a preferable way of life, preferable to marital and sexual life. Such statements, for example, as ‘these are the ones who were not defiled with women, for they are virgins’ (Revelation 14:4) are interpreted literally. For them, they indicate that sexuality can have only a negative connotation even within the marital bonds. It is only tolerated for the sake of procreation - the only positive connotation of its nature. Because of this and similar statements, Christians conceptualized Jesus Christ as being a virgin. Therefore, how is it possible that He was sexually involved with human females if He is a virgin?”

“As you remember from the above explanation of the term ‘woman’ and ‘man,’ in the spiritual sense, those terms do not contain anything related literally to the gender. Instead, ‘woman’ relates to the negative state and ‘man’ to the positive state. This is particularly obvious from the above-quoted verse in Revelation of Jesus Christ through John (14:4). If this were not the case, one would have to conclude that it is very difficult, if not impossible, for women to enter

the positive state and only men, or some specially chosen men, who have never gotten involved sexually with women, can achieve the highest spiritual level and be next in line of spiritual powers to The Lord Jesus Christ who is the ultimate Virgin.”

“This is a foolish consideration. The term ‘virgin’ spiritually has no relevance whatsoever to literal sexuality as conceived by most humans. Instead, it denotes being free from the influence of the negative state’s evils and falsities and not allowing the negative state to become a ruling force of one’s life and to defile it, making one its slave.”

“It also means that people like that keep their sexuality connected to the proper source — the positive state of The Lord Jesus Christ — refusing to yield to the continuous temptations of the negative state to take hold of their sexuality and disconnect it from its true source and connect it instead to the wrong source — the negative state.”

“Let it be known now that no other connotation of the word ‘virgin’ or ‘virginity’ has ever existed, exists or will ever exist. Thus, the designation of Jesus Christ as a virgin points out the fact that He had never accepted the negative state into His life and that He had never yielded to any dire temptations by the negative state to which He was subjected during His life on planet Zero on a continuous, twenty-four hour basis.”

(4)

“One of the mysteries of acquiring the human physical body-flesh, and taking it with Him/Her after departure from your planet, was to infuse and integrate not only that body-flesh into the totality of The Most High’s Nature, but also human sexuality. Without integration of human sexuality into The Nature of The Most High, The Most High could never become the totality of The Lord Jesus Christ. The major elements of the Zone of Displacement and planet Zero, utilized in the formation of the physical body for Jesus Christ, were conducted and mediated by the means of human sexuality. Thus, the only way to have something of the Zone of Displacement and planet Zero within this Absolute Nature was through inclusion in it, human sexuality, which mediated these crucial elements.”

“The Most High became The Lord Jesus Christ by virtue of the fact that He/She admitted into Himself/Herself the complete content and meaning of human sexuality, after it was purified from all misconceptions, distortions, perversions, falsifications and whatever it had from the negative state; and after the process of its **Divinization**.”

“By this crucial act, The Lord Jesus Christ became not only the fullness of all elements of being and existence and elements of the Zone of Displacement and planet Zero, but also the fullness of sexuality from all aspects of its manifestation, including of the Zone of Displacement and planet Zero.”

“The mystery of this inclusion lies in the fact that, before that, something was lacking in The Absolute Nature of The Most High and was there only potentially by the act of promise to all, before Creation was created, to rectify this situation and become the totality of all and everything.”

“As was pointed out several times before, at that time, The Most High lacked any elements of the most extreme level of the most external degree, from which level the negative state was conceived and activated. You have to understand again and this is being reminded to all of you (do not complain about redundancy of this book — the human mind has an extraordinary ability to forget things or misunderstand them) — that, if The Most High were directly present also in that level, the negative state could have never been activated to eternity. In that case, Creation would be miserably plagued by the uncertainty of having no answer to the

existential question about life other than the positive state. It also would have no choice in any matters. In that case, life would have no meaning for sentient entities, ending in the existential suicide of all.”

“No one could activate the negative state in the direct presence of The Most High. For that reason, the most external degree of Creation, from its own energies, developed its own most external level, which lacked the direct presence of The Most High. At that level, as you know, the negative state was activated.”

“From that condition, from the most external level of the most external degree, a different form of life developed, having nothing in common with the life of the positive state. Once it was established, this form of life separated and isolated itself from the true life, populated the Zone of Displacement, and began manifesting its nature. This life was the dead life of the negative state and human life. Because the conductor and mediator of any life is its sexuality, a different type of sexuality was developed, conducive to that type of life.”

“Now, of this life, nothing at all existed within The Most High at that time. But, how do you go about eliminating that kind of pseudo-life once it fully and completely and to the satisfaction of all answers that existential question? To leave it to be and to exist forever? If that were the case, the positive state would never have an opportunity for its full development and implementation because, as you remember from the previous chapter of this book, a tremendous amount of life energy would be continuously wasted on keeping the negative state in check so that it does not run over the positive state; and for the repudiation of the negative ideas about the need to reject The Lord Jesus Christ as the only source of life.”

“To destroy it without a trace, once it fulfills its purpose? This is an utter impossibility because all humans and creatures of the negative state everywhere carry within them the potentiality for salvation through their ability to choose and to change. To be redundant again, in that ability of everyone is the presence of The Lord Jesus Christ. If you destroy them, you destroy something that belongs to The Lord Jesus Christ. You destroy an important spiritual attribute. By doing that, you are destroying the only source of life — The Lord Jesus Christ. By destroying The Lord Jesus Christ, you destroy the entire Creation and all its inhabitants.”

“Such an act would be inconsistent with The True Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ. Being of Absolute Love and Wisdom, that Nature can devise only a plan of salvation.”

“Salvation is possible only because The Creator of Creation engages Himself/Herself directly in experiencing firsthand something that has never been a part of His/Her Absolute Nature. He/She enters that region, in which that pseudo-life thrives, acquires all its experiences, transforms all its elements within Himself/Herself, and fuses them into His/Her Nature, clothes Himself/Herself with the most external level of the most external degree of Creation — the Zone of Displacement and planet Zero. Through and by those elements, now He/She has a direct access to all levels of that pseudo-life and can begin the process of salvation and transformation of all participants in it.”

“This is how the process of salvation is accomplished. No other way exists. And because, by the definition of its very nature, sexuality is the primary mediator and conductor of this process, it is human sexuality which is infused into The Lord Jesus Christ’s Nature in order to mediate and conduct the ideas of salvation to all in the negative state.”

“This is the reason why, without inclusion of human sexuality into His/Her Nature, The Most High could never become The Lord Jesus Christ. By definition, ***The Lord Jesus Christ is Someone who does not lack anything at all within His/Her Nature (as The Most High***

did), even the full, firsthand experience of the nature of the negative state.”

“This is also one of the major reasons why it is no longer appropriate to use the term ‘Most High.’ The term ‘Most High’ reflects the lack of that direct experience and of inclusion of all elements of the other, non-positive state’s life. After The Most High became The Lord Jesus Christ, if you continue to evoke the name of The Most High, you evoke that lack. Therefore, you evoke something that does not exist.”

“As you see, everything has its logical reasons. Also, you can see now why it was emphasized so much in the previous books of The New Revelation that what was proper and correct yesterday might not be so today, and what is proper and correct today might not be so tomorrow. Therefore, the advice was, at that time, to keep your mind and heart open and always in readiness to change. This is exactly why!”

“At the time of those writings, it was not always clear why there should be such an emphasis on this issue. Now you know why! Unfortunately, some of you conveniently forgot about those statements and warnings and continue in hesitating whether to accept the current portion of The New Revelation and The New Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ or reject it, clinging to that which was correct at that time but which now needs to be updated and in some instances, completely changed or replaced. Please, do remember that you were being prepared, by that warning, that things will change and that they will be different from what you knew and experienced at that time. Do not allow the negative state to lull you into the comfort of previous knowledge and practice of your everyday life and living. Of course, as always, the choice is yours; so are the consequences.”

(5)

“As you know, (to be repetitious again), as a result of the revolutionary change in The Nature of The Most High, The Most High becoming the fullness and totality of The Lord Jesus Christ, tremendous changes have been occurring in the entire structure and fabric of Creation and its multiverse and in all its inhabitants.”

“From this situation it is only logical to conclude that the sexuality of the entire Creation is also subject to these profound changes. In actuality, sexuality is the very conductor and mediator of all ideas of these changes. This is how every sentient entity is conveyed to, experientially, the ideas of those changes.”

“One of the most striking and mysterious changes in the area of sexuality is the inclusion of human sexuality in The Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ. This inclusion conveys to all the content and the nature of sexuality that had not been experienced up to that point.”

“As you remember, human life and thus, human sexuality, is an embodiment or epitome of an extreme externalization and physicalization. This aspect of sexuality was lacking within The Nature of The Most High. Therefore, it could have never become a conductor and mediator to the rest of Creation of that type of sexuality. Only that could be conveyed, conducted and mediated which was available within The Nature of The Most High at that time.”

“For that reason, sentient entities in Creation, with the exception of humans, lacked an important final factor of impression and expression in their sexuality. (On the other hand, humans have no other factors of sexuality available to them but only this extreme externalization and physicalization in its practice and interpretation.) No direct experience of the most external and the most intense physical expression and impression of sexuality was available to them for the simple reason that no idea of such experience was able to be conducted to them from The Absolute Source of their life — from The Most High. At that time,

The Most High lacked any direct inclusion of human sexuality in His/Her Nature.”

“But now this situation has been fully rectified. After successful completion of the fusion and inclusion of human sexuality, preceded by its total purification and cleansing from all evil and false ideas and content, a new idea, related to the most external and physical aspect of sexual expression and impression, began to be conducted to all in Creation in this respect.”

“The inclusion of this idea into the totality of the sexual experience of all in Creation completed the formation of sexuality into one cohesive whole which no longer lacks its most external and physical aspects. The most external aspects of sexuality can be conceived as a sum of all spiritual, mental and physical sexual experiences that can convey the totality of the unique nature of every individual’s personality and unique structure of his/her mind.”

“Nothing like this has ever existed before this time. Only in the positive state has the new sexuality been formatted to be on its way of becoming what it was supposed to become and what it was supposed to mean and to convey.”

“By this act and by a constant flow of this new idea of sexuality, acquired by The Lord Jesus Christ from human sexuality, sexuality of all sentient entities in Creation was enriched and enhanced to such proportions that they could not have even dreamt about it.”

“One aspect of this change is an acquirement of external, physical closeness with and to The Lord Jesus Christ, and to everyone else, in the most private, intimate, personal and direct manner and way.”

“This is how The Lord Jesus Christ transformed human sexuality within Himself/Herself from being most abnormal, unnatural, limited, limiting, pathological, perverted and negative into a summarizing external container into which all other sexual impressions, expressions and experiences culminate to give all the most complete sense of wholeness, totality and oneness with one’s Creator.”

“The transformation of human sexuality within The Lord Jesus Christ became also a foundation on which a direct relationship between humans and The Lord Jesus Christ, as well as with the rest of Creation, can be built and established in the most meaningful and concrete manner and way.”

“Without this act of The Lord Jesus Christ, none of the humans could have been saved from the typical human life. Also humans would never be able to establish any connectedness to the rest of Creation. Thus, they would be condemned to stay for the rest of their eternity in separation and isolation from all others in Creation, as they are right now.”

“However, by volunteering to take upon Himself/Herself the human nature and, most importantly, human sexuality, The Lord Jesus Christ averted from humans this horrible fate and destiny. This act constitutes another great mystery of sexuality in general and human sexuality in particular.”

(6)

“The assumption by The Lord Jesus Christ of human sexuality and by enhancement of sexuality in the rest of Creation by the new role that human sexuality in the positive state will play, a flow of positive and non-distorted ideas to the ultimate, most extreme external level of the most external degree of Creation is assured to eternity. Through and by this mysterious act, The Lord Jesus Christ accomplished that which has never been before.”

“The Lord Jesus Christ, through His/Her physical body-flesh and human sexuality, positioned Himself/Herself directly, personally and permanently to eternity in this ultimate most extreme level of the most external degree of Creation, where the negative state originated.”

“The result of this mysterious positioning and the consequences of the direct presence of The Lord Jesus Christ in that degree, as well as assurance of the continuous flow of all positive ideas into that degree, accomplishes one of the most important establishments and creates a totally new state and condition. ***No longer will there be any place, position, state, condition or process, or time or paratime, anywhere and anywhen in Creation, where the negative state could ever reoccur, after it is eliminated and becomes abolished forever.***”

“Now, without this act of The Lord Jesus Christ, a threat of reoccurrence of the negative state’s dead life would hang over the entire Creation as Damocles’ Sword. The existence of such a threat would give no rest to sentient entities. Again, a tremendous amount of life energy and effort would be wasted on a continuous warding off that threat.”

“But, thanks to the inclusion of human sexuality into The Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ, The Lord Jesus Christ can be eternally present also in that area and from all His/Her elements, and by and through the means of that sexuality, He/She will be able to continuously conduct, mediate and convey all proper ideas of life into that degree, assuring that nothing is lacking in that degree which would give another impetus for the origination of the negative state.”

“To repeat again (not for the sake of being redundant), the negative state cannot be originated or activated or conceived in the direct presence of The Lord Jesus Christ. Now the flow of spirituality to its ultimate end in the most extreme level of the most external degree of Creation is assured to eternity. This is a great preventative act against any future possibility of the negative state coming into its dead life again.”

“This is one of the great mysteries of the saving act of The Lord Jesus Christ.”

“As you see, the saving act of The Lord Jesus Christ has many aspects, far more than humans can conceptualize or understand by their limited minds.”

(7)

“The lack of presence of The Most High at that time in the most extreme, ultimate level of the most external degree of Creation, having no flow of proper spiritual ideas through the sexual conductor, having no feedback to the rest of Creation of any activities in that degree, was conveniently utilized by the pseudo-creators. Not only did they originate and put the negative state in an active and dominant position in that degree, but, most importantly, they succeeded in cutting off the most ultimate extreme level of that degree from the rest of Creation and transposing it into the Zone of Displacement. Within and from that level, they fabricated various levels of the Hells and other regions of the Zone of Displacement. They utilized the elements of that level in fabricating various life forms that would enable independent survival of the external factors without any connectedness to the spiritual internal source.”

“This level, its nature and its specific laws, were utilized in the development of human sexuality, characterized by extreme externalization, limitation and ‘physicalization’ without any, or very little, spiritual content. Thus, something important (which used to be its integral part) was cut off from Creation and used for totally wrong purposes.”

“By this daring negative act, the pseudo-creators succeeded in developing and establishing a totally different lifestyle, which parallels the life of the positive state, opposing all its laws, principles and establishments.”

“If you disconnect something from its genuine source, and use it for the purposes for which it was not created, a very peculiar, convoluted, feeble, sick, unnatural and abnormal condition will come into its being and existence which will be a total distortion and caricature of its original. Yet, it is a distortion and a caricature of the true original. Distortions and caricatures cannot exist or even be conceived without their original.”

“Because the original is structured in such a way as to conduct all life’s ideas by the means of sexuality, it is sexuality of the negative state and human sexuality that are most distorted and caricaturized. But, as you know, one can recognize some features of the original in any of its distortions and caricatures. After all, they were built and developed from the stolen level of the true Creation — The Original. Thus, human sexuality and sexuality of the negative state in general reflect the convoluted, perverted and falsified principles of the true sexuality. Without it, the lifestyle of the negative state would be impossible, as life of the positive state without its positive and proper sexuality would be impossible.”

“As mentioned before, you have to conceptualize any sexuality as an electric wire that conducts electricity. Without that wire, no possibility of proper utilization, discernment and experience of that electricity is possible. Electricity, in this connotation, can be compared to life and sexuality to the wire that conducts, mediates and conveys that life. They are inseparable and one without another cannot exist.”

“Thus, sexuality is the most crucial component of any life. It can never be destroyed, no matter in what form and condition it appears. It can only be modified, transformed, restructured and connected to some other source, but it can never be disconnected from life itself. In the case of their disconnectedness, both would cease to exist.”

“This is the reason why The Lord Jesus Christ, instead of destroying human sexuality within Himself/Herself, transformed it and connected it to the true source of His/Her life.”

“Regardless of how much human sexuality was transformed and changed, it remains human sexuality, and its major quality of externalization and physicalization is permanently retained in its positive potentials — as a conductor of proper spiritual ideas into the most extreme level of the most external degree of Creation; and at the same time, as a feedback of actualization, realization, manifestation and exemplification of the ideas at that level for the purpose of giving an impetus to other levels of Creation for initiation of a new creative idea of life.”

“At the same time, through the human aspects of His/Her sexuality, The Lord Jesus Christ will be able, when the time is right, to return the stolen and cut off that most ultimate extreme external level of the most external degree of Creation, and after purification, cleansing and fumigation, reconnect it to and reunite it with its rightful internal, the most within and interior whole — the rest of Creation.”

“Once this happens, no place will exist for the negative state to flourish and to thrive.”

(8)

“From the above conceptualization of sexuality in general, it is obvious that sexuality is not something that was separately created at one point in time and space and subsequently endowed into the sentient entities. In actuality, with The Lord Jesus Christ, sexuality is as eternal and as absolute as The Lord Jesus Christ Himself/Herself. It is an integral component

of function of all Absolute Categories and Principles of His/Her Absolute Life and His/Her Absolute Mind at all their levels and in all their aspects. Thus, sexuality is inseparable from The Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ. Being that Creation reflects His/Her Absolute Nature in a relative condition, Creation is the result of this Divine Sexual Act and therefore, is endowed with sexuality to reflect The Absolute Creative Principle.”

“The Lord Jesus Christ created His/Her Creation from and by Himself/ Herself and not from nothing or by someone or something else. Thus, He/She could not have endowed His/Her Creation with sexuality if no such state were to be an integral component of His/Her Absolute Nature. If Creation is from and by The Lord Jesus Christ, how can He/She give to His/Her Creation something that He/She does not have? It would make absolutely no sense.”

“As of recently, this became true also about human sexuality, which became, in a purified and transformed condition and form, an integral component of The Lord Jesus Christ’s Absolute Nature.”

“For this reason, as of now, as of this very moment, whoever is reading these very words and yet separates sexuality in general and human sexuality in particular from The Lord Jesus Christ, or who denies the fact that sexuality is an integral part of His/Her Absolute Nature, and that human sexuality was fused into His/Her Nature for eternity, such an individual commits the most abominable spiritual adultery. From this moment on, after reading this and having this new knowledge, to deny this fact means to deny that The Lord Jesus Christ exists.”

“No other conceptualization of sexuality in general will be acceptable.”

“As far as human sexuality is concerned and the way it is conceived and practiced on planet Zero by humans, in opportune time it will be freed from all its limitations, evilness, falsifications, distortions and perversions and it will be subsequently fully utilized for positive purposes in the manner described above.”

“However, the manner in which human sexuality is practiced right now will eventually be abolished and replaced with a freer and more appropriate practice conducive to the nature of positive sexuality, as it is conceived and practiced in the rest of Creation.”

“In view of this fact, the human readers of these words, those who still live on planet Zero, are advised very strongly and urgently to dissociate themselves, as much as possible, from the traditional conceptualization of human sexuality, as reflected in dictates, mandates and laws of their social, religious and legal system (if not in a concrete practical sense — which is not always possible — then, in the internal, spiritual sense or by agreeing and identifying themselves with the ideas of sexuality as revealed in The New Revelation and particularly in this Chapter). It will prepare them for accepting the true, new connotation and practice of human sexuality, as is established by The Lord Jesus Christ in His/Her own transformed human sexuality.”

“By clinging to the typical traditional conceptualization of human sexuality, humans, after their arrival to the spiritual world, make it very difficult for The Lord Jesus Christ to impart to them the new, transformed human sexuality and sexuality in general.”

“The importance of this act is very obvious from what was said about it above because on acceptance of this fact depends the proper reception, incorporation and practice of life congruent with The New Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ. Such life will constitute one’s true Heaven. This is what Heaven is all about. On the other hand, rejection of this fact means

being deprived or depriving oneself of this Heaven and, instead, accepting into oneself Hell.”

(9)

“In conclusion of this Chapter, let everyone be aware of the fact that the true spiritual principles and their proper application in everyday life and living are impossible to be fully comprehended, apprehended and implemented within any sentient mind, including the human mind, unless the above conceptualization of sexuality in general and human sexuality in particular is accepted and considered to be an integral part or component of any spiritual principle. After all, sexuality is the conductor and mediator of those principles. How can you comprehend, apprehend and practice something if you reject that which conducts, mediates and conveys it?”

“One of the most important reasons why the negative state became a fact of life and why human life is so miserably limiting and limited is that humans and the negative state rejected sexuality from its proper place and refused to perceive it as a divine conductor, mediator and conveyor of all life and its true spiritual principles.”

“Separation of sexuality from the true spirituality and thus, from The Lord Jesus Christ, gave a full impetus for initiation of the negative state and for establishment of a typical human life with all its adversities.”

“So, in order to return to the positive state, the very first step that needs to be taken is to look upon the issue of sexuality in general and human sexuality in particular in the light of this New Revelation, and see it as integral part of spiritual principles, inseparable from The Absolute Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ.”

“After reading these words, some human readers who are still living on planet Zero will be asking you, Peter, how they should practice their human sexuality. As you know, as long as you are in the human body and on planet Zero, you are bound by human laws and demands. They are genetically ingrained in your body, in your human mentality and in your human sexuality.”

“However, there is a limited way out of this predicament, at least to a certain degree.”

“What you have to do is to defy the demands of the negative state by turning everything available to you within the human life into a different purpose than for what it was intended for you.”

“This is true about all aspects of human life and not only about human sexuality. You place all these factors into the services of the positive state. This is done by changing your attitude about human life and human sexuality.”

“You are hereby advised to enjoy as much as possible, under your limited and limiting conditions, everything available to you, including, and especially, your sexuality. By enjoying it and using it for positive purposes, such as, for example, for giving, receiving and sharing it with delight, pleasure, joy, happiness and for mutual benefit, common good and use of all who want to reciprocate and participate in this kind of life, and doing it for the sake of principles, because it is the right thing to do, with positive and good intent, you are defying the negative state’s conceptualization of life and human sexuality.”

“You have to remember that, after all, even if human sexuality is extremely limited and limiting, nevertheless, it is still the only tool available for humans by and through which they can come into the closest possible proximity to one another and to experience one another in

the most intimate, private and personal manner, and to accomplish some limited degree of exchange of who they are and what they are.”

“Even in the limited and limiting human sexual intercourse, there is that physical experience of closeness, a certain, very limited, merger of one into another during sexual intercourse, when the male’s penis enters the female’s vagina and the female vagina receives into itself the male’s penis.”

“This exchange, if done from a proper perspective, as revealed in The New Revelation, can become a source of delight, pleasure, joy, happiness and of higher knowledge of The Lord Jesus Christ, others and oneself and of a sudden inspiration, new insight and greater degree of productivity and creativity. Such potentials do exist, even with limited and limiting human sexual experiences.”

“Why do you think the negative state, by means of religious, legal, social and moral laws, mandates and imposes, in the name of God, so many restrictions and taboos on human sexual expressions, impressions and practices? Or why does the negative state ingrain into human genes so much guilt, shame, embarrassment and other adverse and negative feelings and emotions about human sexuality and about various sexual involvements? Or why does the negative state fabricate so many venereal diseases and acquired immune deficiency syndrome (AIDS) and various other spiritual, mental, physical and sexual problems and perversions related to human sexuality?”

“For only one reason: To keep humans away, at all costs and by all means, from engaging in a variety of sexual experiences with the right intent and for the right purpose so that they do not discover or learn more about the true nature of life, themselves, others and most importantly, about The Lord Jesus Christ, especially now in His/Her New Nature.”

“This aspect of sexuality, the way it is stated here, is the most difficult to accept for humans who, in the name of God, were brought up with and taught everything opposite to what is being conveyed here. It will be the most difficult aspect of The New Revelation for humans to accept even now. Prepare yourself for much rejection and condemnation.”

“However, bear in mind that this advice about human sexuality and sexual intercourse is valid only under one condition: Any couple who plans to engage in sexual intercourse, within or without marriage, is advised to carefully explore their intention, motivation and reason for which they approach their sexual intercourse.”

“Moreover, both female and male, who approach one another for the purpose of what humans call lovemaking are advised to be of the same spiritual orientation and understanding regarding the issue of sexuality, as revealed here or, at least, approach it for no other reason but for an open sharing, joy, delight and pleasure of one another’s company without any other underlying strings attached (such as, for example, manipulation, possessiveness, hurt, harm, offense, evil selfish intent, use, abuse or misuse and any other negative reasons).”

“Can you imagine yourself getting sexually involved with any person who lacks any proper spiritual attributes and proper understanding of sexuality, as revealed here and as known to and accepted by you? Although such an involvement on your part has no negative or sinful connotation (if you want to use the word ‘sinful’), you are setting yourself up for a trap by the negative state. The negative state may use your sexual partner to gradually enslave you, to dominate you, to use you, to manipulate you, to possess you, to be jealous of you and your spirituality and/or to be dependent on you or make you dependent on your sexual partner (for

whatever reasons). With this kind of involvement, you may end up in worse condition than you were prior to that involvement.”

“Thus, one needs to be extremely careful, especially now, when the negative state has shifted its battle fully to your level, and to avoid, at all costs, such involvements for your own sake and for the sake of the positive state. In some ways, it is spiritually more profitable to masturbate, if there are no other means of sexual involvements with the spiritually right sexual partners, than to get involved in such adverse sexual relationships.”

“However, with those who are of the same spiritual trend, direction and orientation, these involvements should be encouraged, provided that you can keep in check your inherent guilt and self-punishment as a result of that guilt. Otherwise, you end up in the same negative state’s predicament and trap. After all, guilt is a production of the negative state and one of the most dangerous emotions.”

“If you cannot find or meet anyone of this proper spiritual nature and disposition, or if you fail to keep in check and not to succumb to your guilt, it is better for you to wait until you are recalled from planet Zero and return home where you will be able to assume the practice of right sexuality with the individuals of the opposite gender.”

“Moreover, everyone of you is advised to go inward and ask The Lord Jesus Christ for advice in each particular case, whenever there is a prospective possibility to get sexually involved with someone, whether such an involvement would be proper and spiritually profitable for all and whether it would be in accordance with the will of The Lord Jesus Christ. That way, you will be able to avoid any danger of falling into a trap set up for you by the negative state by the means of sexuality.”

“This is the advice of The Lord Jesus Christ for this time and for the spiritual conditions that exist on planet Zero right now. Should any changes take place in this respect, you will be notified in a timely manner. But, for some time to come, this advice will remain valid indefinitely.”

“He/she who has ears to hear and to listen, let him/her hear and listen **very carefully** to what is being revealed by The Lord Jesus Christ about sexuality in this Chapter.”

“Blessed are those who keep their minds and hearts open and who are willing to change and to relinquish from their minds and hearts any false ideas about these and any other matters of life.”

CHAPTER TWENTY ONE

THE MYSTERY OF CREATION AND THE ZONE OF DISPLACEMENT

On May 5, 1988, at 4:35 in the morning, again, the word of The Lord Jesus Christ came to me, saying,

“What follows will be difficult to understand.”

“In the books of The New Revelation much was revealed about the origin, process and purpose of Creation, as well as the Zone of Displacement.”

“It is necessary to emphasize the fact that no matter how much and to what extent it has been revealed in this respect, the reality of Creation, the mystery of its being and existence, and everything that has been and will be taking place in it, and in the Zone of Displacement, far surpasses anything that has been conveyed about it and will always far surpass anything that can be said about it in terms, concepts, ideas and language available to humans.”

“Thus, do not expect any exhaustive and full knowledge about this issue. Some important concepts about this mystery can never be revealed as long as you live in human life and its body on planet Zero.”

“As you know, many humans have been trying to resolve the mystery of human life and life in general and how and why the universe exists; the way it exists; how all this happened and what the outcome of the universe will be; and many other such questions about this matter. They would like to know what it was like before Creation was created; what the motivation and intent of creating Creation was; what The Creator was doing before time and space became, etc.”

“No one has any certain, sure and available answers to any of these questions. Some humans take it for granted that Creation exists and they do not bother with raising any of these questions. Others come up with numerous theories and hypotheses that have very little, if any, true reflection of how and why Creation happened.”

“Most interpreters of this nature are limited to the creation of the physical universe, not knowing anything about the multiverse. Since only the physical or natural universe is visible and experientially available to them, some conclude that no other but the physical reality of Creation exists. This reality is the only thing that is tangible, perceptible and explainable. Anything beyond or above this factor cannot have any tangible reality. Even the literal text in The Holy Bible, Chapter One in Genesis, that supposedly deals with the process of creation, deals primarily with the physical universe.”

“Yet, as already was revealed in the book Fundamentals of Human Spirituality, the process of creation can never begin with creation of the physical universe. Instead, it is completed with that universe.”

“Moreover, two misconceptions exist as related to the use of the words ‘creation’ and

‘universe.’ It is assumed that the act and the process of creation is limited to the act itself which has a beginning and an end. Once Creation is created, nothing happens any longer until the created universe runs its course. Nothing is further from the truth than this assumption. It is necessary to realize that Creation is a continuous, unceasing process and it can never stop for a fraction of a second. The very nature of Creation requires not only maintenance and support of that which has already been created, but the continuous additions to it and, at the same time, creation of always something new.”

“The misconception of this issue stems primarily from a wrong approach to the process of creation and to the conceptualization of The Nature of The Creator. The theoretical assumption in this respect is that The Creator creates in time and space. If this is the case, then The Creator is limited by time and space. Therefore, the creative process and act must have some kind of linear beginning and linear end.”

“But the truth of the matter is that, as Swedenborg already pointed out, the process and the act of creation is never time-space bound. Thus, creation does not happen in time and in space but, instead, time and space themselves are introduced in the process of creation. In other words, time and space are subject to creation themselves. Or at one point in the process of creation, time and space are created themselves. In actuality, time and space are not created until the process of creation of the physical universe is conceived and executed. In this respect you can say to some extent that time and space are the end product of Creation and not its beginning or building blocks.”

“Because humans, for example, can think only primarily in terms of spatial-temporal continuum, they assume that Creation is limited to the physical universe because it is always space-time bound. For the ordinary mode of human thinking, nothing outside time and space is conceivable.”

“An exception to this rule are the highly evolved theoretical physicists or humans of higher spiritual mindedness. But even for them it is not easy to practically conceptualize on what and how things exist beyond or above a spatial-temporal continuum.”

“The second misconception relates to the word ‘universe.’ Again, it is assumed that there is only one universe, in this case, the physical universe. As mentioned above, this conclusion stems from the fact that only the physical universe is discernible and perceptible and experientially available to humans.”

“What most humans fail to recognize is the fact that the word ‘universe’ does not reflect the true reality of the entire Creation. Creation consists of many universes of infinitely different nature and of infinite diversity.”

“In fact, three basic structural components exist within Creation. Each of these components consists of its own discrete multiverse, that is, its own multiple universes that can be summarily called multiverse. Thus, there is a spiritual multiverse of Creation with its own structure, dynamics and specific laws; the intermediate multiverse with its own structure, dynamics and specific laws; and the physical or natural multiverse with its own structure, dynamics and specific laws. In addition, each multiverse within itself is comprised of its own twelve specific dimensions through and by which it continuously discharges its being and existence.”

“The rules of spatial-temporal continuum apply only to a very limited sphere of the physical or natural multiverse — to its most external degree of reality, as it is known, for example, to humans. However, bear in mind that human conceptualization of time and space, as it is

known to and experienced by them, does not, in fact, reflect the true reality of time and space of the considered external degree of the physical multiverse.”

“As you remember, planet Zero, which is occupied by humans, is positioned in space that is no place and in time that is no time. For this reason, the specific human time and space is a distortion of true time and true space. Thus, humans, by virtue of their impossible nature and cosmic position, live in distorted time and distorted space that have no relevance to the true reality of time and space in the real physical external multiverse.”

“This is the reason why it is so difficult, if not impossible, to deal with the subject of this Chapter in human terms. By their very nature, human terms are capable of conveying only distortions and falsifications of the true reality, in this case, of reality of time and space as it is conceived by the genuine inhabitants of the genuine spatial-temporal continuum of their respective multiverse. Even within the physical or natural multiverse, the laws of time and space are applicable only to its most external degree, which can be called the natural universe. But to limit the entire being and existence to only this natural and physical universe is the most ridiculous concept.”

“If the process of creation does not begin with creation of the physical universe, then, how, for what purpose and in what manner does it begin and is there any state or condition that precedes the act of creation?”

“As you see, the very word ‘begins’ implies time and space. This is the most inappropriate word to use for description of the act and the process of creation because it assumes a linear point at which something peculiar happened, resulting in the beginning of Creation.”

“The reality of this situation is that Creation does not begin. Human language, in any form and condition, does not convey in more appropriate terms what it is that happens in the process of the act of creation.”

“The word ‘occur’ is more appropriate to use, but even that word is very far from reflecting the true reality of the process of that act. You can remotely say that Creation occurs. This term is less time-space bound than the word ‘begin.’ The process of occurrence is a state. A state can be conceptualized both without and within the linear time and space concepts.”

“However, state is a condition of something or someone that already is. Thus, state is a product of ‘Is.’ Therefore, ‘Is’ is a source of occurrence of its state.”

“The great mystery here is in the fact how ‘Is’ conceives itself and the occurrence of its own state. What is the nature of this ‘Is?’”

“At this point, the only thing that can be said is that this mysterious ‘Is’ is the source of all and any occurrences of the very fact of its being and existence. But why such occurrences occur and what their purpose is is difficult to ascertain.”

“The first axiomatic rule of the nature of ‘Is’ is that it always is. It has no beginning and no end and its nature is the very being and existence themselves.”

“Thus, in actuality, it is incorrect to say that ‘Is’ always is and exists because being and existence are immanent to its very nature. In other words, ‘Is’ is not being and existence but being and existence are in ‘Is.’ This is a very crucial and fundamental distinction. This distinction has to be continuously kept in mind in order to understand what is being revealed in this Chapter.”

“Thus, ‘Is,’ in actuality, transcends being and existence. In this sense, the term ‘Is’ is an inappropriate one because the way humans understand the verb ‘is’ is in terms of being and existence and not in terms of being and existence being derived from that ‘Is.’ However, no other term exists in human language which can convey even remotely the exact nature of that which we are talking about.”

“For that reason, the term ‘Is’ will be retained here with the understanding that its definition fundamentally differs from the one given to it by humans.”

“In this respect, ‘Is’ is occurring not because of some kind of outside of ‘Is’ force that makes it occur, but because the fact of the occurrence is the very nature of ‘Is.’ In other words, ‘Is’ in itself does not occur but occurrence is within that ‘Is.’ Thus, ‘Is’ initiates occurrence from itself because it is its very nature to do so.”

“Because ‘Is’ always is without beginning or end, you can say that, before Creation was created, there was ‘Is.’ Not being created itself, by virtue of the fact that it always is (the first axiom), the state and condition of ‘Is’ is its Absoluteness. The Absolute Condition of its state is determined by the factor that ‘Is’ does not depend on anything or anyone in its being and existence. If being and existence were outside of ‘Is,’ ‘Is’s’ being and existence would depend on being and existence instead of being and existence being dependent on ‘Is.’”

“In this case, it would not be Absolute because, in its being and existence, it would be dependent on something else — on being and existence. Thus, it would be being and existence that would be Absolute and not ‘Is.’ However, being and existence, being being and existence, by their very nature, depend on their source. Therefore, you can postulate that their source is ‘Is,’ in which being and existence are.”

“To repeat again, ‘Is’ is not being and existence but being and existence are in ‘Is.’ This is the reason why ‘Is’ is conceptualized as an Absolute State. Nothing else is Absolute by a simple fact that everything else is in being and existence but being and existence are not in them.”

“As you see, the fundamental difference between The Creator and Creation is in the fact that, whereas being and existence are in The Creator and The Creator is not in being and existence, Creation is in being and existence and nothing of being and existence is within Creation.”

“The word ‘Creation’ assumes to create. The word ‘to create’ assumes a source or originator of Creation (‘Is’). The source or originator of Creation cannot create from the position of being and existence. Where would they come from? In order to create, The Creator (‘Is’) must contain within His/Her Nature the being and existence themselves.”

“Because being and existence is the very within state of The Creator (‘Is’), Creation is created from The Creator (‘Is’), from His/Her state of Absolute Being and Existence. The reason it is said ‘Absolute Being and Existence’ is because, by definition, ‘Is’ is absolute. Therefore, whatever is an integral component of its nature is also absolute.”

“Creation occurs by the fact that being and existence occur within ‘Is,’ which never occurs because its nature is always ‘Is.’ ‘Is,’ by its very nature and content, is a state of occurrence but ‘Is’ is not in the state of occurrence. Because ‘Is’ is a state of occurrence, which never occurs itself by virtue of its being always ‘Is,’ it is a source of any occurrence.”

“The mystery here is in the fact that, by its very nature, being a state of occurrence, but not in

a state of occurrence, 'Is' continuously generates occurrences by being a state of occurrence. The fact of this generation is the process of the state of occurrence."

"Thus, you have here a state of occurrence and a process of occurrence. A state of occurrence is an impetus for the process of occurrence, the reason being that any state of 'Is,' by virtue of being 'Is,' is an active or dynamic mode. An active mode, being in the process of being and existence within that 'Is,' generates energies which become a driving force of any occurrence."

"Thus, it is the nature of the very 'Is' to continuously generate from itself occurrences that are the product of its active mode of being the state of occurrences without itself being in an occurring mode. An initial occurrence can occur only from the state which is not in a mode of occurrence itself. Otherwise, it would be occurring itself. To occur itself supposes a driving force of that occurrence."

"For this reason, two things are obvious: First, The Creator, Who is this Absolute 'Is,' by His/Her very Nature, or by the nature that He/ She is the very being and existence Himself/Herself, being that they are in Him/Her, must create. His/Her very state is Absolutely Active and Dynamic. Absolute Activeness of that state is the creative process in itself and by itself."

"Second, Creation occurred from being and existence of The Creator in whom being and existence reside, being The Absolute components of His/Her Absolute Nature."

"In this Absolute sense, Creation has no beginning and no end. As long as The Creator always is, and 'Is' always is, Creation is always being created. In this respect, Creation is always a process but not a state. Being in its own state is relative to its continuous process. Creation is an emanation of its Creator's Absolute State. You can say here with certainty that no other state exists but the state of creative process from The Absolute State of The Creator. Thus, Creation is a must because ***no other state and process can and may exist.*** Such is The Nature of that 'Is.' "Is' is The Creator."

"The nature of 'Is,' or The Creator, cannot be comprehended and apprehended from within its Absolute State. One would have to be that 'Is' in order to apprehend that Nature. However, in a relative sense, that nature can be derived from the nature of Creation which continuously occurs from The Creator. Because of its occurrence from The Creator, Creation reflects the nature of its Creator in a relative condition and sense."

"Since the most important and the ultimate process of Creation is the sentient mind, from the relative being and existence of that sentient mind, one can conclude with a reasonable certainty that The Nature of 'Is' is absolute sentience, self-awareness and all other attributes found in the relative sentient mind — the difference being that in The Creator all these attributes are in an Absolute Condition whereas in everyone else they are in the relative condition. Thus, in answer to the question why Creation exists and is at all, it is obvious that no other state or condition or process can be and exist but Creation because of The Reality and The Nature of The Absolute 'Is.'"

"The motivational factors for the creation of Creation stem from The Absolute State of The Absolute 'Is.' By its very nature, 'Is' is motivated to create simply because nothing else is conceivable. Not only is it not conceivable, but no other state can be and exist because such other states would not be congruent with the nature of The Absolute 'Is.'"

"The factor of The Absolute 'Is,' in which are contained The Absolute Being and The Absolute

Existence, must be postulated as something that does not need proof of its being and existence. This is an axiomatic fact. But, containing within Itself The Absolute Being and The Absolute Existence, as essential and substantial components of its very nature, The Absolute 'Is,' by Its Absolute Active Mode, generates that being and existence on a continuous scale."

"The thought that no being and existence were and existed before Creation was created is inconceivable. Being and existence were and existed within The Absolute State of The Absolute 'Is.' This is what was and existed before so-called Creation."

"There is a generally accepted misconception about the common term 'before Creation was created.' This term assumes that, before Creation was created, no being and existence were. 'Before Creation was created' signifies before time and space were created or introduced into being and existence. However, before time and space became reality, the act of Creation had been in its state for eternity."

"You have to understand again that there is a state of Creation and there is a process of Creation. The state of Creation is an Absolute State of The Creator ('Is'). As The Absolute 'Is' always is, so is the state of Creation."

"On the other hand, the process of Creation is the process of its continuous occurrence. Thus, you can say that, before the process of Creation occurred, there was a state of Creation which does not have any beginning or end because it resides within The Absolute State of The Absolute 'Is.'"

"For this reason, the term 'before Creation was created' signifies that the process of Creation is preceded by its state. The term 'process,' in this connotation, implies a beginning of something and its ending. From it, the concept of time and space may be derived. The term 'state,' in this particular connotation, implies the permanency of a condition. No time or space elements can be attributed to it or derived from it."

"From this standpoint, you can conclude that sentient entities, and particularly humans, are always in the process of their being and existence, which is their own personal state, but not in the state of being and existence in a sense that no state is within them. Only The Lord Jesus Christ, Who is that Absolute 'Is,' as conceived in this Chapter, can be the state and the process of being and existence for the sole reason that He/She is not in the state and in the process of anything but the state and the process are in Him/Her as integral components of His/Her Absolute Nature."

"This is the reason why it is correctly assumed even by humans, who believe in God, that He/She transcends all states, all processes, all conditions, all times, all spaces, all being, all existence and anything else. However, they have no idea why they postulate this fact about God. They do not realize that the reason He/She transcends all of this is because all of this is in Him/Her but He/She is not in them. At least, God was not in them originally."

"Once the process of Creation occurred, then and only then The Creator begins to reside also in Creation as in His/Her own extension and process. In this respect, a new situation occurred in an Absolute sense. The Creator ('Is') comprises within His/Her Nature all states and processes. Until Creation is in full process, The Creator is not in that process. He/She is within or inside Himself/Herself."

"The mystery of this situation is in the fact that The Absolute State is an **Absolute Inwardness**. However, an Absolute Process is a dynamic extension of that state in the direction of from the inwardness toward the outwardness (from within to without). Because

The Creator ('Is') is in an Absolute State of Inwardness, He/She cannot be, at that point, in anything which is in direction of outwardness until that outwardness becomes the full process of that inwardness. Once the process moves from the state of inwardness toward its state of outwardness, The Creator ('Is') becomes also His/Her own outwardness."

"In this case, the newness of this situation can be found in the fact that, whereas before this process occurred, The Creator was not in any state and/or process, because the state and the process were in His/Her Absolute Inwardness; after the process of outwardness was established, The Creator acquired both conditions. Now, He/She is also in everything and everyone that was created. Thus, The Creator is in the state and in the process of His/Her Creation, as well as the state and the process are within The Creator."

"The difference in these two conditions gave an impression that there was time and space before Creation was created. The reality however, is that lack of the process of outwardness of the state of inwardness did not allow for Creation to be a continuous process but only in a state of The Absolute State of The Creator. Any sense of the lack of something is perceived by the relative sentient mind, and particularly by humans, as non-being and nonexistence, the reason being that they are a part of the process and only through that process can they become a part of the original state. Thus, they look upon the creative act from the position of outwardness but not from the position of inwardness because they are in the process of creation and not in its Absolute State."

"From that position, Creation is perceived as having its beginning. In this sense only, you can say that in the beginning there was no state of outwardness. Instead, what has always been from eternity was the state of Absolute Inwardness."

"For someone or something that is a part of the outwardness (Creation is outwardness of the inwardness), and looks at Creation from that position, the beginning of all things is when that outwardness came to its fruition. But looking on it from the position of the state of inwardness, Creation always was because it was an integral component of that inwardness. It is only the process of Creation, as it moves toward its own outwardness, which is conceived as something that has not always been."

"The greatest mystery in this respect is how and why the shift from the state of inwardness to the process of its outwardness occurred. This shift does not mean that the state of inwardness was relinquished. It can never be relinquished. Any, even remote, attempt to relinquish it would result in an eternal death of all Creation. Creation can be maintained only from The Absolute State of Inwardness because it was there that it originated. It cannot be maintained by the process of outwardness because the process of outwardness derives from the state of its inwardness. The process always depends on its state. By definition, the state is the inwardness."

"What happened here was that the state of inwardness initiated the process of becoming outwardness from the state of its inwardness. Thus, the question is how this initiation occurred and what motivated that state to undertake such an act."

"The State of Absolute Inwardness is Absolute 'IS,' which, in turn, is Absolute Self or The Absolute 'I AM.' The Nature of this Absolute Self or 'I AM' is an Absolute Positiveness. The Absolute Positiveness is in the state of Absolute Purity and Selflessness. The word 'self' and 'selflessness' are not contradictory. 'Self' can be either selfish, devoid of any consideration for anything else but self, or it can be selfless, pondering the possibility of extending that self into other selves. Because this Absolute Self by its Nature is Absolutely Positive, it can never be in the state of selfishness. Therefore, it is Absolutely Selfless."

“The nature of this selflessness is the process of consideration of other possibilities than its own Absolute Being and Existence, contained in its Absolute Nature.”

“Philosophically speaking, consideration of and the need for other possibilities of being and existence but its Own is immanent to Its Absolute Nature. Whatever is immanent to that Nature, by its own nature, must be definitely actualized and realized.”

“However, at that point, nothing at all exists but The State of Absolute Inwardness of that Absolute Self or ‘I AM.’ Because the only reality of being and existence is within that Absolute ‘I AM,’ in order to create any other possibilities but its own, it must utilize its own source and the material of its own self or ‘I AM’ as an initiating point of the process of creation. Remember, no other source or other material existed at that point.”

“Once such an idea is conceived, the attention of The Absolute Self or ‘I AM’ is shifted from the state of generating that idea to the process of becoming of that idea. The idea is continuously occurring within The State of The Absolute Self or ‘I AM’ because the occurrence is always within its Absolute Inwardness. In order to change the state of the occurrence of that idea into the process of that idea’s becoming, the attention of The Absolute ‘I AM’ is shifted away from the center of inwardness to its Absolute Circumference. The process of this shift produces tremendous spiritual energies of a very special nature. These energies are an emanation of The Absolute Intense Desire of The Absolute ‘I AM’ (‘IS’) to convey Its Absolute Positiveness and Goodness (positiveness always equals goodness) outside of Itself or outside of its ‘I AM.’ The word ‘to convey’ implies something else than that which wants to convey. Conveyance is possible only from ‘from’ to ‘to.’ But, at that point, as you remember, no ‘to’ exists. Only The Absolute ‘From’ exists absolutely.”

“In order to convey from something to something, you need first to create that something to which you can convey everything that you have or wish to convey.”

“The first step in creation of that ‘to’ is the shift of attention from within or inwardness of The Absolute State to its Absolute Circumference. Utilizing the special energy, produced by the intense Absolute desire to convey Itself outside of Itself, that ‘outside’ of ‘inside’ or that outwardness of inwardness is created.”

“Thus, in this connotation, the outside or the outwardness consists of the elements of the pure special energy, emanating from The State of The Absolute Inwardness’ Intense Desire for that outside or outwardness to be and to exist.”

“That energy is directed from its inward source toward its circumference by a simple shifting of the direction of its attention which is aligned with that Absolute Intense Desire for conveyance and sharing. In the very moment this shift occurs, the energy proceeds toward its manifestation from the state of inwardness to the process of outwardness. In this respect, the process of outwardness is the process of creation.”

“Thus, Creation is created from The State of The Absolute Inwardness of The Absolute ‘I AM,’ by the means of The Absolute Spiritual Energy, emanating from The Absolute Intense Desire for conveyance and sharing of all it has and contains. For this reason, you can conceptualize Creation as outwardness of The Absolute Inwardness of The Absolute ‘I AM’ Who is The Absolute Spirit Who is The Lord Jesus Christ.”

“From this process of creation you see the justification of the multiversal principle of Creation: Everything proceeds from within — The State of The Absolute Inwardness — to without —

the process of outwardness. But it also tells you that outwardness can never be and exist by itself and in itself because, after all, it is the process of the state of inwardness. The outwardness does not have its own state independent of the state of its inwardness. Yet, it carries all attributes of its source.”

“It is only logical to assume that that outwardness, that is, in this case, Creation, is a carrier of all attributes of its Source, because Creation was created from the material of its Absolute Source. The only difference is that, whereas those attributes in The Source Itself are in an Absolute condition, in Creation, being that it is created and thus does not have the experience of its own absoluteness, they are in a relative condition.”

“Once the process of outwardness is established, being the carrier of the nature of its Absolute Source in a relative condition, by its very nature, it proceeds toward its own continuous expansion and spread.”

“This is a necessary condition of this process of outwardness because by the infinite expansion and spread, it compensates for its relative condition in respect to its Absolute Source. Not only that, but by reflecting The Nature of its Absolute Source, it has its own intense desire to do exactly what its Creator does — to create for the purpose of conveyance and sharing of its own relative being and existence in both directions — to its Absolute Source and to its own process of outwardness, that is, outside of its own outwardness.”

“Thus, the process of Creation is a twofold process. The Creator creates from Himself/Herself, by the process briefly described above, and by and through the means of the already created outwardness. After all, that original outwardness is His/Her own material, continuously emanating from His/Her Absolute State — His/Her Absolute Inwardness.”

“Because of this arrangement, the process of Creation proceeds in successive steps and always in the direction from the most within to the most without or from the most inwardness to the most outwardness. Each step in the process of creation reflects the nature of its preceding step, having its own condition of inwardness from which it creates its own outwardness through and by the process of its own mentation which is a condition of its ‘in-between’ — the interior condition.”

“In The Absolute State of Inwardness, The Absolute Intense Desire for conveyance and sharing constitutes Absolute Mentation of The Creator, or His/Her Absolute Interior Condition. Through and by it, its Absolute Exterior Condition is maintained. From the combined emanating energies, produced by intricate interactions of these three Absolute States (the most within, interior and exterior), all else is created. This ‘all else’ always appears being outside of The Creator. But because it reflects the nature of its Creator, it is structured in the same manner, having its own most within condition, the interior condition and the exterior condition.”

“The reason why Creation appears outside of The Creator is because of that shift of The Absolute Attention from the core of its Absolute ‘I AM’ into the direction of away from that core. The reason why this shift is necessary is because no conveyance and sharing is possible within and with that core itself. If you pay attention only to your own core, the core of your inwardness, nothing else exists but you. In this case, all else is excluded from the awareness of your being and existence. No creation can commence from such a condition.”

“In order for creation to be initiated, the shift of that attention must occur from the core itself to the direction away from the core. In actuality, what needs to happen is a division of that attention. It is impossible to completely turn away that attention from its core. Otherwise,

there would be a permanent loss of self-awareness. The loss of self-awareness is the end of everything including The Absolute 'I AM.' But it is possible and necessary to divide that attention in such a manner as to direct a portion of it away from that core. In the moment when this attention is divided, by that very act, it produces tremendous spiritual and mental energies which are utilized in creation of Creation. By directing a part of Its Absolute Attention away from Its Core, The Absolute 'I AM' produces the process of outwardness."

"You have to remember two important things in this respect:"

"1. All this happens in an Absolute Sense. Therefore, the energies produced by such a division of attention are of The Absolute Nature. The division of The Absolute Attention does not diminish its Absoluteness. Thus, taking away a portion of that attention from Its Absolute Core, does not lessen the process of Self-Awareness. After all, that portion is Absolute. Therefore, even in a divided state of attention, that Self-Awareness remains Absolute. So is the portion of that attention which is directed away from that core of 'I AM.'"

"2. The Nature of The Creator is Absolute Creativity. For that reason, by paying attention to any idea or some idea, the very fact of such attention, by attention itself, that idea becomes reality in its own right."

"Thus, by directing a part of His/Her Attention away from The Core of His/Her Absolute Inwardness — 'I AM' — the outwardness becomes its own being and existence. Do not forget that the act of paying attention produces tremendous cumulative energies which, by the idea of creation, are immediately utilized in establishing the reality of that idea."

"Here you have a combination of two processes: Paying attention or shifting a portion of that attention from the core into a different direction; and, at the same time, by the fact of that shift, producing these energies that immediately proceed to embody the idea of shifting and creation into Creation itself."

"You can crudely conceptualize the act of Creation in the following manner:"

"First, there is an idea of Creation. The occurrence of that idea produces tremendous energies of life force. Then there is an idea of a shift of a portion of attention to that idea for the purpose of its actualization. Now, the portion of attention was shifted from the core to that idea. In turn, this shifting produces an even greater degree of intensified and extensified life force energies, emanating from that shift. Then there is a process of actualization of that idea with very careful attention to that process."

"The process of actualization is accomplished by a simple act of paying attention to that process. This process, in turn, produces an even greater degree of life force energies. The act of the actual actualization is a cumulative combination of all the above energies that, by the act of directing a portion of attention from The Core of Inwardness, are projected outside of that inwardness, giving an appearance of outwardness, which is The Creation."

"This outwardness is the result of all those cumulative life force energies which became a new process. By its own process, it produces its own specific energies, which are combined with the other cumulative energies of its own source. This, of course, has an additive and potentiating effect. From them, a new round of creation branches out. This next branch follows exactly the same pattern. This goes on until the cumulativeness of all combined energies is of such intensity and proportion that they are formed into externally solid matter. Thus, matter is an ultimate, most extreme external outwardness of that Absolute Inwardness

which is utilized for creation of the physical or natural multiverse.”

“In the process of branching out, several synchronous and simultaneous directions are taken. From the energies emanating from the occurrence of the idea itself within The Absolute Inwardness, a spiritual dimension of each respective multiverse and its universes, galaxies, solar systems, planets and their respective sentient inhabitants are created. From the energies of paying attention to that idea, an intermediate dimension of each respective multiverse and its universes, galaxies, solar systems, planets and their respective sentient entities are created. And from the combination of all cumulative energies, a physical or natural dimension of each respective multiverse and its universes, galaxies, solar systems, planets and their respective sentient entities are created.”

“Now, this is a normal process of creation. The act of Creation has been proceeding in this manner constantly and continuously without any interruption.”

“As you remember, the purpose of Creation was for conveyance and sharing of all that which The Creator has. Therefore, the end product of Creation was the creation of sentient entities who would be of a similar nature as The Creator, with the difference that The Creator is not created, because He/She ‘IS’ Who always is. The environment of Creation was created for the placement into it of these sentient entities.”

“The main reason for creation of this environment, in its infinite variations, was that all sentient entities would appear being outside of and independent of their Absolute Source. The reason for this appearance was in the fact that the act of sharing and conveyance can be perceived as such only from the position of independency and a sense of being outside of The Creator.”

“Here is the issue of the above-mentioned direction from the ‘from’ to the ‘to’ and from the ‘to’ to its original ‘From.’ The reality from the ‘from’ to the ‘to,’ and vice versa, cannot be established unless there is a sense of something coming from somewhere outside of my own self-perception. Otherwise, the conveyance and sharing would be only from within to within, that is, from my own self to my own self. In such a process, no actual sharing and conveyance occur because I already have that which I intend to share and to convey. So, what am I conveying and sharing? Nothing new or different.”

“But, another reason why all sentient entities must appear apart from The Creator is that no meaningful, fulfilling and satisfying relatedness for the process of sharing and conveyance can be established unless it is based on a continuous awareness of one’s will to receive that sharing and conveyance and to give a feedback to its source about such reception and then, to reciprocate the experience of that sharing and conveyance to its source.”

“Remember, The Nature of The Creator is Absolute Freedom and Independency. Because The Creator is One and Absolute, no one and nothing exists that He/She depends on or is bound by.”

“As mentioned many times before, and to be necessarily redundant again, because of this nature, The Creator cannot create or relate from any other position but from the position of His/Her Nature, that is, from the position of its Absolute Freedom and Absolute Independency. Thus, in order to establish a favorable condition for this conveyance, sharing and reciprocating, The Creator not only created these sentient entities with the sense of freedom and independency but He/She also implanted in them the idea that they have the right and the privilege to reject Him/Her as the source of their being and existence and that they may, if they wish to, reject the reception of all that which is being offered to them for

sharing and reciprocating, or to deny any act of conveyance.”

“The constant awareness of having this idea is a vital prerequisite of any free and independent choice-making life of all sentient entities. Without it, they would be slaves of the necessity for living and receiving. But the act of reciprocating, which is the foundation of true love, and the purpose of Creation, could never come to its fruition without having this crucial idea. Now, regarding this idea, all sentient entities have two alternatives from which they may, can and have to choose: 1. Rejection of accepting that idea and therefore, repudiate it from any tendency of identifying themselves with its content. 2. Acceptance of that idea as a sole source of their lives and fully identifying themselves with its content.”

“Either of the chosen alternatives bears its consequences. Why does it have to bear its consequences? Remember, all sentient entities are reflections of The Nature of their Creator in a relative sense. The Creator, by virtue of His/Her very nature, constantly creates. There is no other state in being and existence but Creation of The Creator and The Creator Who transcends His/Her Creation. Thus, whatever ideas are produced and then accepted or rejected, they are immediately actualized into their own reality, bearing the consequences, outcomes and results of their occurrence or acceptance.”

“Because all sentient entities are of a similar nature, whatever they decide by the ideas of their decision becomes its own reality, bearing the consequences, outcomes and results of that decision, be it rejection or acceptance, respectively.”

“In this case, the rejection of accepting the idea in question accomplishes two important results: 1. Acceptance of The Creator as the source of one’s being and existence. This results in a continuous reception of everything which is being conveyed to and shared with the sentient entity and full reciprocation of the process of that reception. In a case like that, the true and real life of the positive state is established.”

(2)

“The rejected idea is separated from the sentient entity through the idea of separation and is thrown out.”

“Now, the process of rejection of that idea generates its own life force energies. The cumulative sum of all these energies, generated by all the infinite numbers of sentient entities, is of such immense magnitude that it produces an entirely different reality than from which it was generated. This new peculiar reality, because it is being constantly rejected from the true reality, displaces itself from the rest of Creation and appears as its own being and existence totally outside of Creation. This is how the Zone of Displacement came into its own fruition.”

“As you see, from the energies produced by the process of rejection of that idea in question from its being implemented, the Zone of Displacement becomes its own reality into which that idea itself can fall out, continuously maintaining its peculiar being and existence and constantly trying to impinge itself upon the sentient mind. As a result, it has to be rejected again on a daily basis.”

“Due to the fact that the idea bears the image and likeness of its originators, but in an upside-down condition, the structure of the Zone of Displacement is in exact opposition to the true Creation.”

“The reason why it is upside-down is because it is the idea of rejection of the true structure of reality. And because there is no other reality in being and existence but the true reality of The

Creator, its rejection constitutes its exact opposite by the fact of comparison. By comparing the process of Creation with the content of rejection of that process, it has no other alternative but to establish the exact opposite of that process. Any agreement with that process would mean the acceptance of The Creator and not rejection. Such an acceptance would be contrary to the nature of that idea to reject or to deny.”

“Thus, the nature of the Zone of Displacement can be fully established from the nature of the true Creation by following exactly the opposing trend. A good example of this upside-down position would be the fundamental principle followed by all in the true Creation: From the most within or inward to the most without or outward. In the Zone of Displacement everything would be derived from the opposite direction. The initiating point would always be the most without or outwardness and from that position, the most within or inwardness would be built. This rule is applicable to all else in the Zone of Displacement. No exceptions or exclusions to this rule exist.”

“Thus, as you see, the Zone of Displacement is situated outside of the outside of Creation, the reason being that rejection of that idea comes from the sentient entities who appear outside of The Creator for the above-described important reasons. Remember, Creation is the outwardness of The Creator Who is The Absolute Inwardness. By rejection of the idea in question, the outsidedness of the outwardness appears. It is totally separated and isolated from its own source by virtue of its being rejected.”

“As you see, it is one thing to be outside for the purpose of acceptance and reciprocation, as is the case with the sentient entities in the true Creation. By virtue of that acceptance and reciprocation, that outside becomes the outwardness of The Creator which, in turn, becomes an integral part of The Creator’s Absolute Nature. In this case, no separation and isolation exist.”

“But it is another thing to be outside of the outwardness for the reason it is being rejected and wants to have no part of it. In this case, full isolation and separation is established. It does not stem from The Creator but from the sentient entities’ acceptance of that idea to reject The Creator as a sole Source of their being and existence.”

“Because of the opposing nature of this isolation and separation to the rest of Creation, which is inclusion in and unification with its Source, a potential for initiation and activation of the negative state exists. The dormancy of the negative state lies in the fact that a theoretical possibility always exists that, somewhere along the line and step of Creation, someone will, inadvertently, accept that idea and will fully identify oneself with its content. In the moment someone does so, the negative state is awakened from its dormancy and becomes its full reality. Any individual who accepts that idea automatically will fall out, together with that idea, into the Zone of Displacement and will establish a lifestyle congruent with the structure and nature of the Zone of Displacement — the opposing or upside-down position to the true Creation and its genuine reality.”

“This is a brief description of the genesis of Creation and the Zone of Displacement. For more on this issue you can read the books Fundamentals of Human Spirituality, Four Concepts of the Spiritual Structure of Creation, Reality, Myths & Illusions and Who Are You And Why Are You Here?”

“In conclusion of this Chapter, let us summarize some particular mysteries of Creation and the Zone of Displacement in the following points:”

(1)

“The main mystery of Creation can be found in the fact that Creation is a condition of The Creator. The idea of Creation itself is a structural component of The Creator’s Nature. Therefore, in this conceptualization, The Creator’s Absolute Being and Absolute Existence are immanent to all Creation and the Act of Creation is immanent to The Nature of Creator. No other way is possible but the way of the act of creation. Not only is it impossible, but it is not even conceivable. Anything different would be contrary to The Nature of The Creator.”

“In simpler terms, you can say that Creation is because The Creator Absolutely IS. As long as The Creator Absolutely Was, Is and Will Be, Creation always was, is and will be. Creation is not possible without its Creator, but, theoretically speaking, The Creator is possible without Creation because He/She transcends His/Her Creation. Being that Creation is created, it is not Absolute but only relative. However, The Creator is Absolute. Therefore, in His/Her Absolute Condition, The Creator can be without Creation. However, The Creator, by His/Her very Nature, does not desire to be without His/Her Creation. The State of The Creator’s Absolute Mentality is the intense absolute desire for His/Her Creation. This intense Absolute Desire stems from The Creator’s Absolute Love and Absolute Wisdom as an ultimate state and process of His/Her Essence and Substance. In this practical wise sense, The Creator cannot be without His/Her Creation.”

“As you know, love desires to love and wisdom desires to know the subjects of its love. Love always needs a subject for its affection. Wisdom from that love’s desire creates for it the subjects of that love.”

“But because love can flourish only on the basis of being reciprocated by its subjects, it is motivated to create to eternity. Thus, love, through its wisdom, creates Creation for this purpose to eternity. Because love, in the condition of The Creator’s Nature is Absolute, it must do, at least, two things: a. It must create new subjects of its inexhaustible affection continuously to eternity; and b. It must maintain all subjects of its affection, already created, to eternity.”

“The nature of this love and its wisdom, and the nature of wisdom and its love, require it to create subjects that have free choice to accept and reciprocate or to reject and deny this love.”

“In order to illustrate life of the second alternative (rejection and denial), the being and existence of the Zone of Displacement is permitted where such a peculiar condition can have its own chance for development.”

“Thus, the mystery of the Zone of Displacement’s being and existence can be found in the fact that The Absolute Love and its Absolute Wisdom and The Absolute Wisdom and its Absolute Love are unable, by their very nature, to enforce by imposition on anyone their affection and lifestyle. In this respect, the Zone of Displacement is and exists only because of this love and wisdom.”

“For many human readers, this statement will seem paradoxical. They will ask, ‘How can Absolute Love and Absolute Wisdom tolerate something so atrocious as the Zone of Displacement with all its opposites to the true Creation?’”

“Some of them go so far that they even deny the existence of any Creator, assuming that, if The Creator were to exist, He/She would never tolerate the being and existence of the negative state with all its atrocities and abominations.”

“However, what these humans fail to recognize is that, first of all, the Zone of Displacement

was not created by The Creator but by the idea of the relative sentient entities. For that reason, once that idea will be permanently eliminated, the Zone of Displacement will cease to exist. Second, no love is possible by imposition and duress. This fact is known even to the most limited humans. In fact, as you know, love by imposition and duress is slavery. The condition of slavery is the condition of life of the negative state. Nothing of this nature exists within The Absolute Creator, Who is Absolutely Positive, Free and Independent. Therefore, He/She is not even capable of acts of imposition and duress. Such a tendency could not even come to His/Her Absolute Mind.”

“Thus, the paradox of being and existence of the Zone of Displacement is solely in the fact that The Absolute Love and The Absolute Wisdom respect absolutely all consequences of the available choices for the sentient entities to make. If you remove from them the idea and the ability to choose whatever they want, you remove from them the life of The Creator which is present in that idea and ability to choose and by which they live and are alive, the reason being that on this ability any sentient entity’s life depends. Let’s face it, no other type of sentient life has ever existed, exists or will ever exist.”

“However, due to the fact that the Zone of Displacement is maintained by the ideas that are occurring in the relative sentient mind, and subsequently being expulsed, the Zone of Displacement is a relative condition to the relative only. Because of this, its being and existence are temporary, limited to the duration of only one cycle of time in Creation.”

“As you know, the duration of one cycle of time, in relativistic terms of the Zone of Displacement and planet Zero, is limited to the maximum of several quintillion years. Therefore, the Zone of Displacement cannot last longer than that. But, in your terms, this time seems to you like an entire eternity.”

“When you have no other perspective than your linear time measurements, and no other experience but the existence of the negative state — the Zone of Displacement — from your position, it appears to you as though the Zone of Displacement and its negative life was, is and will be forever. In your condition, you have no memories of any past before your incarnation on planet Zero, and you have no realistic perspective of the future, in which the negative state has not been existing and will not be existing. You have no experiential comparison to anything else.”

“Let it be known now that this is a very false perspective. This is a perspective of the Zone of Displacement itself and all its inhabitants. The message to all in the Zone of Displacement is that its life will continue only to the end of this cycle of time and to the end of the spiritual state that corresponds to it.”

(2)

“Another mystery of Creation can be conceptualized as Creation being a form of expression and impression of The Creator’s Nature. If the initial state of The Creator — The Lord Jesus Christ — is The Absolute Inwardness, then all expressions of that Inwardness take form in their outwardness. The outwardness is impressed by those expressions, reciprocating its impression in the form of its own impression of how it perceived, received and incorporated those expressions.”

“Thus, you can see that the entire Creation is the expression of the inward state of The Creator in the form of outwardness on which these expressions are impressed. By being impressed, Creation sustains its being and existence. In this respect, Creation’s being and existence depends on the expressions of The State of The Absolute Inwardness of The Creator. If there were nothing by which Creation could be impressed, it could not survive for a

blink of your eye. The process of impression is the process of reception of life by which Creation is alive. Through its impressions by the expressions of its Absolute Creator, Creation is able to be in its own process of being and existence.”

“On the other hand, the Zone of Displacement is maintained by the impressions of the expressions of all those sentient entities who express their rejective attitude toward acceptance of and identification with such an idea. This expression falls out and is impressed on the Zone of Displacement, giving it its peculiar life.”

(3)

“One of the many mysteries of Creation is related to the relationship between The Creator and His/Her Creation. As you remember, initially The Creator was in The State of Absolute Inwardness. The creation proceeded from that Inwardness and became the outwardness of that Inwardness. Thus, The Creator, at that time, experienced His/Her Creation from within to without but not from without to within, except as a feedback of impression of the expression which was imparted on it.”

“The experience from without to within, that is, the opposing trend, is characteristic of the structure of the Zone of Displacement and its inhabitants. The Creator lacked this experience for the simple reason that the Zone of Displacement is positioned outside of the outwardness of Creation in a condition of isolation and separation. From this particular position, no direct feedback was available because nothing of the Zone of Displacement proceeded from The Creator. No connecting link existed between them.”

“This situation was considered a liability of the entire being and existence.”

“In order to rectify this situation, The Creator incarnated in the form of Jesus Christ into the Zone of Displacement, via planet Zero; experienced the fullness of its upside-down nature; and subsequently incorporated that experience into His/Her Absolute Nature, becoming rightfully the fullness of The Lord Jesus Christ Who no longer lacks a direct experience of anything.”

“Among many other things, two major factors were accomplished by this act:”

“a. The Zone of Displacement was put under the total control of The Lord Jesus Christ, He/She becoming its missing link to the rest of Creation. This was a necessary accomplishment in order to establish a favorable condition for return of all who fell out into the Zone of Displacement, or who were initially fabricated there, to the true Creation, and to eventually eliminate the Zone of Displacement.”

“b. The acquirement of the most outside of the outwardness of Creation allows the restoration of the flow of all expressions of The Absolute State of The Lord Jesus Christ in the direction from the most within to the most without to its ultimate outside degree. Before the missing link was found and reestablished, the flow stopped right at the edge of Creation, curving back to the within without touching or influencing, in any manner and way, anything outside of its sphere.”

“Now, this situation established in the Zone of Displacement a possibility for most of its members, if they choose to do so by their free will, to revert the process of their original lifestyle from the position of without to the position of within to without. By doing that, they will reestablish the relationship with the true Creation, and through The Lord Jesus Christ, not only can they communicate with the rest of Creation but convert to the positive state and come out of the Hells of the Zone of Displacement. Before that time, that is, before The

Creator became the fullness of The Lord Jesus Christ, incorporating within Himself/Herself the elements of the Zone of Displacement, no one was able to come out of any of its Hells because there was nothing that would be able to establish a safe link of communication.”

“As you know, Peter, and as you and your spiritual children on planet Zero witnessed many times, since that time, numerous negative entities of the Hells, of all ranks and positions, capitalized on that opportunity, and converted to the positive state through the process which will be elaborated upon in the next Chapter.”

“Without The Creator’s volunteering to become The Lord Jesus Christ, by the process described throughout this book, the members of the Zone of Displacement would never be able to convert to the positive state. If this were the case, they would either perish at the end of this cycle of time or they would have to stay negative and live in the Zone of Displacement forever.”

“Neither case is conceivable to The Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ. In the first alternative, the destruction of the precious sentence would take place. Such a destruction is contrary to the very Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ. Something like that can never happen. In the second situation, The Creator would violate His/Her own promise, given to Creation, that the negative state and its Zone of Displacement would not be allowed to continue beyond one cycle of time. Again, The Lord Jesus Christ is incapable of violating His/Her own promises. Here is the great mystery of The Grand Plan of salvation, devised by The Lord Jesus Christ, to save everyone in the negative state from the negative state before this cycle of time ends.”

“The specificity of the means for the final act of this salvation cannot be revealed for security reasons. Once the final phase of this Grand Plan is implemented, those means will become obvious in the process of their use. Some general ideas of this process were revealed in the previous Chapters of this book.”

“The only thing that can be revealed in this respect is that all members of the negative state will be convinced by those means to convert to the positive state, and return to their true home, by their own free will and choice without any duress, impositions or threats.”

(4)

“One of the mysteries of Creation is in the fact that it is manifested into its being and existence by infinite varieties of modes. This manifestation is threefold: One is a discrete manifestation and its own infinite varieties of modes through which it is and exists.”

“Creation is and exists on many levels of its being and existence in a simultaneous and synchronous manner. Each level comprises its own vast universe.”

“The other is a continuous manifestation which assumes a linear mode. This is a progressive mode of Creation from its birth through infancy to its adulthood, old age and rebirth into a different mode of its being and existence.”

“The third is a cyclical manifestation from one cycle of time to another cycle of time. Each cycle of time represents a totally different aspect of the creative act of The Creator — The Lord Jesus Christ. The Lord Jesus Christ is The Absolute Unifying Principle of all manifestations of His/Her Creation, giving it cohesiveness, wholeness and a sense of oneness, reflecting the inexhaustible state of His/Her own Nature.”

“In this respect, the spiritual, mental and physical essence and substance of The Lord Jesus Christ is the true and the only principle of all forces operating in the multiverse of Creation in

all its infinite modes of manifestations.”

“The scientists on planet Zero have been looking for a long time for this unifying principle of the forces known to them so far (gravity, electromagnetism, the strong force and the weak force) but, as of this date, they have not been able to find it because they have been looking in the wrong place. Not only that, but they considered only the forces which they know that exist within the limits of their own experiential mode.”

“What these scientists do not know is that the universal forces they are dealing with are of the Zone of Displacement, and that there are many other forces of spiritual, mental and physical nature that have the same unifying principle — The Lord Jesus Christ. Since the time The Lord Jesus Christ became also The Absolute Master of all their forces, this rule now is applicable also to the Zone of Displacement and planet Zero.”

“As far as the Zone of Displacement is concerned, its manifestation also has many modes but it is not threefold, as is the case with the true Creation. It is only twofold: Discrete and continuous. It lacks the cyclical manifestation because it is limited to the previous cycles of time. It will have no place in the subsequent cycles of time.”

“In the previous cycles of time, the Zone of Displacement also existed in two modes: Until the present cycle of time, it existed as a dormant condition, as an empty state and space. It was a potential of its own being and existence but not the actual being and existence. However, in the current cycle of time, the Zone of Displacement exists in the active mode, full of dead life and human life (as described in Chapter Twelve of this book).”

“Both its discrete mode and its continuous mode are limited in their sphere due to the state of their original separation and isolation from The Absolute Source and particularly due to the fact that the Zone of Displacement in any of its numerous modes is finite and fully exhaustible. Only that which originated in The Absolute Source has infinite possibilities and inexhaustible modes of its manifestation. This is another mystery why the Zone of Displacement, and all it has and represents, can never be and exist forever.”

(5)

“The entire Creation and the Zone of Displacement serve many important purposes. Many of these purposes have been revealed in this book and in the previous books by this transmitter. However, there is one crucial purpose of their being and existence which will be revealed right now. This purpose can be considered one of their greatest mysteries of all.”

“Creation serves as a stage on which all aspects, traits, characteristics, states, conditions, processes and all else of The Absolute Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ unfold and are actualized, realized and implemented in the mode of their outwardness in a progressive and successive manner. Before Creation was created this situation was limited to the mode of inwardness only. Up to that point, the outwardness was void and empty, that is, nonexistent.”

“Once the shift occurred from the mode of inwardness to the mode of outwardness — by the process of divided attention, as described above — the outwardness became ‘is’ in its own right, allowing the entire Nature of The Creator to begin to unfold also in that mode.”

“This is a continuous, eternal process. Being that Creation is not absolute, it cannot encompass the totality of all states, conditions, processes, traits, characteristics and all else of The Absolute Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ — The Creator. It does so in a gradual, successive, step by step, cycle by cycle and state by state manner. Because The Absolute Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ — The Creator — can never be exhausted, the process of

Creation will continue to eternity, serving this most important purpose. There is nothing more inspiring, more exciting, more joyous or more important for the members of Creation than to unfold this nature and to always receive something new, hitherto unknown, from The Absolute Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ.”

“As far as the Zone of Displacement is concerned, it serves as a stage of comparison of The True Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ to something that lacks this nature. It illustrates a lifestyle built on principles other than The Absolute Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ. This other lifestyle or stage becomes a very important factor in determining everyone’s choice, not to choose, any longer, to have the idea of freedom to reject or to deny The True Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ and the lifestyle of the true Creation. Once such a choice is made, the end of the Zone of Displacement and its specific lifestyle will be at hand.”

“If anyone has ears to hear, let him/her hear what The Lord Jesus Christ reveals in this Chapter.”

CHAPTER TWENTY TWO

THE MYSTERY OF BIRTH, DEATH, RESURRECTION, REBIRTH, TRANSFIGURATION AND TRANSFORMATION

On May 7, 1988, early in the morning, again the word of The Lord Jesus Christ came to me, saying,

“As you know by now, what humans consider normal, natural and proper, in most instances, is neither natural nor proper nor normal.”

“Having no other experience or knowledge but what they see, have and practice, they, inadvertently, conclude that their way of life and conceptualization of all life issues is either the only one feasible or the only one correct.”

“This statement is particularly true in dealing with important issues of human life which concern every singular human.”

“The two most common concepts that accompany human endeavors and their life are the concepts of birth and death. Whereas these two concepts are very familiar and personal to any human individual, the concepts of rebirth, resurrection, transfiguration and transformation, for most of them, are either unfamiliar or unknown at all, or only remotely familiar and known to some of them.”

“Yet, familiarity and knowledge of these concepts, particularly of birth and death, does not necessarily mean that what they know about them, what they are familiar with about them or what they experience with them is reflecting the true reality which is hidden behind or in these concepts.”

“What do humans experience in this respect? In the case of birth, as a first step, sexual intercourse takes place between a male and a female. As a result of this act, a female, very often, but not always, conceives and becomes pregnant. In her womb, a fetus develops for approximately nine months. After that, she usually goes through a painful and uncomfortable labor and delivery, during which a fully developed fetus is pushed out of the mother’s womb and is born into your world as a unique individual who has never existed before in this particular uniqueness. In most instances, this is all that humans know about birth.”

“As you see, the concept of birth in their mind is limited solely to its physical and bodily aspects. However, they have very few, or almost no true ideas of how the individuality, unique mentality, soul, personality and spirit of the newborn individual develop and become what they become.”

“Many humans firmly believe that all that is needed for the development of any new human is one sperm from a male, one egg from a female and their fortunate combination which results in a production of a new life. Somehow, they believe, the spirit and the soul of that individual are developed from the combination of a male sperm and a female egg. No other tangible knowledge about this process is available to humans.”

“Yet, what is being experienced here is only the physical aspect of a physical birth of a

human individual but not any other aspect, especially and particularly not the spiritual and the mental aspect which participate in this process in a most important and crucial degree.”

“On the other hand, the humans’ concept of death is limited to the process of physical dying of the external physical bodies. What they experience here is that, at one point, the body stops functioning, for whatever reasons or by whatever means, all its organs cease their function and the body becomes stiff, cold and rigid and no longer responsive to any external or outward stimuli. Beyond a certain period of time, this process is irreversible. Following its death, the body begins to decay and gradually disintegrates into its elemental particles, that is, it becomes dust.”

“From this experience, the sayings ‘from dust to dust,’ ‘from ashes to ashes’ and ‘from earth to earth,’ came into human language.”

“However, humans have no real notion why they must die, why death is inevitable and what happens, if anything, to that unique living, thriving, active, functioning and creative individuality that occupied that body. (For that matter, neither do humans have any notion why they were born the way they were born and for what purpose they were born!)“

“Again, humans have no direct experiential knowledge of the state of affairs after death of the human body. Having no tangible proof of what is going on following their physical death, many humans assume that nothing beyond that point exists and the unique individuality of that person, who occupied that body, sinks into oblivion, becoming nothingness.”

“Other humans believe that the life of every individual continues somehow and somewhere beyond the death of their physical body. Still others believe that the spirit of that body hangs around for some time in some kind of limbo or invisible holding area where it waits for an opportunity to be born again, reentering this world through some other female’s womb. They call this process reincarnation. But very little credible information is available to humans about the place or a state or a condition or life which exist beyond the physical death of the human body.”

“This brief outline shows clearly how limited and feeble human knowledge and experience about these vital important issues, as well as most other issues, is.”

“For this reason, some additional information about these issues, beyond what already was revealed about them in The New Revelation and in Swedenborg’s writings, will be revealed.”

“The first point that needs to be recognized is that the process of birth has a different course and a different connotation in the spiritual world, in the intermediate world, in the physical or natural world of the true Creation, in various regions of the Zone of Displacement and all its Hells and on planet Zero. In most instances, they have nothing in common.”

“The same is true regarding the experience and conceptualization of death, rebirth, resurrection, transfiguration and transformation. In different states and at different places of the multiverse and of the Zone of Displacement, as well as on your planet, they have a totally different meaning.”

“But the important question is, ‘Why is it necessary for the birth of any sentient entity at any place, state, condition or time to occur at all?’“

“In the positive state of Creation, there is a common denominator for the necessity of birth at any of its levels. As you remember from point five in the previous chapter, one of the major

reasons for Creation's being and existence is to function as a stage on which all elements and aspects of The Absolute Nature of The Creator — The Lord Jesus Christ — are manifested in the outwardness of their inward source. The elements and the aspects do not exist without the totality of their wholeness. They are manifested in the forms or carriers of their life. By their presence in those forms or carriers, they impart life on those forms or carriers. Thus, any form or carrier of such a specific element lives and is alive by the presence of that divine element."

"The act of birth in the positive state is actualized in the following manner:"

"A very specific and unique element from the state of overall Absolute Inwardness of The Lord Jesus Christ — The Creator — is shifted through the process of divided attention into the direction of outwardness. By that shift, through an idea of projection of the element into the process of outwardness, from the elements of environment, into which the idea of that element is projected, a form or a carrier is built. Once the building of the form or carrier is completed, the idea of that element, from its state of inwardness, is projected into that form or carrier and begins occupying that form. In the moment of entrance of that idea into its form or carrier, a birth of a unique individual, congruent to the uniqueness of the idea of that element, takes place."

"Now, what you have to understand here is the mystery of projection. The mystery is in the fact that it is not the unique element itself which is projected into the form, but the very idea of that element. The unique element itself can never be separated in its completeness from its source. Otherwise, its source would disintegrate. However, the very idea of that element can and will be separated or be projected."

"The important spiritual principle here is to realize that any idea of any element contains within itself a full and a total content of its element. Nothing is missing from its original source. Thus, the embodiment of that idea into any form or carrier means the embodiment of the full and complete nature of that element."

"This is the way The True Nature of The Creator — The Lord Jesus Christ — in gradual eternal increments, is being conveyed to all in Creation."

"Another important spiritual principle in this respect is that The Lord Jesus Christ is present in His/Her element and its idea in His/Her fullness."

"The mystery of the presence of The Lord Jesus Christ in the process of outwardness, being an Absolute Inwardness, is in the fact of that projection. In the ideas of His/Her Nature's elements and aspects, The Lord Jesus Christ now is equally present both in the state of the Most Inwardness and the process of the most outwardness and in everything in between."

"Before incarnation of The Most High on your planet and the Zone of Displacement in the form of Jesus Christ took place, and before the process of hybridization and fusion of the body-flesh of Jesus Christ was completed, and before the Most High became the totality of The Lord Jesus Christ, the only way The Creator could appear in the process of outwardness or in His/Her Creation was through someone else."

"As you remember, this manner of appearance was called mediation. The Most High appeared through others, the carriers of the ideas of His/Her specific and unique elements. In this sense, the mediators were specifically created from the ideas of mediation."

"However, once The Most High became the fullness of The Lord Jesus Christ, a new

condition came into being and existence. **In addition** to what was said above, The Creator can now appear very directly and **bodily** in the outwardness of Creation, at the very same time remaining in His/Her Absolute State of The Absolute Inwardness. This new condition gives everyone in Creation a totally different, ineffable perspective on The Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ, their own nature and on the relationship between them and their Creator. But the process of birth of any individual in the positive state continues to take place in the manner briefly described above.”

“Now, once the idea of any specific element is projected for its birth, it is projected from all its own aspects. Remember, the idea reflects fully the nature of its element. The element reflects fully the nature of its whole and of the totality where it belongs.”

“As you know, this Nature has three distinctly different aspects — the most within, interior and exterior aspect, respectively. So, when the idea is projected into its manifestation, it is projected simultaneously and synchronously from the position of its three aspects — spiritual, mental and physical or the most within, interior and exterior. Simultaneously and synchronously with this process, three distinctly different forms or bodies or carriers are built by the fact of that projection. One form or body is built in the spiritual world from the elements of its spiritual environment; one form or body is built in the intermediate world from the elements of its own environment; and one form or body is built in the physical or natural world from the elements of its natural environment.”

“These bodies then carry the specific aspect of the idea of that unique and specific element from The Lord Jesus Christ. Because each element and its idea are not only unique in their totality, but also in each of their specific aspects, each carrier or form or body, corresponding to them, is also unique and non-repeatable.”

“Now, each aspect of the idea of that element in question reflects the structure of its source. Thus, it, in turn, has its own most within or spiritual degree, the interior or mental degree and the without or external degree. From these particular degrees the respective levels of the sentient mind of that form or body or carrier are built. From the spiritual degree its most within Spiritual Mind is built; from the intermediate or mental degree its interior mind or mentality or soul is built; and from the most without external degree its external mind is built. This is the genesis of the birth of any sentient entity in the positive state of Creation and its multiverse.”

“The important mystery here to realize is that the projection of any idea of any element of The Lord Jesus Christ’s Nature into His/Her Creation — the process of outwardness — produces simultaneously and synchronously not a birth of one individual but three. One is born in the spiritual world; one is born in the intermediate world and one is born in the physical or external world. Each individual carries the specific aspect of the idea of that element. Because these aspects stem from the same idea of the same element, the three individuals correspond to one another and they are connected to each other. All their functions become synchronous and simultaneous, yet, each of them, at the very same time, lives a unique and different life. They are not identical and none of them can be substituted for another. After all, they represent very different and very unique aspects of the idea of that element. Therefore, they cannot ever be the same, identical or substituted for one another.”

“However, in actuality, in relationship to each other, they function as, what humans would call, spiritual advisors. The ideas of the spiritual mind and the spiritual world are received from the individual who was born in the spiritual world. The transformation of those ideas into the specific mentality is conveyed by the individual who was born in the intermediate world. And the actualized and concretized effects, behaviors and attitudes are communicated by the individual born in the physical or external world. This is how they are interconnected and how

they advise and support each other.”

“In the positive state of Creation and its multiverse, these individuals are consciously aware of each other and they continuously coordinate their work in the most beautiful, productive, creative and constructive manner. They are called the true, most direct brothers and sisters. All other individuals, who were born from some other ideas of various elements of The Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ, are also called brothers and sisters, although not as direct, because, after all, those ideas came from the same source. Now, this is the arrangement that exists in the positive state. But what about the process of death, rebirth, resurrection, transfiguration and transformation? Do such processes exist in the true Creation?”

“In the true Creation, there are corresponding factors to these concepts which have a different meaning and connotation. They relate to a very important fact of interaction that exists between the carriers of the ideas of the elements in question and their Absolute Source, or an interaction existing between The Absolute State and the relative state.”

“What you have to remember is that the element in its original source, being that that Source is Absolute, is in an absolute state and condition. By this fact, the nature and content of that element cannot ever be exhausted. Neither can its idea be exhausted, being absolute by The Nature of its Source. However, it is conveyed to a relative condition because the carrier, or its form, is built from the elements of the environment which were created specifically for that purpose — to accommodate the carrier of the idea of the element in question. Because it is created, the environment and its elements can never be absolute. Thus, the totality and completeness of the nature of the idea of that element cannot be conveyed simultaneously and synchronously into its carrier. Instead, the idea manifests itself in that container or its form or body or carrier in a gradual, progressive step. This process reflects what is known to you as the principle of spiritual progression.”

“As you remember, that principle states that once any step or condition has exhausted its usefulness and served its purpose, that step is closed and a new step and condition comes into its being and existence. If you apply this principle to the subject at hand, you will see that each individual or carrier or container of the idea of that element in its specific aspect lives from one step to another step. His/her life, at each moment of its manifestation, reflects the quality, the content and the quantity of that specific aspect of the idea of the element in question, which was released into him/her, congruent to his/her full potentials for actualizing that aspect at each given time. Not being absolute but relative, that individual is capable of actualizing only so much of the nature of that element’s idea’s aspect. But because of his/her relative condition, the potentials of that individual are exhaustible. At one point, the individual learns about and manifests that aspect as much as possible under the existing condition. Once this situation occurs, the usefulness of that individual in that specific condition ends. In this condition, he/she can no longer convey anything of that aspect. Therefore, at that moment, the end of his/her life in that specific condition takes place. The ending of this life in that specific condition can be conceptualized as, what humans call, death.”

“In reality however, it is not death but a transition from one specific condition of life into another specific condition of life where the condition is totally different and congruent to the manifestation of another quality, content and quantity of the aspect of the idea of the element in question which is contained in that individual. Each new quality, content and quantity is of a deeper, more profound and more encompassing nature than the previous one. As he/she goes from one step and condition to another step and condition, the individual receives a greater and greater degree of that nature. This is the principle of spiritual progression in a nutshell.”

“At the end of that transitional period, during which the specific external body of that individual, built from its respective environment, is reabsorbed, and after his/her personal Last Judgment, that individual is introduced into his/her new state and condition. Once the choice is made for the place or state of such a manifestation, a new external form or body is built from the elements of the environment where that individual decided to continue in his/her life of manifestation of a different quality, content and quantity of the representative aspect of the idea of the element in question. The process of this choice corresponds to the process of resurrection. The process of appearance of that individual in his/her new state corresponds to the process of rebirth. The process of acquirement of the new form or body corresponds to the process of transfiguration. And, finally, the process of manifestation of the entirely new quality, content and quantity of the representative aspect of the idea of the element in question corresponds to the process of transformation.”

“However, be aware, please, that in the positive state of Creation, all memories, experiences and learning that one acquired during any period of one’s life in any state and condition, remain not only intact, but they are carried into the new life and incorporated as a foundation on which the new life is built. Otherwise, there would be no sense of continuity and progression, and no true impactful learning. In this case, each individual would have to repeat his/her life in one condition over and over again.”

“This is how a false concept of reincarnation took hold in the human mind and the mind of some other creatures. Having no memories at all, they assume that life is repeatable in the same condition over and over again. If this were the case, all individuals would commit existential suicide because they would have no hope of progressing anywhere. Unless you can utilize what you learned in some productive and creative manner, your learning is a futile venture. It serves no purpose because, after all, you do not remember what you learned at all. What kind of learning is that?”

“This situation would kill any motivation for living, striving and learning. One would end up in total despair and would refuse to continue in manifestation of that unique and specific aspect of the idea of the element in question.”

“For this reason, to assure a continuous flow of life, each individual of the positive state has all memories and accomplishments fully intact from his/her life in all previous states and conditions on which he/she continues to build, adding a new quality, content and quantity of the aspect he/she carries within herself/himself.”

“Thus, in the positive state, what humans call death is the most welcome and joyous event because it heralds a new beginning of a much higher spiritual content. It tells the individual that he/she satisfactorily completed his/her mission in the current condition and thus, now is eligible and ready to transcend that condition.”

“The transcendence of this condition, which humans conceptualize as death, happens simultaneously and synchronously to all three individuals that carry the same idea of the element but in its three distinctly different aspects. By their nature, they cannot ever be separated. Their progression follows the same pattern in intensity, extensity and degree of manifestation of each respective aspect. Therefore, the usefulness of their life at each respective level of their worlds ends precisely at the same moment. At that point, all three of them transcend their current condition and are, if you want to call it that way, resurrected, reborn, transfigured and transformed at a different level.”

“During their transitional period, these three individuals are placed in a special interim world of balancing, where they undergo the process of their personal, individualized Last

Judgment, in the manner described in Chapter Eight of this book. Once the process of their specific Last Judgment is completed, they are assigned to a different level of being and existence, where they continue in their specific assignments.”

“This process goes on to eternity, never being exhausted, thanks to The Absolute nature of each idea of the elements that come from its Absolute Source and is placed into each individual in question.”

“The actual process of birth of each individual at each level of the positive state of Creation is impossible for you to fully comprehend.”

“In the spiritual world this birth is accomplished by purely spiritual means without involvement of any physical process. Once the spiritual aspect of the idea of the element in question is ready to be projected into that world, it seeks out the most suitable condition in that world where it can take hold. The usual way of doing that is utilizing the relationship of any two individuals of the opposite gender who are already positioned there. The result of their sexual relationship is the birth of their own new idea which is attached to the spiritual aspect of the idea of the element in question. From the conjunction of these two and from the elements of their respective environment, a specific external form of manifestation is built by the principles of the sentient mind — the principle of ‘materialization.’”

“In this respect, the word ‘materialization’ is not used in the connotation of matter. It is used to denote an appearance of the new spiritual body-form into which that aspect, combined with the idea of the two sentient entities, is placed. In the moment that aspect enters the prepared spiritual body-form, the body-form is vivified and becomes a unique sentient entity that, as of that moment, becomes alive to eternity, following the path of spiritual progression in the manner mentioned above.”

“Another way of birth in the spiritual world, which is very common, is by a direct endowment by The Lord Jesus Christ without utilization of the two individuals of the opposite gender. In this respect, whenever there is a specific spiritual need, The Lord Jesus Christ releases a specific aspect of a certain idea of His/Her very specific element for the purpose in question and projects it into the spiritual world. Using the specific elements of the spiritual environment, in which that aspect needs to be manifested, from them and from the idea of the purpose for which this process is being undertaken, an external form of manifestation is built. Into this form the content, quality and quantity of the projected aspect of the idea of that specific element is placed, immediately vivifying this form. It becomes a unique sentient entity with a specific mission and assignment that continues to eternity in accordance with the law and principle of spiritual progression.”

“From the above description of birth in the spiritual world, it is obvious that no children, in human connotation of that word, are born. In that world, the newly born are called children only because of their new beginning and because they commence their life at the level of the least degree of manifestation of the aspect which they carry. However, by the external appearance to themselves, they appear as fully adult and they are adult. To others, if looked upon from a distance, they may appear as small children, to reflect the correspondential factors of their current spiritual state and level of their spiritual progression. However, in face to face contact, they appear fully adult the very moment of their vivification or birth.”

“In the intermediate world the process of birth is somewhat different. Once the mental or intermediate aspect of the idea of the element in question is ready to be projected into that world, it first explores by searching the most suitable position and two sentient entities of the opposite gender who are the most congruent and usable for this purpose.”

“Whereas in the spiritual world, the external form or body of manifestation of the aspect of the idea of the element in question is an instantaneous occurrence by the sentient minds’ processes of manifesting their ideas, in the intermediate world, a certain waiting period exists for such a process to occur. In actuality, in that world there are elements of materialization present combined with the external combination of the elements of the environment being used for building that body. The body is built and prepared for the reception of that aspect by a special genetic and mental process. This process does not have an ability to cause an instantaneous materialization and appearance of that body as is the case in the spiritual world.”

“Once the body is at a certain degree of its development, the aspect of the idea of the element in question enters that body and vivifies it. In the moment of this vivification, a new individual is born.”

“Because of a certain minor limitation of that body’s development, the individual is born in a condition which corresponds to, what humans would call, a very early adulthood or very late adolescence. Thus, in this world, certain physical and mental growth of a very brief duration is needed for accommodating the possibility of the full manifestation of the aspect in question. In this respect, again, no children are born in this world.”

“In the external or natural world of Creation, the birth is accomplished by more external means. Once the most without aspect of the idea of the element in question is ready to be manifested into the physical world, it steers two people of the opposite gender to sexually conjoin. In the process of that conjunction, a relevant idea of the most appropriate form is born. That idea is used in extracting the most appropriate genes from the two individuals. Those genes are combined, by a special genetic and scientific process, with the external aspect of the idea of the element in question. In this combined condition, that aspect develops its own external form of manifestation. This process takes approximately nine days (not nine months as is the case with human birth). At the end of the ninth day, the body is vivified and the new individual is born.”

“Because of the physical and external involvement in this process, a newborn individual begins at the level, what humans would consider, of early adolescence or very late childhood. Again, no children in the human terms are ever born in the physical universe.”

“Neither of these briefly described processes of birth involve any human-animalistic form of birth which utilizes a female womb for development of a fetus into which, later on, its specific spirit enters.”

“None of the above processes of birth produce any ignorant or unconscious, helpless individuals as is the case with the human birth. All individuals, at all three levels, are born with the full consciousness and the full knowledge of their purpose and mission for which they were born. Almost immediately, they assume their proper functioning.”

“The situation with the process of birth in the Zone of Displacement and on planet Zero is entirely different.”

“As you remember from the story of the pseudo-creators, they originally used the genetic material left behind by the very first people who lived on planet Earth. From that genetic material, in combination with their own ideas of the negative nature, they fabricated numerous life forms, including humans, whom they specifically equipped with reproductive organs. Knowing that no genuine ideas of any elements and their aspects could have been

utilized from the positive state, that is, from The Creator — The Lord Jesus Christ — the pseudo-creators needed to devise some very intricate means by which procreation and reproduction of all sentient and non-sentient species could be assured indefinitely.”

“As you know and as was repeated many times before, the purpose here was to produce life which would derive from a source other than The Creator, whose Name, at that time, was The Lord God Most High.”

“If you want to initiate life forms or containers or carriers of life which would carry or manifest something that does not come from the original and genuine source of life, no ideas of that source’s elements can be utilized for this purpose. If you were to use such ideas, you would produce only positive life forms that would carry the specific nature of their source in the outward condition. Because that Nature is absolutely positive, any carrier of any aspect from that Nature would also be positive.”

“Due to this arrangement, it was necessary to devise a totally different means of production of the new sentient and non-sentient life forms in order to continuously supply an array of the negative sentient entities and humans whom the negative state could utilize in the process of its main purpose — waging war with and ultimate destruction of the positive state and its Creator.”

“The problem that the pseudo-creators faced in this respect was that, initially, they had to utilize the genetic material which was available at that time. The composition of that genetic material was a positive one. Nothing of the negative nature existed within its content. Thus, a simple use of that material, without any alteration, would produce only positive life forms.”

“But the pseudo-creators knew that any life form or carrier of life, in the condition of its aliveness, sustains that life and is being alive by the idea of its own specific life. Originally, the idea came always from The Creator or, later on, from the combination of The Creator’s ideas and two positive entities of the opposite gender. After all, the idea of life functions as a catalyst for any genetic material to become alive in any form and condition which that idea has.”

“For this reason, different types of ideas began to be generated by the activators of the negative state and inhabitants of the Zone of Displacement. The content of these ideas had an opposing trend to the content of any idea coming from The Creator. They stemmed from the rejected ideas of the positive state which fell out into the Zone of Displacement.”

“These types of ideas were utilized in vivifying the forms and carriers of life in combination with the available genetic material.”

“Once the pseudo-creators succeeded in this process, totally new life forms came into their being and existence which did not contain anything deriving from the positive state, except for the minimal content of the positive genetic material, necessary for providing a life-support system to its carrier or container.”

“Not being able, and not even wanting, to utilize any ideas coming from the positive state in the process of fabrication of the sentient and non-sentient life forms, the pseudo-creators devised a different type of birth process for all within the domain of the Zone of Displacement, all its Hells and on planet Zero.”

“They fabricated the so-called reproductive organs by considerably modifying and altering the sexual organs which were originally built from the positive ideas of creativity. These

reproductive organs were to assure the continuation of all suitable species that would prove to be a reliable tool for spreading of the negative state.”

“Thus, for the first time, a different process of birth was established that did not require any direct participation of any aspect of The Creator of the positive state.”

“From these newly fabricated life forms, a different and very special genetic pool was established, which provides the entire Zone of Displacement with the necessary negative material needed to be combined with any idea occurring as a result of sexual intercourse of two negative entities. The purpose of such an intercourse is to give birth to an idea of more efficient perpetuation, continuation and flourishing of the negative state and the life of the Zone of Displacement. Such an idea then is combined with this new genetic material and in that combination, through a process of peculiar magical and correspondential means, forms a specific external container or carrier into which it places itself, vivifying it and giving birth to a new uniquely negative sentient entity.”

“This is how the process of birth is accomplished throughout the entire Zone of Displacement. In most instances, all life forms produced in the Hells appear in the adult form. However, this is not a general rule. Some are produced in a small child’s form, but with the full knowledge of their pseudo-life purpose. The reason why they are produced in the form of little children is to countermand a positive connotation to which a child’s form corresponds in the positive state.”

“As you know, the main corresponding factor of all little children on planet Zero, and also from the position of the positive state, where some adults, initially, appear as children, is a positive notion of innocence. Innocence is purity of the condition in which the members of the positive state live. Because The Absolute Source of their life is The Creator — The Lord Jesus Christ — He/She is in The Absolute State of The Absolute Innocence.”

“So, in order to countermand and destroy the positive connotation of the State of Innocence, the negative state fabricates its own children that reflect the exact opposite — the most evil, malicious, deceitful, cunning and manipulative attitude and behavior. These life forms in the Zone of Displacement are the worst among all of them. Beware of this fact!”

“It is not by a coincidence that some newborn infants on planet Zero, from the very moment of their birth, seem to be so negative and to cause so many problems for their physical parents. These kinds of infants are incarnations from the stock of children, or their ideas, in the Hells. The fact of this situation is reflected in the following statement in The Holy Bible, Psalm 58:3-5,”

“The wicked are estranged from the womb;
They go astray as soon as they are born, speaking lies.
Their poison is like the poison of a serpent;
They are like the deaf cobra that stops its ear,
Which will not heed the voice of charmers,
Charming ever so skillfully.”

“Now, in the internal sense of this verse is described the hideous nature of those hellish children who were and are being fabricated for the sole purpose to destroy The Holiness of Innocence. Over 95% of the totality of the negative life forms are fabricated from the material which was produced by the relative pseudo-creators. Whatever is produced by the relative beings is always relative.”

“Therefore, by its nature, that material is relative and at the same time, it is of the negative connotation only.”

“On the other hand, the rest of the five percent of the components that are used in the process of birth of these individuals in the Zone of Displacement originally came from The Creator, as a Source of any life at all. However, the less than five percent in question, before its incorporation in this process, is completely modified and altered. From it, any positive connotation is removed, and only a spark of life remains, able to ignite and maintain a flame of semblance of life in these fabricated or born individuals.”

“The conceptualization of this spark, in turn, is distorted, falsified and perverted, so that these individuals have no awareness of anything positive, good and true. Not only that, they are conditioned to believe and to accept two major falsities: One, no other type or form or style of life exists but what they are and what they have. Two, their type of life is positive and good and everything else, if it exists at all, is of the negative, adverse, false and evil nature.”

“Because the entire Zone of Displacement has no direct experiential concept of what life is like in the positive state, no comparison is available to them. All they have to compare to is what they experience within the life of the Zone of Displacement. This experience consists of the various degrees of evils and falsities. It is perceived from the most outward, superficial degree of any evil or false component to its most low — their most ‘within’ or the most evil and the most false pseudo-internal state.”

“In this respect, once any idea is produced for the purpose of its birth or becoming a negative sentient entity, it has its own three aspects or components — the most low (which is the negative state’s most within), the intermediate or its own negative mentality and its most without or the external aspect. From these various aspects the pseudo-mind of the negative entities is built. From the most low their pseudo-spiritual inner mind is built; from the intermediate component their pseudo-interior mind or pseudo-mentality is built; and from the external aspect their pseudo-external mind is built.”

“When such an idea is projected for its birth, it is projected simultaneously and synchronously from the position of all its three components. Thus, simultaneously and synchronously, three individuals are born: One is born in the Hells, which are the pseudo-spiritual, most low, of the Zone of Displacement. This area is a direct opposing factor of the spiritual world or Heaven in the positive state of Creation. The other individual is born in the intermediate world of the Zone of Displacement which corresponds, in a negative connotation, to the intermediate world of the true Creation. The third individual is born in the physical world of the Zone of Displacement, situated in a negatively corresponding proximity to the physical world of the true Creation.”

“As you see, up to this point, there is a parallel development of this process with the process which happens in the positive state of Creation. Except that it always has a totally negative connotation.”

“However, one more component is added to that negative idea. In reality, that component is artificially superimposed on the genuine three components of that idea, carrying the summary of the full content of those components. Once it is integrated into that idea, it is then projected, in a synchronous and simultaneous manner, for a physical birth on planet Zero in the form of a human being.”

“Thus, from the process of birth in the Zone of Displacement, instead of the three individuals, four are born. This arrangement of the negative state is a necessary condition in order to

maintain a typical human life, functional and alive.”

“Because each of these four individuals originated from the same idea, they are interconnected and interdependent. In relationship to each other, together with their pseudo-consorts, built from the masculine or feminine aspects of that idea, respectively, they function as each other’s initial or primary shadows.”

“Now, for the first time, you have a clear understanding of how the shadows originated. Of course, to them, in the negative connotation, these other individuals, who derived from the same idea, are not shadows but true spiritual advisors and brothers and sisters. They feed each other various degrees of evilness and falsification, each from his/her own position, state and place.”

“In order to balance this situation, particularly in regard to planet Zero, whenever a human is born (until July 1, 1988), who comes from the above-described combination, The Lord Jesus Christ sends a volunteer from the positive state who incarnates on planet Zero at the same time as the individual in question. However, this statement you have to take in a qualitative, and not quantitative, sense. In other words, the birth of an individual on planet Zero who comes from the negative state is not necessarily matched on a one to one basis with an individual who incarnates from the positive state. One volunteer from the positive state, by the quality of his/her goodness and positiveness, can match many thousands or even millions of individuals who came from the negative state.”

“In this respect, quantitatively, the number of individuals who come from the positive state, in comparison with the numbers coming from the negative state, is very low, and as you are aware, has been getting lower and lower almost minute by minute until the date came that no such incarnation from the positive state is any longer permitted. To repeat again, that date was July 1, 1988 at 3:08 p.m. (15:08) — Pacific Daylight Time.”

“All individuals, at all levels of the Zone of Displacement, born from the idea in question, become true shadows of the volunteer who incarnated on planet Zero from the positive state for the purpose of blocking his/her activities and mission as much as possible.”

“Now, each individual born in the negative state, that is, in the Zone of Displacement by the above-described process, is born at the least level of evilness and falsification of the state where he/she is born. Because of the double relativity of his/her nature (double because he/she did not originate from The Absolute Source), the specificity of that individual’s unique manifestation of his/her own evilness and falsification becomes, at one point, exhausted.”

“The striving of all in the negative state is to acquire a greater degree of evilness and falsification. Since they consider it good and true, they are in an illusion that the more evil they become, the greater degree of falsification they achieve, the better life and position they will have within the hierarchy of their hellish organization. For this reason, once they feel that they contributed as much of evilness and falsification as they were capable of producing to the common evil and falsity of the level where they were originally born, they are permanently removed from that region.”

“The usual mode of removal is by some kind of violent means. In human terms, these means correspond to something comparable to being killed, murdered or assassinated.”

“In this respect, these individuals do experience death and they actually die.”

“However, immediately after death, or shortly thereafter, they are resurrected in the region,

the nature of which is of greater evils and falsities than the previous one. After resurrection, these individuals are reborn in a new form congruent to the nature of the new world. Thus, they are transfigured in all aspects of their personalities to accommodate them to the nature of the new world. Once the process of transfiguration is completed, the process of transmogrification follows, during which they totally change into the image and likeness of evils and falsities underlying the life of their new world.”

“Now, this process, in a similar or approximate manner, has been going on in the Zone of Displacement with all its individuals and creatures since the time of activation of the negative state or its population. It will continue in the same, or similar manner, as long as the negative state exists. In the initial period, after they appear in the new world, all memories of these individuals from their previous lives are retained. However, gradually, in the process of their transmogrification, these memories fade away and they consciously stop remembering anything about their previous experiences. From this fact, in the process of forgetting, their unconsciousness is built. This unconsciousness gradually becomes of greater and greater degree in their mind.”

“The reason why the individuals in the negative state are built in such a manner as to have unconscious processes and to be ignorant not only of what they experienced before, but of the existence of the positive state, is because, in every previous existence, they were in a condition of lesser degree of evilness and falsities.”

“In comparison with any current situation, in which they live at any given moment, memories of the lesser degree of evils and falsities may pull them back to that mode of behavior, attitude and activity congruent to that former degree. In this case, there is a danger of corruption of others in the new world who have no conscious knowledge of any lesser degree of evils and falsities. Also the survival of such an individual is at stake because no one there could have anything less than what they are accustomed to and what is considered to be the source of their very life.”

“The more hidden and mysterious reasons for the unconscious processes and ignorance of all in the negative state is that there is some degree of remote, almost imperceptible, goodness in being less evil and less in falsities than the requirements one’s condition mandates. As you see, comparatively, with someone more evil and more in falsities, the one who is in their lesser degree may appear to the other one as good. Thus, there is a danger for the individuals in the negative state to discover the concept of goodness.”

“The logic of such discovery lies in the fact that you can easily conclude that, if there is a state of lesser evils and falsities, then it could be assumed that another state exists which is even less evil and falsified.

And if such a state exists, then there must be a state which is even further from evilness and falsification than the succeeding condition. At one point, this kind of logic could lead one to the conclusion that a totally different state exists where no evils and falsities rule. By the nature of each sentient entity, no matter of what structure, that sentient entity would become curious and desirous to experience such a state. The curiosity and desire of this nature may lead one to a desire and a need to get out of the negative state and to convert to the positive state.”

“This is one of the major reasons why the unconscious processes, ignorance and hidden or repressed memories exist throughout the entire Zone of Displacement.”

“On the other hand, all sentient entities in the negative state are made aware of the existence

of other regions, worlds and domains of the negative state which are of a greater degree of evils and falsities than their present one. And although they are not permitted to visit those worlds or regions directly, in order that the inhabitants of those regions are not contaminated by their comparatively lesser degree of evilness and falsities, nevertheless, they are motivated by this particular conscious knowledge to strive to become more evil and in a greater degree of falsities.”

“As you see from these arrangements, no one person ever reincarnates into the same region of the Zone of Displacement that he/she previously lived in before his/her death. Even from the standpoint of the Zone of Displacement, the concept of reincarnation is a totally false, unreal concept.”

“The above situation in the Zone of Displacement has been existing for many millions of years. Because of that condition, no one was able to convert to the positive state. No one ever, except for the secret agents of the positive state, who were perceived by others to be evil entities, came out of the Hells. This situation gave many humans and the literal sense of The Holy Bible an impression, that, once anyone enters the Hells by the process of self-condemnation, or whoever lives in the Hells, with the exception of the secret agents of the positive state, can never come out of them and has to stay there to eternity.”

“But incarnation of The Creator God Most High in the form of Jesus Christ into the Zone of Displacement via planet Zero eternally changed this situation. The outposts of the positive state were established in all regions of the Zone of Displacement for proclamation of The Gospel of Salvation through The Lord Jesus Christ. The activities of these outposts were manifoldly intensified, especially after The Most High incorporated and fused into His/Her Nature all acquired elements of the Zone of Displacement and planet Zero.”

“This revolutionary change in The Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ not only shields all agents of the positive state who volunteer to staff those outposts from any danger to themselves in any mode and way, coming from the murderous crew of the Hells, at the same time shielding the negative entities from being hurt by the presence in their domain of these positive agents, but it also allows The Lord Jesus Christ to appear directly and personally in any region of the Hells. This situation established a new favorable condition for the possibility of conversion of the individuals who are in the Hells and are eligible to convert.”

“The eligibility for conversion is determined by the factor of retribution for any evil and falsifying act. Inherent in the nature of any degree of evil and falsity is its price or reward. This is the nature of any life. The same is true about the positive state. Inherent in its nature of goodness and truth is its prize and reward. Any evil and falsifying act produces an evil or false prize or reward. The acts of good and truth produce a good and true prize or reward. This is the order and structure of Creation and the Zone of Displacement.”

“Once any individual is rewarded for his/her acts and is ready to proceed to the next step of his/her life, before proceeding further, he/ she is put in a transitional phase of preparation for the next step. It is in the process of this transitional period, before assumption of the new role or position in the next step, but after retribution or reward was imparted on and fully experienced by him/her, such an individual becomes eligible for conversion to the positive state.”

“During the transitional period, only one law is valid: The Law of Mercy and Forgiveness of The Lord Jesus Christ. All other laws are defunct in the interim period.”

“This is how The Lord Jesus Christ remains absolutely just, not interfering with the process of

reward or retribution which is a just due to anyone as a result of any chosen activities, and, at the same time, He/She remains Absolutely Merciful and Forgiving, giving everyone an opportunity to convert to the positive state, before he/she assumes his/her life in the next step.”

“Now, this situation did not exist before the time of The Most High’s incarnation in the form of Jesus Christ on your planet and the rest of the Zone of Displacement. It was gradually, very carefully and slowly introduced after the return of Jesus Christ from your planet. The full establishment of this condition did not actually commence until after the human era in the intermediate world of spirits was abolished and all negative forces were pushed back into their own domain and planet Zero. As you remember, this did not happen until, what corresponds to your temporal terms, the year of 1982.”

“Another point to realize about the Zone of Displacement and all its Hells is the fact that, before this new situation was established, the being and existence of all regions of the Zone of Displacement and their Hells, as well as planet Zero, had been for many eons (if we calculate in the terms of your concept of time). You see, Peter, for many eons no change in the conditions of the Hells took place. Everything was the same. Within that period of time, no one in the Hells ever converted to the positive state. Not only had no one converted to the positive state, but such an act was utterly inconceivable and impossible for the simple reason that no foundation existed for such a possibility.”

“As you know, only The Lord Jesus Christ can convert anyone. But The Lord Jesus Christ at that time was not The Lord Jesus Christ of the present time. At that time, He/She was The Most High Who had nothing of the Zone of Displacement and planet Zero in His/Her Nature.”

“Now, as mentioned just above, that situation, the impression that humans and creatures of the Hells had and still have, was that, once anyone is condemned or condemns oneself to the Hells, or is born in the Hells initially, that one can never come out of the Hells. If you live in the Hells for eons after eons, you can have no other impression but that you will live there for eternity without any possibility of being freed from that condition.”

“This impression is, of course, reinforced by the numerous literal statements of The Holy Bible which very clearly indicate that this is the case and the true reality.”

“What most of you failed to recognize up to this point is that The Holy Bible was written during the time when this impression was a correct one. The only thing that The Holy Bible was foreseeing was that a Savior would be born to this world who would accomplish a very important act of salvation of all who accept that act of salvation. But The Holy Bible, in its literal sense, does not say what the act of salvation exactly consists of, what its extent is and how and to whom it is applicable. Because The Holy Bible was written on your planet, it was foolishly assumed that this act of salvation is limited and applicable only to humans on your planet.”

“This was permitted to happen because, as you see, nothing as yet had been built at that time which would indicate that such a possibility might exist sometime in the future. Remember, the true process of salvation or conversion of the sentient entities in the Hells could not start until 1982 and be fully implemented until The Most High became the fullness of The Lord Jesus Christ (late 1987).”

“In the interim, after The Lord Jesus Christ’s departure from planet Zero, and during the process of hybridization and fusion of the bodyflesh in question, many other preparations were made that were needed if such a process of massive conversion were to take place.

First of all, a new Heavenly Society needed to be created; a New School needed to be opened.”

“For all the participants of that new society and New School an entirely new universe needed to be created; an extensive training and retraining needed to be taken; a new region between the Hells and the intermediate world needed to be built and opened and staffed with individuals properly and specifically trained for that purpose. From this purpose, a New Revelation needed to be transmitted. And many other numerous things needed to be accomplished and established, things that are utterly beyond your comprehension. Most of these things were finished by 1982 and the rest of them were completed by the end of 1987.”

“The culmination of all these events was the transmission of this portion of The New Revelation. This completes the circle for this cycle of time.”

“So, no wonder that all people, creatures and humans, even in the positive state, up to that point, were of the impression that, once you are in any region of the Hells, you will stay there forever.”

“In view of the revolutionary changes, a different connotation of the concept of birth, death, resurrection, rebirth, transfiguration and transformation exists with the members of the negative state in comparison with what they experienced before within their own Zone of Displacement. This connotation relates to the process of their conversion to the positive state.”

“As you remember, Peter, you were accused by some members of the Swedenborgian Church that, in your conceptualization, it is easy to convert to the positive state, even for a most evil and negative devil or Satan or demon or whoever is in the Hells.”

“The accusation implied that there is nothing to it, to being in evils and falsities, because you can simply turn from it and that is it — you are saved. In a moment of time, by waving a magic wand, you are turned from a devil of darkness into an angel of light. This implication is a gross vulgarization of the process of conversion. None of you have even the slightest notion of all the things that are involved in this process. This process transcends any level of your understanding or ability to comprehend what it entails.”

“The very first step in this process is the eligibility of any particular individual as described above. Once the eligibility is established, that individual is led (after the expression of his/her desire for conversion), step-by-little-step, out of the Hells. These steps follow a reverse order. From the greater degree of evils and falsities to their lesser degree, until they arrive at that special region between the Hells and the intermediate world. That region is placed in a neutral condition.”

“What no one realizes is that, during the reversed procedure, at each step of the lesser degree of evils and falsities, as the memories of those previous states are being opened, one goes through very painful periods of further retribution for the acts that he/she was liable for committing at the level of each reversed step. This takes a tremendous amount of time, effort, determination and endurance for all who undertake this process.”

“Also, do not forget that, during this reversed process, all these individuals are subjected to the most vicious, mean, cruel, painful and persistent attacks by other members of the negative state who continue in their life of evils and falsities. If it were not for the fact that The Lord Jesus Christ personally, privately and intimately encourages, supports and helps these individuals at each step of their progression toward getting out of the Hells, none of them

could survive and succeed for a second. All of them would succumb to those unbelievable attacks.”

“But why do you think The Lord Jesus Christ so fundamentally changed His/Her Nature by infusing into it that body-flesh or the elements of the Zone of Displacement and planet Zero? For decoration and showoff? The exact reason why He/She did so was to be able to enter the Hells and help all those poor creatures to go through that process successfully. Otherwise, everyone would be really locked forever in that condition.”

“Once any individual succeeds in getting out of the Hells, he/she comes to that special region between the Hells and the intermediate world. In the moment this takes place, that individual dies, as far as the Hells are concerned. This is a new conceptualization of death for the Zone of Displacement. The Hells lose that individual forever. He/she is never reborn in some other region of the Hells.”

“The entrance into that region signifies the individual’s resurrection from the dead life of the negative state. But at the time of this resurrection, the individual in question appears in that region in his/ her former external form-body. That body-form is not conducive for entrance into the positive state proper. Remember, that specific region between the Hells and intermediate world is in a neutral state. In the neutral state any life forms with any types of bodies (except for the human type of body) can comfortably survive. This is the nature of the neutral state.”

“However, in the positive state only a form conducive to its atmosphere can survive. Because every individual appears in that form and that form is an integral part of his/her personality, it is important that a new form, conducive to life in the positive state, be acquired by that individual.”

“The process of changing this formal appearance is called the process of transfiguration. This process is an intricate conglomeration of genetic, spiritual, mental and physical readjustments and re-wiring, which is impossible for you to understand as long as you are in the human condition.”

“Once the process of transfiguration is completed and the individual adjusts to his/her new appearance, he/she proceeds to the next stage. He/she enters a special division of The New School for spiritual Reawakening, Rebirth and Restructuring. In the moment of his/her entrance to The New School, this individual is reborn into a new life of the positive state. In this New School, a process of that individual’s transformation begins. It consists of such unusual and wonderful things that no words in your human language exist that can describe or express everything that takes place during this time.”

“Once the process of transformation is completed, the individual receives a new identity, a new life and a new assignment within some region of the positive state of Creation. Graduation from The New School and acquirement of the new identity constitutes that individual’s ***new spiritual birth***. A real and true life of that individual in the positive state begins at this crucial moment. After that, the individual in question goes through the same process of spiritual progression, as described at the beginning of this Chapter.”

“As you see from this very brief and incomplete description, the process of conversion is a very complex and difficult one, but it was made possible by the saving act of The Lord Jesus Christ. As of now, it is made possible for everyone. And, what is wonderful, with the time to come, the process will be easier and easier. Each new experience in this respect paves the way for any subsequent cases of conversion.”

“However, everyone will still have to go through the above-described steps, except in a shortened and less damaging manner. Now, this is what the terms ‘birth,’ ‘death,’ ‘resurrection,’ ‘rebirth,’ ‘transfiguration’ and ‘transformation’ really mean.”

“As far as human birth is concerned, certain peculiarities exist in the process of human conception. The fabrication of humankind by the pseudo-creators was already extensively described in this book and in the previous books of The New Revelation. Also, the process of incarnation of the agents of the positive state and the agents of the negative state was already described.”

“However, the situation is somewhat different with humans who are born to be humans without coming directly either from the positive state or from the negative state.”

“In the process of conjunction of the two humans of the opposite gender, an idea is born which reflects the specific nature of its parents in varying conditions. In most instances, the human parents of that idea have no conscious awareness of its content, quality and quantity, nor of the fact that such an idea was born. Once the idea is born, it seeks out the means for building its external form of manifestation. This is done through physical sexual intercourse of two humans of the opposite gender.”

“The peculiarity of human birth is found in the fact that the physical body for that idea is built in a parasitic way — in the female’s physical womb. As mentioned before, nowhere else in Creation or anywhere in the Zone of Displacement does such an unnatural, unusual, abnormal, painful and dangerous manner of physical birth exist.”

“Once the idea in question is conceived, it is projected by special spiritual means, unknown to humans (such means cannot be revealed even now!), into a special and specific intermediate world, where it is, in the form of spirit and temporary form of its mentation, prepared for its entrance into an unusual and most harsh condition in a female’s womb and planet Zero.”

“While this preparation takes place, a specific human fetus for the body of that idea is being developed.”

“In the process of that preparation, several things happen to that idea-spirit. First of all, it is exposed to various negative and positive experiences. It incorporates those experiences into its content.”

“Secondly, by incorporating any of these experiences, it invites various other spirits who exposed it to these experiences to become an integral part of its future life. Thereby, by incorporation of these experiences into its content and by invitation to those spirits to be an integral part of its future life, a peculiar contradictory spiritual, mental and physical atmosphere is developed which will become the content of that idea’s future human personality. This contradictory nature is compounded by two factors:”

“One, the parents of that idea are humans. Being humans means being nothing but contradictions. So, at the very first moment of birth, that idea is already full of contradictions. This nature determines the idea to seek out contradictory experiences in that special intermediate world which exists solely for that purpose. Two, the physical body, which is developed in the female womb for that idea, is built from the elements of the negative state. By its very nature and state, it is supportive of any contradictions.”

“The very structure of that body itself is conducive to the life of the negative state but is very

poisonous to the life of the positive state. This structure continuously forces every spirit which is trapped in it to be negative and full of contradictions and opposites.”

“This situation is particularly miserable for the agents of the positive state. Their spirit and soul are positive but they are trapped in a body that, by its very nature, goes against anything contained in that spirit and soul.”

“On the other hand, this situation is particularly conducive for the agents of the negative state who feel at home in such a body and thrive in its negative nature, full of contradictions.”

“For others, humans proper, this situation becomes a lifestyle of indecisiveness, of being torn between one extreme and the other, of uncertainty, of obscurity and of inconsistencies, never knowing exactly or for sure what is proper and right and what is not.”

“Once the idea in question acquires what it needs to acquire in that intermediate world, it enters into its fetus and vivifies it. The actual entrance of that spirit-idea into its fetus does not happen until the very end of the fifth month in its mother’s womb. Thus, the fetus is almost six months old when it receives its spirit and soul and becomes truly alive. Up to that point, no true and genuine life can be appropriated to it, no matter who says what about this issue on your planet.”

“During its four months of being in that fetus, a total isolation and separation of that spirit and soul from any other sources occurs, except that it retains in its unconscious part the presence of all those invited contradictory spirits. At the same time, all conscious memories of that spirit and soul about anything are repressed and obliterated, so that at the time of its birth it has no conscious knowledge of anything at all. It is born in total conscious ignorance, without any conscious memories or knowledge.”

“Because of this important factor, humans are born in the form of infants, in the condition of total and complete helplessness and dependency on adults. By a slow and laborious process they develop into functional adult individuals, full of contradictions and confusions. The spirits incorporated into them, with whom they were born, become their spiritual advisors — if they relate to the positive experiences, and become their shadows — if they relate to the negative experiences. Because of the full identification with their nature, the newborn humans and the spirits who accompany them bear a certain degree of resemblance.”

“Once any human fulfills the purpose of his/her life on planet Zero, his/her body dies. Subsequently he/she is resurrected in the intermediate world and there he/she goes through the process described in Chapter Nineteen of this book (‘Life After Human Life’). You are thereby referred to that Chapter for refreshing your memory regarding this issue.”

“If anyone has ears to hear, let him/her hear what The Lord Jesus Christ reveals in this Chapter.”

CHAPTER TWENTY THREE

HOW THE LORD JESUS CHRIST GOVERNS HIS/HER CREATION, THE ZONE OF DISPLACEMENT AND PLANET ZERO

On May 9, 1988, at 4:58 in the morning, the word of The Lord Jesus Christ came to me saying:

“The process, the means, the ways and the manners by which The Lord Jesus Christ governs and operates His/Her Creation, the Zone of Displacement and planet Zero, in their full and exhaustive entirety, cannot be comprehended or apprehended by a limited human mind. As a matter of fact, most of the aspects of this operation and government, being that they are of such a magnitude, intensity and extensity, cannot enter the understanding of the human mind by any mode of human perception, thinking or even intuition. Nothing exists in humans perceptive, comprehensive and imaginary abilities that would be capable of giving them even a remote idea how this takes place.”

“However, in most instances, this is true not only about humans, but also about any sentient mind in being and existence. The reason for this limitation of all, no matter how advanced spiritually they are, is that the process of governing and operation of Creation, the Zone of Displacement and planet Zero takes place from The Absolute State.”

“Being that all sentient entities are relative to this Absolute State, they are unable to fully grasp most of the aspects of this process. Because of the relativity of their condition, that grasp is only in relative terms. Some grasp more and some grasp less, depending on the degree of their spiritual development. Any understanding from the relative position, when an attempt is made to apply it on something that has Absolute quality, value and operation, will be only relative. Hence, its considerable limitations.”

“But some relative ideas about this activity, government and operation may enter even the human mind which is the most limited of all the sentient minds. Certain aspects of this process were already revealed through Emanuel Swedenborg in his book Divine Providence and in some passages of the previous books and this book of The New Revelation.”

“However, as you know, since that time, many profound and revolutionary changes occurred, not only in Creation, but, most importantly, in The Nature of Governor, The Creator Himself/Herself. These changes may reflect also the change of the manner, the scope and the means by which The Lord Jesus Christ, Who is Absolute and the only Governor and Creator, governs and operates His/Her Creation, the Zone of Displacement and planet Zero.”

“As you see, three different designations for this governing are used: Creation, the Zone of Displacement and planet Zero. The reason for this distinction is that each particular sphere of governing requires different means, manners and tools. What is applicable and resultful in Creation is not necessarily so in the Zone of Displacement. What is applicable and resultful in the Zone of Displacement is not necessarily so on planet Zero. And although planet Zero is considered to be on the edge or within the sphere of the Zone of Displacement, its cosmic, spiritual, mental and physical position is such that it requires a very special approach for governing its destiny. This position of planet Zero was discussed in Chapter Seventeen of

this book and in some other Chapters.”

“Let us discuss, ***very briefly and in a very limited sense***, how this governing and operation by The Lord Jesus Christ takes place.”

“Basically, there are four methods for governing Creation, four methods for governing the Zone of Displacement, and three methods for governing planet Zero.”

(1)

“The first method for governing Creation relates to the structure of Creation itself. As you know, the entire Creation is the idea of The Creator, occurring in the state of inwardness and projected into the process of outwardness. Thus, you can conceptualize Creation as the outwardness of The Creator’s ideas. Because these ideas are occurring in The Absolute state, they have Absolute values. They always are because their Producer always IS. This state of ideas assures several important things:”

“a. By their continuous occurrence in The Absolute State of The Inwardness of The Creator, they assure that Creation always is.

b. Because Creation’s being and existence depends entirely on occurrence of these ideas in The Absolute State, its continuous being and existence is assured. You have to understand that Creation and its course is possible only because The Creator maintains in His/Her Absolute State of Inwardness all necessary ideas for the Creation’s being and existence, its evolvment and development at all its levels of functions. For this reason, if such ideas were to be withdrawn from their occurrence within The Absolute State of Inwardness of The Creator even for a fraction of a moment, the entire Creation would cease to be and to exist instantly.

c. The Absolute values of these ideas assure continuous usefulness of Creation’s being and existence. As long as such values exist in an Absolute Sense, the usefulness of Creation’s being and existence can never be exhausted.

d. The continuous occurrence of these ideas within The Absolute State of Inwardness of The Creator assures that Creation is motivated to reflect, to carry and to manifest all infinite varieties of all aspects of these Absolute Ideas. Without such continuous motivation, Creation would run down and stop functioning and performing its purpose for which it was created.”

“Now, the occurrence of these ideas takes place in The Absolute State. Because of this factor, they are Absolute. Also the process of projection of the content of these ideas into the outwardness of that inwardness is Absolute in itself. However, in the moment that outwardness becomes its own manifestation, by virtue of the fact that it becomes (meaning it was not always), it becomes relative to that Absolute. But because this relative condition derives from its Absolute source, it can be conceived as an extension of that Absolute in its relative condition. Not only is this relative an extension of The Absolute, but The Absolute is present in its extension in a relative sense.”

“As you remember, although nothing of the relative is present in The Absolute, The Absolute is always present in the relative, filling it up completely. From The Absolute State, any relative condition, being that the relative condition is the extension and the process of that Absolute, is perceptible, discernible and encompassible in an Absolute Sense. Thus, The Creator, from His/Her Absolute State, knows firsthand, in an Absolute Sense, to the minutest details, about everything that happens in any relative condition.”

“Being that the entire Creation is His/Her relative condition — outwardness is always relative to the inwardness — The Creator is in the most direct contact with all events of Creation at any time, at any place, in any state and in any condition and process. From the position of this direct experiential knowledge and perception, The Creator governs His/Her Creation and its entire multiverse.”

(2)

“The second method for governing Creation relates to the structure of all sentient entities and their sentient minds. As you remember, each sentient entity in Creation is a container and a carrier of a very specific and unique aspect of the element of the idea of sentience which derives from The Absolute Idea of The Absolute Sentience of The Creator. As you also know, the major purpose of creating all these sentient entities was for sharing and reciprocating The Absolute Life of The Creator in the spirit of total freedom and independency. For this purpose, special specific environments were created by The Creator into which the sentient entities were placed. These environments were created in such a manner as to make them totally dependent on the function of the sentient entities’ sentient minds.”

“Now, the spiritual principles and laws state that any aspect of the element of the idea not only depends on that idea itself but, together with that idea, it depends on its producer. And not only that, but any aspect of the idea carries within itself a unique presence of its Creator in a relative condition.”

“By this principle, The Creator, being The Absolute Within, is present directly in every relative without through and by all sentient entities who are carriers of these various aspects. From this position The Creator is able to perceive instantaneously all events, happenings, conditions, processes and states not only in Creation or its environments but also in each and every sentient mind. And being that environments of Creation were made dependent on the function of the sentient mind, from the position of His/Her presence in that mind The Creator knows immediately of any possible malfunction or deviation of the course of Creation and the sentient entities. This makes it possible for The Creator to bring into alignment any deviations, and to correct and repair any malfunctions.”

“You have to understand that Creation and sentient entities, being relative and not Absolute, cannot be perfect in an Absolute Sense. Only The Absolute Creator is Absolutely Perfect. However, anything less than The Creator, no matter how advanced it is or he/she is, even if it or he/she were right next in the line to The Creator, is still not Absolute. Therefore, by virtue of this fact, everything and everyone is subject to some occasional errors, misperceptions or being out of alignment with the rest of Creation.”

“The principle here is that the closer one is to The Creator, the less such errors or mistakes occur. The more remote the approximation to The Creator, the greater are possibilities of such errors, misperceptions or mistakes.”

“Being present within the most within of the sentient mind, The Creator perceives immediately any possible liabilities and corrects them in, through and by that sentient mind. In this respect, the smooth running and maintenance of Creation is eternally assured.”

“This mode of governing of Creation gives all sentient entities an experiential sense that they personally, directly and intimately participate in the process of this governing because all ideas of that governing are generated by The Creator through and by them. They are the receptors, comprehenders and executors of such ideas from The Creator.”

(3)

"The third method of governing relates to the principles and laws of creativity. These laws and principles are the integral states and conditions of The Absolute Nature of The Creator. In fact, to repeat again and again (to the dismay of many complainers that too much redundancy exists in this book), The Creator is His/Her Absolute Laws and Principles. Thus, the process of Creation cannot take place outside of these laws and principles. Some of these laws were formulated in Chapter Ten of this book."

"The process of Creation not only follows these laws and principles but Creation cannot be created and subsequently continuously sustained unless these laws and principles become its integral nature."

"For this reason, you can say that Creation is governed through and by the laws and principles of its Creator. And because The Creator is His/Her own Laws and Principles, He/She is directly present in them at all times, at all places, in all states and under any conditions. The Creator's direct presence in these Laws and Principles makes it possible for Him/Her to know immediately in an Absolute Sense everything that is going on in Creation. Any violation of or deviation from these laws and principles is immediately registered and perceived and corrective actions are implemented on the spot, so-to-speak."

"Now, the above three methods of governing Creation are always in a direction from within to without. The Lord Jesus Christ, Who is The Creator, governs His/Her Creation from the state of His/Her Absolute Inwardness. This is governing from 'from' to 'to.'"

"In this mode of governing, nothing exists that would be in a position of that 'to.' 'To' is always an extension of 'From.' It does not have its independent being and existence. To a certain extent, this was a liability. You can conceive this type of governing as unilateral."

"You have to understand very clearly that The Presence of The Creator in His/Her Creation and in sentient entities was always in within. The Creator was in within of Creation but not in without of Creation. This was the reason why all governing took place from within to without but never from without to within. If The Creator was never in without of Creation, no governing from without to within can take place. In order to rectify this situation, it was necessary for The Creator, in the form of Jesus Christ, to incarnate into the most without of Creation or outside of Creation and assume a relative condition and a condition that was not derived from any idea of The Creator."

"Thus, as Jesus Christ, The Creator experienced His/Her Creation from its own outward position, and from the position of being outside of Creation. Through a special mysterious process of hybridization and fusion, The Creator incorporated within His/Her Absolute Nature the process of outwardness of Creation and the condition of outsideness of Creation, becoming The Lord Jesus Christ."

"As you see, two factors exist here: One is the outwardness of Creation and the other is being outside of Creation (outside of that outwardness). Being outside of Creation means to be in the Zone of Displacement and to look upon Creation from an entirely different perspective. Being in outwardness of Creation means to perceive Creation from the position of without but still being an integral part of Creation. In this connotation, 'without' is an integral part of Creation, being its natural degree. Thus, to be in a natural degree of Creation means to perceive Creation from the position of its outwardness. Being outside of Creation (outside of the without) means to have no part in Creation. This is the negative state. We shall return to this issue in a moment."

“In order to be successful, the incarnation of The Most High Creator in the form of Jesus Christ into the outside of Creation had to follow certain laws and principles. There is a great mystery here which has never been revealed before.”

“Jesus Christ, before entering the body, prepared in Mary’s womb, had to go through that special intermediate world as anyone else. You have to follow your own rules in order to make the process work. Not only that, but while in that world, Jesus Christ visited the natural or the most without degree of Creation and acquired while there certain elements that He/She incorporated into the totality of His/Her mentality — Jesus — and into His/Her external mind — Christ. The acquirement of these elements was a necessary condition for safe entrance on planet Zero and for the acquirement of a special condition and body-flesh, by and through which He/She could enter the most outside of Creation (the without of the without) — the Zone of Displacement and all its Hells and regions.”

“Thus, ***incarnation of Jesus Christ on planet Zero and via planet Zero into the Zone of Displacement, was preceded by a special type of visit by Jesus Christ to the natural degree of Creation, where He/She experienced His/Her Creation from without to within.***”

“During this visit, Jesus Christ established there a special eternal condition which allows Him/Her to be present in His/Her Creation not only from within to without, but also, simultaneously and synchronously, from without to within.”

(4)

“From this new position, being in His/Her Absolute State, The Lord Jesus Christ governs His/Her Creation in a ***bi-lateral mode***. This is the fourth mode of governing. This is a mode of all-inclusive government. This type of government existed within The Creator as a potential but not as an actual reality. Its reality existed by the promise of The Creator to His/Her Creation that, at one point in time and space, He/She would rectify this situation.”

“What you need to realize here again is that Creation is created from within to without. Therefore, The Creator’s presence in Creation must be first from within to without. It cannot be from without to within because the without must be created first. However, once this without is created, the arrangements are made to establish a condition which would allow The Creator to experience His/Her Creation not only from His/Her Absolute Within Condition (Absolute Inwardness), but also from the position of its relativity — from without.”

“The Creator, in His/Her original condition, cannot experience His/ Her Creation from its own position because nothing of the relative nature is contained within Him/Her. Therefore, such an experience is only an indirect one through and by the relative sentient mind. But this experience is limited by the factor that the presence of The Creator in any sentient mind is always ***within*** that sentient mind and from that position, also in ***without*** of the sentient mind. Again, even this experience is from within to without. The only possible way to rectify this situation and to experience Creation the way sentient entities do, was to become one of them with all their conditions and attributes.”

“By that experience, a new mode of governing of Creation was added to the above three — the mode of from without to within.”

“The need to establish also this mode of government stems not only from the fact that it became an all-inclusive form of government and therefore even more direct from all directions than it was before, but it made it possible for The Creator to be ***personally*** present in the most without degree of Creation and also outside of Creation. And not only that, but,

most importantly, this presence is needed in an Absolute Sense if the negative state is to be ever completely and totally eliminated.”

“As mentioned before, the presence of The Lord Jesus Christ in that degree and in the Zone of Displacement, will assure in the future that the negative state will never be produced again, to eternity, because it cannot happen while His/Her presence is there.”

“The government of the Zone of Displacement by The Lord Jesus Christ follows a somewhat different pattern.”

(1)

“In the first instance, the Zone of Displacement, being outside of Creation (outside of the outsideness), opposes the true structure of Creation. The original material from which the Zone of Displacement was built contains all elements of the true Creation but in an opposed and distorted condition and form. These elements are in a totally different combination and they follow different laws and principles. By following this pattern, the Zone of Displacement produces a special spiritual pressure and atmosphere which accompanies its being and existence. This pressure is directed against the true Creator and His/Her Creation. Therefore, the entire condition of the Zone of Displacement, in all its details, becomes unlawful and disorderly. It continuously disturbs all laws and all orders.”

“From this disturbing factor, all the components of the Zone of Displacement can be easily perceived. If you take into consideration that The Creator functions from The Absolute Condition of The Absolute Law and Order, everything which opposes this condition is governed **by the process of The Absolute Knowing of the Difference** existing between the true Creation and the Zone of Displacement.”

“The principle here is that any action taken by The Creator and anywhere in Creation produces an instantaneous opposing reaction in the Zone of Displacement. If you know the full nature of all actions in an Absolute Sense, you will know their reactions also in an Absolute Sense. Through The Absolute Knowledge of how the Zone of Displacement will react to these actions, The Creator governs its entire destiny and fate.”

(2)

“In the second instance, the negative sentient entities reject to acknowledge the presence of The Creator in them — in their ability to freely choose and to change — and they deny that presence. They simply turn their backs on that presence. Being in an Absolute State, The Creator knows in an Absolute Sense what all consequences, results and outcomes of such rejection and denial are. Thus, The Creator can foresee to the minutest detail all their behaviors, attitudes, choices and all their outcomes. By the means of that knowledge, The Creator governs the destinies of all negative members of the Zone of Displacement. If you know in an Absolute Sense what the outcomes of the acceptance of The Creator and His/Her Laws and Principles are, you also will know in an Absolute Sense all outcomes, results and consequences of their nonacceptance, rejection and denial.”

“Because The Creator defines all the outcomes, results and consequences of that acceptance and incorporation in an Absolute Sense, He/She also defines in an Absolute Sense all the outcomes, results and consequences of the opposing course to such an acceptance and incorporation. Therefore, The Creator knows Absolutely everything about everyone and anything in the Zone of Displacement from that opposing trend, and from that position He/She executes His/Her government there.”

(3)

"In the third instance, the continuous creative process of The Creator keeps the inhabitants of the Zone of Displacement very busy with countermanding anything new created by The Creator."

"Thus, whenever The Creator comes up with something new and establishes it within Creation or adds to it, the new condition causes a painful ripple in the fabric of the pseudo-being and pseudo-existence of the Zone of Displacement. In order to rectify this situation, the inhabitants of the Zone of Displacement immediately fabricate something which will have exactly the opposite quality to that which was created by The Creator. This balances out their Zone."

"Because the inhabitants of the Zone of Displacement can never come up with anything new on their own, but instead, always utilize the same methods, modes, ways and material (the fallouts) as The Creator does (only in a perverted, distorted and unlawful manner), the precise knowledge of any step they take is easily read out from the original design of the new creative effort."

"Be aware of the fact that all that inhabitants of the Zone of Displacement can do is to react to something which happens in the true Creation. By themselves and in themselves, they are not capable of producing any original, creative actions. They are only reacting, as a result of the genuine, primary actions that happen in the true Creation."

"Thus, The Creator foresees exactly how they will react and what kind of countermeasure and response they will produce. From that position, The Creator governs all and everything in the Zone of Displacement in accordance with The Law of Permission, assuring that nothing gets out of hand and that nothing threatens the stability and balance of Creation; assuring that nothing and no one violates the freedom of choice and ability to change that all members of the Zone of Displacement enjoy as well; and assuring that all members function there within their allotted rights and within the purpose for which they are permitted to be and to exist in their own dead life."

"Now, the above three modes of government of the Zone of Displacement take place from the within of Creation and from the State of The Absolute Inwardness of The Creator."

"These modes do not provide any mode of government from the inside of the outside of the Zone of Displacement. As you remember, up to a certain point, The Most High — The Creator — could not enter the inside of the outside of Creation without a danger of annihilating that outside condition. For that reason, the government of the Zone of Displacement from its inside was given into the hands of its original occupants who activated and populated it — the pseudo-creators. They used to be in full control of the entire Zone of Displacement."

"In order to initiate the eventual total elimination of the Zone of Displacement and its negative state, it is necessary to assume the control of the government of that Zone from the inside of its outside of the outwardness position. No other way exists for the accomplishment of this goal. As you remember from before, this cannot be done from the position of the positive state but only from the position of the negative state."

"For this reason, The Creator, in the form of Jesus Christ, assumed upon Himself/Herself a relative nature through the human body-flesh and all elements of the Zone of Displacement, and through and by that nature, entered the Zone of Displacement personally and directly."

"During His/Her personal and direct physical presence in that Zone, The Lord Jesus Christ

abolished the government of the pseudo-creators and, from the very position of the inside of the outside of that Zone, took over its governing and became its Absolute and Uncontested Ruler. Being in an Absolute State, The Lord Jesus Christ knows now the Zone of Displacement, not only from the position of the positive state of the true Creation, but also from the position of the negative state and its Zone of Displacement itself.”

“From this position, The Lord Jesus Christ governs the Zone of Displacement in a bilateral manner. Such a government requires a personal physical presence and appearance in the domain which is being governed by this particular method. The physical body-flesh, infused into the totality of The Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ, formerly The Most High, provides Him/Her with the means by which His/Her presence in the Zone of Displacement is discernible, when needed, in a physical personal immediate sense.”

“Now, the government of planet Zero has a different connotation.”

“As was already revealed, planet Zero and its inhabitants — humans — have a totally different position than both the real Creation and the Zone of Displacement. For one thing, humans have no experiential direct physical access to or contact with any other regions either of Creation or of the Zone of Displacement.”

“Humans do not even have any empirical knowledge that such worlds exist. They only have some theoretical knowledge and numerous speculations about the possibility of such worlds’ being and existence. For another thing, planet Zero is in a place and a position which was defined previously as no place and no position, and in time which is no time. At least it is no place, no space, no time and no position which are comparable to anything else in being and existence.”

“The structure, the content, the impression and expression of the human mind and life is the most limited, isolated and separated in comparison with anyone else in Creation and the Zone of Displacement.”

“Humans have no tangible most within mind powers that would allow them to change and to control, to any extensive degree, their lives and their physical environments. The very feeble, fickle, unpredictable and, in most instances, non-volitional expression of some aspects of the mind control, such as, for example, extra sensory perception (ESP) and various psychic phenomena, are of such limited and unimportant proportions that they are laughable to anyone else.”

“As you know, the rest of the Zone of Displacement and all Hells not only have such powers, but their mind powers are highly developed and very sophisticated. Some humans call these powers of the negative nature ‘black magic’ or ‘white magic,’ respectively, if they want to distinguish between the use of mind powers for good or evil purposes. This situation indicates that humans are in the most outside position of the outsideness itself. Because of this unusual and practically impossible position, the government of planet Zero and human life is not an easy one.”

(1)

“The very first mode of government is by means of illustration, externalization, concretization and exemplification. All spiritual factors of The Creator’s Absolute Nature have to be tangibly illustrated in these specific modes. Otherwise, they cannot take hold on planet Zero. If they were not able to take hold, no influence of Divine Providence could be felt or have any impact on the destinies of humans and planet Zero.”

“So, a method was devised by The Creator of illustrative symbolization that depicts all or most spiritual principles in the literal language of humans, allowing them to have some understanding and application of these principles. As you know, survival of any sentient entity depends on having such spiritual principles in any possible manner and form.”

“In this respect, the survival of the dead life of the Zone of Displacement depends on the recognition and understanding of all spiritual principles and their subsequent perversions, falsifications and rejections to implement them in their original content. In order to pervert or distort or falsify or reject something, you need first to recognize it and understand it. Otherwise, you do not know what and how to do this negative endeavor. So, survival of the Zone of Displacement depends solely on this ability to see, to recognize and to understand the truth of all spiritual principles. That subsequently it refuses to implement this truth and instead, utilizes it for falsification, distortion and perversion, is an entirely different story.”

“In the case of humans on planet Zero, they have no direct ability to perceive, to recognize or to understand any spiritual principles by their inner, internal disposition from the position of those principles themselves. Instead, they need to be introduced to these principles by an oblique and complicated way of externalization, illustration and symbolization on some very concrete examples.”

“A good example of how this is done can be found in The Old Testament of The Holy Bible. A certain class of humans was chosen by The Creator for the purpose of being a sign or an illustration of any consequences of any choices by humans. These humans were called prophets or sons of prophets.”

“Thus, for example, Prophet Isaiah had to literally walk bare and naked for three years for a sign and wonder against Egypt and Ethiopia (Isaiah 20:3). Prophet Ezekiel had to literally portray the siege of Jerusalem and to lie on his left side to bear the iniquity of Israel for three hundred and ninety days (a day for a year); and then he had to lie on his right side for forty days to bear the iniquity of the house of Judah.”

“During that time he was constrained physically so that he could not turn from one side to another until he had ended the days of the siege portrayed by him. And he had to prepare for himself a special type of food and drink for each day of his constraint or paralysis (Ezekiel 4: 1-17). This was all done for a sign and an illustration of what the consequences of the evilness of humans represented by Israel and Judah are.”

“Also, Ezekiel’s wife literally died in front of his eyes, by the word of the Lord, and he was not allowed to mourn for her or to show any sign of sorrow in order to be an illustration of what will happen to the children of Israel (Ezekiel 24:15-24).”

“Only by such extreme literal illustrations, by the concrete behavior of some humans, could the operation and government of The Creator on your planet be depicted.”

“The lack of such an illustration would end in denial by humans that they are governed by The Creator. Such a denial on the planetary scale would lead to their annihilation. As long as there are some humans on your planet who are aware of the fact of the operation of The Divine Providence of The Lord Jesus Christ — The Creator — planet Zero can be sustained alive. The aliveness of any life depends on this factor. The spiritual principle here is that The Creator is present in the internal sense of such signs, illustrations, symbols, correspondences and depictions. Because they all portray the spiritual principles in the most external of the most external degree, by the means of the most external illustration, and because The Creator is always present in His/Her spiritual principles no matter in what form they are

expressed and impressed, from reaction to them by humans, The Creator governs your planet.”

(2)

“The second mode of The Creator’s government of your planet derives from the first one. Since there is no independent discernment of any spiritual principles by the state of direct internals of the human mind, through and by which such government could be executed, external means are used for this purpose.”

“As you know, humans are able to communicate with each other only by an external means — the vocal cords. You utter a word, a sound will travel from your mouth to the ear of a listener. The listener hears it and responds in a similar fashion. The extension of this external communication is through vision. You write down something you want to convey. Others read it by their external physical eyes and respond to it accordingly. As you see, no direct communication from one mind to another mind, without an external medium, exists in human life.”

“The Creator accommodates this situation for His/Her process of government by giving periodical revelations. He/She sends His/Her words into some humans, chosen for that purpose, and they write it down. Because these words are The Words of The Creator — The Lord Jesus Christ — He/She is always present in them. The Word of The Lord Jesus Christ conveys all necessary spiritual principles in a literal language understandable to all humans. By and through them, from their inner sense, The Lord Jesus Christ governs your planet and all destinies of humans.”

“In the process of the history of humankind, several such Revelations were given. They are all combined into one book, called The Holy Bible. By and from the presence of The Word of The Lord Jesus Christ in your world, He/She knows exactly what is going on there and is able to establish all necessary conditions to assure that nothing is happening on your planet and to humans which would not be in accordance with The Law of Permission and His/Her Divine Providence. Once The Lord Jesus Christ perceives that humans no longer have any proper understanding of His/Her Words the way they were initially revealed, He/She grants a New Revelation by sending His/Her Word to someone who is chosen for that specific purpose, and through this New Revelation, He/She executes His/Her power of government on your planet.”

“The problem with humans is that they are able to understand and to accept a very limited degree of anything spiritual or of any truth. Because of this extreme limitation, the portion of truth which is being revealed to them very often is perceived and understood out of context of its totality. What happens here is that humans, in the process of their history, tend to gradually lose the proper perspective in which that revelation was given and they separate the revealed truth from its original context. Thus, they end up in a total misinterpretation of its original meaning.”

“When this happens, their very being and existence is threatened by the fact that, once such misinterpretation takes place, the presence of The Lord Jesus Christ in His/Her Word is totally obscured and His/ Her government is endangered. At points like this, a New Revelation is granted by The Lord Jesus Christ. By the sole written presence of this Revelation on your planet, regardless of whether anyone reads it or not, regardless of how many or how few humans read and implement it, the continuous presence of The Lord Jesus Christ on your planet is assured and His/Her government continues without interruption.”

(3)

"The third mode of The Creator's government on your planet relates to the second one, as the second one related to the first one. Humans who continuously read The Word of The Lord Jesus Christ, and with positive and good intent implement it in their mode of behavior and lifestyle, establish a spiritual network or an oasis of the positive state on your planet. In a spiritual sense, such a network is called The Holy Church. This Holy Church has no relatedness or relevance to any so-called organized external churches which exist in such numerous numbers on your planet. This Church is a Spiritual Entity through which and by which The Lord Jesus Christ governs most effectively the life of all humans on planet Zero."

"As long as there is any such Church anywhere, regardless of how many or few members it has, the presence of The Lord Jesus Christ is assured on your planet."

"The quantity has no significance in this respect because, as you remember, The Lord Jesus Christ governs from The Absolute State. Even one singular person who reads and implements in his/her life The New Revelation and The Holy Bible, the true Word of God, would be sufficient for this purpose. The relative condition of any given individual assures that The Absolute operation and government of The Creator continues in an Absolute Sense. From the position of The Absolute State, the presence in a relative condition has an Absolute value."

"As you know, the total sum of all relatives is still relative. It can only approximate The Absolute, but it can never reach the state of Absoluteness. Therefore, one relative is like all relatives because, no matter how many relatives you have, they still will be relative. From the position of The Absolute, all relatives are known in an Absolute Sense."

"Thus, The Lord Jesus Christ, being present in His/Her Word in an Absolute Sense, is able to discern all events on planet Zero and regulate all destinies of relative humans in accordance with all laws of His/Her Divine Providence."

"Moreover, from any opposition to or rejection of The New Revelation by any human, The Lord Jesus Christ determines the overall trend of human choices. From that determination, He/She establishes favorable conditions for manifestation of all consequences, outcomes and results of such choices. Now, this is how The Lord Jesus Christ governs planet Zero and human life."

"As you see, from these modes of government, the fourth one is missing. As you remember, the fourth mode relates to the government from the position of the outsideness. The physical presence of The Lord Jesus Christ in that outsideness allows that government to be bilateral, going in two directions: From without to within and from the outsideness of the without to its own within."

"There is a reason why the fourth mode of government is not feasible, for the time being, on your planet. As you remember, human life and planet Zero were permitted to come into their being and existence only for one purpose: To illustrate all consequences, results and outcomes of the activated negative state."

"In one sense, human life can be perceived as gathering experiences in order to make all available appropriate modes of life for everyone in being and existence to choose from. Thus, human life is not an ultimate choice in itself and by itself, but a transient or an interim choice until its purpose of illustration of this important fact is fulfilled. Once it is fulfilled, the typical human life, the way it is manifested and unfolded on planet Zero, will have no sense."

"Because human life is the process of gathering of all necessary important experiences, and

because it is not an ultimate choice in itself and by itself, from its position and purpose, it cannot be influenced by any imposing factor. Any imposing factor would violate the purpose of human life for which it was permitted to come into its being and existence. An acceptance of such an imposing factor would make human life an ultimate choice. To make it an ultimate choice is to lock human life into a permanent condition.”

“Because of this nature and purpose of human life, **humans, while on planet Zero, cannot make an ultimate choice. They do not have the grounds or foundation on which they can make an ultimate choice about their own ultimate future. This condition is the nature of their illustrative purpose. As long as there is something left from the nature of the negative state to be illustrated and learned, no ultimate choice can be made, while living on planet Zero, because it would block the possibility of that vital illustration. Once you choose something in an ultimate sense, you are no longer a subject of illustration of anything else but what you chose in an ultimate sense.**”

“This is one of the many reasons why humans, as long as they perform this illustrative function, cannot be judged from the position of planet Zero. Only when they leave planet Zero and come to the intermediate world of spirits are they introduced to the various conditions, states and processes of spiritual reality, and given proper grounds to make their personal ultimate choice. That choice, in turn, determines their future destinies.”

“Now, if The Lord Jesus Christ were to appear personally in His/Her physical body on planet Zero, in all His/Her power and glory, He/She would violate the existing condition of the illustrative nature of human life. Not only that, He/She would put all humans into the alternative of no alternative but to accept His/Her Absolute Being and Existence. By His/Her sheer physical presence, **being that humans are not in the state and in the process of an ultimate choice**, The Lord Jesus Christ would force them to make such an ultimate choice **from the position of imposition and no freedom of choice.**”

“The acceptance of The Lord Jesus Christ from the position of imposition and no freedom of choice cannot be appropriated to anyone. It cannot take hold in anyone’s most within where it counts. The only thing that can be incorporated into that most within is that which is accepted in the state and process of freedom of choice and free will.”

“By accepting The Lord Jesus Christ in this adverse manner, the most within spiritual mind of humans would be shut off forever and humans would not be able to be saved. One can be saved only from the position of the most within or from within to without. The adverse manner of acceptance of The Lord Jesus Christ would be from the position of without. From that position, nothing can be appropriated to humans or to anyone else for that matter. This would be in violation of all multiversal laws and principles. To violate such laws and principles means the end not only of humans but of the entire multiverse.”

“It is a different story of The Lord Jesus Christ’s physical and personal appearance in the Hells and all other regions of the Zone of Displacement. People there are not in the transient state but in a state of their ultimate choice. From that position they are not obliged to react to the physical presence of The Lord Jesus Christ in any manner contrary to their ultimate choice. However, the nature of the ultimate choice is such that, once you know what the ultimate choice is, you may, if you wish, reverse that choice.”

“There are certain well-defined steps and procedures by which this reversal can be accomplished. The physical presence of The Lord Jesus Christ among inhabitants of the Hells and all other regions of the Zone of Displacement makes it possible for that reversal to occur, the reason being that their ultimate choices were made on false premises or on

acceptance of falsities. The commitment to live by the accepted falsities is not binding because it is false. Therefore, the reversal from this ultimate choice is possible.”

“The situation is not so with humans. While they are on planet Zero, they are in the mode of gathering experiences and being illustrative examples of what not to choose.”

“As long as you are illustrating something not to choose, that illustration, by the just attitude of the fact of illustration, cannot be appropriated to you as an ultimate choice because, after all, it is an illustration of what not to choose. You cannot choose that which should not be chosen as long as you are an illustration of that fact. The only position from which you can choose that which you should not choose is from the position of the non-illustrative mode of life.”

“The physical presence of The Lord Jesus Christ on your planet at this time would cut off any possibility of further illustration of that which should not be chosen. Being cut off from the only means and purpose of life they have, even if they are not consciously aware of or have no knowledge that this is the purpose and meaning of their life, humans would not be able to survive the physical presence of The Lord Jesus Christ among them.”

“For that reason, The Lord Jesus Christ does not govern planet Zero from the fourth mode of His/Her operation.”

“However, it will be a different story once humans complete this illustrative mode of their life. As you remember, at one point, the negative state will win on your planet completely. By this accomplishment, the illustrative mode of human life will be finished. Then and only then, the final phase of The Second Coming of The Lord Jesus Christ will begin to take place, and The Lord Jesus Christ will appear on planet Zero also physically.”

“At that point, the ultimate choice will be made to stop the illustrative mode of human life. Because of the ultimate choice, the physical appearance of The Lord Jesus Christ on your planet will not endanger anyone and anything on its face.”

“After completion of the final phase of The Last Judgment and return of planet Zero to its original position, from which it was forcefully removed, the fourth mode of the government of The Lord Jesus Christ will be instituted also on this planet. By that act, a new cycle of time and of being and existence will come to its fruition.”

And this is all that can be revealed about the issue of this Chapter at this time. Nothing more could be comprehended by your human mind.”

“He/She who has ears to hear, let him/her hear what The Lord Jesus Christ reveals in this Chapter.”

CHAPTER TWENTY FOUR

THE TEN COMMANDMENTS REVISITED

On May 12, 1988, at 4:45 in the morning, the word of The Lord Jesus Christ came to me again, saying,

“It is time to consider the content and the meaning of The Ten Commandments in the light of this portion of The New Revelation.”

“As you know, much was said about them directly and indirectly in the previous books of The New Revelation and also in this book. A very extensive and profound spiritual interpretation of The Ten Commandments was given through Emanuel Swedenborg.”

“All the above-mentioned expositions regarding the content and the meaning of The Ten Commandments are fully valid and applicable even at the present time with some modifications.”

“However, in this Chapter some other conceptualizations of The Ten Commandments need to be considered.”

“In the original version of The Ten Commandments, as given through Moses, and as translated in The New King James Version of The Holy Bible, they are recorded in the following manner (Exodus 20:2-10):”

“I am The Lord your God, who brought you out of the land of Egypt, out of the house of bondage.

You shall have no other gods before me.

You shall not make for yourself any carved image, or any likeness of anything that is in heaven above, or that is in the earth beneath, or that is in the water under the earth: you shall not bow down to them nor serve them. For I, The Lord your God, am a jealous God, visiting the iniquity of the fathers upon the children to the third and fourth generations of those who hate Me,

but showing mercy to thousands, to those who love Me and keep My commandments.

You shall not take the name of The Lord your God in vain, for The Lord will not hold him guiltless who takes His name in vain.

Remember the Sabbath day, to keep it holy.

Six days you shall labor and do all your work, but the seventh day is the Sabbath of The Lord your God. In it you shall do no work: you, nor your son, nor your daughter, nor your manservant, nor your maidservant, nor your cattle, nor your stranger who is within your gates. For in six days The Lord made the heavens and the earth, the sea, and all that is in them, and rested the seventh day. Therefore The Lord blessed the Sabbath day and hallowed it.

Honor your father and your mother, that your days may be

long upon the land which The Lord your God is giving you.
You shall not murder.
You shall not commit adultery.
You shall not steal.
You shall not bear false witness against your neighbor. You shall not covet your neighbor's house; you shall not covet your neighbor's wife, nor his manservant, nor his maidservant, nor his ox, nor his donkey, nor anything that is your neighbor's."

"If you carefully study these Commandments from the standpoint of their literal meaning, you will notice the language which is used for their formulation. As mentioned previously in this book, except for The Fifth Commandment, this formulation is given in the negatives. It defines what not to do without specifying why not to do it and without giving any directions what to do and how to do it. Again, only The Fifth Commandment gives some ulterior reasons why this particular commandment should be kept."

"There is an important spiritual reason why The Ten Commandments are given and written in such a negative language. At the time of their transmission, the spiritual situation on planet Zero was in the most grave condition. The majority of humans had no proper conceptualization, understanding and knowledge about any true spiritual principles or the true Nature of God Most High. This situation was determined by the fact that no one, with very meager exceptions, was aware of any inner spiritual states hidden within everyone's mind. All emphasis was placed on the external, outward factors. The perception of any reality was limited to the most basic and primitive taking care of one's physical and environmental needs. The physical and environmental aspects dominated human life fully. They were considered the most important factors of life to which any personal, individual, subjective and within factors were fully subordinated."

"In this situation, any spiritual understanding of any issues, and particularly The Nature of God, was derived from those environmental and external factors. For this reason, any spiritual concept, in order to enter human understanding and to give humans any tangible meaning, had to be externalized and materially objectified in the form of natural objects. These natural objects, being outside of the human mind, and built from the natural elements of their environment, were considered gods and therefore, they were worshiped as such. Taking into consideration the gross limitations and various dangers of the physical environment in which humans of that time lived, and taking into consideration that they were full slaves of their environment, having very little control over the natural forces, and having no knowledge of the true laws by which such natural forces operate, any principles formulated in those days had a prohibiting connotation."

"If your environment and all natural forces and events are beyond your control, and if they continuously influence your life mostly in a negative manner, the only way you can be free from them is by avoiding them as much as possible, by fearing them and by trying to appease them so that they will not hurt or harm you. No other conceptualization of the spiritual reality existed at that time. And because the true spiritual reality is a matter of the internals, what you have here is a negative connotation of any spiritual principles. No other language exists through and by which you can express and impress on humans any truly positive meaning of spirituality."

"As you are fully aware, externalization, naturalization and ritualization of spirituality means the negative state. In this situation, the negative state is considered to be positive. Therefore, the positive state is defined by the negative terms of rejection, avoidance, fear, anxiety and

commandments which tell you what not to do in order to survive this natural mess you live in.”

“If there is no perception of any other reality but the negative one, to say something to humans under these circumstances in positive terms means to miss the whole point. They simply would not hear it because it is not a reality which they know and with which they are familiar.”

“So, in order to give humans of this nature some spiritual guidelines of how to minimize the adverse impact of the negative state on their lives and in order to establish some degree of a favorable condition for eventual introduction of the positive state in a positive language, you need to define for them first what not to do. After all, as you see, they live in the negative state and they worship the negative state. Under this condition, it would be totally superfluous and futile to tell them what to do because they would do it from the position of the negative state.”

“Thus, they would do it negatively. Doing it from that position would not only not bring them out of the negative state and introduce them into the positive state, but it would sink them even deeper into the negative state. To do something from the position of the negative state, no matter what it is or how positive it is in itself and by itself, means to do it negatively. Any positive connotation of such an act is made negative and integrated into the negative state, becoming profane.”

“For this reason, in the first step of bringing humans out of the negative state, you need to tell them what not to do. By telling them that, you are defining the nature of the negative state. At that time, no one really knew what the nature of the negative state was. They did everything with an assumption that what they did was entirely proper and godly. Because of this assumption, you have to tell them first to avoid doing it that way.”

“Once a behavior pattern is established which obeys The Commandments and avoids doing everything which the commandments are commanding not to do, then and only then can you safely begin a very slow and gradual introduction of some positive concepts, defined in a positive language.”

“Another point to realize here is that, at that time, very little freedom of choice existed. As you remember from previous portions of The New Revelation, humans were coming into this world not by a free choice but by necessity. The necessity of that situation was to be negative. They did not understand properly the concept of freedom of choice. They were ruled by a set of principles which were imposing on them to do what they were required to do under the penalty of death for refusal of doing it that way.”

“For humans of that time this was a natural way of living and life. Nothing else was conceived, perceived or understood. Under those conditions, only the language of command could be understood and accepted.”

“As you know, the language of command, duress and imposition is always of the negative nature. But if you do not understand any other language, what is the use to formulate anything in any other language? None! And not only that, but it can be even dangerous to do so because whatever is not understood is considered to be of unknown or unfamiliar origin. For humans of that time, anything of unknown and unfamiliar origin meant that it was coming from demons. So, they would stone you to death and profane anything you would try to teach them in any other manner and way (as the case really was on many occasions of such an intrusion).”

“For this reason, the sayings in the negatives had to be presented to them not only in negative terms, but as a command and threat: ‘You must do it this way or else!’ As you see from this brief exposition and as already mentioned before, ***The Ten Commandments were written in the negative terms from the position of the negative state, in the language of the negative state.*** No other means of conveyance were available to humans at that time.”

“Being written in the negative language, The Ten Commandments, in their literal sense, have no connotation of love or anything positive. It is strict, solemn and threatening. And God, who is commanding them, is, therefore, very strict, solemn, cruel, punishing and jealous of His power. To emphasize His cruelty, He is depicted as a male. The males of those days were an epitome of aggression, cruelty and violence. This kind of God will be merciful and nice to you only if you obey literally all His commandments. In the moment you deviate in any manner or way from the commanded and mandated literal letter of this law, He will kill you without mercy and without any consideration of good or positive acts you might have done before this slight deviation occurred.”

“This is how God was and is conceptualized from the position of the negative state, which was and is a style of life of humans at that time and, in most instances, also of this time. You do not dare to speak too much, or not at all, about love. How can you feel love toward such a God? The only thing you can feel is fear and, deep inside, hate. In order to avoid His cruel retributions, you either avoid Him as much as possible, or you enslave yourself to Him obediently in hopes that He will not kill you, but, instead, will bless you with the abundance of material and physical goods or by a long life on your planet, as The Fifth Commandment implies.”

“However, once the proper relationship among humans and to God is defined in the terms of The Ten Commandments, and once they are firmly ingrained in most existing human legal, ethical and spiritual laws, the modification of their meaning may begin.”

“It was not until The First Coming of Jesus Christ on your planet that this modification could take place. The spiritual principle is that any modification, change or abolishment of any law can be accomplished only by and through its fulfillment. But the problem is that no human on planet Zero was/is able to do so. Not being able to do so indefinitely would eventually annihilate the human race. The inability to fulfill or to literally follow that law brings upon itself a retribution. Inherent in any law, which is defined in the negatives, as The Ten Commandments are, is a punishment or retribution for not properly implementing it. As you remember, only one punishment existed at that time — death. In this case, not only physical death but also spiritual death. Spiritual death is worse than the physical death because it deprives one of the possibility of seeking and understanding the truth. The combination of both deaths, under the condition existing then, gave one very little chance but to be locked up in one condition indefinitely. Because no human being was able to fulfill these Laws or Commandments, humankind was doomed to perish to eternity. One of the major reasons why The Most High incarnated on your planet in the form of Jesus Christ was to prevent this from happening.”

“For this reason, The Most High assumed a human body, became a human, and, from that position, fulfilled these laws. By their fulfillment, as a Human, He/She saved humankind from perishing. At the same time, the fulfillment of these laws allowed Him/Her first to modify their meaning then redefine them in positive terms and then to entirely replace them with a new commandment.”

“In The Gospel According to Matthew, Chapter 5, verse 17, Jesus Christ stated:”

“Do not think that I came to destroy the Law or the Prophets. I did not come to destroy but **to fulfill.**’

“And in verse 18:”

“For assuredly, I say to you, till heaven and earth pass away, one jot or one tittle will by no means pass from the law till all is fulfilled!”

“Then Jesus Christ goes on and modifies this law (see verse 21 to 48 in the same Chapter), implying that by His/Her very presence, He/ She is the very fulfillment of that law. After all, it is His/Her Law and, therefore, only He/She knows how to fulfill it. As all the negative connotation was repudiated by the act and life of The Lord Jesus Christ while on your planet, it allowed Him/Her to redefine it in positive terms.”

“The new definition of this law, after repudiation of its negative connotation, is given this time from the position of the positive state and not from the position of the negative state, as was the case with The Ten Commandments. So, when asked by one lawyer which is the greatest commandment in the Law, Jesus Christ **replied from the position of the positive state:**”

“You shall love The Lord your God with all your heart, with all your soul, and with all your mind! This is the first and great commandment. And the second is like it: ‘You shall love your neighbor as yourself.’ On these two commandments hang all the Law and Prophets! (Matthew 22:36-40)”

“Notice, please, that Jesus Christ did not take one word out of The Ten Commandments to indicate that any of its laws is the great one. This is not by coincidence.”

“Once He/She fulfilled the negative connotation of that Law or any existing spiritual and moral laws, this Law no longer has any power and meaning because its negative connotation was removed. If you remove this connotation, what does remain? Nothing, because you removed its very life. In this case, it becomes an empty notion. So, you have to change it completely and give it a different connotation. This time, the positive one. After that, you can speak in terms of love.”

“The important spiritual issue here is obvious: If you love The Lord your God from the totality of your being and existence, and if you love others and yourself, it can never ever cross your mind to do anything negative, hurtful and harmful to God, to others and to yourself. In this case, you do not need to be told what not to do because the content of that ‘not to do’ is totally inconceivable to your mind and to your behavior. The implication of that love is doing those and only those things which are of pure love. Nothing else enters your mind or your behavior. Why then even pollute your mind with the notions which are not contained there and which are totally alien to you? But even this changed law is somewhat externalized. You still get the connotation of loving someone out there, outside of you.”

“However, once it is brought to the human awareness that The Kingdom of God is a state of internals (‘the Kingdom of God is within you.’ Luke 17:21), then and only then can you go one step further. Now you can abolish the old law and replace it with the new one which will reflect the true spiritual reality of inwardness.”

“In The Gospel According to John, in Chapter 13, verse 34, Jesus Christ stated:”

“‘A new commandment I give to you, that you love one another; as I have loved you, that you also love one another.’”

“And in Chapter 15, verse 4:”

“‘Abide in Me, and I in you.’”

“The implication here is clear: If The Lord Jesus Christ abides in you, and if you love one another, you love that presence of The Lord Jesus Christ in one another. This is a state of internals and not externals. The true nature of the positive state can be discovered only in the internals and from that position, it can be projected to the externals and not in the opposite direction, as was the case with the previous situation. To love one another is a very personal, private and intimate state. It is a correspondence of the internals or the most within state. By definition, love cannot be any other state but the most within one because it is generated and felt in that state. Therefore, love is a foundation of all positive states and the positive state is the state of one’s inwardness which regulates all else, including the process of outwardness.”

“As asked once before in one of the previous Chapters of this book, we are asking again: What does it really mean to love God, others, oneself and one another? (If this asking, as many other things and concepts in this book, seems to you repetitious or redundant, it is not because The Lord Jesus Christ thinks that you are stupid, as some of you foolishly complain after reading some passages of this portion of The New Revelation; but because this question is asked from an entirely different perspective and requires an entirely different answer.)”

“You have here four distinctly different categories: to love God; to love your neighbor; to love yourself; and to love one another. To ask again, how do you define these loves?”

“In the context of the above-quoted verses from The Gospel it is not clear how such loves should be manifested. The disciples of The Lord Jesus Christ could define these loves by the way of His/Her behavior toward them. In this respect, The Lord Jesus Christ is very specific: ‘As I have loved you, that you also love one another.’ The disciples had a first hand example of how they were loved by their Heavenly Master and from that experience, they could develop the suggested love of one another.”

“As you know, the fundamental approach of defining any of these four loves, mentioned above, is in assessing the way you feel, wish, think, consider, intend, relate and behave toward the objects of your love. Now, here is the pure state of internals. First, you feel, you think, you consider, you intend and you will that love deeply within yourself. From that position, from the position of your very being and existence, which is a most within inward condition, you establish a mode of relatedness and behavior toward the object of your love. Your relatedness and behavior toward that object become an external expression of your internal state. By this external expression your inner state or love is validated.”

“If you truly love someone, and if you truly love yourself, you cannot feel about that person or yourself any negative feelings. If you do not feel any negative feeling, you cannot think about that person or yourself in any negative terms. If you do not feel anything negative, and if you do not think anything negative, you cannot will anything negative toward that person or yourself either. If you do not have any negative feelings, any negative thoughts and any negative will toward that person or yourself, your relationship and behavior toward that

person or yourself will lack any negative components. Instead, only everything positive will be part of your feelings, thinking, willing, attitude, behavior and relatedness.”

“True love can be defined by a unified condition of that which you are inwardly, with that which you are outwardly, in a positive connotation. Any discrepancy between one and another defies true love and that love becomes something else. If it is not love, then it is the negative state.”

“But love is primarily defined by the process of its wisdom. For example, to feel positively and behave lovingly toward the negative state is unwise. It would support the negative state’s dead life indefinitely. Real love desires everything good and positive for everyone. Because the negative state has nothing of that goodness and positiveness in its life, the true love in its wisdom strives to remove this condition of the negative state and change it into the positive state so that it can love it. As you see, true love cannot love the negative state because the negative state is contrary to its nature. By loving the negative state in its misery and unhappiness, the true love would destroy itself. Therefore, true love, by its very nature, penetrates the negative state for the purpose of removal of that misery and unhappiness. To remove misery and unhappiness means to remove the negative state. To do so is wise and a proof of great love.”

“By striving for such love, one loves The Lord God because to love God means to reject everything negative and to accept everything positive and good. It also means to love your neighbor because you do not wish your neighbor to be slave of the negative state for the sake of the neighbor himself/herself. And it also means to love yourself because you do not wish by your negativity to cause any harm to yourself, to others and to The Lord God in you and in them. And finally, it also means loving one another because you do it for the sake of principles because this is the right thing to do. This is the positive way.”

“In this connotation, to love one another signifies loving for the sake of principles because such love confirms that the principle of life is in love and its wisdom. No other true life existed, exists and will ever exist. Thus, to love for the sake of principle means to love for the sake of life itself. Because this is the only true reality of being and existence, it is the right thing to do to love that life. The source of that life is The Lord Jesus Christ. That life is present in others. It is present in you and it is reflected in one another. By loving that life for the sake of life, you love its Absolute Source; you love all carriers of that life and you love yourself as someone who is capable of such love toward life, God, others and yourself. In this love is founded its true wisdom. To love this way is wise. This is the principle of love. Now, as you see, several steps needed to be taken in the process of arriving at this point. These steps are the steps of The Lord Jesus Christ’s process of salvation of humans from the negative state.”

“The first step was the definition of principles from the position of the negative state in terms of negatives. This step is reflected in the original version of The Ten Commandments. The second step was fulfillment of these Commandments. This step was accomplished by the sole presence of Jesus Christ who is The Law and The Principle Himself/Herself; being that, He/She is the very fulfillment of those Laws. The third step was modifying those Laws to reflect a more realistic life in accordance with the Spiritual Principles. But even in this modified form, they still have a negative connotation. This step can be considered a transitional step from a totally negative connotation to a totally positive one. As you remember, the nature of any transitional period is the retention of some old concepts, acquirement of some new ones, with some distortions in between. The fourth step was the redefinition and reformulation of those laws from the position of the positive state and in the language of the positives. And the fifth step was in replacing those laws with a one all-inclusive law which fully reflects the spiritual reality of the positive state.”

“These five steps also reflect the process of spiritual transformation. One begins with the realization of the problems one has and with realization of the negativity of one’s condition. These problems, being always of the negative nature — otherwise they would not be problems — must be defined in negative terms. Once this situation is fully realized, and one accepts one’s total negativity and one’s problems, their fulfillment can begin. In this step, one realizes that the problems are the negativity of one’s life, that they served their purpose, exhausted their usefulness and therefore, their meaning was fulfilled. Once this is done, the modification of one’s life in a more positive direction can begin. This step is a transitional process, in which relapses are possible because one still functions from the habits of the problems and the negativity of one’s condition.”

“As these habits are gradually broken and removed, one is prepared for redefinition of one’s life from the position of the positive state. Once all habits are broken and the problems are removed, one is ready to receive a new definition of oneself and of one’s life in positive terms. At this point, one is filled with positive feelings of love and the process of wisdom. However, these feelings are still of a somewhat external nature. One has not yet fully accepted the fact that all true life is a matter of one’s internals or the most within from which everything in one’s life is ruled.”

“Once this realization is accomplished, then and only then one is ready to transcend this step and to do everything from the position of within to without solely for the sake of the principles themselves because this is the right way and the only way to do things without any other considerations of possibly ulterior nature.”

“In the moment this step is achieved, one is spiritually transformed and one begins the path of continuous spiritual progression within the life of the positive state.”

“Now, having these steps clarified, we may proceed with the reevaluation of The Ten Commandments from the position of The Principles of The New Revelation, particularly from its current position, as reflected in this book.”

“Let us proceed in sequence from The First Commandment to the last one:”

(1)

“‘You shall have no other gods before me!’ The issue here is a differentiation between the true God-Creator and the false gods that rule the Zone of Displacement. ‘Gods,’ in connotation of these words, mean both the pseudo-creators and any other entities that proclaim themselves to be gods. Because only the members of the negative state have such ambitions, ambitions to be gods, what this statement means is that one is advised to put aside the negative state and turn oneself to the positive state. The Most High cannot have any negative state before Him/Her because, from the position of The Absoluteness of His/Her Positive Nature, anything negative does not have any chance to survive. It is not that God will kill it, but the nature of the negative state cannot face any aspects of The Absolute Goodness of The God Most High.”

“So, in a sense, what this Commandment implies is that one cannot very well relate to anything from the position of the negative state. Once one is brought out of the negative state, one needs to relinquish also any habits, traits, attitudes and everything else that one brought out with oneself at the time of leaving the negative state. This is implied by the preceding verse (verse one), which states, ‘I am The Lord your God, who brought you out of the land of Egypt, out of the house of bondage.’”

“The significance of this statement is in the fact that only The Lord God, Who, by definition, is The Absolute Positiveness, is able to bring out anyone from the negative state (the land of Egypt corresponds to the negative state of the Hells). To be in the negative state means to be in slavery. To be in the positive state is to be in a state of total freedom and independency. Only someone who is absolutely free, as The Lord God is, can liberate those who are in bondage to the negative state. It is impossible for anyone to free oneself from the clutches of the negative state while in the negative state because one has no other means but negative. No one is capable of freeing oneself by negative means. Only by positive means can this be accomplished. But before acquiring these positive means, one would have to be out of the negative state first. The negative state does not have any positive means. Because of this arrangement, only The One Who is absolutely positive can do so.”

“However, once one is out of the negative state, in order to assume that this will become a permanent condition, one needs to acknowledge and to accept The One Who is The only Absolute God. Otherwise, one ends up back in the negative state. This is the reason why this Commandment states that ‘You shall have no other gods before Me!’ Any other so-called ‘gods’ would take you back into the negative state of misery and suffering.”

“From the standpoint of the principles of The New Revelation ‘The Lord your God’ became the totality of The Lord Jesus Christ. There is no other Being or God anywhere and anywhen.”

“For this reason, by the authority of The Lord Jesus Christ, these Commandments are being replaced in two ways: None of the Commandments shall be called commandments any longer. The word ‘Commandments’ has a negative connotation. It implies that one has no choice in the matter. One must obey or else. Instead of the word ‘commandments,’ the words ‘spiritual principles’ will be used as of now. The second way is the new formulation of The Spiritual Principles themselves.”

“The present formulation of ***The First Spiritual Principle*** is given from the position of the positive state:

“THE FIRST SPIRITUAL PRINCIPLE”:

“I am The Lord Jesus Christ your God in the totality of Human Divine and Divine Human, Who is your Savior from the negative state and all its evils and falsities, and Who is the only One Who has The Absolute Power and The Absolute Ability to bring you out of the Zone of Displacement, planet Zero and the condition of slavery into the conditions of the positive state of freedom, independency, love and wisdom. You shall personally, privately and intimately relate only to Me, bringing all issues of your life to My personal attention, evoking no other mediators or gods under any other names.”

“As of this moment, ***The First Spiritual Principle*** replaces The First Commandment. The present formulation of ***The First Spiritual Principle***, as to its content, meaning and application, will have validity as long as the Zone of Displacement and all its Hells exist, and as long as planet Zero and human life are in the position they are now. Once they are abolished, and the negative state is no more, this Principle will be modified or replaced.”

(2)

“‘You shall not make for yourself any carved image.’ These words contain in their meaning the danger of separation of the external factors of life from their inner, spiritual source. Moreover, they imply the abomination of deriving any meaning of life from the natural or

external degree of Creation which is the result and not the causation of the spiritual creative effort of The Creator. 'To make a carved image' means to externalize, naturalize and de-divinize something which has a purely spiritual, inward and internal connotation. At the same time, it signifies to spiritualize, to divinize and to objectivize something that has no such meaning in any aspects of its being and existence by itself and in itself. It also means separation of one aspect of divinity of The Creator, as it is reflected in the natural degree, and proclaim it to be the real God, the only God, disregarding the fact that the reflection of that aspect is only an external form of manifestation which is neither the aspect of God in itself nor the only one in being and existence. Such separation and displacement denotes dominance of the negative state and establishment of its dead life."

"In this case, 'carved image' also means to ascribe love and goodness, which are essentials of the true life, to something that does not contain in itself or by itself one single grain of that love and goodness and thus, of any true life."

"'Or any likeness of anything that is in heaven above, or that is in earth beneath, or that is in the water under the earth.' 'To make likeness of anything' signifies duplication and replacement of the true life with the dead life and the real truth with falsities and wisdom with foolishness."

"'To make any likeness of anything in the heaven above' signifies rejection of the true source of life, the positive state and The Creator, substituting them with fakes of distortions, falsities and perversions that look like the original but have nothing in themselves of or from the original."

"'Or that is in earth beneath' denotes substitution of a true spiritual mentality and perception of reality with a false one, making it look like reality and real mentality but containing nothing of the true life of such a reality and of such spiritual mentality. In other words, these words signify removal of the true substantials of life and their substitution with illusory ones that may bear a resemblance to the truth but, in fact, are empty and void of any substantial meaning and significance."

"'Or that is in the water beneath the earth' signifies replacement or substitution of the natural goods and natural truths (plural!) of the reality of Creation with something that has no such qualities and attributes but is their most external and outward manifestation and consequence. To substitute the origin or source of life with its most extreme derivatives, and to consider these derivatives the source and origin of life, means to put everything in an upside-down position."

"Thus, the conglomeration of these three factors (heaven, earth and water and what they correspond to), when replaced by and substituted with reflections themselves, constitute the activation and dead life of the negative state. This establishes a false heaven — or all evils which substitute all goods; false earth — or all falsities which substitute all truths; and false water — or conjunction and pseudo-marriage of all evils and falsities, that is, the negative state, which substitutes the true spiritual marriage of good and truth, that is, the positive state."

"As life of the positive state is the eternal conjunction or spiritual marriage of love and wisdom, of good and truth and of all other spiritual principles, so is the life of the negative state a conjunction or pseudo-spiritual marriage of evils and falsities and all other pseudo-spiritual principles inherent in the nature of the negative state."

"However, 'heaven,' 'earth' and 'water' also correspond to the most within spiritual mind

(heaven), to the interior mind or mentality (earth), and to the external mind (water or sea). To derive any divinity from them is to derive a derivation from the derivation. None of these minds are gods in themselves and by themselves. Therefore, nothing can be derived from them that is worthy of worship. Reflection of a reflection of a reflection of the original, and placement into that tertiary reflection the source of life and divinity constitutes a denial of the true Creator. But it also means, in this connotation, replacement of the true mind and its three aspects with the false mind and its three false aspects which become substitutions of the sentience of that mind. The false mind is an image and a likeness of the true mind but it is, nevertheless, not the original. How would you like to have a substitution of an original painting, for example, with its mediocre, valueless copy and then worship that copy as though it were the original? Does it make any sense? But this is exactly what the activators of the negative state did. This Commandment is a warning against doing it again at the present and in the future.”

“‘You shall not bow down to them nor serve them’ signifies that their acceptance into one’s life constitutes the necessity of bearing the consequences, results and outcomes of the activation of the negative state. To make such images and likenesses is the process of the activation of the negative state. To bow down to them means to bear all consequences, results and outcomes of the negative state. This Commandment warns against such acts because, inherent in the nature of the negative state, is a retribution for its acceptance, as there is a reward for acceptance of the positive state. This is obvious from the following words:”

“‘For I, The Lord your God, am a jealous God, visiting the iniquity of the fathers on the children to the third and fourth generations of those who hate Me, but showing mercy to thousands, to those who love Me and keep my commandments!’”

“‘For I, The Lord your God, am a jealous God’ signifies the existence of only one reality, the spiritual reality and the reality of the positive state. The life of this reality is The Creator, called here ‘The Lord your God.’ The word ‘jealous’ means that all else which is not derived from or is an integral part of this reality has no meaning and significance. To accept something of this nature constitutes the activation of the negative state which is painful and hurtful not only to its activators and participants but also to the entire Creation, that is, to the true reality of the positive state. At the same time, it means that each alternative — acceptance or rejection of the positive state — by the nature of their content, produces all the consequences of such acts. The activators of the negative state are called here ‘fathers’ and all who identify themselves with the life of the negative state are called ‘children.’”

“‘To visit their iniquity’ means to trigger the consequences of the false and evil reality of the negative state. ‘To the third and fourth generations of those who hate Me’ signifies as long as the negative state exists and opposes the true reality of the positive state, the life of which is The Creator.”

“But these words also mean the prophecy that the negative state will not be allowed to continue indefinitely but only to the third — all aspects of the negative state, and fourth generation — are fully exhausted. ‘The third generation,’ in this connotation, means the full exposure of the nature of the negative state. ‘The fourth generation,’ in this connotation, means within one cycle of time. ‘Four’ means completion of one cycle of time. It does not say fifth or sixth or indefinitely, as the case is with the consequences of the acceptance of and identity with the positive state, which is depicted in the following words.”

“‘But showing mercy to thousands, to those who love Me and keep My commandments.’ Here are described the consequences and results of the acceptance of the positive state (‘to

love Me'). 'To show mercy' means to share all attributes, characteristics and conditions of the positive state which are of pure love and wisdom and of great delight and pleasure. As you see, in this connotation, no limitations are given for how long this sharing and reciprocity ('show mercy to those who love Me') will continue. It says 'to thousands' — plural. This means forever, to eternity."

"If the positive state, which is The Nature of The Lord your God, is the only reality, then it must continue forever. Anything that is of The Nature of The Absolute God is forever because God always IS. Therefore, you cannot limit its continuation. The outcomes of the full acceptance of and identification with the positive state assure this 'mercy' or sharing and reciprocity forever without any time limitations. This is not limited to one cycle of time only, as is the case with the negative state, but it applies to all cycles of time from eternity to eternity."

"'To show mercy' also means to take into consideration the relativity of those who are members of the positive state and release to them for sharing from The Absolute Nature of The Lord your God only as much as each member of the positive state can take in at each moment of his/her being and existence in accordance with The Law of Spiritual Progression."

"'To keep My commandments' signifies to identify oneself with all spiritual principles of the positive state. 'To love Me' means to accept one's Creator as the only source of life and reciprocate His/Her Love."

"Now, in the connotation of the current position of The New Revelation, this Commandment is replaced with the following one:"

"THE SECOND SPIRITUAL PRINCIPLE:"

"There is only one reality in being and existence — the reality of the positive state. The positive state is The Absolute Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ your God Who continuously emanates this state into His/ Her Creation. The Lord Jesus Christ your God, being Absolute, although always present in His/Her Creation, nevertheless transcends His/Her Creation in all respects and is more than the positive state itself. Therefore, nothing of the positive nature can be derived from any part of Creation in any of its forms, aspects, levels and degrees, but only from The Lord Jesus Christ Who is more than all those parts. To make such a derivation from any part of Creation itself is harmful and hurtful to anyone who accepts and identifies himself/herself with such a derivation. You are to bear the consequences of such a separation and substitution, as well as you are to bear the positive consequences as a result of your recognition, acceptance of and identification with the fact that the only source of the positive state and all life is The Lord Jesus Christ Who transcends all and everything, including His/Her Creation."

"You are to worship directly only The Lord Jesus Christ, avoiding the abominable worship of the products of His/Her creative effort. The products of such an effort can never be substitutes for The Producer of these products. For I, The Lord Jesus Christ, AM an absolutely just and loving God, Who limits the existence of the negative state of those who made such products the source of their lives to only one cycle of time, but Who maintains and gives all delights and pleasures of My Nature and of the positive state forever, to eternity, to those who reciprocate My Love and live in accordance with My spiritual principles."

“This **Second Spiritual Principle** will have validity for all cycles of time. As of this moment, it replaces The Second Commandment.”

(3)

“‘You shall not take the name of The Lord your God in vain’ signifies to use all spiritual principles inherent in His/Her Nature (Name), for other than spiritual reasons. To do something in vain means to do it with wrong intentions, for the wrong reasons and with inappropriate motivation. It also signifies to do something not for the principle itself, not for the sake of The Lord your God but for some other ulterior or selfish reasons. To do so for these adverse reasons; to use spiritual principles for the purpose of manipulating, using, misusing and abusing others; to use the name of God for hurting or harming anyone and anything means to take the name of The Lord your God in vain. Such an act results in a retribution which is inherent in the nature of any type of abuse or misuse. This is apparent from the second part of the Third Commandment, which states, ‘for The Lord will not hold him guiltless who takes His name in vain!’ One must bear the consequences of such misuse and abuse.”

“All spiritual principles were formulated and given to everyone for a certain purpose — to use them productively, constructively, creatively and for the benefit of all, for the sake of The Lord Jesus Christ and for the sake of principles themselves — because this is the right thing and way to do it. To use them for any other purposes means taking the name of The Lord your God in vain, inviting the necessary retribution. In such a case, one becomes guilty of defrauding and embezzling the riches bestowed upon that one by his/her Lord God. Unless one stops doing so and repents, asking for mercy and forgiveness of The Master of those riches, one will cause oneself all kinds of hurts and harms, becoming a slave of the negative state which excludes one from membership in the positive state.”

“In the connotation of the current position of The New Revelation, this commandment signifies abuse and misuse of the spiritual principles of The New Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ for justifying and rationalizing one’s own desires, wishes, wants, attitudes and behaviors inconsistent with the content and meaning of the principles themselves. It also means to use The Name of The Lord Jesus Christ in any other connotation other than in the connotation of His/Her New Nature as The only One God Indivisible. To use this Name in any other connotation, but in connotation of this New Nature, as of now, means to take that Name in vain. By doing that, one excludes oneself from membership in the positive state. Once excluded, one has to bear the consequences of that exclusion.”

“In this respect, the Third Commandment is being replaced by the following **Third Spiritual Principle:**”

“THE THIRD SPIRITUAL PRINCIPLE:”

“The Name of God is The Lord Jesus Christ. To use this Name of God in any other connotation or to use it as a means of manipulation, use, abuse or misuse of others; or to use it with any ulterior, non-spiritual motivation and intention means self-exclusion from membership in the positive state. The consequence of such an exclusion is deprivation of everything which is inherent in the nature of the positive state.”

“The Third Spiritual Principle will be valid to the end of this cycle of time. Once this cycle of time is ended, it will be modified, reformulated or replaced. As of this moment however, it replaces The Third Commandment.”

(4)

“Remember the Sabbath day, to keep it holy.’ To remember the Sabbath day, in this connotation, means to always be aware of one’s true and genuine origin. One is to keep constantly in mind that the origin of the true life is The Absolute Source of Life — The Lord Jesus Christ — Who, at the time this commandment was given, was called The Lord your God. To keep this in mind, to acknowledge it and to accept it as an indisputable fact as an axiom means to keep it holy. Another connotation of the word ‘Sabbath’ is the state of an ultimate accomplishment, the state of perfection and the state of the most within. In this state one does everything from the most within and one subsumes everything to that most within Spiritual Mind where the presence of The Lord your God is. To be in the presence of The Lord your God signifies to be in total peace, calmness, serenity and tranquility. This condition is not allowed to be disturbed by any other considerations.”

“Whenever one is in the state of inwardness, that is, in the presence of The Lord your God, one is in communication with the source of one’s life — The Creator. That communication is the foundation on which all else is built and from which all else derives. Therefore, it is most holy and the most desirable state.”

“The third connotation of the word ‘Sabbath’ is a practical one. One is advised to devote some of one’s daily time to the regular process of going inward for the purpose of such a vital and crucial communication with one’s Creator and Maker.”

“‘Six days you shall labor and do all your work’ signifies that you are responsible and accountable for your life which was bestowed upon you by The Lord your God and that you are to provide all necessary means for keeping that life functional, useful, fulfilling and satisfying. ‘Six days’ means here most of the time but not always. Number six, in this connotation, means not all the time and ‘days’ means almost all the time. The care for your daily life requires your attention most of the time.”

“In another connotation, ‘six days’ means six steps of the spiritual transformation from the negative state into the positive state, culminating in the seventh day, which is the state of completion and incorporation into the positive state and the rest from the negative state. Once in the positive state, that is, in the seventh day, one no longer is a subject to the misery, suffering, commotion, distraction, restlessness, violence and uncertainties of the negative state. Once one arrives into the positive state, that is, in the seventh day — the Sabbath — no aspects of one’s mind and individuality can be subject to the adverse nature of the negative state. This is what is meant by the following words of the Fourth Commandment, ‘Six days you shall labor and do all your work, but the seventh day is the Sabbath of The Lord your God. In it, you shall do no work: you, nor your son, nor your daughter, nor your manservant, nor your maidservant, nor your cattle, nor your stranger who is within your gates.’”

“By these words (son, daughter, etc.) are described the various aspects of one’s mind from the most within spiritual mind (by the word ‘you’), to the most outward and external aspects of the conscious mind devoted to the scanning and conscious awareness of one’s physical environment (the words ‘your stranger who is within your gates’). Once the process of spiritual transformation is completed and the seventh day or Sabbath — the true spiritual and celestial state — is established, none of the aspects of the entire mind can be any longer subject to anything inherent in the nature of the negative state. This is what the true significance of this commandment is.”

“‘For in six days The Lord made heavens and the earth, the sea, and all that is in them, and rested in the seventh day ’ Here the process of a complete spiritual transformation of the

sentient mind, trapped in the negative state, is described and how, first, the spiritual mind (Heaven); then the interior mind (the earth); and then the external mind (the sea) and all their various, all-inclusive aspects (and all that is in them), were liberated from the slavery to the negative state and converted to the positive state. And because no one but The Lord your God can liberate you from the dead life of the negative state; it is The Lord Who is The Maker and Liberator of the positive state in all aspects of your mind and life. That He rested in the seventh day means that the work of this transformation was successfully completed and its results were permanently established.”

“Therefore The Lord blessed the Sabbath day and hallowed it’ signifies that the results of the spiritual transformation are a celestial state that surpasses any other states. Such a state is to be bestowed on everyone who completed this process with all the consequences of the positive state of Heavens because in that state the eternal presence of The Lord your God is (‘hallowed it’).”

“In the connotation of the current portion of The New Revelation this commandment signifies that the end result of any spiritual transformation is the full acceptance into one’s life of The New Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ. This acceptance constitutes one’s ‘Sabbath day’ which will ultimately result into a total rest from any influences and the aspects of the dead life of the negative state (after your departure from the negative state). It also indicates prophetically that The Lord your God did not ‘rest’ until He/She incorporated and fused into His/Her Nature the human physical body-flesh and became The Lord Jesus Christ. This fact enables Him/Her now to initiate the process of spiritual transformation of all who are trapped in the negative state at any place, from their very position, and upon their request, bringing them out of the labor of their six days, into the seventh day of peace, joy and happiness of the positive state — The Sabbath — and into the state of the most within.”

“From this stems the formulation of ***The Fourth Spiritual Principle:***”

“THE FOURTH SPIRITUAL PRINCIPLE:”

“Remember the true source of your life and all spiritual principles ingrained into your most within Spiritual Mind. You are to balance your life in such a manner as to take proper and equal care of all aspects, levels, degrees and spheres of your everyday life and living. You are responsible and accountable for your own life and only for your own life, to its Absolute Originator — The Lord Jesus Christ. You are to devote some of your daily time for going inward, incorporating into that process all aspects of your mind — from the most within Spiritual Mind to the most without external conscious mind — and in that state, you are to communicate and to commune with The Lord Jesus Christ your God who is always present in that state. You are to acknowledge the fact that your spiritual transformation from the condition of the dead life of the negative state into the condition of the true life of the positive state and becoming a celestial man/woman, can be actualized, realized and become reality only by efforts of The Lord Jesus Christ, your God personally. The completion of your spiritual transformation and ultimately becoming a celestial man/woman, is blessed and hallowed by The Lord Jesus Christ your God.”

“As of now, this ***Fourth Spiritual Principle*** replaces The Fourth Commandment.”

“The validity of most of the content of the Fourth Spiritual Principle, with some future modifications, after the end of this cycle of time, is applicable to all cycles of time. The latter

portion of this Principle will be reformulated and possibly replaced at the end of this cycle of time.”

(5)

“Honor your father and your mother, that your days may be long upon the land which The Lord your God is giving you.”

“To ‘honor your father and your mother’ means to acknowledge and to accept the fact that one originated from the two elements, utilized by The Lord Jesus Christ your God — the masculine originating element (‘father’) and the feminine originating element (‘mother’). It also means that the essence of one’s life is goodness and love (‘mother’) and that the substance of one’s life is truth and wisdom (‘father’). They are united within the most within Spiritual Mind and are the key by which the entrance into the positive state is opened. The positive state is a spiritual marriage of feminine and masculine principles, of love and wisdom, of good and truth and positive works and faith. In honoring them, that is, accepting them as an integral part of one’s life, is an assurance that ‘your days may be long upon the land which The Lord your God is giving you.’”

“Your days may be long’ means forever, to eternity. The term ‘long,’ when applied to the positive state, signifies forever, to eternity. ‘Upon the land’ means the positive state of Heavens. As you remember, children of Israel were to inherit the land of Canaan. The spiritual correspondence of the land of Canaan is the positive state of Heavens. ‘Which The Lord your God is giving you’ signifies that it is His/Her positive state and that He/She gives it, as an inheritance, to everyone who is in the condition of the spiritual marriage described above.”

“In the connotation of this portion of The New Revelation, this commandment signifies that The New Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ, which also incorporates within Itself all elements of the worldly father (Joseph) and worldly mother (Mary), is to be honored as the only Source of the true motherhood and fatherhood and of The Absolute Unification and Spiritual Marriage of all elements of being and existence, including the elements taken out of the Zone of Displacement and planet Zero (after their purification from all evils and falsities and after their Divinization). To honor this fact assures one to be forever an inheritor of the gift of The Lord Jesus Christ your God — the eternal life in the positive state.”

“From this fact stems the formulation of The Fifth Spiritual Principle:”

“THE FIFTH SPIRITUAL PRINCIPLE:”

“Love, respect and honor The Lord Jesus Christ your God in His/Her New Nature as your only true Father and Mother, Who is The Absolute Unification and Integration of all elements in and of being and existence. Recognize, love, respect and accept your true nature which derives from the spiritual marriage of all principles of femininity and all principles of masculinity, of love and wisdom, of good and truth and positive works and faith, imparted on you by The Lord Jesus Christ your God, so that you may become an eternal inheritor and possessor of the positive state of Heavens which The Lord Jesus Christ your God is giving you freely and unequivocally forever, to eternity.”

“As of now, this ***Fifth Spiritual Principle*** replaces The Fifth Commandment. It will be valid for all cycles of time.”

(6)

“‘You shall not murder.’ This commandment indicates that everyone is given a gift of life freely. No matter what you do or what others do with that life, because it is their life and not yours, you have no right to violate that life in any manner and way. In the gift of life, in everyone’s ability to be free, to make choices and to change, is the presence of The Lord your God. By doing any violence to that life, you are violating that presence (murdering it).”

“Another connotation of ‘you shall not murder’ is to destroy any spiritual awareness in oneself or others. To deny that God exists, that spiritual principles are the true regulator of all aspects of any life and to convince others of this falsity, means to spiritually murder oneself and others. This is the worst type of murder.”

“In the connotation of this portion of The New Revelation, to murder someone signifies to convince oneself and others, after the fact of acceptance that The Lord Jesus Christ in His/Her New Nature is The Only Lord your God Most High, that it is not so, and subsequently to reject and to deny all spiritual principles of The New Revelation and The New Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ. To accomplish this means to spiritually murder oneself and others. This kind of murder is worse than any other. It would be better for one if he/she were never to originally accept the precepts of The New Revelation.”

“From the position of this portion of The New Revelation, the formulation of The Sixth Spiritual Principle is as follows:”

“THE SIXTH SPIRITUAL PRINCIPLE:”

“You are to respect the life and choices of any individual, no matter what these choices are. You are to avoid doing any purposeful and intentional harm, hurt or violence in any form and mode to anyone, or to yourself, or to The Lord Jesus Christ your God.”

“This ***Sixth Spiritual Principle*** replaces The Sixth Commandment. Its validity is for all cycles of time.”

(7)

“‘You shall not commit adultery.’ This commandment has basically three connotations. One relates to God. To worship any other God or gods or persons or things but The One God — The Creator — constitutes spiritual adultery. If one is an extension and a process of one’s Creator, to consider someone else to be one’s Creator is adulterous; it is being unfaithful to the truth of the matter. In this respect, The Creator is conceptualized as a Husband of His/Her Creation (all sentient entities) and Creation (all sentient entities) as His/Her wife. Therefore, if this ‘wife’ considers her lover to be someone else but her rightful and legal Husband, she is guilty of adultery.”

“The other connotation relates to one’s own nature. One is a unique carrier of a unique aspect of life. One is integrally connected, or married, to that aspect. To desire, to want or to connect oneself to any other aspect, which is not of one’s own nature and, therefore, which does not belong into that one, is to commit adultery or to be adulterous. One becomes unfaithful to one’s own nature to which one is eternally married.”

“One is always one’s own nature. This can never be changed. After all, one’s unique nature is determined by the unique aspect of life from The Creator. One is His/Her extension and a process. The nature of this aspect, being that its source is Absolute, can never be exhausted. Thus, one is eternally married to it.”

“To desire some different nature or to want to relinquish it or to repress or suppress it and, instead, to play or to assume a different role or nature or identity means to commit adultery against one’s own nature.”

“The third connotation of this concept relates to the involvement with other individuals, particularly with the opposite gender. Any involvement with anyone for any other reason but for mutual benefit, sharing, exchange, reciprocity, joy, delight, pleasure and good of all is adulterous. This is particularly true if such involvement is for ulterior, selfish reasons, with ulterior intentions and motivations without any regard or respect for the needs and nature of the other person(s).”

“In this case, one violates all spiritual principles of relatedness. Such violation constitutes a true adulterous relationship.”

“This conceptualization is valid also in the connotation of this portion of The New Revelation with one modification: The modification relates to The New Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ. As you remember from Chapter Two of this book, it was stated there that, anyone who, after reading those words, continues to worship any other God under any other name but The Lord Jesus Christ in His/Her true Nature, and anyone who rejects and denies the principles of The New Revelation and, instead, clings to the old and traditional mode of worshipping God, commits spiritual adultery.”

“From the above statement follows ***The Seventh Spiritual Principle:***”

“THE SEVENTH SPIRITUAL PRINCIPLE:”

“You are to worship only The Lord Jesus Christ your God in His/Her True New Nature. You are to be eternally faithful and loyal to His/Her Nature and to your own nature. You are to relate to all other individuals only from the position of your own unique nature and only with positive and good intent and motivation and for the right reasons, for the sake of all spiritual principles of such relationships.”

“Now, this ***Seventh Spiritual Principle*** replaces The Seventh Commandment. The content of this principle will be valid for all cycles of time.”

(8)

“‘You shall not steal.’ This Commandment has two connotations. One relates to the spiritual principle that everything in being and existence belongs to The Lord your God, now The Lord Jesus Christ your God. To claim that it is not so and to insist that what one has is his/her own, signifies to steal it from its rightful owner. All Creation belongs to The Creator. He/She is the rightful owner of Creation. Therefore, to claim that anything of Creation is one’s own possession, appropriating it to oneself without permission of The Creator and without acknowledging its true Source and Ownership, means to be a thief and a robber.”

“The other connotation relates to the fact that every individual has a right to possess his/her own individuality and all goods and ingredients attached to it in all their aspects, including the physical and natural aspects. That individual was assigned those possessions by The Creator. To forcefully appropriate to oneself something that belongs to others, in any respect or by any means or manner, means to be a thief and a robber. It also means to be in the negative state.”

"In the connotation of this portion of The New Revelation, the above definition remains valid, with an important addition that anyone who denies The New Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ, and that He/She is the only One God Indivisible, is a thief and a robber of this fact. Since there is no other God in being and existence, everything in Creation, as well as in the Zone of Displacement and on planet Zero, belongs to The Lord Jesus Christ. He/She is now, after acquirement of The New Nature, the only rightful owner of anything in being and existence, including the entire Zone of Displacement and planet Zero. Whoever claims the ownership of any of these regions, states, conditions, processes or whatever you have, is stealing from The Lord Jesus Christ, thus, becoming a thief and a robber."

"From this follows the formulation of ***The Eighth Spiritual Principle:***"

"THE EIGHTH SPIRITUAL PRINCIPLE:"

"You are to recognize and to accept the fact that The Lord Jesus Christ your God is the only rightful owner of all and everything in being and existence without any exception or exclusion. You are to respect your own right and privilege to own and to possess your own individuality, as well as other individuals' right to possess their own individualities and everything that belongs to them in any sense and in any of their aspects, without ever appropriating to yourself that which does not belong to you and is not part of your own possessions."

"Again, this ***Eighth Spiritual Principle*** replaces The Eighth Commandment, being valid for all cycles of time."

(9)

"'You shall not bear false witness against your neighbor.' This Commandment has also two connotations. One relates to The Lord your God. It denotes that one should never think, feel or say anything about God which is not true and which is not an integral state of His/ Her Nature. Thus, for example, to claim that God personally punishes people or condemns them to the Hells, etc., means to bear false witness against God. Because He/She is The Absolute Master and Ruler of all, He/She is your Ultimate Neighbor. To testify about His/Her Nature in a manner that is inconsistent with that Nature or to ascribe to God acts, behaviors, attitudes, characteristics or traits that are not of His/Her Nature and which He/She is incapable of doing, is to bear false witness against your Number One Neighbor. The other connotation of this Commandment relates to one's own nature and to how one perceives the nature of others."

"In this connotation, one's nature is also one's neighbor, as well as any other sentient entity is one's neighbor. To think, to feel, to say or to claim about yourself, and also about others, something that is not so or is not of one's own or of others' nature, or to ascribe to oneself or to others any deeds, feelings, emotions, thoughts, intentions, behaviors and attitudes that have never entered one's own or others' minds, is to bear false witness against oneself and/or others. In the connotation of this portion of The New Revelation, the content of this Commandment is fully valid, with an important addition that, to claim, to think, to feel or to say that The Lord Jesus Christ is not the only One God Indivisible and that He/She did not hybridize, infuse and incorporate His/Her human body-flesh into the totality of His/ Her Nature, or that He/She is not the only Savior, Master and Ruler of all and everything, including the Zone of Displacement and planet Zero, is to bear false witness against Him/Her as your Ultimate Neighbor."

"Therefore, in this respect, the formulation of ***The Ninth Spiritual Principle*** is as follows:"

“THE NINTH SPIRITUAL PRINCIPLE:”

“You are to think, to feel, to say and to claim about The Lord Jesus Christ your God, as well as about others and yourself, only that which is true, right and proper, without adding, distorting, perverting, falsifying or denying anything pertaining to them. They are all your neighbors; and The Lord Jesus Christ your God is your Ultimate Neighbor.”

“As of this very moment, *The Ninth Principle* is replacing The Ninth Commandment. Its validity will be retained for all cycles of time with appropriate periodical reevaluations, particularly before the beginning of each New Cycle of Time.”

(10)

“You shall not covet your neighbor’s house; you shall not covet your neighbor’s wife, nor his manservant, nor his maidservant, nor his ox, nor his donkey, nor anything that is your neighbor’s.’ One connotation of this Commandment relates to The Creator as The Absolute Neighbor. The other relates to every individual. In the first connotation of this meaning, one should never crave, lust or intensely desire to be God, to have His/Her powers (neighbor’s house); to have His/Her Nature and/or His/Her Mind (neighbor’s wife); His/Her Absolute Attributes (menservants and maidservants); any of His/Her Absolute Strength (ox); His/Her Absolute Determination (donkey) or any other traits, conditions, states or whatever, that are of purely Divine Nature.”

“In this respect, this commandment implies that one can never be God; one is not God because, being created, one can never be absolute but only relative to that absolute. From this meaning derives the second connotation of this Commandment: One is to acknowledge and to accept the fact that one is not God and can never reach The Absolute Level of God because God will always transcend any level, condition, state or whatever one can achieve. Therefore, one is to be thankful, grateful, appreciative and satisfied with what one is and with what one has, accepting one’s own nature and all possessions attached to it in any form and condition, accepting the limitation of one’s relative nature, without ever being envious of other individuals’ natures and their possessions or wanting to have what other individuals have or to be the way they are.”

“From the standpoint of this portion of The New Revelation, the content of this commandment remains fully valid and applicable at the present time with one important addition: One shall not lust, desire, wish or crave to be The Absolute Incorporation and Integration of all elements of Creation, the Zone of Displacement and planet Zero as The Lord Jesus Christ is.”

“Another aspect of this commandment is to avoid putting all one’s life efforts, placing one’s intense desires and cravings, into acquiring things and possessions similar to what other people have in order to compete with them and to show them that one can have the same things and even better. An attitude of this nature robs one of all important life energies. These energies, given to everyone by The Lord Jesus Christ, should be devoted to the development and implementation of one’s own resources at all levels of one’s mind, instead of being wasted on such foolish cravings. If you waste your energies in this manner, you put yourself in the position of the wicked and lazy servant, being cast out into the outer darkness, as depicted in the parable of Jesus Christ about the talents (as previously described). From this consideration the formulation of *The Tenth Spiritual Principle* is as follows:”

“THE TENTH SPIRITUAL PRINCIPLE:”

“You are to acknowledge and to accept, in all modesty, humbleness and humility, the fact that you are not The Lord Jesus Christ your God Who is Absolute and the only One Who absolutely IS. You can never be God or have the powers of The Lord Jesus Christ your God. You are to be thankful, grateful, appreciative for and satisfied with what you have and who you are and how much or how little you have. You are to respect with all love and wisdom the unique individuals and the needs of all others who have a different nature, a different assignment, a different role and a different destiny and, relevant to all of them, different gifts, talents, abilities, tools and possessions than your own, without ever desiring, craving and lusting for that which rightly belongs to them. Instead of competing with anyone, by trying to be the way they are or to have what they have or wasting your energy on gathering all kinds of possessions, you are to be cooperative with others, supportive of others and helpful to others, as needed, when needed and if needed. And you are to be this way for the sake of principle, without expecting anything in return.”

“Now, this ***Tenth Spiritual Principle*** replaces The Tenth Commandment. It will be valid for all cycles of time with future modifications. The issue of the future modification, change, redefinition or replacement of any of these Ten Spiritual Principles relates to the time when the negative state will no longer have any significance because it will be no more. At that time, the need for this revision will become obvious. Because of the replacement of The Ten Commandments, which contained deep spiritual inner meaning, with The Ten Spiritual Principles, some important and vital mysteries exist about these New Principles. They will be formulated in the next Chapter.”

“In conclusion of this Chapter, Peter, will you please summarize the Ten Spiritual Principles in one cohesive sequence, so that they can make better sense for the prospective readers? Thank you, sir.”

THE TEN SPIRITUAL PRINCIPLES

1. I am The Lord Jesus Christ your God in the totality of Human Divine and Divine Human, Who is your Savior from the negative state and all its evils and falsities, and Who is the only One Who has The Absolute Power and The Absolute Ability to bring you out of the Zone of Displacement, planet Zero and the condition of slavery into the condition of the positive state of freedom, independency, love and wisdom. You shall personally, privately and intimately relate only to Me, bringing all issues of your life to My personal attention, evoking no other mediators or gods under any other names.

2. There is only one reality in being and existence — the reality of the positive state. The positive state is The Absolute Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ your God Who continuously emanates this state into His/ Her Creation. The Lord Jesus Christ your God, being Absolute, although always present in His/Her Creation, nevertheless transcends His/Her Creation in all respects and is more than the positive state itself. Therefore, nothing of the positive nature can be derived from any part of Creation in any of its forms, aspects, levels and degrees, but only from The Lord Jesus Christ who is more than all those parts. To make such a derivation from any part of Creation itself is harmful and hurtful to anyone who accepts and identifies himself/herself with

such a derivation. You are to bear the consequences of such a separation and substitution, as well as you are to bear the positive consequences as a result of your recognition, acceptance of and identification with the fact that the only source of the positive state and all life is The Lord Jesus Christ Who transcends all and everything, including His/Her Creation.

You are to worship directly only The Lord Jesus Christ, avoiding the abominable worship of the products of His/Her creative effort. The products of such an effort can never be substitutes for The Producer of these products. For I, The Lord Jesus Christ, AM an absolutely just and loving God, Who limits the existence of the negative state of those who made such products the source of their lives to only one cycle of time, but Who maintains and gives all delights and pleasures of My Nature and of the positive state forever, to eternity to those who reciprocate My Love and live in accordance with My Spiritual Principles.

3. The Name of God is The Lord Jesus Christ. To use this Name of God in any other connotation or to use it as a means of manipulation, use, abuse or misuse of others; or to use it with any ulterior, non-spiritual motivation and intention means self-exclusion from membership in the positive state. The consequence of such an exclusion is deprivation of everything which is inherent in the nature of the positive state.

4. Remember the true source of your life and all spiritual principles ingrained into your most within Spiritual Mind. You are to balance your life in such a manner as to take proper and equal care of all aspects, levels, degrees and spheres of your everyday life and living. You are responsible and accountable for your own life, and only for your own life, to its Absolute Originator — The Lord Jesus Christ. You are to devote some of your daily time for going inward, incorporating into that process all aspects of your mind — from the most within Spiritual Mind to the most without external conscious mind — and in that state, you are to communicate and commune with The Lord Jesus Christ your God Who is always present in that state. You are to acknowledge the fact that your spiritual transformation from the condition of the dead life of the negative state into the condition of the true life of the positive state, and becoming a celestial man/woman, can be actualized, realized and become reality only by the efforts of The Lord Jesus Christ your God, personally. The completion of your spiritual transformation and ultimately becoming a celestial man/woman, is blessed and hallowed by The Lord Jesus Christ, your God.

5. Love, respect and honor The Lord Jesus Christ your God in His/Her New Nature as your only true Father and Mother, Who is The Absolute Unification and Integration of all elements in and of being and existence. Recognize, love, respect and accept your true nature which derives from the spiritual marriage of all principles of femininity and all principles of masculinity, of love and wisdom, of good and truth and positive works and faith, imparted on you by The Lord Jesus Christ your God, so that you may become an eternal inheritor and possessor of the positive state of Heavens which The Lord Jesus Christ, your God, is giving to you freely and unequivocally forever, to eternity.

6. You are to respect the life and choices of any individual, no matter what

these choices are. You are to avoid doing any purposeful and intentional harm, hurt or violence in any form and mode to anyone, or to yourself, or to The Lord Jesus Christ, your God.

7. You are to worship only The Lord Jesus Christ your God in His/Her True New Nature. You are to be eternally faithful and loyal to His/Her Nature and to your own nature. You are to relate to all other individuals only from the position of your own unique nature and only with positive and good intent and motivation and for the right reasons, for the sake of all spiritual principles of such relationships.

8. You are to recognize and to accept the fact that The Lord Jesus Christ, your God, is the only rightful owner of all and everything in being and existence without any exception or exclusion. You are to respect your own right and privilege to own and to possess your own individuality, as well as other individuals' right to possess their own individualities and everything that belongs to them in any sense and in any of their aspects, without ever appropriating to yourself that which does not belong to you and is not part of your own possessions.

9. You are to think, to feel, to say and to claim about The Lord Jesus Christ, your God, as well as about others and yourself, only that which is true, right and proper, without adding, distorting, perverting, falsifying or denying anything pertaining to them. They are all your neighbors and The Lord Jesus Christ, your God, is your Ultimate Neighbor.

10. You are to acknowledge and to accept, in all modesty, humbleness and humility, the fact that you are not The Lord Jesus Christ, your God, Who is Absolute and The only One Who absolutely IS. You can never be God or have the powers of The Lord Jesus Christ your God. You are to be thankful, grateful, appreciative for and satisfied with what you have and who you are and how much or how little you have. You are to respect with all love and wisdom the unique individuals and the needs of all others who have a different nature, a different assignment, a different role and a different destiny and relevant to all of them, different gifts, talents, abilities, tools and possessions than your own, without ever desiring, craving and lusting for that which rightly belongs to them. Instead of competing with anyone, by trying to be the way they are or to have what they have or wasting your energy on gathering all kinds of possessions, you are to be cooperative with others, supportive of others and helpful to others, as needed, when needed and if needed. And you are to be this way for the sake of principle, without expecting anything in return.

"If anyone has ears to hear, let him/her hear what The Lord Jesus Christ reveals in this Chapter. He/She who keeps these spiritual principles for their own sake will inherit all things available in the positive state of Heavens."

CHAPTER TWENTY FIVE

THE MYSTERY OF THE TEN SPIRITUAL PRINCIPLES

On May 14, 1988, at 6:00 in the morning, the word of The Lord Jesus Christ came to me, saying,

“The Ten Spiritual Principles, as formulated in the previous Chapter and which replaced The Ten Commandments, contain certain important spiritual attributes not apparent at first glance. There are certain mysteries related to their content and formulation and particularly to their application.”

“The fundamental spiritual law of Creation requires that any spiritual principle that has a direct relevance to the structure, content, quality and life of any sentient entity, can be formulated, defined, developed, exemplified, reformulated, modified or entirely replaced only by The One Who constitutes the principles and the laws themselves — The Lord Jesus Christ. No one singular individual is permitted or authorized or is capable of doing so for a simple reason that he/she lives from such principles and laws themselves. The rule here is that any derivative of something, cannot be its formulator, definer or developer because that something does not stem from him/her but he/she stems from it.”

“First, a principle needs to be formulated and established. Once it is formulated and established, it can produce all its derivatives into which it can be imparted. Thus, the very being and existence of any life depends on the laws, principles and ideas of life which precede in all respects the being and the existence of such life.”

“This is the reason why only The Lord Jesus Christ, being The Absolute Principles, Laws and Ideas of Life, can derive all necessary definitions and procedures for the formulation and implementation of such principles, laws and ideas.”

“Another requirement of this issue is that The Lord Jesus Christ, once defining, formulating and establishing any principles, becomes those principles and they are integrated into His/Her Absolute Nature in an absolute sense. Thus, He/She is The One Who, as the very first, implements those principles in His/Her Absolute Life in an absolute sense. By doing that, The Lord Jesus Christ becomes an Absolute Example for everyone else of how to implement those principles in one’s everyday life or life of all others who are relative to His/Her Absoluteness.”

“The issue here is that, being relative, sentient entities, *in themselves and by themselves*, cannot conceive properly of how to implement and exemplify any single principle. Such a process needs to be preceded by its occurrence in The Absolute State. Everything needs to be initiated in The Absolute State first. Once it is initiated there, the results and examples of that initiation are conveyed to everyone else in Creation.”

“This conveyance happens by the principle which states that whatever occurs in The Absolute State, by its very nature, immediately proceeds to all extensions and processes of that State being relative to it, and there it becomes an integral part of those lives, giving a sense and a purpose to those lives.”

“Through such an immediate conveyance, all sentient entities, from the presence of The Lord

Jesus Christ within them, in that specific aspect of the unique life which was imparted on them by Him/Her, can read out and experience, from the example of The Lord Jesus Christ, how such principles need to be implemented.”

“In this sense, any spiritual principle formulated by The Lord Jesus Christ becomes something like a road map which continuously gives directions to all who travel the road of life as to which way to proceed.”

“At this point, it is necessary to realize the following rules regarding spiritual principles:”

“1. Some spiritual principles are given to and are applicable only within the true life of the positive state of Creation and its multiverse.

2. Some are given to and are applicable only within the Zone of Displacement.

3. Some are given to and are applicable only on planet Zero. Being that planet Zero is in such a peculiar, unusual and impossible position, it requires to be governed by some spiritual principles which are relevant only to its peculiar, unusual and impossible position.

4. Some spiritual principles are given and are applicable at all levels of Creation, the Zone of Displacement and planet Zero. These types of principles have multiversal, all-inclusive application and significance.

5. And finally, some spiritual principles are a mixture of all the above. In this latter case, the formulation of some spiritual principles is such that a portion of them has relevance to both the positive and the negative state, respectively; and another portion of them addresses the issues which are relevant either to the positive state or to the negative state only.”

“The spiritual principles applicable only to the negative state and/or planet Zero and the spiritual principles, the portions of which are applicable only to the negative state and/or planet Zero, will be cancelled once the negative state is abolished and once planet Zero is returned to its rightful position, becoming, once again, an integral part of planet Earth (if it survives the return of the pseudo-creators or its present political and military orientation).”

“Another aspect of spiritual principles is that some of them have absolute validity, applicable to all cycles of time from eternity to eternity. They were, are and will be always valid. A good example of such a principle is the fact that the only Source of true life is The Absolute God whose name is The Lord Jesus Christ and that no other source of life exists. This principle is valid in an absolute sense and will always be true.”

“Certain other principles are formulated for the specific needs and conditions of each cycle of time. They are valid only within that cycle of time and they are not transferable to any other cycle of time.”

“Still other spiritual principles are given for the various steps of spiritual progression that happen within that cycle of time. These principles are valid within and during the continuation of that step. In the next step, they are either entirely cancelled and replaced with some other principles, or they are modified, reformulated and updated to suit the needs of the quality and the content of the incoming next step of spiritual progression.”

“There are still other spiritual principles that are valid only within each universal locality and

only for one particular society or even one particular individual. As you remember and as was indicated many times before, whatever is proper and right for one individual is not necessarily so for some other individual; and vice versa.”

“Thus, as you see, there are many levels of applicability and validity of the spiritual principles — from the level of all-inclusive Absolute Reality to all times, places, conditions, states and processes or to very relative validity applicable to one singular individual.”

“This structure reflects an important spiritual principle by its own right which has absolute validity:”

“Every sentient entity is infinitely unique and cannot be replicated. But at the same time, every sentient entity has something in common with some, but not all, sentient entities. And finally, every sentient entity contains something in its nature which is common to all sentient entities anywhere and anywhen and under any condition. This is a principle of uniqueness, similarity and common denominator.”

“Because of the requirement of this principle, each individual is governed by a set of rules and principles that are: a. applicable only to his/her unique and non-replicable nature; b. that are applicable only to certain individuals with whom he/she has something in common; and c. that are applicable to all individuals in being and existence whose life is underlaid by the Common Denominator — for example, they are all children of the same Creator — The Lord Jesus Christ, and they are all part of the same Creation or its fallouts (in the case of the members of the Zone of Displacement and humans on planet Zero). The fallouts are still fallouts of the real Creation. Therefore, the Common Denominator is the same because they all have an ability to choose and to change, in which ability is the presence of The Lord Jesus Christ. This is their Common Denominator, no matter whether they reside in the highest Heaven or the lowest and deepest Hell.”

“Because of the existence of such a Common Denominator, certain rules and principles apply to all of them.”

“Now, The Ten Spiritual Principles, as formulated in the previous Chapter, contain elements from most of the nature of spiritual principles, outlined above.”

“That is to say, some elements of The Ten Spiritual Principles have an absolute applicability, in an absolute sense, for all times, places, conditions, states and processes. Their other elements are applicable only within the current cycle of time. Some are related only to the negative state.”

“But in all their aspects, The Ten Spiritual Principles can be considered an important road map for all who live in this cycle of time.”

“Let it be stated here that this road map will be valid to the very end of this cycle of time or as long as the negative state is in an activated and dominant position.”

“Once this will not be the case, and the negative state with its specific Zone of Displacement and planet Zero is no more, the modification, update and/or replacement of these spiritual principles will take place. At that time, some entirely new spiritual principles will be defined and formulated by The Lord Jesus Christ which will rule and govern the next cycle of time in all its aspects.”

"In assessing the nature of The Ten Spiritual Principles, it is necessary to be aware of the following important factors-mysteries:

(1)

"By their content, meaning, quality and proper application, The Ten Spiritual Principles are the only true foundation on which any relationship can be built. They are the only genuine, true and enduring building blocks on which any meaningful, fulfilling and satisfying relationship can be developed and established."

"Basically, three most important, crucial and vital relationships exist in being and existence:"

- " a. Relationship to The Lord Jesus Christ;
- b. relationship to others; and
- c. relationship to oneself."

"The Ten Spiritual Principles give one an effective means to establish these relationships in a proper and most desirable spiritual manner. Following and implementation of these Principles in one's everyday life assures that these relationships are truly sound, objective, orderly, elegant and beautiful. Their implementation assures a rich, productive, constructive and creative life."

"Such is the mystical power of these Principles. This mystical power is derived from the fact that The Ten Spiritual Principles are an extension and a process of The Absolute Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ. In them is present the life of The Lord Jesus Christ."

"Therefore, whoever keeps these Principles will live. This is the reason why it was stated in Leviticus 18:5 in The Holy Bible:"

""You shall therefore keep My statutes and My judgments,
which if a man does, he shall live by them. I am the Lord!"

"No true life is possible but only by these Principles, which are the statutes and judgments of The Lord Jesus Christ, for He/She is present in them."

"The mystery of this statement lies in the fact that The Lord Jesus Christ conveys His/Her life to all living and breathing entities anywhere through and by these Spiritual Principles. Disregard for these Principles, their rejection, denial and non-keeping, casts one outside of the true life. By this act, one becomes imbued with the dead life of the negative state."

(2)

"The Ten Spiritual Principles have a mysterious power of connecting anyone to the true Source — The Lord Jesus Christ. In fact, at the present time, no other connecting link between any sentient entity and The Lord Jesus Christ exists."

"The Principles were formulated and established for this very purpose. They also function as a recognition of whether one is in contact with The true Lord Jesus Christ or some imposter claiming to be Jesus Christ or some kind of deity. Whoever keeps and abides by these Principles is in a direct contact with The true Lord Jesus Christ. The Lord Jesus Christ is personally present in such life. By this act, one's life is validated as godly."

"In the negative state, the only possible connection to the positive state is through and by these Ten Spiritual Principles. The spiritual mystery of these Principles is in the fact that applying these Principles in one's life for their own sake, because this is the right thing to do,

keeps one out of the negative state and places him/her into the positive state, even while one still is physically living in the negative state.”

“The knowledge and implementation of The Ten Spiritual Principles is particularly crucial for humans on planet Zero. Being what the human life is and being where planet Zero is located, these Principles are their only possible link to the positive state.”

“The presence and availability of these Principles on your planet keeps this planet alive. The mystery here is in the fact of their availability and presence. Even if no human beings, or only very few humans, keep and abide by these Principles, their physical presence and availability is sufficient to keep this planet and its inhabitants going.”

“Another mystery of these Principles is that, through and by them, The Lord Jesus Christ very successfully and effectively governs the negative state and planet Zero (as was already pointed out, in general terms, in Chapter Twenty Three of this book).”

“Such is the tremendous mysterious power of The Ten Spiritual Principles. They are a shield against any pollution, contamination and poison by the negative state of evils and falsities.”

(3)

“The Ten Spiritual Principles are The true Word of The Lord Jesus Christ. Because The Lord Jesus Christ is The Word, wherever these Principles are, The Lord Jesus Christ is. Therefore, anyone who has these Principles in his/her heart and mind, has the presence of The Lord Jesus Christ in them.”

“This is a specific mode of communication with The Lord Jesus Christ by life. The quality and content of one’s life is determined by the degree of keeping and abiding by these Principles. They are the most important factors of one’s life.”

“Therefore, to know them, to study them, to understand them, to meditate on them and to practice them is to become the number one priority of your life. Nothing more important in one’s life exists than doing just that. After all, on this factor your eternal destiny and fate depends. Also, on this factor the happiness and meaningfulness of any life depend.”

“Unless these Principles are kept and abided by, no clear and direct communication with The Lord Jesus Christ, your spiritual advisors and the positive state of Heavens is possible. The factor of keeping them and abiding by them is a means for clarity and understanding of what is being communicated or conveyed to you. Otherwise, you will hear and understand not the true meaning of that communication but something else, having no relevance to the content of the truth which is being related to you. In the worst case, this communication comes from the negative entities of the Hells who are disguised as The Lord Jesus Christ and your genuine spiritual advisors. Therefore, you will be considering their messages to be true and genuine, while they are just the opposite of what is coming from the true positive state.”

“The knowledge of these Principles for accomplishment of clear communication and relationship with the positive state is not sufficient in itself and by itself. It has to be combined with full implementation of that knowledge in one’s everyday life in accordance with one’s best abilities, to the fullest of one’s potentials and for the sake of the Principles themselves without any ulterior motivation.”

“This mode of combination of the knowledge and practice of these Principles with such an attitude keeps away all negative spirits and entities and protects one from being misled, misguided and deceived. In fact, it fully protects one from the negative state itself.”

“Such is the mysterious power of The Ten Spiritual Principles.”

(4)

“The Ten Spiritual Principles are the means by which everyone judges himself/herself in the moment of and during the personal and private Last Judgment. Against them, the quality and the content of one’s life, in all its aspects, without any exception and exclusion, is judged, evaluated, weighed and considered.”

“The verdict of this Judgment is determined by the factor of keeping these Principles and abiding by them for the sake of principles themselves without any other considerations. The more one does something for the sake of Principles themselves, the more favorable the verdict; and vice versa: the less is the case in this respect, the less favorable the verdict.”

“The mystery of this point is that The Lord Jesus Christ is the only possible just Judge. Because He/She is not only present in those Principles in an absolute sense, but He/She is those Principles themselves in an absolute sense, He/She is the only Judge.”

“Thus, the entire attitude toward life and toward the most important factor of life — The Lord Jesus Christ — is determined by the degree and the extent one keeps practicing these Principles for their own sake, that is, for the sake of The Lord Jesus Christ.”

“This is the mystery of the true life and living. When the principles of this life state that one lives and is alive by, through, from, with and of The Lord Jesus Christ, it means one lives and is truly alive by, through, from, with and of these Ten Spiritual Principles of The Lord Jesus Christ because He/She is absolutely in them.”

“This is also a mystery of relationship between The Absolute State of The Creator and the relative state of Creation and all its relative inhabitants.”

“How does one relate from the position of The Absolute State to the position of the relative state? No equality exists between them which would make it possible to relate on parity. In order to establish such a relationship, The Absolute State derives from Itself its various spiritual principles and extends them to the relative state. If the relative state accepts them, keeps them and abides by them, it allows The Absolute State to be a part of its condition — through and by those principles. If it rejects them, no relationship is established.”

“The paradox of this situation is in the fact that derivation from The Absolute State is a medium between something which is absolute and something which is relative. The relative cannot contain The Absolute in an absolute sense. But it can do so in a relative sense.”

“Because that relative is a derivation of The Absolute, by and through those Derivative Principles, the presence of The Absolute is assured in a relative sense and in an absolute sense from the standpoint of that Absolute. Thus, all these Principles are absolute in The Absolute State but relative in the relative state.”

“Because any life is derived from The Spiritual Principles, which, in turn, are derived from The Absolute Life and Principles of The Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ, the only way life can be lived is by following, abiding by and practicing these Principles, seeing in them The Absolute Private Presence of The Lord Jesus Christ. In this manner, one validates one’s life and in this manner, that life is eternally appropriated to its carrier.”

“The importance of these four mysteries of The Ten Spiritual Principles cannot be

emphasized enough. This is the reason why you are advised to continuously meditate on them and check your everyday behavior, attitude, thinking, feeling, willing, desires, wishes, wants, intentions and motivations by these Principles, making sure that your life is aligned with them.”

“By doing that, you assure the continuous presence of The Lord Jesus Christ in you, and your presence in The Lord Jesus Christ. The practice of these Principles is a mediator of this mutual and reciprocal presence to eternity.”

“If anyone has ears to hear, let him/her hear what The Lord Jesus Christ reveals in this brief Chapter.”

CHAPTER TWENTY SIX

THE LORD'S PRAYER REVISITED

On May 15, 1988 again the word of The Lord Jesus Christ came to me, saying:

"It is time to reevaluate what is known to humans as The Lord's Prayer. As you know, this prayer was formulated by The Lord Jesus Christ during His/Her stay on planet Zero."

"Basically, there are two, somewhat different versions of this Prayer. One is recorded in The Gospel According to Matthew, Chapter 6, verses 9-13; the other one is recorded in The Gospel According to Luke, Chapter 11, verses 2-4."

"For comparison, let us quote them side by side:"

"Matthew's Version:"

"Our Father in heaven, hallowed be Your name. Your kingdom come. Your will be done on earth as it is in heaven. Give us this day our daily bread. And forgive us our debts, as we forgive our debtors. And do not lead us into temptation, but deliver us from the evil one. For yours is the kingdom and the power and the glory forever. Amen."

"Luke's Version:"

"Our Father in heaven, hallowed be Your name. Your Kingdom come. Your will be done on earth as it is in heaven. Give us day by day our daily bread. And forgive us our sins, for we also forgive everyone who is indebted to us. And do not lead us into temptation, but deliver us from the evil one."

"As you know, historians of the biblical texts differ in the explanation of what kinds of words The Lord Jesus Christ used. No consensus exists on the original wording of this Prayer. Some texts omit this word or that word and Luke, for example, omits the closing clause of this Prayer ('for yours is the kingdom and the power and the glory forever. Amen.'). Not only that, but the context within which this Prayer was formulated by Jesus Christ fundamentally differs between Matthew and Luke."

"In Matthew's context, the Prayer is included within the famous authoritative Sermon on the Mountain. On the other hand, in Luke this is not the case. Luke's context places the time and the place of that Prayer into a different time and place than His/Her famous Mountain Sermon. In Luke, the Prayer is given by a request from one of His disciples, after He was praying in a certain place. That disciple asked Him, 'Lord, teach us to pray, as John also taught his disciples.'"

"It is not by a coincidence that so many discrepancies exist about the true wording of this prayer and in what contextual situation it was formulated."

"It seems as though these are two different prayers from a different time and from a different

position. The discrepancies in wording created very different interpretations of the meaning of this prayer, giving an impetus to the development of the churches' dogmas and doctrines that fundamentally differ in their philosophies."

"Thus, for example, the Catholic Church uses Luke's text and claims that the kingdom, the power and the glory were given to that church. Allegedly, this is the reason why Jesus Christ omitted the closing clause of this Prayer."

"On the other hand, the Protestant churches adopted Matthew's version of this Prayer. However, not all available copies of Matthew's original Gospel contain this famous closing clause. So, the controversy about this issue is obvious."

"In actuality, no one knows exactly which words belong in that Prayer and which do not."

"The true reality of this situation, as revealed here by The Lord Jesus Christ, is that both versions are correct — as recorded in The New King James Version of the English translation of The Holy Bible to the nearest approximation of the originals of both Matthew's Gospel and Luke's Gospel."

"What no one has known up to this point was that Jesus Christ formulated two prayers, at two different times, from the two, entirely different positions."

"The Prayer, as recorded in Matthew, was formulated from the position of the positive state and from the position of His/Her being the Son of God, that is, from The Absolute Element of The Most High which was hybridized with and fused into the elements of Joseph and Mary. From that position, the Prayer has an entirely different connotation and meaning than from the position which was conducive to Luke's version of that Prayer."

"The former position is a position of the most within Spiritual Mind, where all kingdoms, power and glory belong."

"However, in Luke, the position is taken from that aspect of Jesus Christ which was called the Son of Man. This is a position of separation from The Most High — Father. Whereas the first position in Matthew flows from within to without — this is the positive state, the position in Luke is from without to within — this is the position of the negative state. It is an external position where no kingdom, no power and no glory exist."

"Notice, please, that in Luke the Prayer was formulated only **after** a request was made by a disciple, asking Jesus Christ to teach them how to pray. This is a request from without and not from within. Again, this version has an entirely different connotation than the one in Matthew."

"Matthew's version was formulated from the purely spiritual position or from spiritual truth. Luke's version was formulated from the human or external position, the position where no genuine truth exists. Because of this factor, the introduction of truth into this position must occur first due to the fact that nothing of the real truth exists in the condition of human life."

"Basically, you can say that Matthew's version of the Prayer was formulated for the entire Creation — to and at the level of the spiritual awareness which **was available to its members at that particular time**. On the other hand, Luke's version of this Prayer was directed solely to humans on planet Zero and to all other creatures and entities in the entire Zone of Displacement and all its Hells."

“As you remember, at the time when both versions of this Prayer were formulated, the situation was such that planet Zero and the Zone of Displacement were not under the rule of The Most High God but under the rule of the pseudo-creators. Therefore, the Luke version purposefully omits the statement that the kingdom, the power and the glory belongs to the heavenly Father. The Father neither fathered the Zone of Displacement and planet Zero nor ruled them at that time.”

“But the situation was different in the positive state of Creation. The Father truly fathered the positive state and always was its uncontested Ruler. For that reason, in praying from that position, it is vital to acknowledge that all the kingdom, the power and the glory belong to the Father. Of course, this is a literal interpretation of these words. An entirely different spiritual connotation and meaning exist in the understanding and interpretation of these words. We shall speak about it a little later.”

“So, in interpreting both texts of these versions, you must be aware of the position from which that Prayer was formulated. This distinction puts the interpretation of both versions into an entirely different perspective.”

“Some levels of the inner spiritual meaning and correspondences of this Prayer were already revealed through Swedenborg. Some were revealed through this transmitter in the previous books of The New Revelation. These interpretations are correct and valid but neither of them are complete. At the time of those interpretations, it was not proper yet to know that both versions of that Prayer had a different connotation and were uttered from a different position and that, actually, they were two, totally different prayers. With this fundamental difference in mind, let us look on the true sense and meaning of these prayers, first in the Matthew version.”

“‘Our Father in Heaven.’ These words define the spiritual condition that existed at that time in the positive state of Creation. In turn, that condition defined and determined the perception, understanding of and relatedness toward The Nature of The Most High which the positive state had at that particular time. Here you have to be aware of a very important spiritual fact, repeated many times before (to the disgust of all complainers about the redundancy and repetitious nature of this book), that ***The Most High, now The Lord Jesus Christ, speaks and reveals to the members of His/Her Creation only from the position of the current level of their spiritual development.***”

“As you know, everyone in Creation is subject to the law of spiritual progression which proceeds in certain discrete steps. Each step in progression transcends the spiritual condition, understanding and awareness of the reality of each preceding step. For that reason, The Lord Jesus Christ can relate to the members of His/Her Creation, as well as to everyone else, only from the position of that step or from that spiritual condition. Nothing more and nothing less.”

“To repeat again, more would be incomprehensible to them and thus, spiritually dangerous because it would be rejected. Rejection would mean to fallout into the Zone of Displacement. Less would be regressive which also would mean a fallout into the Zone of Displacement. Both rejection and regression constitute the true nature of the negative case. Thus, in such a case, the positive state would become negative. For this important reason, The Lord Jesus Christ accommodates Himself/Herself to the level of each step in which the members of Creation are at each given time and He/She speaks ***only*** from that position. This rule is fully applicable to The Lord’s Prayer.”

“Thus, the words ‘our Father in Heaven,’ among many other things, reflect the spiritual

condition that existed at that time. At that time, the perception and understanding of The Nature of God Most High was from the position of His/Her Absolute Wisdom and Truth as a foundation of Creation. As you know, the foundation of Creation is always the Spiritual Truth. Creation develops from the position of truth toward the position of good; or from the position of wisdom to the position of love; or from the position of faith to the position of positive and useful works.”

“The reason why the development of Creation follows this course, although love, good and positive and useful works precede and give birth to wisdom, truth and faith, is because, as you remember, Creation is the outwardness of The Absolute Inwardness of The Creator. The Absolute Inwardness constitutes Absolute Love, Good and Positive Works. On the other hand, The Absolute Process of The Absolute Inwardness is The Absolute Wisdom, Truth and Faith. Creation can be created only by means of The Absolute Process of The Absolute State of The Absolute Inwardness but not by The Absolute State Itself, because it always proceeds from The Absolute Within to the relative without, where it becomes the outwardness of The Creator.”

“One of the major purposes of Creation is to eternally approximate its Absolute Creator. In order to do that, Creation, being the outwardness of the inwardness, always moves in the direction toward its Creator and not away from Him/Her. If it were to move away, it would soon cease to exist or fallout into the Zone of Displacement. Moving from the ‘to’ to the ‘From’ constitutes moving from truth toward its good, and once the good is reached, from the good to its truth. This is how Creation is structured.”

“Now, the word ‘Father,’ as used in this Prayer, reflects this situation. ‘Father’ corresponds to the foundation of Creation which stems from The Absolute Wisdom and Absolute Truth of The Absolute Inward Most High or The Creator. Thus, under the condition that existed at that time, one was to relate from truth to The Absolute Truth which is ‘Father’ and then proceed toward good and love of The Creator which is ‘Mother’ or essence of The Creator. ‘Father’ is the substance, therefore, the foundation of Creation. But the content and the building of itself, as well as its head, is love and good or ‘mother’ of Creation. The movement is always toward love and good or ‘mother.’”

“However, as you know, the word ‘mother’ is never used in The Holy Bible in this particular connotation, the reason being that, at that time, no such conceptualization of Creation was possible to convey to anyone. Taking into consideration the level of spiritual development of Creation existing at that time, such conclusions were premature, particularly in view of the fact that something was lacking from the experiential mode of The Most High’s Nature. As you are aware, at that time, the Nature of The Most High lacked elements of the natural degree and elements of planet Zero and the Zone of Displacement. Due to this lack, the unification of all spiritual principles was not fully possible. The concept of Absolute Love and Its Absolute Good, or motherhood, cannot be properly conceived without the total Absolute Unification of all elements in being and existence. But the concept of fatherhood could because the foundation of Creation is built on that concept. From it, one gradually moves toward the ultimate unification. For this reason, few ever spoke of God as Mother but, in most instances, as Father only. This is particularly true in Christian religions.”

“However, once all elements in being and existence were incorporated and fused into the totality of The Absolute Nature of The Most High and The Most High became the fullness of The Lord Jesus Christ, a new understanding of The Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ began to develop through this New Revelation.”

“But at the time of Jesus Christ’s presence on planet Zero, this was not the case. Therefore,

His Prayer begins with the words 'Our Father.' The word 'in heaven' means within the positive state. The Absolute Wisdom and The Absolute Truth or The Absolute Substance of The Nature of God, is always absolutely positive. The Absolute Positive State is the State of The Absolute Within or Inwardness. Thus, the word 'heaven' also means that this Father — The Absolute Wisdom and Truth — is The Absolute Inwardness from which the positive state emanates and Creation is created."

"'Hallowed be Your name.' The word 'hallowed' describes the quality of approach that the members of the positive state are required to have. Only from the position of holiness to the position of The Absolute Holiness can one relate. The position of holiness, in this connotation, signifies a relationship from the position of pure intent, in purity of one's heart, for the sake of principle, with full acceptance and practice of truth and recognition that that truth derives from the 'Heavenly Father.' With such an approach one hallows the Name of God. 'Your name' means the quality of The true Nature of The Creator or in this case, the Heavenly Father."

"'Name' is always a reflection of the content of the quality of one's personality and individuality. To approach 'our Father in heaven' in this holy name, that is, with full acceptance of Him/Her as the only Creator or God, in purity of one's heart, for the sake of principles themselves, means to acknowledge The Absolute Holiness of The Creator."

"To be absolutely holy means to have no aspects of the negative state within one's nature. And to hallow someone's name means to avoid ascribing any negativity to that Nature with the full recognition that only the positive state resides within that Nature. This is what 'hallowed be Your name' means."

"'Your kingdom come.' The words 'Your kingdom' signify that The Absolute Truth belongs to The Absolute Creator and no one else has any truth in oneself. This is the reason it says 'come.' This is an invitation, from the position of free will and choice, to that truth to enter the lives of those who have no truth in oneself and by oneself. Because it can come only from The One Who is that Absolute Truth in Oneself and by Oneself, the request is directed to Him/Her Who can send that truth into all others for the purpose of establishing a favorable condition for the reception of love and good."

"Love and good cannot enter until there is wisdom and truth in which they can reside. After all, wisdom and truth are the forms of expression and the containers of retention of that love and good. Thus, upon request (all requests must be by free will and choice), love and good send out their wisdom and truth, which, in turn, build a proper condition, foundation and container into which that love and good can enter and remain on a solid foundation."

"This is the reason why the request 'Your kingdom come' precedes the request 'Your will be done.' That will cannot be done on any other premises but only on real Divine Truth."

"'Your will be done.' This is an acknowledgment that all love, good and positive and useful works belong to The One Who is The Absolute Love, The Absolute Good and The Absolute Positive State."

"At the same time, this is an acknowledgment that no one in Creation can be loving, good and positive by and in himself/herself. Moreover, it means that only the will of The Absolute God is of love, good and the positive nature. Everyone else's will, in itself and by itself, does not contain these elements but is only their potential receptacle."

"In order to fill one's will — the receptacle — with love, good and positiveness, one has to

invite God's will of The Absolute Love, Goodness and Positiveness to enter one's life and to become the content of one's will so that one wills nothing else but love, goodness and positiveness. Again, the issue of an invitation is emphasized here because the word 'will,' by its very nature and structure, is free, reflecting The Absolute Nature of The Absolute Will and its Absolute Freedom."

"The Will of God cannot be done in anyone's life until one invites it to be so by one's own free will. If this were not the case, no need would exist to pray to God and to invite His/Her Will to be done."

"'On earth as it is in heaven' signifies that The Will of The Most Within or The Absolute Inwardness of The Absolute State of The Creator is always to love, to give goodness and to convey positiveness because It is always in the state of love, goodness and positiveness. No other type of Will of God exists. The word 'heaven' corresponds to this meaning. The word 'earth,' in this particular connotation, corresponds to everything which is outward of the state of inwardness ('heaven') where the Will of God is always done."

"However, the situation is different with the process of outwardness ('earth') which is put into the position of choice of reciprocity. As you remember, Creation can be created only on the principle of freedom and independency. From that position, it must make a choice to invite or not to invite the Will of God to be done in that state as it is always done in the inward state. Again, otherwise no need would exist for this invitation."

"In a more personal connotation, these words also mean that the Will of God is always done in the most within Spiritual Mind of each individual and the most within spiritual degree of Creation. Because Creation, as well as each unique individual, proceed from the most within level or their core to the most without level of manifestation or the external mind ('earth') and then into the conscious outward mind, the flow of that Will follows the steps of this process of the creative effort. The starting point of any creative effort in the positive sense is always by and in the Will of God. The following points, for the sake of freedom and independency, need to validate that Will of God by inviting it to be done from the most within to the most without ('Your will be done on earth as it is in heaven')."

"'Give us this day our daily bread.' This is an acknowledgment of all in Creation that all their talents, gifts, abilities and life in general and in each of its particulars are coming from The Absolute Source of The Absolute Life — The Creator — and is appropriated in a relative state to all its relative carriers and containers — sentient entities — and through the sentient entities to all other forms, manifestations and containers of life."

"'Give us' means a request that all necessary ingredients of life are continuously maintained by the only One Who can do so. 'This day' means at each particular time, place, condition and state. 'Our' means that the **given life** is appropriated to all sentient entities so that they have a personal, private and intimate experience as though it is their own life and that they are the source of that life, but nevertheless fully acknowledging that the truth of the matter is that the source of their life is The Absolute God Most High who is now The Lord Jesus Christ. 'Daily bread' means continuous supply of all-inclusive ingredients of life (spiritual, mental and physical)."

"The reason why everyone is expected to pray or to ask, on a daily basis, for all these things is that each day has a different connotation, purpose and meaning. The difference of this situation requires a new choice-making effort. Therefore, one needs to reconfirm or recede from the choice of asking one's Creator to continue supplying him/her with all necessities of life in an entirely new condition (everyday is a new day!)."

“‘And forgive us our debts’ means the full recognition and acknowledgment of everyone in Creation that they are not perfect because they are not absolute or gods. As mentioned before, even a person who reached the highest possible spiritual levels and is almost like God, is still relative and not absolute. By the fact of his/her relative condition, that person is liable to make mistakes or to draw incorrect conclusions. When such things happen, one becomes indebted to one’s Creator because one did not do or did not understand something the way one was supposed to. In order that such mistakes do not end in the acceptance of the negative state and a subsequent fallout into the Zone of Displacement, all sentient entities must evoke the law and principles of forgiveness. By asking for forgiveness, they are prevented and protected from this grave possibility.”

“Some humans erroneously assume that people in the Heavens (the positive state), such as, for example, angels, archangels, cherubim, seraphim, etc., cannot make mistakes or are unable to make wrong conclusions about anything and that they are perfect in their condition. The reality however, is that no one is infallible and perfect but only The Absolute God — The Lord Jesus Christ. Everyone else below God’s level, even that one who is the very first after God, is subject to occasional fallibility.”

“However, the difference between these people and humans and creatures of the Zone of Displacement is that people in the positive state immediately recognize their mistakes, reject them or correct them on the spot. By asking for forgiveness, they are prevented from the danger of the consequences of such mistakes being appropriated to them.”

“‘As we forgive our debtors’ is a full recognition and acknowledgment that no one else is perfect and that relationships among people are to be built not on expectation of perfection but on mutual forgiveness and acceptance of this fact. Because no one is perfect, you cannot expect from anyone a perfect behavior and attitude. Again, by forgiving others and yourself (and this forgiveness has to include yourself because you are indebted to yourself for not being perfect), you are prevented and protected from falling out into the negative state’s judgmental and condemning attitude. Such an attitude would exclude you from the positive state. In that case, you would fallout into the Zone of Displacement.”

“‘And do not lead us into temptation.’ This statement signifies the acknowledgment that only The Absolute God can protect and prevent one from being tempted to accept the reality of the negative state as a decisive factor of one’s life.”

“Now, this statement, in its spiritual sense, does not imply that it is God who tempts people, although the literal sense does give one such an incorrect impression. It is only a recognition and acknowledgment of the fact that only by The Absolute Positive Power of one’s God can one be kept away from the temptation to activate the rejected idea of acceptance of any other source of life other than The Lord Jesus Christ. This is clear from the following words of the Prayer, ‘but deliver us from the evil one.’ This statement signifies to keep one away from any need, desire, wish or tendency to accept that negative idea and to identify oneself with its content and to will it. ‘The evil one’ means that idea. As you know, it was that idea that was originally used by the pseudo-creators for the activation of the negative state. The entire negative state appears before the positive state as one ugly, deformed and mutilated evil-looking person (as was already revealed through Swedenborg). The request here is to be delivered from any tendency to activate the negative state within one’s own personal and private life.”

“‘For Yours is the kingdom and the power and the glory forever. Amen.’ This is a recognition, acknowledgment and acceptance of the fact that The Absolute Ownership of everything in

Creation belongs to The Lord Jesus Christ, The Most High at that time. Notice, please, that the order in which these words follow is reversed. First comes 'the kingdom;' second comes 'the power' and third comes 'the glory.' 'Forever' means that the Ownership will never cease."

"Two reasons exist why the reversed order is used, despite the fact that the true reality of Creation and The Absolute Nature of The Most High requires the order from 'the glory, to the power to the kingdom forever. Amen.' One reason is that the Prayer was initiated from the position of the outwardness of Creation. The outwardness of Creation is the kingdom of the inwardness of The Creator (among many other things). Everyone but The Creator is perceived to be in the process of this outwardness. Only The Creator is self-perceived in the State of The Absolute Inwardness. Because the Prayer is directed to The Absolute State of the Inwardness of The Creator from the position of Creation — the kingdom of The Creator — there is a need to acknowledge first that the position from which I pray belongs to my Creator. He/She is The Absolute Owner of that position. Another connotation of the word 'kingdom' is its correspondence to the external or natural degree of Creation, as well as to the external mind of every individual."

"The reason why the emphasis is on the external degree and on the external mind is because that degree and that mind reflect the most outward position of the outward Creation. This position is required to acknowledge that its only Absolute Owner is The Creator. The denial of this fact on that level gives an impetus, as you remember, for the activation of the negative state. In order to avoid the negative state, one must acknowledge first that even that level of being and existence belongs absolutely to The Creator."

"The word 'power' corresponds to The Absolute Mentality of The Creator, and also to His/Her intermediate dimension of Creation and to the intermediate mind or mentality of every individual. This is a confirmation, recognition, acknowledgment and acceptance of the fact that the true Absolute Owner of all of them is The Creator."

"The word 'glory' corresponds to The Absolute Spirit of The Creator. But it also corresponds to the spiritual dimension of Creation and the most within Spiritual Mind of every individual. Again, this is a confirmation, recognition, acknowledgment and acceptance of the fact that The Creator is The Absolute Owner of all of them."

"But there is another reason why the word 'glory' was put at the end of this sequence. The word 'glory,' as applied to The Creator, has a deeper mysterious and mystical connotation. It relates to the factor of inclusion of the body-flesh of Jesus Christ within The Absolute Nature of The Creator, The Creator becoming the totality of The Lord Jesus Christ. As you know, 'glorification' also means divinization and hybridization of all elements in being and existence, including the elements of the Zone of Displacement and planet Zero, and their total unification, harmonization and oneness within that Nature."

"At the time when this Prayer was given to the members of the positive state, the process of this vital and crucial divinization and hybridization had not been completed. It had just begun. Therefore, it was not appropriate at that time to put the word 'glory' into the first place, where it actually belongs. Also, the Prayer does not indicate that anything of the Zone of Displacement or planet Zero belongs to The Creator. At that time, this was not the case."

"The Lord Jesus Christ's Prayer, as recorded in Matthew, was given to the members of the positive state at a tremendously important crossroad in the fate and destiny of the entire Creation. A totally new spiritual condition was coming into its being and existence, initiated by the fact of The Most High's incarnation into the negative state in the form of Jesus Christ. This act required a formulation of a different approach in relatedness to The Creator from all

His/Her creativeees. This approach is reflected in the internal sense of this Prayer as explained above.”

“At that time, by the content and meaning of that Prayer, everyone in Creation was instructed what to do and how to do it in order to prepare themselves for what was to come.”

“In actuality however, the content and meaning of this Prayer defined an interim state and process, which was initiated by the incarnation of Jesus Christ and was completed at the time of The Most High becoming the fullness of The Lord Jesus Christ (shortly before Christmas of 1987, in your time). The inner content and meaning of that Prayer constituted the spiritual guidelines for the entire Creation, which were to be followed to the end of this interim state and process. And the same is true about the inner content and meaning of Jesus Christ’s Prayer in its version as recorded in Luke 11:2-4. They have been applicable during this interim state and process until this moment.”

“Before proceeding with the formulation of ***the New Version of The Lord Jesus Christ’s Prayer***, as relevant to the current New Spiritual Condition, let us briefly look into the true meaning of the Luke version of this Prayer.”

“As mentioned above, this version is formulated from the standpoint of the needs of the members of the negative state who inhabited the Zone of Displacement and for humans on planet Zero. This is a first fundamental difference from the Prayer as recorded by Matthew. Matthew’s version was solely for the members of the positive state.”

“The second difference is in the fact that the Luke version was formulated by a request and not by mandate. At that point, The Lord Jesus Christ was not yet in charge of the negative state. Therefore, respecting the freedom of choice of its inhabitants to be negative, He had to wait for such a request to be made.”

“‘Our Father in heaven’ signifies that no presence of any truth exists in the Zone of Displacement and on planet Zero. The truth is somewhere else. This is a condition of exclusion of the Zone of Displacement from the true Creation. This is a condition of outsideness of the extreme degree of the outwardness of Creation. The Absolute Truth has no part in that condition but, instead, is situated ‘outside’ of its fake ‘inwardness.’ But it also means a potential presence of The Creator — Father — Truth — in everyone’s ability to freely choose and to change.”

“The ability to freely choose and to change constitutes everyone’s heaven. In that heaven resides the Father — Truth; the reason being that the only truth available to the negative state is the truth that the negative state has no truth, that it was activated by a free choice, and that by that choice, the condition of life of its activators completely changed. It is also the truth that, if the negative state was activated by the free choice of some sentient entities, and by free choice they changed, by the same very principle, all members of the negative state may and can, if they wish to, choose to recede from the negative state and entirely change their lifestyle, bringing it into an alignment with the positive state.”

“The fact of this matter is spiritual truth. Because any real truth is from The Absolute Truth — The Father — The Creator — and because The Father-Creator is The Absolute Truth Himself/Herself, He/She is always in His/Her Truth, no matter where and when. Again, this truth and that presence constitute the ‘heaven,’ or the most within Spiritual Mind of everyone also in all the Hells, the entire Zone of Displacement and on planet Zero.”

“The difference between the members of the positive state and the members of the negative

state is that the members of the positive state face that truth and relate to it face to face, whereas the members of the negative state do not face that truth but have their face turned away from it and fully deny its existence or presence.”

“Any step for changing this situation, which is the negative state, must begin with turning one’s face to that truth, that is, with going inward into that presence. The first step of this very first step is the acknowledgment that the truth, our Father, is in Heaven, that is, in the state of the deepest inwardness of one’s sentient mind — in that ability to freely choose and to change.”

“‘Hallowed be Your name’ in this case, signifies that one must approach the state of inwardness with positive and good intent, for the sake of principle of free choice and change, expressing a desire for recession from the negative state and for conversion to the positive state. By such an approach, one acknowledges The Absolute Holiness of The Nature of The Creator and His/Her Absolute Truth — The Father — Who does not contain and is not an initiator of anything negative and false.”

“‘Your kingdom come’ is a request for understanding and acceptance of truth into one’s conscious or external mind also because that mind is kept in darkness of falsities of the negative state. Nothing of the positive state can enter any regions of the external mind until those falsities are removed. But they can be removed only by free invitation for the truths to enter, in gradual slow steps, into one’s conscious awareness and be accepted as truths. By that acceptance, and to the degree of that acceptance, the falsities are removed and immediately replaced by the real truths.”

“Once this is acknowledged, the invitation ‘Your will be done’ can follow. ‘Your will be done on earth as it is in heaven,’ requested from the position of the negative state, signifies a request for elimination of the negative state in one’s mind and life (here signified by the word ‘earth’) and replacing it with the positive state (signified here by the word ‘heaven’). This is an invitation for The Creator — the Ruler of one’s life — while even living in the negative state, because the positive state — ‘heaven’ — as well as the negative state — ‘earth’ — are not any particular place but a matter of one’s attitude and identity. Therefore, one can be in one’s spirit in Heaven, while his/her body resides in the Hells, so-to-speak.”

“‘Give us day by day our daily bread’ is a request to be equipped with different necessary ingredients of life congruent to the nature of the positive state. ‘Day by day’ signifies to the extent of one’s fullest potentials. ‘Bread’ is goodness of life and all its gifts, talents and abilities. This is also an important acknowledgment that even the dead life of the negative state is possible only by permission of The Lord Jesus Christ. Thus, the dead life of the negative state depends absolutely on the life of the positive state, as the life of the positive state depends absolutely on The Absolute Life of The Absolute Lord Jesus Christ — The Creator.”

“‘And forgive us our sins’ means the need to acknowledge that one is in the negative state in the role of a full participant and supporter of that state by the style and quality of one’s life. To support and to participate in the life of the negative state constitutes sin. Once one realizes that he/she sins by that act, one is advised to ask for forgiveness and mercy, by which act one is brought out of the state of sin.”

“‘For we also forgive everyone who is indebted to us.’ There is a mistake in the translation of this line. The proper translation should be ‘as we also forgive everyone who sins against us.’ What this statement means is an acknowledgment that the members of the negative state relate to one another from the position of manipulating, using, abusing, misusing, defrauding,

deceiving, etc., one another. To treat one another in this manner means to sin against one another. Recognition and acceptance of this fact that others do so from their own disposition and negativity, and not by the Will of God, puts them into a position of being able to forgive one another. By forgiving, they become eligible to be forgiven by God and by others, once they convert to the positive state.”

“‘And do not lead us into temptation.’ From the position of the negative state, being that it is the state of outsideness, everything appears as if coming from the outside. Thus, the blame is always put on someone or something else. In this connotation, because God is perceived as outside of the negative state (which is true!), He/She is also perceived to be the one who, by His/Her very existence, is the causative factor of any temptation. For, if God were not to exist, no one would be out there to tell you that you are being tempted or that you are being led into temptation. As Dostoyevsky noted in his prolific book, *Brothers Karamazov*, ‘if God does not exist, then everything is permitted.’ In that case, there is no such state as temptation. Temptation signifies ‘to desire to do something which is not permissible.’ If someone is out there who tells you what is and what is not permitted, that one also defines the state of temptation. Therefore, it is He/She who leads you into temptation by the factor of this definition. Only from the position of the negative state, up to this point, was it permitted to pray in this manner. The reality, of course, is that one is tempted by one’s own volition, by desiring to do something which is not of the positive state.”

“‘But deliver us from the evil one’ means here, a request for conversion from the negative state, the state of evilness, to the positive state, to the state of goodness. It also means a request for protection from relapsing into the condition of the negative state. This request is a factor of complete surrender to The Creator with the acknowledgment of the fact that one has no power and no ability to do so by one’s own effort. This step is well-conceived by the twelve steps of Alcoholics Anonymous’ philosophy on your planet.”

“As you noticed, the Prayer of this version in Luke ends at this point. As mentioned above, at that time, the negative state was not yet under the rule of The Lord Jesus Christ. Its impression was that it had the kingdom, the power and the glory. The kingdom was the kingdom of the pseudo-creators; the power belonged to the pseudocreators and the glory was their ‘glory.’ It also means that, at that time, the true most within Spiritual Mind (‘the glory’) the true interior mind (‘the power’) and the true external mind (‘the kingdom’) of the sentient entities of the negative state were completely locked and inaccessible and replaced with the pseudo-inner mind (the false glory), the pseudo-interior mind (the false power) and the pseudo-external mind (the false kingdom).”

“The purpose of this Prayer, in its inner sense and meaning, was to give to the members of the negative state a means by which they could be prepared for eventual salvation and conversion to the positive state and for survival during the interim state until the new spiritual condition would be established. By having these guidelines for survival available, the negative state could continue in its own life. However, as you know, since the beginning of transmission of this portion of The New Revelation, this interim or transitional period ended. That beginning heralded the completion of the interim state, and establishment of a New Spiritual State, Condition and Process in the manner described throughout this book.”

“Because all necessary requirements were met for the fulfillment of the purpose for which the above two versions of The Lord’s Prayer were formulated and established, and because all new spiritual requirements for the new step in spiritual progression are in place and grounded, **as of this very moment**, a different formulation of this Prayer is introduced by The Lord Jesus Christ, relevant to the nature of the current step in this process. As of this very moment, by the Authority of The Lord Jesus Christ, from the position of His/Her Absolute

New Nature, The Lord's Prayer is being changed into the Prayer formulated by The Lord Jesus Christ for all in Creation, in the Zone of Displacement and on planet Zero. You are advised to pray in this manner:

“Our Lord Jesus Christ in heaven, on earth, in the sea, in the Zone of Displacement, on planet Zero and in our one integrated sentient mind.

In purity of our heart, with positive and good intent, we hallow Your Nature as Absolutely Holy and Positive.

Your Good and Truth come and be established permanently in all aspects of our life.

Your will be done everywhere in being and existence and in the Zone of Displacement and on planet Zero and in our life, as it has always been done in heaven.

Give us this day all necessary provisions for our daily life in accordance with the nature of the positive state.

And forgive us our problems and shortcomings, as we forgive the problems and shortcomings of others.

And let us not lead ourselves into any temptation, but deliver us from the attraction to and identity with evils and falsities of the negative state.

For Yours is the glory and the power and the kingdom and everything else forever, to eternity.

Amen.”

“Our Lord Jesus Christ’ signifies that there is no other God or The Most High or The Creator under any other name. This is signified by the word ‘our.’ ‘Lord’ signifies The Absolute Unification, Oneness, Harmony and Merger of all aspects of being and existence, including the elements of the Zone of Displacement and planet Zero. It also means The Absolute Parenthood of these elements and principles. ‘Jesus’ means Absolute Goodness, Absolute Motherhood and Absolute Feminine principles. ‘Christ’ means Absolute Truth, Absolute Fatherhood and Absolute Masculine principles.”

“By saying ‘our Lord Jesus Christ’ you evoke the totality of The Absolute Being and Existence of The Lord Jesus Christ, accepting His/Her Absolute Authority as the only One God Most High Indivisible.”

“In heaven’ means the presence of The Lord Jesus Christ in the spiritual dimension of His/Her Creation in His/Her New Nature. It also means His/Her presence, in that New Nature, in the most within Spiritual Mind of each individual. ‘On earth’ means His/Her presence in that New Nature in the intermediate dimension of His/Her Creation and in the intermediate mind of each individual. ‘In the sea’ means the presence of The Lord Jesus Christ in His/Her New Nature in the natural or external dimension of His/Her Creation and in the external mind of each individual.”

“In the Zone of Displacement’ means the presence of The Lord Jesus Christ in His/Her New Nature (the only way He/She could be present there) in all the Hells and on planet Zero (through The Ten Spiritual Principles formulated in Chapter Twenty Four of this book) and in all aspects of the pseudo-mind of the members of the negative state and humans. This presence is for the sole purpose of eventual salvation from and bringing out of the negative state everyone who is trapped there by his/her own foolish choice.”

“In purity of our heart, with positive and good intent, we hallow Your Nature as Absolutely Holy and Positive’ signifies the full acknowledgment and understanding that, although there is now a full presence of The Lord Jesus Christ also in the negative state, nothing of and from

the nature of the negative state exists within The Lord Jesus Christ. The elements taken out of the Zone of Displacement and planet Zero were purified from all evils and falsities, which are the nature of the negative state, and were divinized. But, nevertheless, they are the elements of the Zone of Displacement and planet Zero, void of any negative connotation.”

“This statement also means that, because of this New Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ, being that it is also absolutely Holy and Positive, the only effective way by which one can relate to Him/Her is from the position of the purity of one’s heart, that is, with positive and good intent, for the sake of principle. ‘The purity of heart’ means for the sake of principle itself without any ulterior motives.”

“‘Your Good and Truth come and be established permanently in all aspects of our life’ means the vital and crucial recognition, acknowledgment and acceptance of the fact that one can never be good or have the truth by oneself but only from, by, with and of The Lord Jesus Christ in His/Her New Nature. And that, thus, The Lord Jesus Christ, in His/Her New Nature, is the only source of the true good and the real truth.”

“And because The Lord Jesus Christ, by and through His/Her New Nature, is able to be present in all aspects, levels, degrees, spheres and traits of one’s mind, as well as of everything else, the invitation is given that His/Her Good and Truth fill all aspects of one’s life.”

“‘Your will be done everywhere in being and existence and the Zone of Displacement, as it has always been done in heaven.’ This is an invitation to The Lord Jesus Christ’s Love and Wisdom to be in full control not only of the positive state but also of the negative state in the same manner as the case has always been in the most within spiritual dimension of Creation and the most within Spiritual Mind of each individual. This is also an invitation to The Lord Jesus Christ to be in full control and charge, through His/Her New Nature, of the entire Zone of Displacement and planet Zero.”

“‘Give us this day all necessary provisions for our daily life in accordance with the nature of the positive state’ is recognition, acknowledgment and acceptance of the fact that the source of all gifts, talents, abilities and of life in general, in all its spiritual, mental and physical aspects, is The Lord Jesus Christ in His/Her New Nature, and that the real life can be established only in accordance with the principles that rule and govern the nature of the positive state.”

“‘And forgive us our problems and shortcomings, as we forgive the problems and shortcomings of others’ means recognition and acceptance of the fact that no one is perfect except for The Lord Jesus Christ in His/Her New Nature.”

“Because of this condition, one is liable to have problems, to make mistakes and to do things which stem from oneself instead of from The Lord Jesus Christ. For this we are to ask The Lord Jesus Christ to be forgiven and to be able to forgive others for being that way. This is also the acknowledgment of the fact that one is not absolute, is not God and never will be, no matter what.”

“‘And let us not lead ourselves into any temptation’ means an invitation to The Lord Jesus Christ to help us from being tempted by the negative state contained in that idea of freedom to reject The Lord Jesus Christ and His/Her New Nature. This is also an acknowledgment that one cannot do it by oneself being that one is not absolute or perfect. Only from the position of The Absolute State and Absolute Perfection can one be protected from such temptations.”

“But deliver us from the attraction to and identity with evils and falsities of the negative state’ signifies a request to The Lord Jesus Christ to convert all in the negative state to the positive state by removing any attraction to the ideas of the negative state and any possibility of appropriation of these ideas into one’s personal identity and life. This is also an acknowledgment that such deliverance is possible only by the New Power of The Lord Jesus Christ vested in His/Her Absolute Nature.”

“For Yours is the glory and the power and the kingdom and everything else forever, to eternity. Amen.’ As you noticed, in this concluding wording the sequence is placed in proper order. Now this proper order can be fully established, actualized, realized and manifested because now the completion of the process of glorification, that is, divinization and hybridization of the human body-flesh into the totality of The Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ, became full reality.”

“Therefore, this statement is the recognition, acknowledgment and acceptance of the fact that all elements in their totality (‘the glory’) belong to The Lord Jesus Christ, as well as all dimensions of His/Her Creation (‘the power’) and the entire Zone of Displacement (‘the kingdom’), as well as planet Zero (‘everything else’) belong only to The Lord Jesus Christ forever, to eternity. It is also the confirmation of the bilateral government of the Divine Providence of The Lord Jesus Christ, both from the position of the most within to the most without and from the position of the most outside of Creation to the most low of the Zone of Displacement, as well as to the most inward state.”

“This is a completion of the full circle and reconnection of all elements in being and existence, and the return to Creation of those elements of Creation which were stolen, misused, abused and perverted by the pseudo-creators and their followers.”

“‘Amen’ means a full confirmation that it is so and that this is the real truth.”

“Now, the content, the meaning, the quality and the validity of this newly formulated Prayer will continue to be in force until the end of this cycle of time, that is, until the time when the negative state and its Zone of Displacement will be permanently abolished and eliminated. At that time, this Prayer will be reformulated and changed.”

“There are three major, most significant mysteries that are contained or placed by The Lord Jesus Christ into this New Prayer. Some limited aspects of these mysteries will be revealed in the next Chapter.”

“As of now, everyone who reads this Chapter, and who chooses by his/her free will and choice, is advised to incorporate this New Prayer into his/her daily process of going inward. For that purpose, one is advised to memorize it and meditate on it on a daily basis.”

“He/She who has ears to hear and to listen, let Him/Her hear and listen to what The Lord Jesus Christ reveals in this Chapter.”

CHAPTER TWENTY SEVEN

THE MYSTERY OF THE NEW PRAYER FORMULATED BY THE LORD JESUS CHRIST

On May 16, 1988, at 4:37 in the morning, the word of The Lord Jesus Christ came to me, saying,

“Most aspects of the specific mysteries of the content, the meaning and the wording of The New Prayer, formulated by The Lord Jesus Christ, cannot be expressed by or comprehended in the words of any human language. They transcend any human understanding and imagination.”

“However, some remote indication of what these mysteries are all about, will be accessible for those who go deeply inward.”

“Before attempting to convey this indication, some explanation on the concept, the meaning and the content of the word ‘prayer’ itself needs to be preceded:”

“The most common conceptualization of the word ‘prayer’ is that one closes one’s eyes and verbalizes in one’s own language a certain degree of gratitude to, acknowledgment of and request directed toward one’s God, under various different names, adopted by different religions on your planet.”

“This is a very narrow, one-sided and most external conceptualization of the term ‘prayer.’”

“It is true that the verbalization of certain ideas, through the vocal cords either aloud or in silence in one’s mind, is one of the integral parts of any prayer. But a prayer in itself has a much broader utilization and implication, as well as meaning and the mode of its practice, than just verbalizing it in whatever mode.”

“The most important aspect of the prayer, and the mode of its practice, is in one’s inner attitude toward The Lord Jesus Christ and how it is reflected in one’s everyday behavior, thinking, feeling, intention, work or job and in various relationships.”

“In this inner attitude and its reflection in everyday life, at all levels of one’s everyday living, in following the rules as defined in The Ten Spiritual Principles, one is in constant prayer by one’s lifestyle.”

“Such a prayer constitutes also a true worship of The Lord Jesus Christ. This is a worship by life and not by lips or verbalization only.”

“The next important aspect of any prayer and the mode of its practice is going inward, on a daily basis, in the manner described in Chapter Five of this Book and in Chapter Five of the book Who Are You and Why Are You Here?”

“This is a personal, private and intimate communication with The Lord Jesus Christ, the positive state and the members of one’s spiritual family, from the position of one’s most within Spiritual Mind and the integration of all aspects, levels and degrees of one’s entire sentient

mind. This is a communication from within to without, during which the without is incorporated into the within and functions as a tool of the most within for conveyance of various important ideas, for advice and direction which one is advised to take or pursue. Advice and direction are given only upon the personal request of the one who goes inward for that purpose.”

“The rule here is that, on this level, nothing can be conveyed to anyone unless one specifically asks, with positive and good intent, to be instructed in whatever issues one needs. On this level and in this mode of prayer, everything is subject to The Law of Freedom of Choice.”

“Therefore, to advise anyone contrary to the submitted request, means to impose something for which one did not ask. This would violate one’s freedom of choice and would force him/her either to do something one is reluctant or does not want to do or to disregard the advice.”

“In both instances the spiritual validity of any such advice is almost nil because whatever is done by imposition cannot be appropriated to anyone; and the disregard of advice puts one in a position of opposition to the positive state. In the latter case, one cuts oneself off from reestablishing his/her communication with the true Lord Jesus Christ, his/her true most within Spiritual Mind and his/her true spiritual advisors.”

“The most external mode of prayer, verbalized loudly in words or uttered silently in one’s mind, using spoken words by hearing them in one’s mind, also has an important place in one’s everyday life. This mode functions as a confirmation, validation and acceptance that it is so also from the position of one’s everyday type of conscious mind. By uttering this prayer in the known and comprehensible words within one’s conscious mind, this mind becomes an integral part of the entire mind and is connected, through the interior mind to the most within Spiritual Mind and all other levels of the unconscious mind. The conscious mind, by its structure and nature, has no other means and ways of connectedness to and communication with any other aspect of the sentient mind but through verbalization only.”

“Because of this factor, the extreme importance of this form or mode of prayer is very obvious. If this mode is neglected, the conscious mind is separated and isolated from the rest of the sentient mind. This is a very dangerous situation.”

“As you know, the conscious mind in itself and by itself has no source of and means for the acquirement of the proper knowledge about anything. All such knowledge and its understanding, and the mode of its proper application, comes from the most within Spiritual Mind, through the interior mind, and other unconscious parts of the external mind.”

“If the conscious mind has no connection to or communication with the other levels of its mind, it is unnaturally forced to derive such knowledge from outside of itself, where no proper knowledge and understanding exist. Because of this, the conscious mind accepts whatever comes from this inappropriate source of ‘knowledge’ as true, proper and correct. In this way, the conscious mind lives in illusions of reality, but not in the true reality itself. This is the source of many human problems and misunderstandings in all aspects of the human life.”

“Now, in order to avoid this very dangerous predicament, The Lord Jesus Christ devised a means of connectedness and communication of the conscious mind to and with the most within Spiritual Mind and all other levels of the mind from which position a proper knowledge, its understanding and the modes of its application and practice can be derived. This device is called prayer. On the level of this conscious mind, prayer is practiced by the tools and means of verbalization either loudly or silently in one’s mind. During such practice, the eyes of a

practitioner, in most instances, are closed for the purpose of better concentration on the content, meaning and feeling of words that are being verbalized.”

“For this reason, everyone who reads these words, is advised very strongly to practice one’s prayer in all modes of one’s life without leaving out any of them.”

“As you can see, basically, there are two types of the external prayer: One is a free prayer, during which one pours out one’s heart or talks to The Lord Jesus Christ, expressing one’s feelings, thoughts, wishes, etc., in one’s own words, as they come from one’s heart. This is a free prayer which has a tremendous spiritual significance because it reaffirms one of the most important factors of one’s life — freedom of choice and choice to freely communicate with or talk to The Lord Jesus Christ. This is a means of intimate, private and personal relatedness to one’s Lord Jesus Christ. It does not evoke any other significant multiversal connectedness for the simple reason that this is something that is going on between you and The Lord Jesus Christ on a very personal, private and intimate level.”

“The other type of prayer is the one which consists of very carefully selected special words, put in a certain sequence and structured in a specific way so as to connect one to or evoke interaction of multiversal significance. For humans, this connectedness and evocation happens without their conscious awareness. By the conscious verbalization of these special and specific words, one allows the influence of the multiversality to flow into one’s life all the way down to the most without level of one’s mind, influencing one’s life in a most profound manner, keeping one on the path of all multiversal spiritual progression. Through such a prayer, one fully becomes a part of the whole.”

“The structure of this prayer consists of the words that ***always have multiple correspondential meaning***. Because of this multiple correspondential meaning, such a prayer can be formulated only by The Lord Jesus Christ. Only The Lord Jesus Christ, from the position of His/Her Absolute State, knows the secret and hidden meaning of all words, on all levels of Creation and the Zone of Displacement, and how these words should be combined, structured and conveyed, in order to have simultaneous and synchronous impact on all levels, spheres and degrees of the multiverse, the Zone of Displacement and planet Zero. Until recently, the prayer known as The Lord’s Prayer had this connotation exactly.”

“The prayer of this nature is accommodated to the spiritual conditions and needs that exist within each epoch of spiritual progression. In most instances, such an epoch spans several consecutive steps in the spiritual progression of the multiverse. Therefore, the validity of the wording of this prayer continues for a long period of time and is replaced only when a revolutionary change in the structure of the spiritual state of the totality of being and existence occurs.”

“As you know, such a revolutionary change occurred just recently. Because of this change, it was necessary to reformulate The Lord’s Prayer into The New Prayer as depicted in the previous Chapter. For practical purposes, The New Prayer can be called as The Lord Jesus Christ’s Prayer as compared to The Lord’s Prayer. The term ‘The Lord Jesus Christ’s Prayer’ does not mean that it is He/She Who prays but it means that The Lord Jesus Christ personally formulated this Prayer in order that it takes a multiple correspondential meaning ***until the end of this cycle of time.***”

“Because of this very unique, special and specific nature of The Lord Jesus Christ’s Prayer, it contains numerous mysteries of the most profound meaning.”

“As mentioned above, three such mysteries can be revealed in a very limited sense.”

(1)

“The Lord Jesus Christ’s Prayer, as formulated in the previous Chapter, is the only part of The New Revelation that has multiple meanings. Because of this structure, every word used to construct and to formulate this Prayer is a pure correspondence which reflects the reality of all aspects of Creation, the Zone of Displacement and planet Zero.”

“In actuality, it consists of ten levels of understanding. Each level reflects a different reality. The innermost level of the meaning of this Prayer relates to The New Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ and to the process by which the negative state will be eliminated and how everyone will be saved. The nine other meanings of this Prayer relate to the structure, content, quality and meaning of the Nine Circles of Creation and the Zone of Displacement and how they are interacting.”

“Another meaning contained in this Prayer is that it defines and reflects the twelve steps of spiritual progression which define and establish the specific and unique spiritual nature of each particular cycle of time.”

“The unique situation and position of The Lord Jesus Christ’s Prayer is in the fact that its literal meaning is fully and completely valid as much as any other of its meanings. The literal sense of this Prayer was specifically designed for the conscious mind of humans in order to keep them alive and well until the final phase of The Last Judgment of human life and planet Zero takes place. How this is accomplished by the words of a simple Prayer cannot be explained in any comprehensive human terms.”

“The very special combination of the selected words and their positioning in relationship to each other and what they contain and reflect makes all this possible.”

(2)

“The second mystery of The Lord Jesus Christ’s Prayer relates directly to The Lord Jesus Christ. Because of the nature, structure, meaning, content and purpose of this Prayer, as described above, the presence of The Lord Jesus Christ in it is the most complete, the most intense and the most direct. Nothing exists at this time on planet Zero and in the Zone of Displacement that would enable a more complete, more intense, more direct and a more close presence of The Lord Jesus Christ than this particular Prayer.”

“Now, this is very difficult for humans to understand. How can a presence of this magnitude and nature be truly actualized and realized through such simple words that for many are just words — empty notions or sounds carried by the waves through air which, in many instances, do not convey anything at all to the one who utters them or to the one who hears them? But this is the mystery of correspondences that have such power.”

“Each word of any language is the ultimate correspondence of many levels of reality. For humans, in the position of their most unusual and impossible placement, such words do not mean anything more than the meaning ascribed to them by their everyday communication. They are not aware of the process of how the meaning of words they are using arrived at its content and what its designation is. All they know is that it is so or not so. But why it is so, or not so, they have no idea.”

“Yet, such a word is a carrier of something that can be of the most mysterious thought process that gives rise to the reality of being the true reality.”

“This is particularly true about The Lord Jesus Christ. Whenever The Lord Jesus Christ utters

a word, He/She does so from The Absolute State. In the content of that word is The Absolute Meaning of the idea which is being conveyed in that word.”

“Once that word is uttered, it proceeds from its most within Absolute Inwardness to its process of the most outwardness. In the process of its proceeding it is accommodated to the quality and spiritual awareness of life of all those who occupy various levels of Creation. As they comprehend that which is expressed by that word, they incorporate into that word the entire content of their understanding. This understanding has a cumulative effect so that when it arrives to the most outward level of Creation and then enters the Zone of Displacement and planet Zero, it carries within itself such a tremendous spiritual potency that it allows the spiritual reality to maintain some possible semblance of life even in the negative state.”

“Because the understanding of the content of such a word is always related to The Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ, in its ultimate expression, that word carries the full understanding of His/Her Nature in the most intense, direct, and complete manner and way possible under the existing spiritual condition in general. The cumulative sum of all understandings of the various aspects of The Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ, as they are added from all levels of the multiverse, is the foundation on which the personal presence of The Lord Jesus Christ is possible.”

“The spiritual rule here is that the greater the degree of proper understanding of The Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ, the greater the personal presence of The Lord Jesus Christ is manifested.”

“Another aspect of this mystery is in the fact that life in the Zone of Displacement and on planet Zero can be sustained only by the intensity, extensity and cumulative combination of the presence of The Lord Jesus Christ in His/Her Word. Less than that could not sustain any life in those regions.”

“This is the reason why The Lord Jesus Christ always maintains His/Her Word, written or uttered in pure correspondences, in those regions. By that Word, those regions can have life and continue in their mission of providing important spiritual learning for the entire Creation and its multiverse.”

“The most inward and the most intense part of such Word was The Lord’s Prayer. It could be considered as a summary of all else written in such Word.”

“At the present time, under the presently existing spiritual conditions, The Lord Jesus Christ’s Prayer, as formulated in the previous Chapter, takes over this role and will have this significance to the end of this cycle of time.”

“Because this Prayer can be considered the most inward and the most intense part of The New Revelation — The New Word of The Lord Jesus Christ — in it, as is being revealed, the most intense, direct and complete presence of The Lord Jesus Christ is in the degree, state and condition of the Zone of Displacement and particularly planet Zero where spirituality is in its most remote, tenuous, distorted, perverted and falsified condition. Only by this presence can anyone survive on your planet and in the Zone of Displacement.”

“The mystery of the presence of such a specific, special and precisely defined Prayer in the place, state and condition where spirituality is almost nonexistent or where it exists only in a distorted, perverted and falsified condition is that, through its correspondential meaning, it allows life, from The Source of Life, to flow to where no true life exists in itself and by itself.”

(3)

“The mysteries of The Ten Spiritual Principles, as revealed in Chapter Twenty Five of this book, fully apply in a manifold manner to The Lord Jesus Christ’s Prayer. However, there is a fundamental difference between The Ten Spiritual Principles and The Lord Jesus Christ’s Prayer.”

“The Ten Spiritual Principles are a set of rules or guidelines for living a proper spiritual life and what to do, how to do it, why to do it and how to relate to The Lord Jesus Christ, others and oneself.”

“On the other hand, The Lord Jesus Christ’s Prayer is **a multiversal request**, conveyed through each particular individual, that The Will of The Lord Jesus Christ be done everywhere in being and existence and in the negative state; that all provisions for living a true life of the positive state are provided; that there is a continuous protection from the assaults of the negative state; and a request of similar important spiritual matters necessary for fulfillment of the purpose and mission of one’s life anywhere, anywhen and in anyone.”

“The Lord Jesus Christ’s Prayer is a foundation on which The Ten Spiritual Principles are applied. First, one needs to ask what to do. The Lord Jesus Christ **cannot impose on anyone anything at all** by some kind of demand, mandate, duress or threat. This would be contrary to His/Her Nature.”

“Remember, the life of any individual depends on that individual’s ability to freely choose and to change. If the individual chooses on his/ her own to ask The Lord Jesus Christ for a road map of life and for the means of how to travel that road successfully and efficiently, then and only then can The Lord Jesus Christ respond to such a request and provide one with a set of principles that make all this possible.”

“In order that everyone in Creation, in the Zone of Displacement and on planet Zero has a multiversal mode of asking or approaching The Lord Jesus Christ with such a request, He/She formulates a special mystical set of words that, by their utterance, makes it possible to present everyone with the specially designed principles of life and living in accordance with the nature of the positive state.”

“As you see, this rule applies multiversally. The reason why such a prayer is applicable also in the positive state of Creation is that its members have there, in their minds, that idea which tells them that they are free to deny or to reject The Lord Jesus Christ as the only true Source of their life. On an everyday basis, or whenever such an idea enters their awareness, they must make a choice — either to accept it or to reject it. By saying this Prayer specially designed by The Lord Jesus Christ, they reject the acceptance of that idea, and it falls out into the Zone of Displacement, giving life to that Zone.”

“Should they, for some reason or other, fail to evoke the process of rejection of that idea by not confirming their determination through the Prayer, through which they accept The Lord Jesus Christ as the only Source of life and everything positive and true, that idea has power to take hold of their mind and to become an integral part of their will. In the moment it were to happen, they would fall out into the negative state. Thus, in this perspective, the correspondential meaning of this Prayer functions as a continuous security against this ever happening.”

“The responsibility of each carrier of freedom of choice, by which one lives and is alive, is to keep that freedom of choice. The Lord Jesus Christ’s Prayer provides, by its mysterious

ways, that this freedom of choice remains non-violated. The responsibility part of this freedom of choice is in the fact of acknowledging that one can be truly free only from, by, through, with and of The Lord Jesus Christ Who is The Absolute Freedom Himself/Herself. Denial of this fact deprives one of that freedom. After all, if you deny The Absolute Freedom and its Absolute Source, you deny any freedom. In that case, by your own free choice of denial, you become a slave of something that has nothing in common with anything free. You lose your freedom to someone or something else.”

“In order to keep this freedom of choice intact and non-violated, you need to continuously ask its Absolute Source to protect you from losing it and to supply you with all necessary means to remain always free. The Lord Jesus Christ’s Prayer serves this purpose on a multiversal level.”

“There are many other great mysteries relevant to The Lord Jesus Christ’s Prayer, but they are beyond the scope of human comprehension. If revealed, they would make no sense at all. At this point and at this time, what has been revealed in this respect so far is sufficient to give all readers of these words an understanding of what they are dealing with and why it is so important that such a Prayer exists even on the most external level of verbalization.”

“If anyone has ears to hear, let him/her hear what The Lord Jesus Christ reveals in this brief Chapter.”

CHAPTER TWENTY EIGHT

THE MYSTERY OF THE ROAD OF LIFE

Early in the morning, on May 17, 1988, the word of The Lord Jesus Christ came to me again, saying:

“In The Gospel According to John, Chapter 14 verse 6-7, it is written:”

“Jesus said to him, “I am the way, the truth, and the life. No one comes to The Father except through Me. If you have known me you would have known Him and have seen Him.””

“And further down in verse 9, it is said,”

“...He who has seen Me has seen The Father.”

“Certain important mysteries are contained in these words that need further explanation.”

“The life of each individual, no matter where, when and under what condition that individual lives, can be compared to a road which he/ she travels.”

“There is a starting point at which that road is entered by each particular individual. The starting point is when the idea of that individual is born and is endowed with a unique sentient mind.”

“Once the road is entered, the travel begins. The entrance into that road always has a certain purpose. As you remember, before any particular individual enters that road, he/she is given a free choice to decide whether he/she really wants to enter that road with a particular assignment and mission to travel that road in a particular way, by particular routes or paths or highways or freeways or all of them at different times.”

“And although for each particular individual there is always a starting point when and where that travel begins, in actuality, that travel never ends.”

“However, in the process of traveling, many rest places exist where the traveler can rest, reenergize himself/herself and make a fresh choice in which manner or by what route to continue in his/her travel. But there is a relative ending of that travel within the frame of spiritual quality that each cycle of time represents and manifests.”

“The process of this travel can be conceptualized as an individualized manifestation of the unique and specific aspect of The Absolute Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ, which was placed into each individual in a degree relevant to the nature of the level of spirituality which is being represented and manifested by each current cycle of time.”

“The mystery of this situation is in the fact that manifestation of any aspect of The Absolute Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ is possible only through sentient entities who reflect that Nature in a relative condition. Because it is a relative condition, each such aspect releases only so much of its content as that relative condition is capable of bearing at each particular

point of the individualized life.”

“Another mystery of this situation is that each individual, being relative, by carrying that aspect within himself/herself and by manifesting its nature through being his/her own unique personality and individuality, is built up in his/her strength, potency and ability to manifest, sometime in the future, after the process of this buildup is successfully completed, a higher, more potent and more exact nature of this aspect in comparison with its Original Absolute Source.”

“Now, when this buildup is successfully completed and each individual is ready to assume a life which will be characterized by a higher level of manifestation of the nature of the aspect in question, the end of his/her traveling is at hand. At that point, for that particular individual, the goal of his/her life is finished and he/she receives an appropriate reward for successful completion of the role assigned to him/her on this portion of the Road of Life.”

“At this point, for that individual, a deeply mysterious and mystical transformative process occurs. From that process, this individual emerges as a totally different person who has very little in common with who he/she was before. The quality, the content, the appearance and everything else of that individual are completely changed. No one who used to know that individual, during the time of his/her travel on the Road of Life would be able to recognize him/her at first glance.”

“The reason for this change is in the fact that the entire being and existence of that individual, as well as his/her unique personality and individuality, are now accommodated to carry and to manifest a different level of spiritual reality which is contained in that aspect of The Absolute Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ placed into that individual, giving him/her his/her unique and specific life.”

“What you have to understand here is the mystery of manifestation of something which is Absolute in something which is relative to that Absolute. As you know, the relative condition is not capable of manifesting anything Absolute in its Absolute sense, to the fullest of its Absolute nature.”

“Yet, as you remember, The Absolute State, in its Absolute Love and Absolute Wisdom, desires nothing more than to share Its Absolute Nature with everyone in its Absolute sense.”

“In order to approximate such a possibility, the way is devised by The Lord Jesus Christ which makes it feasible for the sharing of this nature to occur.”

“You take out one element from that aspect. That element, in its original state, is taken out from the most outward position of The Most Within Inwardness. Such an element can take hold in a relative condition. It gives life to each particular reality itself. At the same time, by manifesting the most external element of that Most Absolute Within in that relative condition, that relative condition, by the process of manifestation itself, is becoming stronger and stronger, preparing itself for reception of a different, more inward element of the representative aspect, which constitutes the unique nature given to that one as a gift by The Absolute Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ.”

“Now, the quality, the content and the means of manifestation of this new element are fundamentally different from the quality, the content and the means of manifestation of any previous element. This is so because nothing is duplicated or redundant in The Absolute Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ.”

“Because each individual’s nature, mode of life, as well as his/her physical appearance, are determined by the quality, the content and the mode of impression and expression of that element, with any new readiness to reflect a different, spiritually more inward element, that individual completely changes from the most within level of his/her mind to the most external physical form of his/her manifestation.”

“Before this change occurs, and after finishing the goal of the previously traveled Road of Life, there is an interim period, during which, as you remember, his/her personal Last Judgment takes place.”

“At this point, the individual is asked whether he/she is willing, by his/her own free will and choice, to assume to carry and manifest a different, higher element of the aspect of life which was placed into him/her by The Lord Jesus Christ. If he/she does agree, which is always the case (there is nothing more pleasurable than to do just that — doing it has an experience that far transcends the orgasmic human experience), he/she reenters the Road of Life at a different point and at a different level, relevant to his/her spiritual state and awareness which corresponds to the needs of each cycle of time. Each particular cycle of time carries and manifests a cumulative sum of all elements of all the aspects of each sentient entity. This cumulative sum becomes an approximation of The Absolute Nature of that One Global Absolute Aspect, redistributed among all sentient entities and carried by each particular cycle of time.”

“Once all elements of that global aspect of The Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ are fully manifested and the cycle of time in question, in its globality, is ready to transcend itself, that cycle of time ends and an interim state comes into force. The goal of life of the entire cycle of time was reached and completed.”

“At this point, a global Last Judgment takes place, during which everyone is asked if they want to continue, in their globality, as well as in their particular individuality and locality, to carry and to manifest a different, higher, spiritually more approximate, element of the global aspect of The Lord Jesus Christ.”

“Because of their nature, which they have from The Creator — The Lord Jesus Christ — all sentient entities are motivated to continue in this process of approximation to the nature of The Lord Jesus Christ, being eternally closer and closer to it. For that reason, they always choose to continue. Once the choice is made, a new cycle of time, with sentient entities totally and completely changed and transformed, comes into its being and existence.”

“One of the unusual mysteries in relationship between The Absolute State of The Lord Jesus Christ and the relative sentient entities is in the fact that the process of life is reversed. The Absolute State is the State of The Absolute Inwardness from which the process is initiated toward the without. This is The Absolute Process from within to without. But in everyone else, *as far as the approximation to The Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ is concerned only*, the process begins from carrying and manifesting the most external outward element of that Absolute Within to gradually proceeding more and more inward, that is, to the closer and closer approximation to the State of The Absolute Inwardness. Because relative individuals can never become Absolute, the process continues to eternity.”

“After all, The Absolute would not be Absolute if it were exhaustible. But each individual can and may **approximate** this Absolute Inwardness. However, this rule is applicable only in relationship between the relative individuals and The Absolute Lord Jesus Christ and only to the process of approximation. By its very nature, the relative condition, in its initial stage, is not capable of carrying and manifesting anything else but the most outward element of that

Inwardness. It must be built up very gradually, in relatively small steps, toward moving from the most outward position to the most inward position. This is an eternal process of approximation which can never be finished or completed. As far as each individual is concerned, being that he/she is the likeness and image of his/her Creator, the life of that individual reflects fully The Absolute Multiversal Law of From Within to Without. One can relate to The Lord Jesus Christ only from the position of his/her own within; and one always rules one's life, in a positive manner, from within to without."

"This individual arrangement can be called **a parallel process**. In this process, each individual, by his/her unique nature, **parallels** The Absolute Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ in a relative condition. Through such a paralleling, the presence of The Lord Jesus Christ in the relative condition is eternally assured."

"The other process, in which one moves closer and closer toward becoming as and like The Lord Jesus Christ, can be called **a process of approximation**. In this process, one approximates The Absolute Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ. Because this approximation is from the position of the 'to' to the position of the 'from,' the 'to' starts at the most remote point from the Center — The Absolute Inwardness ('From') — and moves from without of that within to its within."

"Philosophically speaking, **a parallel process** gives an impetus to the establishment of the subjective perception of time. From that perception, time becomes an objectified reality in the natural degree of Creation and in the natural degree of the Zone of Displacement, as well as the distortion on planet Zero."

"On the other hand, **the process of approximation** gives an impetus to the establishment of the subjective perception of space. From this perception, space becomes an objectified reality in the natural degree of Creation, the Zone of Displacement and distortion on planet Zero."

"In a spiritual sense, the less one is in the state of one's own inwardness, the longer it takes to relate to The Lord Jesus Christ, to others and to oneself. In the negative state, which is the state of denial of this inwardness, it takes 'forever' to spiritually accomplish anything at all."

"On the other hand, spiritually speaking, the greater degree of outwardness one represents, the farther away from The Lord Jesus Christ one appears. In the negative state, where there is no attempt to approximate The Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ in any manner and way, but, instead, to deny it, everyone appears as though they do not exist at all or they appear trillions and trillions of light years away from The Lord Jesus Christ."

"All these factors are, of course, only subjective appearances because, in reality, no truly objective time and space exist. As you see, their existence is determined by one's attitude, mode of thinking, feeling, state and position that one has and represents in relationship toward The Lord Jesus Christ."

"The great mystery here is in the fact that all conditions, states, processes, times, distances, places and whatever you have in the entire multiverse of Creation, the Zone of Displacement and planet Zero, as well as in the life of each particular individual, without any exception or exclusion, are determined, happen and depend on general and specific ideas, attitudes, thoughts, feelings, behaviors and knowledges (plural!) that everyone together, and as a singular individual, has toward The Lord Jesus Christ. It also determines in the minutest detail what is going to happen to you during your specific and unique travel on the Road of Life."

"It is logical to assume that such is the case if you take into consideration that The Lord Jesus Christ is The Absolute Within or Inwardness from which everything else, but the negative state, proceeds. The negative state proceeds, instead, from those who deny that this is the case."

"Now, in connotation of this great mystery, the words of The Lord Jesus Christ, as quoted at the beginning of this Chapter, must be interpreted. The Lord Jesus Christ, knowing that He/She will become The Lord Jesus Christ, being at that time Jesus Christ, stated very clearly and distinctly, 'I am the way, the truth and the life.'"

"This statement confirms several important factors: The way of life or the Road of Life, which one is to travel and on which one is to keep going, is with, from, through, by and of The Lord Jesus Christ. It is obvious that if He/She built that Road from and by Himself/ Herself, He/She becomes that very Road. What other road is there in being and existence? The road of the denial of this fact! Such a road is the road of the negative state and its dead life. The truth of this matter is in the fact that no other truth exists but that The Lord Jesus Christ is the only source of the true life. This is The Absolute Wisdom of The Absolute Truth."

"If The Lord Jesus Christ is the only one God Indivisible, The Most High, The Creator, The Truth Himself/Herself, what other truth is there in being and existence? Denial of this truth constitutes the lies of all falsities. They are the nature of the negative state which vehemently denies this truth. Because it is an Absolute Truth that the true life proceeds from The Lord Jesus Christ, Who is The Absolute Life in and by Himself/Herself, what other life is there in being and existence but the life of The Lord Jesus Christ? Can anyone live and be alive without being and existence of life, that is, without The Lord Jesus Christ? Such a state is utterly inconceivable. Now, the denial of this life constitutes the dead life of the negative state."

"Thus, the only way, the only truth, the only road and the only life is The Lord Jesus Christ. This is Absolute Spiritual Logic. Denial of this indisputable and axiomatic fact constitutes the nature of the negative state which is illogical, irrational and insane. It equals the denial of life while one experiences that life and his/her own aliveness within oneself. Such a denial does not make any sense. But, after all, has there ever been anything at all in the negative state that would make any sense? The only sense the negative state has is its total nonsense!"

"'No one comes to The Father except through Me.' In this verse, the word 'Father' has an entirely different connotation than it has, for example, in the original Lord's Prayer. Here it signifies The Absolute State of The Absolute Inwardness of The Absolute Within from which everything else proceeds. Nothing can be or exist apart from this Absolute State. Because of this fact, the word 'Father' is used to indicate the original Source of the entire being and existence."

"In the connotation of this word, the way it was used by Jesus Christ at that time, the word 'Father' does not mean masculine gender. Instead, its true meaning is of being the only Parent of all else. The word 'parenthood' incorporates both the masculine and the feminine components or fatherhood and motherhood."

"That no one can come to The Father or The Absolute Originating Source of all and everything — The Absolute Inwardness — signifies that, from the position of the relative condition in relationship to The Absolute, one can approach The Father only by and through His/Her external degree which was imbued in the form of the human body-flesh of Jesus Christ. In actuality, this means that only through The Divine which was made human and

through the Human which was made Divine — Jesus Christ — can one relate to or approach from one's relative condition The Absolute State of Inwardness from which all else originated — The Father.”

“Because no one is Absolute, that is, no one is in The Absolute State of Inwardness, no one can relate to that Absolute from the very state of that Absolute. Since you are not in that state, you cannot relate from it. But you can approximate that state by accepting the fact about The New Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ who, for that purpose, assumed the relative nature of the human body-flesh. By incorporating that body-flesh into the totality of The Absolute Nature of The Absolute Within — The Father — one now is able to relate directly to The Lord Jesus Christ from the position of one's relativity through the position of that relative body-flesh of Jesus Christ. This is the reason He/She stated that ‘no one comes to The Father except through Me.’”

“There is no other way to relate to The Absolute God but through The Lord Jesus Christ Who became the totality of that God and of all else through the incorporation of that body-flesh into His/Her Nature. That this will be the case and that The Lord Jesus Christ will become The Father, because The Father constitutes The Most Within of His/Her Nature, is obvious from the statement that follows: ‘He who has seen Me has seen The Father.’ Thus, there is no other Father in being and existence.”

“If The Lord Jesus Christ is The Father, it is obvious then that to relate to any other Father or God, under any other name or form or condition, is to relate to no one. But it also means to steal the true parenthood from The One Who is your real Parent and impart it on someone or something that is not. In that case one becomes a spiritual thief and a robber. This is what The Lord Jesus Christ meant by the words in The Gospel According to John 10:1:’

“‘Most assuredly, I say to you, he who does not enter the sheepfold by the door, but climbs up some other way, the same is a thief and a robber.’”

“And in verse 7 of the same chapter:”

“‘Most assuredly, I say to you, I am the door of the sheep.’”

“Thus, there is no entrance into the state of The Most Within but through that door — The Human Divine and The Divine Human — The Lord Jesus Christ. For this reason, if you want to travel the Road of Life successfully, with a sense of fulfillment and joy, wherever and whenever you are, you are advised to accept this New Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ into your heart, inviting Him/Her to be your way, your truth and your life. By doing that, you will be closer and closer to His/Her Absolute Nature, which is called in the quoted text — The Father.”

“He/she who has ears to hear, let him/her hear what The Lord Jesus Christ reveals in this brief chapter.”

CHAPTER TWENTY NINE

SOME BRIEF CLARIFICATIONS ON THE STRUCTURE AND NATURE OF THE ZONE OF DISPLACEMENT

On May 18, 1988, early in the morning, at dawn, the word of The Lord Jesus Christ came to me, saying,

“Some additional brief comments need to be made about the structure and the nature of the Zone of Displacement, particularly concerning its inhabitants. As you remember, this structure and nature was described in Chapter Thirteen of the book *Reality, Myths & Illusions* and in Chapters One and Three of the booklet *Four Concepts of the Spiritual Structure of Creation* and throughout other books by this transmitter.”

“At that time, it was indicated that, basically, the structure of the Zone of Displacement imitates the structure of the positive state, being its reverse reflection or an ugly caricature of the nature of Creation. The hierarchy of the organization of the Zone of Displacement is similar to the hierarchy of the spiritual organization of the true Creation, except that it has a totally different, diametrically opposing purpose.”

“As mentioned previously, it is an error to assume that the Hells, for example, are in one area of the spiritual world concentrated in one specific region paralleling Creation. The Zone of Displacement is an anti-universe, consisting of its own vast three dimensions — the anti-spiritual dimension or its own pseudo-world, commonly known to humans as the Hells; the anti-intermediate dimension or its pseudo-intermediate world; and the anti-natural dimension or its pseudo-physical world. Each of these dimensions consists of its own pseudo-galaxies, pseudo-solar systems and pseudo-planets. They are all under the rule of the Hells — their most pseudo-within pseudo-spiritual world.”

“Moreover, the Zone of Displacement has one peculiarity within its realm that, actually and specifically, does not correspond to anything — planet Zero. The correspondences of planet Zero are diffused and nonspecific. Its very peculiar and special role requires this arrangement.”

“As you know, until the incarnation of The Most High in the form of Jesus Christ, the entire Zone of Displacement was under uncontested rule of the pseudo-creators. After that incarnation, specifically after resurrection of The Lord Jesus Christ, the pseudo-creators were stripped of their ruling position, separated from the rest of the Zone of Displacement and its Hells and locked up until recently.”

“From that time on, the full control of the Zone of Displacement has belonged to The Lord Jesus Christ Who rules it, as you remember, by **The Law of Permission.**”

“While the pseudo-creators were in power, they established a certain hierarchical and political structure of the Zone of Displacement, patterned after such a structure of the real Creation. The reason why this structure pervertedly copies the structure of the real Creation is because the pseudo-creators needed something that would be an exact opposite replica of the original. It is easier to wage war against something you copy in all its details.”

“Another reason was in the building material available to them. As you know that material came, and still comes, from the rejected and repudiated ideas of all positive sentient entities about deriving life from any other source other than that of The Lord Jesus Christ (this is one general content of that idea). Because that idea is occurring in the sentient mind, it reflects the structure of that sentient mind. The sentient mind, in turn, reflects the structure of the hierarchy of the spiritual organization of Creation and its multiverse.”

“For that reason, it was easy to read out the structure in question from the content and nature of those rejected ideas. From that, the pseudo-creators knew how to build an opposing and diametrically different world — as far as its purpose is concerned.”

“In the original setup, the pseudo-creators functioned in the role of God — The Creator — who ruled the entire pseudo-creation. In actuality, from among themselves, they selected, through a secret vote, one member who was assigned the role of the supreme god. That ‘god,’ in turn, appointed the members of the ruling political body that was assigned various functions in order to assure the proper government of the entire Zone of Displacement.”

“At the time of the original fabrication and establishment of the Hells, the pseudo-creators also fabricated special types of creatures that were to correspond, in the negative sense, of course, in power, role and position, to the various spiritual entities created by The Most High for the purpose of co-creating and governing the multiverse.”

“In this respect, there are nine very broad and general categories of entities in the Zone of Displacement (besides the pseudo-creators), originally fabricated by them. They all have very specific assignments, roles and degree and extent of political and other mind powers within the realm of the Zone of Displacement.”

“Within these nine very broad and general categories, each category consists of its own numerous subcategories that have their own names, functions and roles and a specific position within the hierarchy of that structure. It is not necessary for you to concern yourself with these numerous subcategories and their names or roles. It would only confuse your mind — so complex and intricate they are.”

“You are permitted to know some limited brief information about the nine basic general and broad categories of these creatures in order to be aware of their influences on the human mind, so that you may protect yourself from their influence. The subcategories of these major categories function within the authority of their major categories, serving them in their main role and assignment.”

“The first category, which is on the top of them all, can be called pseudo-powers and pseudo-seraphim. They were fabricated by the pseudo-creators first in order to help them to fabricate and establish the Hells and all other creatures. This is a ruling or legislative body of the Hells which develops, formulates and establishes various policies by which the entire Zone of Displacement, at all its levels, is being ruled. At the present time, and after the lockup of the pseudo-creators, it is from this category that a pseudo-god is appointed who rules all the Hells and the rest of the Zone of Displacement. The pseudo-creators cannot be on the top any longer because their position is now occupied by The Lord Jesus Christ Who permits, for the time being and for the sake of the important spiritual lessons, that all else in this respect remains the same there.”

“For the sake of freedom of choice, all members of the Hells need to have an impression that they rule themselves. There are other immensely important reasons why this situation was

permitted by The Lord Jesus Christ to continue, even after He/She took away the reign of the pseudo-creators. Some of these reasons were revealed previously. Others are beyond the scope of human comprehension.”

“The second category, which succeeds the first one, can be called pseudo-potentates, pseudo-cherubim and pseudo-teraphim. Their role and position can be compared to the judicial branch of human governments. They are, in a sense, interpreters of all pseudo-principles developed by the above-described first category of the hellish creatures. They are the final arbiters of the pseudo-justice of the Zone of Displacement.”

“The third category of these creatures is called the Devil. The devil consists of the numerous creatures who are in full charge of production of all evils in the entire Zone of Displacement and their subsequent successful spread and justification.”

“The fourth category of these creatures is called Satan. It consists of the creatures who are in full charge of production and spread of all falsities, perversions and distortions throughout the Zone of Displacement, and their justification.”

“The fifth category is called Lucifer. It consists of the creatures who can be compared to the ideologists who are in charge of all the propaganda of the Zone of Displacement, particularly against the positive state. Their basic role is to portray the positive state as the most ugly and negative one and the negative state as the most positive and desirable one. They are masters of persuasion, demagoguery and mind power of suggestion and influence.”

“The sixth category is called Demons. Demons are in charge of all internal and external security of the entire Zone of Displacement. They also can be compared to the ruling body of the military forces. One of their powerful branches is in charge of espionage and spying on all members of the negative state in order to make sure that no one deviates from the rules and lifestyle of the negative state. They are assigned the role of maintaining tight security around the encapsulated true sentient mind within the human mind and all other creatures’ minds and keeping in separation their pseudo-mind from any influence of the true sentient mind.”

“The seventh category is called pseudo-archangels. The pseudo-archangels head the law enforcement agencies within the entire Zone of Displacement. From the formulated pseudo-principles and pseudo-laws, which are coming from the top, they develop a means for implementing these pseudo-laws within the entire realm of the Zone of Displacement.”

“The eighth category is called pseudo-angels or angels of darkness. These creatures are in charge of law enforcement. They are actually a police force that makes sure that everyone abides by the established local pseudo-laws.”

“Finally, the ninth category is called spirits. They have two broad independent subcategories: One is called the negative spirits and the other is called the evil spirits. The negative spirits are usually the minions of Satan. They exemplify life of all falsities, distortions and perversion of truth. They set a concrete example of life in accordance with the satanic pseudo-principles of falsities. The evil spirits, on the other hand, are the minions of the devil. Their role is to exemplify the lifestyle of all evilness in being and existence. These evil spirits set a concrete example of life in accordance with the diabolical pseudo-principles of evils. Most humans who enter the Hells by their choice become either the negative spirits or the evil spirits. Humans never rise ‘higher’ (lower!) than the rank of pseudo-archangels.”

“Such is the basic hierarchical structure of the Zone of Displacement and the nature of its government.”

“As you see, the political structure of the governments on planet Zero derives basically, in the literal sense, from the structure of the Zone of Displacement in general. However, some differences exist between the structure of the Hells and the structure of planet Zero. Planet Zero has a certain minimal degree of a diffused correspondence to the positive state.”

“This positive correspondence gives some governmental political structure of certain countries on your planet which is called ‘democracy.’ These very few countries on your planet give their citizens some degree of liberties and freedom of expression that exist nowhere else in the Zone of Displacement and all its Hells. A good example of this arrangement is the political system established in The United States of America. However, as you know, from the original state of those liberties and freedom, at the time of its foundation, a gradual erosion of these liberties and freedoms occurred. And, although The United States of America is still the freest country on your planet, this situation is deteriorating at an alarming rate for you. It reflects the gradual full takeover of your planet by the negative state.”

“The above-described structure and the nature of the Zone of Displacement has one very important implication for those who practice spiritual hypnotherapy and the process of going inward.”

“As you remember, in Chapter Five of this book, it was indicated that each forcefully separated and isolated level of the human mind (the true most within Spiritual Mind, the true interior mind and the true exterior mind) is encapsulated by a special state which simulates the function and the purpose of the level of the original mind. Thus, to repeat, the true most within spiritual mind is encapsulated by the false most within spiritual mind; the true interior mind is encapsulated by the false interior mind; and the true exterior mind is encapsulated by the false external mind.”

“In that Chapter, it was also pointed out that to each such pseudo-mind are assigned numerous demons that not only keep these minds functional and in the foreground, but they also control the guardians of the respective infinitesimally small openings from the true mind in order to block any possible truth and reality from coming out and from entering one’s conscious mind in their true, undistorted, non-falsified and non-perverted condition.”

“Because the structural nature of these false minds is a perverted reflection of the structural nature of the true mind, each false mind is assigned a set of pseudo-spiritual advisors in the same manner as the true sentient mind in humans is assigned by The Lord Jesus Christ a set of the true spiritual advisors. The number of the true spiritual advisors is precisely matched by the number of demons who function in the role of the pseudo-spiritual advisors. The only difference in this arrangement is that these kinds of demons function from the position of separation and isolation of one mind. After all, it is their role, as of security officers of the Hells, to keep that mind separated and isolated. On the other hand, the true spiritual advisors, assigned by The Lord Jesus Christ, function from the position of unity and oneness.”

“For this reason, the true spiritual advisors appear only on the level of the most within Spiritual Mind as an integrating source of the entire sentient mind.”

“Because of this crucial difference, each false mind is assigned a set of demons — false spiritual advisors — in a matching number to the true spiritual advisors. Thus, you have a set of false spiritual advisors at the level of the false most within spiritual mind. Another set is assigned to the false interior mind. And a third set is positioned at the level of the false external mind. Thus, for example, if you have a total number of true spiritual advisors which

equals ten, then you will have ten demons — pseudo-advisors at the level of the false most within spiritual mind; ten at the level of the false interior mind and ten at the level of the false external mind. You have here thirty demons against ten true spiritual advisors. This is how tight security of the negative state is.”

“So, in order to successfully deal with this situation, during the process of encountering these demons, special attention must be given to those demons who play the role of the false spiritual advisors. At this point of your work on yourself, it is very easy to overlook these particular demons, because they assume the exact likeness and image of your true spiritual advisors. In this manner, it is very easy to be deceived and to have a feeling of false security. You think you are dealing with your true, genuine spiritual advisors, while, in fact, you are dealing with demons who pretend to be them.”

“For this reason, you are advised to scrutinize very thoroughly and to check, double-check and triple-check all demons and spiritual advisors that shift with you to the interior and external level of your mind. In the process of that shift — from one level to another — the substitution of the true spiritual advisors by the false ones usually takes place. Once you complete the shift, you are advised to recheck your reappearing spiritual advisors, making sure that they are who they are supposed to be.”

“The best way to circumvent this deception is to directly deal with these types of demons at each level of the pseudo-mind and address them first. You tell them that you know that they are there; that you know their role and their function and that, before proceeding further, you are reminding them of their inherent ability to choose and to change. You send them away from you to that special region, established by The Lord Jesus Christ for this special purpose, between the Hells and the intermediate world.”

“In that region they are processed and given a choice of either conversion to the positive state or being locked up in some prison of their respective Hells where they are to bear all the consequences for their acts and foolish choices.”

“After you deal with those demons first, then and only then proceed with the rest of the demons who are in charge of the guardians. Subsequently after the removal of these specific demons, you are to liberate and convert the guardians in the manner described in Chapter Five of this book.”

“And this is all you need to know about this issue at this time.”

“If anyone has ears to hear, let him/her hear what The Lord Jesus Christ reveals about this issue.”

CHAPTER THIRTY**THE NEW REVELATION IN PERSPECTIVE**

Later in the morning, on May 18, 1988, the word of The Lord Jesus Christ came to me once more, saying:

“It is time to correct one prevailing false impression that all humans have, including you, Peter, that, before the incarnation of Jesus Christ on your planet, The Most High God was incarnating in your world in various manners in the form of Krishna, Buddha and under all other names so reverently used and abused by humans.”

“The truth of the matter is that The Most High God, The Creator, has never ever, in any form, state or condition, incarnated directly or indirectly on your planet or anywhere else in the Zone of Displacement before or after Jesus Christ. The Most High God, before incarnation of Jesus Christ, maintained His/Her agents of various spiritual power and degree through whom He/She revealed or did what was needed to be revealed and done and to the extent that it needed to be revealed and done at each particular time in the history of humankind. But none of these agents were a direct or indirect incarnation of The Most High God.”

“Another category of ‘deities,’ who existed on your planet and who are still worshiped by the Eastern humans, are believed to be gods who continuously incarnate and reincarnate on your planet. They are usually called Avatars or incarnations of God. They supposedly come into the human flesh to reveal some truth and lead their followers out of the negative state.”

“This is a totally false concept. Let it be known now that these so-called Avatars, ‘gods,’ ‘deities’ or whatever they are called on your planet never had, have nor will have anything in them that came, comes or will come directly or indirectly from The Most High God at that time and The Lord Jesus Christ at this time. The reason why it was permitted for most of you to consider them the carriers of some intense presence of the true Most High God was because in their teachings, some important homogenous spiritual principles of good and truth were contained. Through such principles, a certain degree of connectedness of the human race to the true spiritual reality could be maintained. This was a matter of survival, because if there was no availability no one could survive for a second. The Divine Providence of The Lord Jesus Christ, at that time of The Most High God, always provided some ways and means to maintain this vital and crucial presence.”

“As you know, the negative state always distorts, perverts and falsifies the real truth. But it has to start with that truth. Otherwise, there would be nothing to distort, to pervert or to falsify. The fact of the starting point with the real truth preserves some degree of the spiritual principles that are real and applicable even within the frame of their distortions, as presented on your planet. This situation was always utilized by The Most High God before His/Her incarnation on your planet in the form of Jesus Christ.”

“But the true reality of this situation is that those so-called Avatars and other similar beings of the alleged spiritual power and divine origin were incarnations of the various specially appointed creatures of the Hells of different ranks, for the purpose of making it impossible for humans to establish any proper understanding of the true Nature of God and His/Her Creation or to develop any direct and genuine relationship with the true Most High God.”

“Up to this point, very few humans have known that this was, is and will be the case. And yet, it was The Lord Jesus Christ Who, during His/Her stay on planet Zero, pointed this out to be the case. However, no one properly understood and interpreted this fact. In The Gospel According to John, Chapter 10, verse 8, it is stated:”

“All who ever came before Me are thieves and robbers.”

“What this verse indicates here is that all, without any exception or exclusion, who ever came before the incarnation of Jesus Christ had no real, genuine divinity in them. Instead, they utilized their knowledge of the spiritual principles and the spiritual truth, as well as their mind powers and healing properties and abilities to perform miracles, for presenting these principles and truths to humankind in a distorted, falsified and perverted manner, assuming upon themselves divinity which had never belonged to them.”

“This is the reason why they are called thieves and robbers. They are called ‘thieves’ because they stole some spiritual principles and truths, appropriated them to themselves and claimed to be their originators. They are called ‘robbers’ because they robbed the divinity of The Lord Jesus Christ and claimed it to be theirs. But, in fact, they are demons and other creatures of the Hells, sent by the rulers of the Hells with a special mission to develop, form, establish and implement various religious movements on planet Zero that would lead all humans who believe in those religions far away from the true spiritual reality and proper conceptualization of The Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ.”

“This statement or claim will be very hard and difficult to accept by many human readers. However, this is the truth as revealed by the only One Who is The Absolute Truth — The Lord Jesus Christ. Of course, anyone who reads these words has his/her privilege and right to accept or to reject this claim.”

“Now, by the authority of The Lord Jesus Christ, the above-quoted verse is being supplemented by the following vital and crucial statement which, as of now, will follow the above-quoted verse:

“And all who will ever come after Me are also thieves and robbers.”

“This statement signifies that everyone who claims that he/she is an incarnation or reincarnation of The Lord Jesus Christ or of any other God, deity, Messiah, Savior or Avatar or of archangel, angel, Apostle or of any other ancient figure of religion or philosophy, such a person is a thief and a robber regardless of how many miracles he/she performs or how much love and wisdom he/she preaches. He/She is stealing the principles of The Old or The New Revelation to use them for negative, misleading and evil purposes. He/She is robbing the divinity of the Human Divine and Divine Human of The Lord Jesus Christ, claiming to be that divinity. Nothing of truth, nothing of good and nothing of divinity exists in such a person.”

“You are hereby being warned again that many individuals presently living on your planet make such false claims. And you are being forewarned that many more will be coming with such convincing, but totally false, claims. They will even perform great miracles and show great signs, even resurrecting humans who just died, in order to prove that they are gods, masters or Jesus Christ. But, in fact, they are all incarnations from the Hells with a special mission to block humans from accepting The New Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ and His/Her New Revelation.”

“Their effort will be to discredit, as much as possible, the verity and the source of The New Revelation and its transmitter personally. They will try to find and bring to the surface what

seem to be all kinds of discrepancies, repetitions, poor use of English or grammatical structure, inappropriate words or expressions or unnecessary redundancy (of which even some of your present readers-friends complain) in The New Revelation in order to prove that it is not from The Lord Jesus Christ.”

“They will try to find some problems and shortcomings in the transmitter of The New Revelation, which, as a human, he has, claiming that the true Lord Jesus Christ would never have chosen such a weak, common person, who is full of personal problems and shortcomings, or whatever kind of person he is, to be a transmitter of His/Her New Revelation. There are many other things they will try and claim.”

“In many instances and with the majority of humans, they will succeed. They will block, as much as possible, the financial support for the publishing of this book. And, if it is formally published, they will try to do everything in their power to limit the numbers of humans who would ever read it. And if, by any chance, they fail in this latter endeavor, they will try to make sure that, after reading the book of The New Revelation, the readers either will reject it as coming from The Lord Jesus Christ, proclaiming its author to be mentally deranged, suffering from ideas of grandeur and paranoid psychosis, or they simply will forget what they read, without ever applying any of its principles in their lives. And there are many other such things they will do. Do not be taken in by any such vicious attacks. Such attacks are only proof that what was revealed in this book came directly from The Lord Jesus Christ.”

“It is being confirmed here again by The Lord Jesus Christ that nothing in this book whatsoever came from any angel, spirit, human or this transmitter personally or anyone else in Creation or the Zone of Displacement, but only and only directly from The Lord Jesus Christ through this transmitter.”

“Basically, three types of readers of The New Revelation exist. One type is all sentient entities in the positive state of Creation and its multiverse. The second type is the members of the Zone of Displacement for the purpose of falsifying, distorting and perverting it and using it for their evil goals. But, also, some of them, as a result of reading it, will convert to the positive state.”

“The third type will be humans on planet Zero (in a very limited number). The number of readers and appliers of the principles of The New Revelation will differ from one type to another. In the first instance, all will read, study and apply it in their lives immediately. In the second instance, many, but not all, will read it but will not apply it. In the case of human readers very few will read it and even fewer will apply it in their lives.”

“From this situation, you can see again that The New Revelation will be read, studied and applied in an all-inclusive manner primarily in the positive state of Creation. Its availability on planet Zero and in the entire Zone of Displacement is a necessary condition in order to enact the process of final salvation of all in the negative state and ultimate abolishment of the negative state, as it was pointed out so many times throughout this book (particularly in Chapter Fifteen, ‘The Mystery of The New Revelation.’)”

“By the completion of this portion of The New Revelation, a new epoch in the spiritual development of all Creation and a new condition in the Zone of Displacement and on planet Zero has been established and implemented. The significance of the availability of this New Revelation is of enormous proportions beyond any human understanding, conceptualization and imagination. As things will begin to unfold also on your planet Zero, although on your planet it is always a slower and less perceptible process than anywhere and anywhen else, the enormity of the importance of The New Revelation will become more and more apparent.

But it will take time and much effort to bring all these facts to their ultimate fruition. Therefore, be patient and endure to the very end.”

“The New Revelation will remain open-ended. This means that, if and when necessary, additional Chapters, beyond Chapter Thirty, will be added to it to reflect further developments in the spiritual reality of Creation and in the process of The Lord Jesus Christ’s salvation and unfolding of His/Her Grand Plan.”

“Many ideas of The New Revelation, as revealed in this book, will be valid to the very end of this cycle of time. Some will be modified or replaced ***as needed, when needed and if needed***. How long this cycle of time continues cannot be revealed. But you will know once its end is at hand. All signs will be there. Your mission and purpose is not to worry about the future and the ending of this cycle of time. All readers and implementers of the ideas of this book are here to set an example of life in accordance with the principles of The New Revelation. Once you accomplish this purpose, you will be recalled at the appropriate time.”

“In the meantime, the transmission of this portion of The New Revelation is completed. Should any need arise to continue in this process, it will become very obvious to you, Peter, and, at that time, The Word of The Lord Jesus Christ will come to you to say whatever He/She will put into your mind and mouth.”

“Blessed are those who read these words, accept them and implement them in their everyday life. The Lord Jesus Christ says: Such individuals shall inherit all positive and good things, and The Lord Jesus Christ will be their God and they will be His/Her sons and daughters.”

“He/she who has ears to hear and to listen and the will to do, let him/ her hear, listen to and do what The Lord Jesus Christ reveals in this entire book.”

AMEN.

POSTSCRIPTUM

On June 10, 1989, early in the morning, once again, the word of The Lord Jesus Christ came to me, saying:

“May I ask you, Peter, to elaborate on the following issues and to add whatever follows to the content of the book The New Revelation of The Lord Jesus Christ? Thank you, sir.”

“The first issue that needs elaboration and change relates to the content of Chapter Five of this book. As a matter of fact, it relates to the understanding of the term ‘spiritual advisors.’”

“The meaning of this term exhausted its usefulness, served its purpose and is therefore, no longer tenable. The role that spiritual advisors of each individual have played also changes, as the overall changes and transformations have been going on since the permanent establishment of The New Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ, as conceived and described throughout this book.”

“As of this date, as these words are being transmitted, the process of transformation of all spiritual advisors, assigned to you and to everyone who reads or will read and accept whatever is revealed in this book, has been successfully completed. They have been fully aligned with The New Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ.”

“The completion of this process constitutes deep changes in the role, position and relationship that exists between you and them and between them and you.”

“Up to this point, the spiritual advisors have represented, among other things, various aspects and principles of the human sentient mind, performing a task of linking that mind with the reality of the true Creation and spirituality. Also, from the position of each individual’s most within Spiritual Mind, they offered various advisements, when and if asked for by free will and choice of the respective individual. Because they advised, for that reason they were called ‘spiritual advisors.’”

“In the very initial conceptualization of the term ‘spiritual advisors,’ occasionally the term ‘spiritual guides’ was used to imply that you are being guided by them instead of by yourself or by The Lord Jesus Christ.”

“The inappropriateness and falsity of the meaning of the term ‘spirit or spiritual guides’ is apparent at first glance. It violates the fundamental principles of The Law of Freedom and Independence, formulated in Chapter Ten of this book. It makes one a blind, incompetent and dependent individual who is incapable of making one’s own decisions and following one’s own chosen destiny. Such an individual becomes a spiritual slave of his/her so-called spirit or spiritual guides.”

“Because of this adverse conceptualization of the meaning of the term ‘spirit or spiritual guides,’ soon it became obvious that this term is unacceptable. Not only is it unacceptable, but it indicates that one is in contact with the negative and evil spirits who guide you without giving you any freedom of choice in this or any other matter. Thus, anyone on your planet who continues to use this term, or to be in contact with so-called spirit or spiritual guides, is in slavery to the negative state and is led by negative and evil spirits.”

“Of course, as mentioned previously, these spirits appear to one as true spiritual advisors with words of seeming love and seeming wisdom and in the name of God, Jesus Christ, or

any other name of God that humans are accustomed to using. Thus, the term 'spirit or spiritual guides' was discarded very soon after it was introduced in the first edition of the book Principles of Spiritual Hypnosis by this transmitter. Instead, the term 'spiritual advisors' was used."

"This term indicated that one is never guided by anyone or anything but is only given advice on this or that matter of one's life and various spiritual issues, when and if asked for. The indication of this term is that, because one is free and independent, one is fully responsible for anything that is happening in one's life. In the term 'spirit or spiritual guides' the responsibility is shifted from you to them."

"After all, if they are guiding you, and you are not guiding yourself, you cannot be responsible for anything in your life. The spiritual danger of this situation is very obvious. By virtue of this fact, no matter what you do or do not do, it cannot be appropriated to you. The only thing that can be appropriated to you is total dependency on the so-called spirit or spiritual guides. Because they are the ones who make all decisions on your behalf, they ultimately decide on your entire present and future destiny. You have nothing to say about it."

"Thus, becoming totally dependent on them, once you leave your planet and arrive in the spiritual world, you become completely impotent in all aspects of your life. The only thing that remains is your dependency on them. For that reason, after arrival in the spiritual world, your very first act is to seek out your so-called guides and do their bidding. And because only the negative and evil spirits can be in the role of these guides, you become their full slave. They will guide you right into the Hells. This is exactly the purpose of their mission with all humans who believe in their spiritual powers."

"On the other hand, with the concept of 'spiritual advisors,' it is always your choice whether you follow or do not follow their advice. It is always your decision to accept or to reject their advice. However, as mentioned at the beginning of this elaboration, this particular role of your spiritual advisors changed as of this date."

"In the old understanding of the term 'spiritual advisors,' an element of compelling necessity still exists. It forces you to follow the advice of your spiritual advisors. After all, if you are receiving advice from someone who is positioned at a much higher spiritual level in the hierarchy of spiritual organization, the structure of which you are totally ignorant, you feel obligated to follow that advice regardless of whether you want or do not want to."

"Moreover, the relationship between you and your spiritual advisors is one of inferiority. Your position and state, in all its aspects, is perceived as always inferior to the position and state of your spiritual advisors. Such a relationship may and can produce negative feelings of resentment on your part. In most instances, these feelings are unconscious. The feelings of resentment become a trap and they do open the door to the negative state and its minions that cause you nothing but troubles and problems. Also, very often, you tend to rebel against your spiritual advisors and do just the exact opposite of what they advise you."

"Again, spiritually, this is a very dangerous situation because it puts you into opposition to the positive state. You begin to do things which you do not want to do; and you reject doing things which you do want to do. Once you end up at this point, your decision of not doing what is right for you or what is advised to you, must be appropriated to you because it comes from the position of your free choice to oppose the good advice or to do what is proper and right. Such is the nature of inferiority and resentment."

"The reason why, up to this point, it was allowed to conceptualize the role of spiritual advisors

the way it was conceived in the books of The New Revelation, was because this situation was the reality of the typical human life. Human life has been inferior in all respects to any other known sentient life in Creation or the Zone of Displacement. Not knowing, or even not having, any other position, humans can relate only from that which they have — inferiority. Humans have not been able to know many things or the majority of things. Whatever they had known was either distorted or perverted or falsified.”

“The response to this kind of situation is a mixture of deep inferiority and superiority. On one hand, humans feel very inadequate and inferior in their own universe (pseudo-universe). On the other hand, they think that they are the most advanced and unique beings in the entire Creation. The peculiarity of the human life is that, as mentioned in Chapter Twelve of this book, these two contradictory feelings occur simultaneously within the same individual.”

“In order to avoid the danger of a permanent state of rebelliousness of humans against the spiritual structure and arrangement of their mind and Creation, until not too long ago it was necessary to keep the knowledge of the fact of the spiritual advisors’ existence within everyone’s mind hidden. Thus, no one, or only a few people, have known that every human being has assigned to him/her a certain number of spiritual advisors and that one’s survival in human life depends on their presence within one’s mind.”

“However, this situation could not be tolerated forever. If humans were ever to be saved from their dire human life, it was necessary to rectify this situation. As you know, one of the reasons for The Lord Jesus Christ’s incarnation on your planet and assumption of human form, with subsequent hybridization and fusion of that form into the totality of The Absolute Nature of The Most High, was to eradicate this situation with humans and bring them, after their transformation, to the level of the rest of Creation, thus eliminating the chronic state of their inferiority/superiority complex.”

“The very first step in this effort, just prior to and after the completion of the process of hybridization and fusion of the human form into the totality of The Absolute Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ, was the gradual, step by little step, opening of the door to the spiritual facts about spiritual advisors and the existence of the spiritual world and true spiritual reality. In other words, the beginning of this change started with the transmission of The New Revelation.”

“The very first and initial portion of The New Revelation was contained in Swedenborg’s writings. Further elaboration on these issues did not come until the second portion of The New Revelation was transmitted, as reflected in the books of this transmitter written prior to the transmission of its final portion, as reflected in this monumental book. As you begin to reveal to humans more and more truth about the true meaning of their life and spiritual reality, they realize that whatever they have known up to this point is, in actuality, total ignorance. At that point they are like little children who need to be taken care of and given all necessary provisions for their life.”

“From this position, it appears to them as though they are being guided by some spiritual guides. They truly do not know anything else. Hence, the term ‘spirit or spiritual guides.’ As humans are gradually led into the awareness that they are free and independent and that they all have a propensity for guiding themselves, the situation changes. At this point, they recognize the fact that they are not being guided, but advised, on all matters of life. From this the term ‘spiritual advisors’ logically derives.”

“However, the availability of the final version of The New Revelation (final for this cycle of time), entirely changes this situation. The New Revelation, for those who read and accept it

for the sake of principle, eliminates any discrepancy and spiritual difference that has existed up to this point between these humans and their spiritual advisors.”

“As you remember, this New Revelation is the True Word of The Lord Jesus Christ (The Word of God) also and primarily in its literal sense, the sense in which humans live. It is applicable, in its literal sense, to all worlds, dimensions, conditions, states and processes. Humans are no longer excluded from having with them The Word of God in its literal sense and not only in its inner, spiritual sense, as had been the case until the final portion of The New Revelation was made available to them.”

“Whatever humans need for their salvation is contained in its literal sense in The New Revelation. Because of this new factor, they no longer need to be advised on anything from any other source or direction. All they have to do is to read The New Revelation as a source of genuine and real truth and practice it. By doing that, they evoke the presence of The Lord Jesus Christ in His/Her New Nature and the presence of all those in the spiritual and intermediate world who, for certain important spiritual reasons, are assigned to them.”

“The availability of The New Revelation fully equalizes all sentient entities and humans, if they choose by their free will and choice, for the sake of principles, to accept The New Revelation and implement its precepts in their everyday life.”

“From this new position, the availability of The New Revelation made the use of the term ‘spiritual advisors’ obsolete. By and through The New Revelation, that is, by and through The New Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ, reflected in The New Revelation, humans, for the first time in the history of their being and existence, are being given a choice to join the vast spiritual family of the positive state as equals (and not as a separate and isolated occurrence, as has been the case until recently — as reflected in the being and existence of the typical human heavens).”

“Because of this fact, the role of those who were called ‘spiritual advisors’ changes as of now, as of this very moment. No longer will they be called spiritual advisors, but, instead, they will be called members of the spiritual family. Thus, you will address them as members of your true spiritual family; and The Lord Jesus Christ will be your only true Parent instead of your Highest Spiritual Advisor. As you know, the term ‘parent’ incorporates both the principle, state and process of motherhood and the principle, state and process of fatherhood.”

“Up to this point, The Lord Jesus Christ has been conceived as The Highest Spiritual Advisor because nothing of human nature has been contained within Him/Her. The state of separation existed between The Absolute Nature of The Most High and the human nature. Because of this separation, no direct parenthood toward humans could be conceived by anyone. After all, humans were not created by The Lord Jesus Christ (The Most High at that time). Instead, they were fabricated by the pseudo-creators.”

“The parenthood of The Most High in respect to humans was only potential and indirect; potential by the fact of the promise by The Most High that this situation with humans would be rectified sometime in time and space when The Most High would incarnate into the human life in the form of Jesus Christ and subsequently incorporate the human elements within His/Her Absolute Nature, becoming The Lord Jesus Christ; indirectly by the fact that the stolen elements of the true life, stolen from The Lord Jesus Christ (at that time The Most High), were utilized, in a perverted and mutilated condition, in the fabrication of humans.”

“Thus, from this unfavorable condition, humans could not, in reality, relate to The Lord Jesus Christ as to their true Parent but only as to their Highest Spiritual Advisor.”

“But once the process of hybridization with and fusion of the human life into The Nature of The Most High was completed, and The Most High became to eternity The Lord Jesus Christ, by virtue of this monumental act, the situation in this respect changed. Now, The Lord Jesus Christ can relate to humans from the position of their humanness. Because nothing is lacking in The Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ any longer, The Lord Jesus Christ also assumed the role of parenthood toward humans.”

“For this reason, you are to relate towards The Lord Jesus Christ, in your individualized and unique approach, as to your only true Parent and not as to your Highest Spiritual Advisor. The meaning and content of the term ‘parent’ fully incorporates that which was contained in the term ‘Highest Spiritual Advisor,’ as the term ‘members of the spiritual family’ fully incorporates everything contained in the term ‘spiritual advisors.’ However, both of these terms contain exceedingly much more than the now obsolete terms ‘spiritual advisors’ and ‘Highest Spiritual Advisor.’”

“The relationship between you, the members of your spiritual family and your only true Parent — The Lord Jesus Christ — is to be based, from now on, on totally new premises:”

“It is no longer a relationship of advisors and advisees, but, instead, it is a relationship built on the principles of sharing, exchange, input, output, contribution and mutual conveyance of information, views, ideas, concepts, opinions, etc., from the position of each unique member of this spiritual family for the sake of all, for the benefit of all, for the good of all and for the sake of spiritual principles because it is the right and godly thing to do.”

“The former condition, as reflected in the relationship between the advisors and the advisees, was still based on a partial separation of humans from the spiritual family, the reason being that the advisors always had inherently more knowledge and understanding of all issues of life than the advisees. Otherwise, no need for any advice would exist. If you know as much as anyone else, then, that anyone else cannot advise you on something you already know. In this case, you are your own advisor. You are responsible to give yourself your own advice.”

“The availability of The New Revelation puts humans, who read and practice it, into the position of true Knowledge they have never possessed. As mentioned above, this puts them potentially into an equal position with everyone else in Creation. It is said potentially and not actually, the reason being that humans need first to read and then to accept The New Revelation before this potentiality can become actual. Remember, please, humans are in the externals. This external position determines for humans the mode and process by which they can become actually equal to everyone else who is in the internals.”

“For this reason, the source of any true knowledge for humans, as of now, becomes this New Revelation. From it and by it, that is, from the fullness of the presence of The Lord Jesus Christ in The New Revelation, as His/Her True Word, humans can and may know everything they need to know to survive human life, to be saved from the typical human life and to be equal to and with everyone else in Creation. The reading, acceptance and application of The New Revelation, or what it contains, particularly regarding The New Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ, is the door for humans into the positive state and into the state of their own internals (from which they have been separated and isolated during all their history).”

“As you see, the procedure here has to be typically human (because nothing else is available to humans): First, they are recommended to read The New Revelation in their externals; second, they are recommended to accept The New Revelation from the position of their

externals; and third, they are to practice all the principles, precepts, laws and ideas of The New Revelation also from the position of their externals. By doing that in the externals, the door to their internals is open and they become identified with their internals, that is, with their most within Spiritual Mind which integrates into itself all their externals (that is, their conscious mind, literal sense and everything related to them), abolishing the curse of the human life — to be only in the externals and thus to be excluded from the rest of Creation.”

“By following these procedures, their human life is being appropriated to the positive state and they are being equalized with all members of their spiritual family as well as with everyone else in Creation. In this respect the prophecy of The Lord Jesus Christ, uttered during His/Her life on your planet, as recorded in The Gospel According to Matthew, Chapter 16, verse 19, is being fulfilled as of this date:”

““And I will give you the keys of the kingdom of heaven, and whatever you bind on earth will be bound in heaven, and whatever you loose on earth will be loosed in heaven.””

“To ‘give you the keys of the kingdom of heaven’ signifies to give one a means for the entrance into one’s most within Spiritual Mind and, from that position, from the state of integration of one’s mind, to equalize humans who accept and practice the truth of The New Revelation with anyone else in the entire Creation. ‘The keys,’ in this connotation, signifies The New Revelation. The Lord Jesus Christ promised you the keys of the kingdom of heaven, that is to say, He/ She promised humans that, at one time, when everything related to the acquirement of His/Her New Nature is fulfilled and completed, a New Revelation will be granted that, among many other things, will give humans an opportunity of entering the kingdom of heaven and becoming equal to and with all other representatives of the true sentient life. Thus, no other keys, for this purpose, are available to humans but only The New Revelation.”

““And whatever you bind on earth will be bound in heaven’ denotes the need of acceptance of The New Revelation in the externals. Remember please, humans are in the externals of their life but not in the internals. Therefore, nothing can be appropriated to them unless they accept it from the position of the structure and dynamics of their own specific life — the externals. The words ‘on earth,’ in this particular connotation, signify their externals and their conscious mind. But, they also mean the literal sense. ‘To bind something on earth’ also means to conceive things and concepts in their literal meaning. Because nothing of truth existed in the externals, conscious mind and literal sense, in order to save humans, it was necessary for The Most High in the form of Jesus Christ to come into the externals, conscious mind and literal sense and extend the truth into these three states.”

“To repeat again: Humans cannot be saved from any other position but only from that which they have — the human life. Human life is vested in the externals, conscious mind and the literal sense. One has to lower oneself to their position first, and from that position, gradually, step by little step, introduce them into the internals or the most within of Creation.”

“Once you bring that truth and its good and good and its truth into the externals, conscious mind and literal sense (the truth is the keys; the externals, conscious mind and literal sense are earth), by accepting, incorporating and practicing the truth at that level, you bind things on earth, that is, you appropriate the truth to yourself; it becomes an integral part of your life, heart, mind and personality. It becomes you, the content of your true ‘I am.’ Thus, it becomes bound in heaven, that is, in your internals or the true most within Spiritual Mind, giving you the right and privilege to be a part of the true life and Creation and to become one with your internals.”

“Here, the process of integration of the most without with the most within is described, that is, the process of integration of all aspects of the sentient mind into one undivided mind is described.”

“‘Whatever you loose on earth will be loosed in heaven’ signifies elimination of all impositions of the negative state into the human mind. ‘To loose anything on earth’ means getting rid of everything that is not of the true life of the positive state or Heaven.”

“In order to integrate the externals, or, in this case, humans, into the wholeness and totality of the internals, or, in this case, in order to equalize humans (who are the epitome of the externals) with the rest of Creation and the positive state, it is first necessary to loose from them everything which is of the negative state.”

“As you know, no integration is possible from the position of the negative state because nothing of the negative state can or may enter the positive state or the true reality of Creation and its true life. Thus, you must clear the mess of the negative state in your externals first. (Remember the new process of spiritual transformation and going inward described in Chapter Five of this book? Please, refresh your memory by rereading that Chapter, if you wish.)”

“Once you clear or get rid of that mess in your externals (on earth), nothing of it can be appropriated to you any longer. At that point, you become integrated into the positive state (Heaven).”

“The rule, as already formulated through Swedenborg, is that no change can be initiated by The Lord Jesus Christ in your internals unless you yourself, by your own free will and choice, initiate it in your externals, conscious mind and literal sense. The New Revelation, given in the literal sense as the Word of The Lord Jesus Christ, gives you the keys or means for getting rid of the mess of the negative state in your externals.”

“Reading, accepting and practicing The New Revelation in everyday life constitutes for humans the gradual elimination of the negative state in their everyday life, or their externals, and bringing them into the positive state.”

“You have to understand a very important fact here: The New Revelation needed to be transmitted by The Lord Jesus Christ through a human, in this case, through you, Peter. That is to say, The New Revelation and its Divine Truth needed to be uttered in human literal terms and concepts which are perceptible, discernible and understandable by everyone in Creation and humans alike. If The New Revelation were to be given through anyone else but a human, humans would be doomed forever to be in the falsities of their literal sense. They are simply incapable of perceiving and understanding anything in its inner and spiritual sense. In that case, not one human could be saved.”

“Until recently, before The New Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ came into Absolute Being and Existence, the so-called human heavens were maintained only by the fact of the promise that the situation with humans would be changed. If this were not to happen, eventually everyone in the human heavens would gradually revert to their previous human condition and they would end up falling out into the negative state. The availability of The New Revelation to humans in its literal sense, conscious mind and their externals, prevents these dire consequences from ever happening.”

“As you see, the only type of any Revelation given by The Lord Jesus Christ that has an all-

inclusive and multidimensional significance and application is the Revelation that comes through someone who lives on your planet. Any other Revelation, at any other place, state, condition and process, would exclude humans from ever knowing it, understanding it and practicing it. A Revelation of this nature could not be all-inclusive and multiversally applicable because its literal manifestation and concretization would be made impossible by excluding humans from its process.”

“In this case, the entire Creation would be deprived of vital knowledge of the external, concrete and tangible aspects of that Revelation and the truth it contains. As long as The New Revelation is transmitted to and from the position of human life, its literal, concrete and tangible aspects are assured and it becomes the fullness of its content and meaning. By this vital fullness and meaning, it becomes alive and living. By becoming truly alive and living, it manifests the full presence of The Lord Jesus Christ in His/Her New Nature whenever and wherever it is available, considered and practiced.”

“Thus, as you see, the survival of human life and in human life, as of now, solely depends on availability of this New Revelation also on your planet. As long as The New Revelation is present and available on your planet, even if no one or only very few humans read, accept and practice it, the foundation for the total elimination of the negative state is firmly established. From this position, bringing the negative state to its eternal end may begin.”

“The successful survival of and in human life is another issue which needs to be restated and brought to your attention once again.”

“As you remember, in Chapter Thirteen of this book, an outline was given on how to survive human life. In this postscriptum, and throughout this book, the human life is equated with the externals because, in its cosmic diffused correspondence, it epitomizes the life of the externals apart or separated from the internals. This situation is the only thing that makes sense for the vast majority of humans. Thus, as noted in Chapter Five of this book, and above, any process of change with humans must begin from the externals. Remember, ‘whatever you bind on earth (in the externals) will be bound in heaven’ (in the internals). From this conceptualization of human life, its successful survival derives.”

“It was revealed already through Swedenborg (in his book on ‘Divine Providence’) that, in order to achieve anything positive, humans must learn to compel or force themselves to do things that they otherwise would not do. The Law of Freedom of Choice and Independency requires a free and independent choice-making decision.”

“Thus, as you remember, according to this law, nothing can be appropriated to anyone which was acquired by duress, force, imposition or by being compelled by someone or something from the outside, or by miracles, signs or messages from someone or somewhere else. Such impositions violate all spiritual laws.”

“However, it is a different story when you, by your own free will and choice, compel or force yourself to do something you do not want to do. Because it stems from your own free decision to compel yourself to doing something, that decision, and its consequences and results, is binding and is fully appropriated to you. The decision itself, because it comes from your own free will and choice, is always from the state of your internals which influence your externals so that the externals force themselves to do something they do not want to do. Due to the fact that this is the state of the internals, anything decided from this position is appropriated to you and is binding across the entire human mind and Creation.”

“As you remember, humans and all other creatures and members of the negative state were

genetically, spiritually, mentally and physically structured in such a manner so as to naturally incline toward wanting and doing things which are of evils and falsities or of the negative state. This is the way they were made to be. Thus, to be or to do good, to understand and to practice truth for them is very difficult, if not impossible. Very often they have an inborn aversion toward anything truly good and truthful.”

“In order to justify their adverse feelings toward the positive state of love and wisdom, good and truth, and positive works and faith, they are led by the negative state to consider their negative condition as positive and good. Everything else, outside the boundaries and scope of their life, structured into the image of the negative state, is considered by them as negative and bad.”

“In view of this indisputable fact, unfortunately for humans and all other creatures and members of the negative state at all its levels, there is no other way out of the negative state but by the process of self-compelling, by their own free will and choice, to do things of the positive nature for which they have an inborn and natural aversion. Because of this adverse situation of human life and humans, and all the other types of life in the negative state, The Lord Jesus Christ accepts their self-compelling necessity of becoming positive as their own and fully appropriates it to them.”

“Thus, in order to successfully survive human life, you have to integrate into your personal and private life the principle of self-compelling. Very often you do not want to go inward or to do your daily meditations; or read The New Revelation; or to do your daily assignments and chores or your everyday duties at your work, profession or chosen mission; or you do not want to keep your promises, etc. You find all kinds of excuses and justifications why you should not do what is proper and right for you or that which is required by your everyday survival in human life. Some of you go so far as to claim that you are guided from your own within in doing or not doing this or that. The use of the word ‘guided’ should be a sign that it is a misleading guidance, coming from the so-called pseudo-within or pseudo-inner mind. The true most within Spiritual Mind never uses the word ‘guide’ or ‘guidance.’”

“In cases like this, the rule is to overrule such false ‘guidance’ and to compel oneself, by one’s own free will and choice, to do one’s everyday duties and assignments of life, or what you do not want to do but know very well that you should do.”

“Apostle Paul was aware of this situation when he stated in Romans 7, verse 19:”

““For the good that I will to do, I do not do; but the evil I will not to do, that I practice.””

“Of course, as everyone else, Paul was not aware that this condition was structurally and genetically ingrained into the essence and substance of every fabrication of the pseudo-creators and particularly humans. As everyone else, Paul erroneously assumed that humans and all creatures and members of the Hells (the Zone of Displacement) were initially created by God.”

“Because of the entirely new situation, established as a result of the revolutionary and fundamental changes in The Absolute Nature of God, Who became The Lord Jesus Christ, and subsequent changes in the role and relationship of sentient entities, spiritual advisors and humans, as of now, all decisions of your human life have to be made with the full inclusion in the decision-making process of your externals, conscious mind and literal sense. Unless this is the case, any decision based on the exclusion of these factors will not become binding in any respects.”

“Once a decision is made to proceed in a certain way or to do something this or that way, before acting upon that decision, you are recommended to discuss it with all members of your true spiritual family and your true Parent — The Lord Jesus Christ — (if you have conscious access to them. Otherwise, do it as if you do have such an access! After all, they are always with you and they consider all your decisions and share their inputs and ideas with you by giving you thoughts, feelings and intuition congruent to your true needs). By doing it this way, you bring in full alliance and alignment your externals with your internals, becoming oneness of your true sentient mind.”

“Remember, ‘whatever you bind on earth will be bound in heaven, and whatever you loose on earth will be loosed in heaven.’”

“This rule applies only to the process of decision-making and free choices. The extreme negative connotation and undesirable side effect of this rule can be found in how humans value external objects.”

“On your planet a movement exists that tends to ascribe or to place mystical, mysterious, unusual and, very often, healing powers in certain inanimate objects and artifacts. Thus, for example, humans consider crystals; gemstones; precious metals; crosses; objects of religious, cultist and other types of rituals; etc.; in and of themselves holy and the source of special mystical emanations that can cure them from all their problems or cause them to experience some kinds of unusual, mysterious and spiritual states and conditions. In their opinion, wearing or possessing these objects gives one a special protection from all ills and problems of human life and from the evil and negative spirits.”

“No such forces or powers operate within these objects. They are only spiritual correspondences of certain spiritual ideas which initiated in the most within spiritual state of the multiverse. In themselves and by themselves, they are only empty objects that have absolutely no causative powers to protect anyone from anything. You are to look upon them as mere correspondences of some important spiritual states or aspects of various spiritual occurrences manifested in the lives of sentient entities.”

“These objects are reflections of various attributes of the spiritual principles of Divine Love and Divine Wisdom of The Lord Jesus Christ and their numerous derivatives in the positive sense or of various pseudo-spiritual principles of evils and falsities of the negative state and their numerous derivatives in the negative sense. Once again, nothing mystical, mysterious or supernatural exists in any of these inanimate objects. It is a firm belief of the human mind in the power of these objects that causes any favorable results or unusual experiences in human life and not the objects themselves.”

“The extreme manifestation of this foolish divinization of the external objects and trinkets can be found in the story of the Holy Grail as depicted, for example, in the popular movie ‘Indiana Jones and the Last Crusade.’ In that movie, the chalice, which was supposedly used by The Lord Jesus Christ at His/Her Last Supper with His/Her disciples, has unusual mystical powers, enabling you to receive eternal youth and heal you from any affliction or even to resurrect you from death. No such powers exist in the chalice itself.”

“Even if it were to be determined that this chalice really is still preserved somewhere on your planet, and someday it is found, it would not be able to produce in itself and by itself any such mystical events. It would be nothing but a piece of metal formed into a chalice for the purpose of drinking from it.”

“It is not the chalice in itself, but its function and what it represents and corresponds to, that has true spiritual meaning. As you remember from Chapter Nine of this book, the necessity of acceptance of the Human Divine and Divine Human (that is, the human flesh of The Lord Jesus Christ which was incorporated into the totality of The Absolute Nature of The Most High), is described by the process of drinking from the cup and eating bread.”

“The acceptance of The New Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ into one’s life, as the truth of the matter, makes it possible for humans, and everyone else for that matter, to be saved from the negative state. To be saved from the negative state and the typical human life signifies to be resurrected from the dead life or dying life and to be healed from all spiritual, mental and physical problems and ills with which the negative state and human life are so abundantly infested. Also, it means to acquire, after resurrection, eternal youth because in the positive state of the true Creation to grow old means to be eternally young. No other meaning exists in any of these stories or the objects that were or are used in any human rituals.”

“However, there is some positive connotation in the story of the abovementioned movie and similar stories of treasure hunting, etc. Notice please, how all these treasures are concealed and how many insurmountable obstacles are put in the way and paths of reaching them. The treasure and the Holy Grail, in this particular connotation, represent the positive state of Heaven and the true Creation. The life-threatening obstacles and various puzzles, which need to be resolved and overcome in order to reach and acquire these treasures, represent the negative state that puts forward an all-out effort to make it virtually impossible and life-threatening for humans and everyone else in the negative state of the Zone of Displacement to reach the true positive state.”

“But it also means that one has to make a continuous effort and force oneself into overcoming all these obstacles, stumbling blocks and life-threatening situations and not to be taken in by any of them. Instead, one is to continue in pursuing the quest of one’s life for the positive state for the sake of principles because only the positive state is the true reality and is capable of fulfilling one’s life in all its aspects and in all respects. And because the positive state, in its present condition, state, process and connotation, stems from The New Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ, only The Lord Jesus Christ in His/Her New Nature can give you everything signified by the treasures, the Holy Grail and what all those inanimate objects, mentioned above, correspond to.”

“Another interesting positive connotation of the above-mentioned movie is the emphasis on simplicity, modesty and humbleness of the spiritual principles and The Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ. As you noticed, in that movie, several cups were displayed for choosing. Only one of them was the real chalice from which The Lord Jesus Christ and His/ Her disciples drank. All these cups, with the exception of the chalice in question, were of pure gold with all kinds of pompous ornaments and beatifications. On the other hand, the real chalice was a very simple and modest design. This situation reflects the correspondence that the real meaning of life is not in externals (represented by the other pompous cups) but in one’s internals and in true modesty, humbleness and humility (represented by the chalice in question). Also, it reflects The True Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ which is vested in Absolute Modesty, Humbleness and Humility.”

“Thus, one is recommended to strive not for external riches, fame and power but for true modesty, humbleness and humility. These attributes of the true life constitute the real treasure, fame and spiritual power. They bring one into the positive state and into the bosom of The Lord Jesus Christ in His/Her New Nature.”

“Anyone who has ears to hear and to listen, let him/her hear and listen to what The Lord

Jesus Christ reveals in this postscriptum.”

The final date of completion of this book is June 10, 1989, at 10:35 in the morning, in Santa Barbara, California, U.S.A.

The final date of completion of editing of this book is April 22, 1992, at 4:17 p.m. (16:17), in Santa Barbara, California, U.S.A.

The final date of editing of the second printing of this book is November 14, 2000, at 3:46 p.m. (15:46).

***More than 7000 pages in Czech and 18000 pages in other languages
and 5000 pictures about Cosmic people – Heavenly Angels
can be found on the Internet:***

www.universe-people.com

www.cosmic-people.com

www.angels-light.org

www.angels-heaven.org

www.ashtar-sheran.org

www.200-countries-download.org

www.all-the-world-downloads.org

www.we-arent-slaves.org

www.universe-people.cz

www.andele-nebe.cz

www.andelenebe.cz

www.vesmirni-lide.cz

www.vesmirnilide.cz

www.andele-svetla.cz

www.andelesvetla.cz
www.anjeli-neba.sk
www.anjeli-svetla.sk
www.stahuje-200-zemi.cz
www.stahuje-cely-svet.cz
www.nejsme-otroci.cz
www.himmels-engel.de
www.angeles-luz.es
www.angely-sveta.ru
www.anges-lumiere.eu
www.angelo-luce.it
www.anioly-nieba.pl
www.feny-angyalai.hu
www.andjeli-neba.com.hr
www.anjos-ceu.eu
www.angeli-raja.eu
www.engelen-hemel.nl
www.ingerii-cerului.ro
www.cennetin-melekleri.web.tr
www.himmelens-anglar.se